





# GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 03

*Zi Chan Bao Zeng*

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

# God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

# Synopsis

---

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201: Ferocious Beast King!

---

Yue Zhong continued to look ahead, only to see that on both sides of the path, there were all sorts of different bullet holes scattered around. There were even massive craters that had been created by explosions.

In front, the wreckage of the Dong Feng warrior vehicle loaded with machine guns was scattered everywhere. However, the thing that creeped Yue Zhong out the most was that 2 IFVs had actually been overturned onto the roadside and pulverized by an unknown force into something similar to discus.

In addition, after a careful observation, Yue Zhong discovered that almost every military vehicle had traces of being penetrated through by a sharp object.

All the signs indicated that reaching the arsenal lying ahead obviously wouldn't be smooth sailing-rather, the dangers would be numerous and there was even a terrifying existence that could easily destroy a killing machine like an IFV.

"Retreat! All of you retreat outside of this area. Wait for orders!" Yue Zhong immediately ordered as he carefully observed the surrounding environment.

On this lane, two IFVs had already been overturned; even if those two IFVs had joined his fleet, they still might not be of great use.

Bear in mind that these two IFVs were Yue Zhong's treasures: at the very last battle with the zombie hordes at Qing Yuan County, had there not been four IFVs leading a large number of heavy-duty trucks to grind up those normal zombies, then even if Yue Zhong could bring his men to wipe them out, it wouldn't have been that easy.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's orders and seeing the wreckages of military vehicles strewn all over the ground, Liu Yan also realised

the seriousness of the matter and he immediately turned back around with his men.

Right at this time, one after another, giant boars up to 3m tall that resembled miniature tanks appeared before the eyes of various people from one side of the arsenal. They had long, sharp tusks and they were covered in a layer of black scales.

[Level 43 Mutant Beast: Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar! It is a ferocious mutant beast that has both strong defense and attack. Their tusks can easily pierce through everything blocking their way.]

Those Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars obviously didn't come out to greet Yue Zhong and his men. As soon as they appeared, their eyes all turned crimson and they charged towards Yue Zhong and his men.

After Yue Zhong got into the rear of the Hummer, he took out a Type QJZ89 12.7mm machine gun and crazily opened fire at those Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars charging towards him.

The large-caliber heavy machine gun bullets that could even tear through a Dong Feng warrior vehicle bombarded the bodies of those tank-like Black-scaled Ferocious Boars, making sparks fly off as the bullets were repelled; the bullets had no way of even leaving a mark on those Black-scaled Ferocious Boars.

"Damn! What an abnormal defense!" Upon seeing this scene, Yue Zhong couldn't help but swear. 12.7mm large-caliber bullets could even pass through the scales of a Mutant Water Snake or the skull of an L2, yet it actually had no effect on these Black-scaled Ferocious Boars.

Evidently, they had extremely abnormal defense and at the very least, their defense was on the same level of existence as the Mutant Rat King's leather.

In the midst of the fleet, the Type ZPT90 25mm Cannons on top

of the 2 IFVs swivelled around and terrifying flames instantly began surging out crazily from them.

Proclaimed by Yue Zhong to be killing machines, the Type ZPT90 25mm Cannons displayed their incomparably mighty firepower. The extremely intense cannon shells exploded on the Black-scaled Ferocious Boars one after another, ripping through that layer of scales with astonishing defense. The explosion made flowers of blood blossom everywhere.

After the cannons had crazily opened fire, a Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's gigantic head was battered into a sieve with fresh blood constantly gushing out. Powerlessly, it collapsed onto the ground.

Seeing that one of its own had fallen to the ground, a clear hint of wariness flashed through the eyes of the other Black-scaled Ferocious Boars. They stared fiercely at Yue Zhong and his men, then raised their heads up to the sky and emitted a huge, pig-like cry.

The next moment, amid the dense forests, countless birds were startled and flew off. One after another, the towering trees toppled over. A gigantic wild boar that was 7m tall and 30m long leapt out from the dense forests and stared coldly at Yue Zhong. Its body was covered in black scales and its eyes flashed with a violent red light; the gigantic wild boar seemed almost indomitable.

[Level 65 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar.]

Upon seeing that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar, Yue Zhong inhaled a mouthful of cold air. That Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar was so huge that Yue Zhong's 2 IFVs seemed like toys in front of it. He finally understood what thing had crushed the Dong Feng warrior vehicles one after another into discuses.

Even if that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar simply stood quietly in place, it would still give people a sort of heavy, pressurising feeling, as if a powerful aura was billowing around it.



That normal Black-scaled Ferocious Boar already had very abnormal defense, but Yue Zhong still didn't know how abnormal that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's defense would be.

Naturally, that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar didn't come out to greet Yue Zhong and then leave; rather, its hooves moved in unison and it leapt up, shutting through its 23 little brothers like thunder. Very quickly, it rushed to the front of the horde of boars and led the 23 Black-scaled Ferocious Boars to launch an assault on Yue Zhong's fleet.

The Type ZPT90 25mm Cannons on top of the IFVs crazily spewed out flames and countless terrifying cannon shells bombarded the Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's body.

However, the outcome that everyone feared the most occurred. When those 25mm cannon shells that could easily tear through an LAV (light armored vehicle) bombarded the Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's body, they actually all bounced off it.

Yue Zhong saw that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar and finally understood how those 2 IFVs had been overturned and trampled into pieces.

"Damn! No wonder the two IFVs were both finished by these monsters. It turned out that there was an abnormal fellow like this!"

Yue Zhong activated the Encompassing Body Armor Skill once again and leapt out of the Hummer. If he didn't take action, the main battalion that he painstakingly managed would be crushed into pieces by that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar and its little brothers.

As soon as he landed, Yue Zhong immediately pulled out the Type 40 RPG Launcher, the strongest weapon in his possession. He fired at the rampaging Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar with a 'boom'.

That rocket grenade turned into a streak of light that bombarded the Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's massive, chubby face and with a 'boom', it exploded.

After the smoke and dust had dispersed, a fist-sized wound was revealed on the Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's chubby face.

That Type 40 RPG Launcher had finally torn through that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's defense. However, to a 7m tall Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar that was akin to a building, that fist-sized wound was almost negligible.

Instead, that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar was angered by Yue Zhong's attack: after it had evolved to Type 2, it had become this area's overlord-level creature. There simply wasn't anyone who dared to provoke it, yet right now, there was actually a tiny ant that had bitten him. Evidently, the injury wasn't heavy, but that still made it exceptionally angry.

That Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar cast aside the fleet, which in its opinion was an existence not even comparable to ants. It leapt up onto a hill and in doing so, it completely crushed a dozen tall trees and the surrounding ground shook.

The Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar had set its eyes on Yue Zhong and charged towards him like a tank; along the way, the trees blocking its charge were all crushed and they collapsed onto the ground. Nothing could stop its charge.

Those 23 little brothers also tightly followed behind their boss and were in hot pursuit of Yue Zhong.

After Yue Zhong launched a rocket grenade, he immediately fled into the depths of the forest without looking back. Even if he had dozens of Type 40 RPG ammunition, he wasn't certain if he could get rid of that massive, building-like Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar, not to mention that right now, the amount of Type 40 RPG ammunition in his hands wasn't even five.

Every time that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar took a step, it was equivalent to Yue Zhong taking 5 or 6 steps. Similarly, in addition to its extremely high agility, the distance between the Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar and Yue Zhong crazily decreased.

"What should I do?" Yue Zhong constantly sprinted at a crazy pace, using the support of the bone spears to quickly leap onto a tall tree.

It was just that the Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar actually kept on stubbornly using brute force to snap the trees one after another, its piggy eyes flashing fiercely with a frightening light. Its appearance showed that it wouldn't stop until it had trampled Yue Zhong into meat paste.

That Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar crushed countless trees that were blocking its way and fiercely collided into the tall tree that Yue Zhong had just jumped up, making it snap.

"Fight!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a hint of a strange light and a bone spear instantly erupted out of his right hand, pushing against that tall tree. Using the reaction force, Yue Zhong was propelled onto that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's body.

When Yue Zhong landed on it, he used both of his hands like hooks to hug it tightly, without daring to let go in the slightest. As soon as Yue Zhong let go, he would be trampled into meat paste by those crazy Black-scaled Ferocious Boars.

That Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar felt that there was someone on its body and constantly shook itself whilst pelting through the forest at high speed.

Lying on the body of that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar, Yue Zhong felt as if he were lying upon a high-speed race car travelling at a speed over 200km/h, and that high-speed race car was constantly changing directions and turning around corners as well. That huge force of drag made both of Yue Zhong's hands

shake until they were sore. If his strength hadn't already reached 51 points, Yue Zhong would've been shaken off much earlier.

Yue Zhong wasn't able to do anything as he lay on that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar moving at high speed; he could only tightly cling onto its back and he simply didn't dare to move in the slightest. The slightest movement would result in him being shaken off and sent flying like an artillery shell.

That Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar dashed for sometime before discovering that there was no way to shake off Yue Zhong, who was on its back. It immediately changed tactics and used all of its strength to spring up, reaching 7m into the air before landing.

After it landed, the surrounding ground shook with a huge 'bang'. Yue Zhong, who was clinging tightly onto its back, also felt as if he had gone into freefall from 7m in mid-air and received the huge impact. Even though the impact on that Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar's back had decreased by a lot, it still shook his internal organs, causing him endless pain. If the toughness of Yue Zhong's body hadn't reached 38 points, this could've given him severe injuries.

## Chapter 202: Fiercely Battling the Beast!

---

The Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar jumped around continuously, causing shockwaves one after another and making Yue Zhong disoriented; he even suffered some internal injuries. However, as his vitality was 7 times stronger than that of normal humans, his light wounds were constantly healing.

"Damn, if this goes on, I would be killed by this pig!" An idea started to form in Yue Zhong's mind, but it was not easy to climb up the bodies of these monsters. Even if he could make it onto top, he might not necessarily be able to kill it.

At the next jump of the Type 2 Ferocious Boar, right before it landed, Yue Zhong made his move; he used his Bone Armor to shoot out 4 spikes into the ground, supporting him and preventing him from falling with the Type 2 Ferocious Boar.

The moment the Boar landed, Yue Zhong retracted his spikes, leaping with agility onto the head of the Boar.

Making use of his limbs like a nimble monkey, he made his way on top of the Boar's head.

This time, when the Boar prepared to jump high again, Yue Zhong grabbed onto its body tightly.

Right as the Boar started descending, with just a thought, Yue Zhong shot out 4 Bone Spears again that pierced into the ground before frenzily retracting them, allowing him to descend speedily. He appeared in front of the Boar's eyes.

Yue Zhong retrieved the Stinger and fired 3 shots at the Boar's right eye. The Boar didn't even have enough time to blink and its eye was immediately pierced by all 3 shots.

With regards to the majority of living things, the eyes tended to be one of the weaker spots. This Boar was not any different: although its entire body was covered with black scales that were

tough enough to block even cannon fire, its eyes were not protected. As long as it did not close its eyes, even a normal rifle bullet could hurt its eyeballs. This time, it received Yue Zhong's shots at point blank range-the bullets pierced through the eyeball and drew fresh blood.

After the 3 shots had hit the Boar, Yue Zhong quickly jumped back onto its body. Currently, the safest place was on top of the Boar itself.

When the Boar's eye had been injured, it went into a frenzy; under the influence of the huge pain, it charged forward while jumping, heading towards the forest while flattening everything in its path like a tank.

Yue Zhong could only hold on tightly and was shaken until he saw stars, but he did not dare let go in the slightest.

When the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar made use of its strength, its speed outstripped the rest of the normal Mutant Black-Scaled Ferocious Boars and very soon, it had left its 23 little brothers behind.

However, Yue Zhong did not know this and was only concerned about holding on for dear life and enduring the bumps as the Boar continued its speed of 200km/hour.

The Boar continued its rampage for another half an hour before its speed started to decline. Under its explosive strength, it was possible for the Boar to hit a top speed of 300km/hour, but for it to maintain a speed of 200km/hour for an entire hour was not plausible. Although it was an evolved lifeform and had gained mighty strength, likewise, its size had also increased equally. It already consumed a lot of energy and stamina while running, not to say the physical exertion when it was running with all its strength.

In half an hour, Yue Zhong had already dispelled his Bone Armor and White Bones was perched on top the body together with him.

When the Boar had slowed down, Yue Zhong had the opportunity to observe his surroundings, only to find out that the Boar had brought them way beyond the mountains. There was a lush forest of dense trees up to 10 metres tall blocking out large areas of sunlight, only allowing some slight rays to shine through.

"We are actually heading up the hill!" Yue Zhong thought silently as he felt the direction while perched atop the Boar. After running such a distance, the Mutant Boar's right eye had started to scar and it had also started to calm down from its rage.

All of a sudden, the Mutant Boar twisted its body, and rolled towards the ground. Yue Zhong was shocked and hastily jumped down from the Boar's body, before leaping onto a great tree. White Bones followed suit onto another tree.

After the Mutant Boar did a roll, it got back up on its feet quickly and stared at Yue Zhong. It opened its mouth and let loose an earthshaking grunt.

That unearthly sound was really shocking and it caused a terrifying shockwave to propagate outwards in all directions.

When that terrifying sound was transmitted outwards, some bugs, weaker animals and even birds were affected, dying on the spot. The skies seemed to rain with the countless dead birds falling.

Yue Zhong was not spared from the soundwave and both his ears rang incessantly; his brain seemingly faced an onslaught of knives and was on the verge of exploding. His heart rate jumped up by three times and his blood was about to burst out of its vessels. His chest tightened and he threw up a mouthful of fresh blood, his entire body falling from the tree like a rag. Meanwhile, blood trickled from his ears, not escaping the damage caused from the shockwave.

After releasing that fearsome grunt, fatigue flashed across the Boar's fierce gaze. That finishing move was gained when it had

evolved into a Type 2 Mutant Beast; the might of the attack was extremely heavy-handed, yet at the same time, it consumed a lot of its energy. It could not execute it consecutively, otherwise it would endanger itself as well. However, as it saw Yue Zhong falling from the tree, its eyes flashed with glee and it immediately rushed towards him.

Seeing that Yue Zhong was about to become meat paste under the hooves of the Mutant Boar, White Bones shot out a Bone Spear to push Yue Zhong away from his original position, lifting him up.

Under the pounce of that Mutant Boar, a few of the great trees at Yue Zhong's original position were knocked down and broken, yet the Mutant Boar did not gain anything.

White Bones retracted its Bone Spear, pulled Yue Zhong towards itself and hugged him. The Mutant Boar's soundwave attack may have affected the living things around it, but it was useless to an undead like White Bones.

"Run towards the mountain top!" Yue Zhong was still dizzy and his ears were ringing nonstop, deaf to any other sound. His head felt like splitting and he could not control his body at all, so he could only leave it all to White Bones.

Yue Zhong's other pet Greenie had undergone evolution during slumber almost right after its meal of the Z1, which was why he did not bring it along during this mission.

If he had Greenie with him, with its flight capability, even if Yue Zhong was helpless against this Type 2 Black-Scaled Ferocious Boar, escaping would not be an issue.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's order, White Bones immediately carried Yue Zhong and headed towards the mountain peak with haste.

The Mutant Boar stared at Yue Zhong who had hurt it twice and was now being carried away by White Bones; it knocked away the



trees blocking the way and immediately gave chase.

As of now, White Bones possessed a speed that was 5 times that of a normal human: furthermore, it had the ability to manipulate its bones, and although its speed could not compare to the Mutant Boar, every time the Boar caught up to it, White Bones would shoot a Bone Spear to bring itself up above a 10m tall tree. When the Boar had knocked down and destroyed that tree, White Bones would just immediately send itself up to another tree.

"Move towards the right!" Yue Zhong's vitality that was 7 times stronger than a normal human had finally activated, so although his ears were still ringing, he had regained a little control over his body.

Among the 6 different attributes, the strengthening of each had its own use-not one could be considered a waste or rubbish.

Following Yue Zhong's order, White Bone shot out a Bone Spear towards a tree on the right and retracted it almost immediately, pulling itself and Yue Zhong over.

Seeing that White Bones was about to escape, the Mutant Boar became even more enraged; it took a deep breath, and once again released that horrifying earthshaking soundwave.

Terrifying shockwaves travelled outwards with the Mutant Boar as the centre, exploding most of the smaller and weaker life forms that they passed, killing them instantly.

Yue Zhong immediately activated his [Encompassing Body Armor Skill] and White Bones immediately transformed into the protective covering that enveloped his whole body, leaving not even a single hole for ventilation.

When that terrifying soundwave arrived at Yue Zhong's body, after passing through the layers of White Bone's armor, it gradually weakened and did not pose a threat to Yue Zhong when it did finally reach him.

Yue Zhong immediately shifted his body and continued escaping towards the right.

After finding out that its roar had no effect, the Mutant Boar seemed to become sluggish; however, it could not let go of its hatred and continued rushing towards Yue Zhong in a frenzy.

After running towards the right for about 100m, Yue Zhong suddenly halted and flipped his right hand, pulling out a Type 03 Rifle and pointing it at the approaching Mutant Boar. He started shooting towards the crazy-looking beast.

The Mutant Boar's face became riddled with countless rifle bullets and the bullets bounced off its face.

Yue Zhong's firing did no damage to the Mutant Boar, only serving to enrage it further, and its speed suddenly soared, pouncing like a lightning bolt towards Yue Zhong with all its strength.

Yue Zhong immediately shot out 2 Bone spears, sending himself into the sky, resulting in the Mutant Boar pouncing onto thin air. In fact, Yue Zhong was standing at the edge of a cliff; since the Mutant Boar had missed the pounce, its forelimbs landed on thin air and its body weight sent itself tumbling off the cliff.

Just before the Mutant Boar fell into the cliff abyss, it made use of its tail to strike viciously at Yue Zhong and that monstrous strength caused even the exterior Bone Armor to cave in. Yue Zhong also suffered a broken rib and threw up a mouthful of fresh blood, before falling into the cliff abyss as well.

## Chapter 203: A Huge Harvest!

---

The cliff was a few hundred metres deep, so if Yue Zhong fell from that height, even he would become meat paste.

Just when he had been falling for a short time, with just a thought, he shot out a Bone Spear from his Bone Armor that pierced the cliff wall, supporting him and preventing him from freefall.

As for that fierce and extraordinarily brutal Mutant Boar that was like a tank, it continued its unfortunate descent and crashed heavily onto the bottom of the cliff.

While hanging in the air, Yue Zhong gritted his teeth and bore the pain in his chest, immediately taking out the medicinal pills made from the Life-Saving Grass and swallowing them. He moved his hands and shot out Bone Spears alternately, descending the cliff wall slowly. His first priority was to determine if the tank-like Mutant Boar, which would not be defeated, was truly dead or not.

After reaching a distance of about 100m from the bottom, Yue Zhong gazed at the fallen body of the Mutant Boar that had chased him till no end, not detecting any movement. There was a lot of blood flowing from its mouth.

From afar, Yue Zhong pulled out a Type 03 rifle and shot at the head of the Mutant Boar. One by one, the bullets bounced off the impregnable scales.

This time, there was no movement from the Mutant Boar; it was apparently dead.

Upon seeing this, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief and at the same time, he rejoiced from within. The entire body of the Mutant Boar was a treasure-its scales could even block the firepower of a Type ZPT90 25mm cannon. That was by far the best defence that Yue Zhong had come across: if he could convert them into his

armor, his defence would increase by another notch.

Yue Zhong's heart was burning and whilst tolerating the pain in his chest, he used the Bone Spear to support himself down the cliff wall.

When he landed, he quickly climbed on top of the Mutant Boar's head, pulled out his Dark Magic Blade and used all his strength to cut down swiftly, only to find that even after summoning all his strength, all that the Dark Magic Blade did was to leave a white mark on the scales of the Mutant Boar's head. It did not even penetrate a single bit.

"Sure enough!" Yue Zhong frowned and thought earnestly for a while, before activating his [Devil Flame Skill] and a mass of fiery red flames arose in his hands.

Yue Zhong gazed at the fiery red Devil Flame in his hand and with a thought, accompanied by the continuous consumption of his spirit and stamina, the fiery red Devil Flame compressed. After spending 25 points of spirit and 25 points of stamina, a thin red thread of fire was condensed on his right index finger.

Yue Zhong was perspiring profusely; poking into the back of the Mutant Boar with his finger, the highly compressed flame started burning a hole, before finally creating a wound the size of a finger.

Yue Zhong continued to use the highly compressed Devil Flame gathered at his index finger to burn the back of the Mutant Boar and managed to create an opening for the Dark Magic Blade to penetrate through.

After burning the hole, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, as he had already consumed a large amount of stamina and spirit.

When mutated beasts were still alive, they were very resilient-the wounds that were created on the Mutant Boar's body when Yue Zhong shot 40 rocket grenades at it had already recovered, and even the scales had grown out once again.

Yue Zhong had also tried using his Devil Flame to rip off the skin from the Boar, but to no avail.

He thought for a while, before jumping down from the Mutant Boar's back and quietly rested for 20 minutes while recovering the spent stamina and spirit.

When the 20 minutes had passed, Yue Zhong quickly jumped on to the Boar's face with White Bones.

With a thought, White Bones got into a prone position, its body shooting out layers of Bone Spears and thus creating a Bone Platform in front of the Mutant Boar's eyes.

Yue Zhong swiftly got on the platform, pulled out his Dark Magic Blade and summoned his strength to pierce the eye of the Mutant Boar. This time, the sharpness of the Dark Magic Blade could be employed, breaking through the eyeball of the dead Mutant Boar.

Yue Zhong continually hacked and cut using the Dark Magic Blade, before finally managing to retrieve the eyeball; he released a load of bloody meat in the process and the unpleasant smell of blood filled his nostrils.

He hesitated for a while, but the desire to obtain any possible nucleus or blood essence won over his disgust towards the stench. He began making cuts into the flesh of the Mutant Boar, and burrowed within its head.

After 20 minutes, with his whole body covered in specks of red and white mucus, Yue Zhong stepped out of the body, holding a black shiny nucleus the size of a fist and a red blood essence the size of 2 fingers.

Upon emerging from the body of the dead Mutant Boar, he immediately jumped into a small creek beside the body to enjoy a cold bath, washing off the grime and blood on him.

White Bones suddenly shot out a Bone Spear into the the body of the Mutant Boar through the eye socket until it reached the skull

and activated its [Bone Manipulation Skill], continuously absorbing the bone essence of the Mutant Boar.

Yue Zhong only took a look at White Bones and retrieved various barbeque equipment and condiments from his storage ring. Then he directly started roasting a chunk of meat from the dead Boar.

The scales of the Mutant Boar were extremely tough and the same applied to about 10cm of the meat that was under the scales, yet the flesh further deeper was soft and fresh, with a certain tenderness and chewiness. After roasting, the flavour was beyond comparison and Yue Zhong wolfed down 3 bites.

[Congratulations, you have gained 1 point in Endurance!]

When Yue Zhong had just eaten the 3rd chunk of meat, the pleasant sound of a notification resounded.

Hearing the sound, Yue Zhong became distracted and a thought flashed in his mind, "Don't tell me that eating the meat of advanced types of mutated beasts can grant enhancements?"

Before this, Yue Zhong had eaten the meat of the mutated beasts many times, yet did not gain any enhancement. Becoming stronger from the meat of an advanced type was also a first for him.

After he heard the notification, he immediately took great bites, making short work of 7 - 8 chunks of meat, yet there were no further notifications.

However, even though there were no enhancements, he felt that his stamina and spirit seemed to be recovering faster after eating the meat.

"What a treasure!" After finishing his meal, Yue Zhong looked at the Mutant Boar the size of a house and his eyes flashed with greed.

The Mutant Boar had a few hundred tons of meat on it and even the bones could be used to construct weapons; its scales were also an excellent source of defensive material. Unfortunately, Yue

Zhong's storage ring did not possess enough space to keep the entire Mutant Boar inside.

Yue Zhong retracted his gaze from the Mutant Boar's carcass and retrieved the red blood essence, swallowing it. The moment it entered his abdomen, it became a billowing heat and started surging throughout his body, nourishing every single cell in his body.

[Congratulations, you have gained 15 points in Vitality and 10 points in Endurance!]

The Blood Essence of the Mutant Boar was really extraordinary: after consuming it, Yue Zhong had actually gained 25 points of enhancement in total, greatly strengthening his physique.

Yue Zhong erected a tent by the creek and after placing some traps around the tent, he entered it and immediately fell into a deep sleep. He needed to rest properly for the wound on his chest and the broken rib caused by the last desperate hit of the Mutant Boar to both heal.

On the morning of the second day, Yue Zhong awoke; his broken rib had completely restored with the help of his immense vitality and the medicinal pills taken prior. Since he had recovered, he immediately pulled out his Dark Magic Sword and proceeded to use his entire strength to start peeling the scales from around the eyes.

Although the Dark Magic Blade could not cut the scales on the Mutant Boar, with Yue Zhong's recovered energy and strength 5 times that of normal humans, he could actually peel the scales slowly, it just required an astonishing amount of physical energy.

Yue Zhong worked at it tirelessly for the whole day and only managed to peel open an area 8m long and 4m wide worth of scales, whilst at the same time slicing out 3 tonnes of meat.

During the night, Yue Zhong would only rest for a short while

and then continue his work. The scales of the Mutant Boar were simply too amazing and he was not willing to give up even a single one of them.

With the scales of this Mutant Boar, the troops directly under Yue Zhong would be able to advance in power and the Snake Skin Armor could be given to the troops in Chi Yang's 2nd Company.

It must be known that the armor made of the Mutant Water Pythons' skin was scarce-as of now, other than the officers of each company, only the Special Combat Battalion and the first 2 rows of Evolvers in the 1st Company under Yue Zhong's 1st Battalion possessed one each.

The rest of the military force was mostly using armor made from the normal Mutant Rats' hide. After the war at the granary, Yue Zhong had managed to retrieve a huge load of Mutant Rats' hides. Although the armor made of the Mutant Rats' hide could not compare to that of the Mutant Water Snakes, with the reinforcements of 3 layers of it, even normal zombies would find it hard to damage the armor. Only the evolved zombies could get past it and they were currently the leading cause of casualties in Yue Zhong's troops.

Yue Zhong's actions were like those of a butcher, busying himself throughout these 3 days, cutting out 20+ tons of meat from the Mutant Boar, and any scales exposed were all peeled clean by him. There was a patch that was stuck to the ground, which he could do nothing about except leaving it there.

On the second day of dismembering the Mutant Boar, the meat started to release a stench and Yue Zhong only managed to procure 20 tons of good meat.

[Congratulations, your [Special Bones Skill] has gained 20 points in Endurance!]

On the noon of the 3rd day, White Bones, which had been absorbing the bone essence of the Mutant Boar, retrieved his Bone



Spears from within the Mutant Boar and Yue Zhong received the sweet sound of a notification.

After fully absorbing the bone essence of the Mutant Boar, White Bones' entire body seemed to be covered with a layer of black metallic luster and a bony armor enveloped him entirely, giving him the appearance of an ancient general; it became harder to detect that White Bones was just a skeleton.

# Chapter 204: Tracking a Trail

---

Yue Zhong saw that White Bones had finished its evolution and proceeded to pack up his belongings. He made use of White Bones to form a Bone Ladder to climb up the cliff wall, intending to backtrack his way to where he had initially met the Mutant Boar.

The Mutant Boar had been knocking down trees along the way of its rampage, forming a path like a guiding light that led Yue Zhong and White Bones forward.

However, just after entering the forest for about 100 metres, Yue Zhong was faced with two very difficult choices. In front of him, there were 3 routes that were obviously created by the rampages of giant beasts. He had no way of determining which was the actual way back.

If he took the wrong path, he might very well end up in a monster's lair and become a snack for it. Yue Zhong had no confidence that he could lure another beast to the cliff.

After pondering for a while, Yue Zhong decided to turn back and went back down the cliff, following the creek and swimming along it. There were too many people in China; as long there was a water body, save for mountains or forests, people would gather. Yue Zhong could only pray that he would come across other humans as he swam along.

In these unknown mountains, there would be shrill sounds of beasts lamenting from time to time. The sounds of battle between the Mutant Beasts would also ring out regularly. Yue Zhong came across a Level 46 Mutant Flamingo with fiery red feathers and a wingspan of almost 50m fighting crazily with a flock of Level 36 Mutant Green Eagles with wingspans of only 20m.

When Yue Zhong saw those Mutant Beasts fighting, he immediately ran off quietly without daring to stay in the slightest.

Other than those, there would be numerous birds startled into flying from time to time or beasts rampaging about, obviously from the presence of a dangerous giant beast inside the forest.

Yue Zhong would often feel the impending danger and each time he would activate the Encompassing Body Armor, encasing him completely and blocking off his scent, before hurriedly escaping forward.

Near a small brook, 6 men with tattered clothes holding fish nets and harpoons were lying prone on the ground, keeping a fixed gaze on the small brook.

In that small brook, there was an abundant source of fish. As long as they threw the net, they would be able to pull up enough for a meal, and if their luck was good and the haul was immense, they could even feed themselves for 2 weeks.

"Old Secretary! Can I not go? I'm pleading you! That thing will eat me!" One of the younger men, who was injured, held his harpoon and knelt in front of the middle aged man, kowtowing profusely and crying out.

In this small brook, while there was a large abundance of fish, it also concealed the existence of a terrifying man-eating mutant beast. Many who came with the intention of monopolizing this brook had died in the stomach of it.

These 6 people were survivors from the nearby Tooth Village. Roughly a month ago, they had 32 companions, but now the numbers have dwindled down to just the 6 of them.

These villagers wanted to fish at the brook, so they had no choice but to let one be a bait, luring the mutant beast out or to eat its fill. When the beast was in the middle of its meal, the rest would then be successful in fishing on the other side.

The middle-aged man was tanned and looked like a farmer. His face sank and he said, "Blackie! What did we agree on? Whoever

drew the short stick would be the bait, wasn't it? When others drew their lot, you ate the fish with gusto. Now that you've drawn the lot, you want to go back on your word?"

The other 4 villagers eyed Blackie, their harpoons ready at a moment's notice. If he resisted, they would kill him first and set his corpse as a bait.

Blackie's face turned pale and he knew that he would be killed if he refused, hence he gritted his teeth and said, "Secretary, I will go. My kid and wife at home, I leave in your hands, please."

The old secretary said heavily, "Rest assured, as long as I have the energy, I will not let them go hungry."

"Secretary!! There's somebody! Somebody is coming from there!" All of a sudden, one of the villagers ran over to the old secretary, pointing towards the front.

The old secretary looked towards the direction which the villager pointed towards, only to see Yue Zhong and White Bones walking along the river towards them. "He really is not afraid of death!" Looking at the calm Yue Zhong sauntering towards them, they all had the same thoughts.

The 6 of these survivors immediately got down onto the ground, quietly observing Yue Zhong. None of them had the intention of warning him of the danger in the brook.

If the Mutant Beast could eat its fill, those lying in wait would not have to sacrifice any of their members.

Yue Zhong had come very close to the brook when suddenly, his sense of danger went off and he retreated as quickly as an arrow towards land. White Bones also mimicked Yue Zhong's actions.

At that moment, the water flow from the brook exploded towards the skies and a huge Mutant Water Snake over 20m long rushed from within, its appearance as though that of a dragon. It opened its mouth wide to attack Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong took one look at the Mutant Water Snake and the Dark Magic Sword appeared in his hands. With the explosion of his speed that was 7 times that of a normal person (TN: SERIOUSLY HOW MANY TIMES DO WE NEED TO UNDERSTAND THIS FACT HAHAHA), he dodged towards the right just as the Mutant Water Snake bit down at the position where he was just an instant ago.

(Note from divinecelestialbeinglol: that TN was just Kun raging, I think I have to send him off on an anger management course...)

In the next moment, Yue Zhong grabbed his Dark Magic Sword and like an arrow, he made his way to the head of the Mutant Water Snake, viciously striking at the area about 7 inches from its head, beheading it and causing an endless amount of blood to flow.

The Mutant Water Snake struggled for quite a while after receiving the blow with snake blood splattering everywhere, before it fell lifelessly on the ground. White Bones stepped up and grabbed the dead body, pulling it out from the water.

Yue Zhong immediately went to work and started cutting up its head, retrieving the blood essence hidden deep in its skull.

"How powerful!!" The 6 villagers saw how easy it was for Yue Zhong to dispose of the Mutant Water Snake and all drew a cold breath. They had experienced the terror of the Mutant Water Snake themselves-even harpoons could not pierce its skin, which was why they had no choice but to make use of the baiting method to fish.

One of the villagers eyed the Dark Magic Sword in Yue Zhong's hands and a hint of unease flashed in his eyes. Yue Zhong turned his attention towards the location of the 6 villagers and called out coldly, "Have you seen enough? Get out of here this instant!"

Upon hearing Yue Zhong's words, all 5 of them looked towards the old secretary for instructions. The old secretary hesitated a while before saying heavily, "Let's go!"

After the events of Z-Day, humans became scarier. However, the old secretary saw that while Yue Zhong exuded a terrifying aura, he would not hold a grudge against others for the sake of food. That was why he dared to bring them over.

Just when they reached in front of Yue Zhong, he immediately shot off questions, "Who are you people? What is this place?"

"This younger brother..." The old secretary looked at Yue Zhong, before continuing and narrated their history and the events.

The old secretary's name was Ma Zhengming and he was the secretary of the Tooth Village. There was also Blackie, whose real name was Liu Er Hei (TN: Hei is Black in chinese, so they called him Hei Zi, or Blackie) and the other four who were called Cai Wen, Liu Qing, Zhang Er and He Guang.

Tooth Village was once one of SY County's many villages and was mainly in charge of fishing, hunting and farming for its survival. After the events of Z-Day, due to the villagers being exposed to constant physical labor, their fighting strength was not weak and so they disposed of many of those zombies. Nearly half the village actually survived. However, in the following month, their rations were wiped clean. They had no choice but to re-embark on their hunting and fishing practices.

Within the mountains themselves, many huge Mutant Beasts had appeared, complicating their hunting and causing many casualties. They could only rely on fishing. However, the Mutant Water Snake was not to be provoked easily and unlike the mountains, the river held an abundant source of fish. That was why they chose to fish.

Yue Zhong continued, "Do you know if there are any major human camps around this area?"

Yue Zhong's current priority was to find a place with radio communications, so he could re-establish communications with his people in Qing Yuan County.

Ma Zhengming shook his head, "No, in front of our village is actually Chen Village, but it is filled with zombies. We can't go over and we do not know if there are other gathering places beyond that."

Ma Zhengming had also seen the film 'Resident Evil' and so he naturally knew what zombies were. Ma Zhengming looked at Yue Zhong and asked carefully, "Brother Yue Zhong, can you let us do our fishing?"

Yue Zhong had been the one to dispose of the Mutant Water Snake. The brook was a treasure trove of fish before the Mutant Water Snake had claimed it as its territory. It had a steady output of fresh fish and aquatic life. Ma Zhengming was mindful of Yue Zhong's strength and subconsciously asked for permission.

Yue Zhong waved his hands: "Just do it!"

Ma Zhengming was delighted and brought his villagers to begin throwing the fishing nets. With just a few nets, the villagers managed to haul in a few pounds of fish.

After the world changed, there was no overfishing done by humans and due to the virus' influence, the aquatic life replenished itself fairly quickly. That was why this river had an abundance of fish.

Ma Zhengming looked towards Yue Zhong and extended an invitation warmly, "Brother Yue Zhong, thanks to you disposing of the Mutant Water Snake, we could have such a haul. Please do consider coming to our village to rest for a while and let us throw a feast for you."

"That's great!" Yue Zhong also needed directions to proceed to the next village-after all, he had been walking for a day and was getting tired, therefore he accepted Ma Zhengming's invitation.

Tooth Village was a small village surrounded by mountains on 3 sides, with over a hundred acres of farmland. There were over 2

dozen brick houses and on top of that, there were some remnants of some red-brick houses from the fifties or sixties.

Just outside of the village, there was a group of women and children going around digging for wild vegetables, whilst the kids focusing on other insects that could be eaten such as grasshoppers, earthworms, cicadas etc.



## Chapter 205: Crazy Kitchen Knife!!

---

After the world had changed, a large number of species had all started to mutate and plants were no exception. The wild vegetables that were edible by humans before the world had changed instantly became very scarce. At the same time, wave after wave of poisonous plants grew unbridledly from the ground. If those poisonous plants were eaten, the human would be poisoned and die. Subsequently, scouring for wild vegetables was also a technical activity-without sufficient knowledge, there was no way of finding wild vegetables that were edible. In the surroundings of this Tooth Village, there were many plants, but those that could actually be eaten were few in number.

When Ma Zhengming and his party returned to the village, the villagers all surrounded them and greedily looked at the big fishes in the nets.

Ma Zhengming and his party also all had their heads held up high, as if they were heroes triumphantly returning. In fact, in the eyes of the people of Tooth Village, Ma Zhengming and the others who had brought over food really all were heroes.

However, even more people's gazes landed on White Bones, who was dragging the corpse of the Mutant Water Snake behind it. This was the first time that they had seen such a terrifying monster. Many children curiously extended their hands to touch the scales of that Mutant Water Snake.

All along the way, Yue Zhong had been looking at Tooth Village, only to see over 40 women of different ages and around 10 children. The only men left were Ma Zhengming and the five others.

Ma Zhengming led Yue Zhong, White Bones, Liu Erhei (Blackie), Cai Wen, Liu Qing, Zhang Er and He Guang into a compound. As soon as Ma Zhengming entered the compound, 6 women walked

out; the oldest was 46, whilst the youngest was only 16.

Apart from that 46 year old middle-aged woman, the rest of the women all had slightly dark skin, but all of them still looked quite pretty and they were regarded as beauties in this village.

(Note: in China, pale skin is generally considered to be more beautiful.)

Ma Zhengming threw down a bucket of fish and shrimp before that middle-aged woman and said forthrightly, "Juan Zi! Bring those few over to prepare some good food! Also, bring that Divine Spring Tea over, I'm going to have a good drink with these brothers."

That middle-aged woman received that bucket of fish and shrimp, then brought the other five women over to the kitchen.

Plate after plate of boiled prawns, steamed carp, sashimi, stewed fish soup and all sorts of other delicious freshwater fishes were placed onto the table. Apart from that, each of the men also received a cup of green-colored tea.

Liu Erhei raised his cup of tea to smell it and a surge of fragrance wafted out from it, making him startled; his body felt extremely comfortable and he hurriedly asked,

"Old Secretary! You've really hidden it quite deeply, what treasure is this?"

Ma Zhengming gave a chuckle and raised his cup of green-colored tea to take a sip, before saying with his eyes narrowed,

"This is Divine Spring Tea. Drinking it will give your body many benefits. Hehe!"

Yue Zhong raised his cup of Divine Spring Tea to take a sniff and a surge of fragrance rushed into his nostrils. After that surge ended, he also felt quite refreshed. He poked out his tongue and lightly licked that Divine Spring Tea: he didn't perceive any danger and immediately drank it.

As soon as that Divine Spring Tea landed into Yue Zhong's abdomen, a surge of clean air poured out and circulated once around his body. Afterwards, it rushed straight to his forehead, giving him a refreshing sensation.

[You have gained 1 point in Spirit.]

"Good tea!" Having heard the enhancement notification, Yue Zhong couldn't help but let out a few words of praise.

White Bones, Liu Erhei, Cai Wen, Liu Qing, Zhang Er and He Guang all gulped down that Divine Spring Tea one after another as well.

White Bones wore a human disguise in front of other people, so it naturally had to gulp down that Divine Spring Tea. It was just that its body turned into a cup made from bone, which contained the Divine Spring Tea. Meanwhile, the other five people all revealed an extremely intoxicated look.

(TN: I can't quite picture White Bones doing that...)

Seeing that everyone had gulped down that Divine Spring Tea, Ma Zhengming's eyes flashed with a hint of a strange light. He then said very graciously,

"Eat the dishes!"

After he finished speaking, Ma Zhengming took the lead to take a boiled prawn, put it straight into his mouth and started chewing on it. Even though those prawns didn't have any seasoning, they still had a fresh and sweet taste when eaten.

After the 'end of the world', these dishes were rare delicacies and the survivors from Tooth Village had not tried them many times. Apart from Yue Zhong and White Bones, the other men all ravenously contested for those dishes and ate them in big mouthfuls, as if they were hungry ghouls that had just been reincarnated.

Yue Zhong also ate a few prawns but suddenly, he felt his body go

numb and immediately, he lost control of it. His expression changed and he looked towards Ma Zhengming, saying,

"Have you poisoned it?"

"What's happened? Why is it that I can't move anymore?"

"Damn! It's really numbing!"

Almost simultaneously, Liu Erhei, Cai Wen, Liu Qing, Zhang Er and He Guang's expressions all had a huge change. The chopsticks held in their hands fell to the floor and they collapsed powerlessly onto the table.

Looking at Yue Zhong and the five others, who had fallen into a paralysed state, Ma Zhengming's eyes flashed with a hint of joy and he explained,

"Poisoned it? I really haven't done that kind of thing. It's just that although this Divine Spring Tea can play the role of nourishing the body, at the same time, it also paralyses people's bodies for 5 minutes."

Yue Zhong's gaze hardened and he said in a heavy voice, "What are you attempting?"

Ma Zhengming had concealed the information about the paralysis effect of the Divine Spring Tea, so he obviously didn't hold any good intentions. Otherwise, he definitely would've told people about it beforehand.

Ma Zhengming smiled grimly at Yue Zhong and said,

"Little brother Yue Zhong, I was very attracted to that treasured blade in your hands. However, I knew that you definitely wouldn't sell it. As long as you made an unwise move though, you would perish. This way, the treasured blade in your hands will be all mine. After gaining that treasured blade, I will then use that big snake's scales to make a whole-body armor and so I won't have to be afraid of the zombies in Chen Village. After killing all of the zombies in there, I will be able to get hold of the resources in Chen

Village. As long as this cycle continues, my days will become better and better. For my future, the only way is to sacrifice you!"

Yue Zhong's expression didn't change and he asked aloud,

"Liu Erhei and the others have now seen your true colors. Do you want to kill them as well?"

"A person who will achieve great things doesn't bother with trifling matters. They will also very quickly go accompany you down there, to make you feel less lonely on the road to the Yellow Springs (TN: death/afterlife)." Ma Zhengming revealed a grim smile towards Liu Erhei and the others and said, "Relax, your wives and daughters, I will help you properly take care of them."

"Ma Zhengming you beast!"

"You brute! Even if I become a ghost I still wouldn't let you go!"

"Old Secretary, why don't you let me go!! I'm willing to do anything for you, I beg you to spare my life!"

As soon as Ma Zhengming had revealed his true colors, sounds of cursing and pleading were transmitted from the feast.

"Juan Zi! Come over here and kill them!" Ma Zhengming only gave a cold smile and loudly shouted. In order to paralyse Yue Zhong and the others, he had also drunk Divine Spring Tea, so he was also in a state of paralysis: he could only kill off Yue Zhong and those five by using others.

That middle-aged woman with ordinary looks walked out of the kitchen with a kitchen knife, standing beside Ma Zhengming as if she were a specter.

"Juan Zi, go kill them!" Ma Zhengming ordered loudly towards that middle-aged woman.

However, she merely stood beside him like a rock, not moving at all.

"Juan Zi?" Ma Zhengming said as his eyes flashed with a hint of

puzzlement.

"Ma Zhengming! We have already been married for 27 years. Ever since that day we married, I have always put up with your bad temper. I have put up with it for a whole 27 years. Even if I only express a tiny bit of dissatisfaction, you beat me. Do you take me as your wife or as your sandbag? I thought that I would always put up with it and properly live out the rest of my life. Yet after the world changed, you found one woman after another right in front of me. Have you considered my feelings before?"

"The women you found were each younger than another; Xiao Hong is so young that she could easily be your daughter. You haven't even let her go. Are you still human?"

Juan Zi's words revealed an incomparable chill, making Ma Zhengming feel as if his bones had frozen. He couldn't help but argue back, saying,

"I had to put my own life at risk to frantically look for food outside, only by doing this was I able to keep you fed. Xiao Hong followed me of her own volition, I have done nothing wrong!"

"Yes! I have always put up with you because you are able to find food from outside to feed us. However, right now the situation has changed. That monster residing in the small brook has already been killed by this person. As long as I kill you, I can go fishing in the small brook with a bunch of women in the same way. Tooth Village already has no need for you foul men."

Juan Zi's eyes flashed with a hint of craziness as she lifted the kitchen knife in her hands up high and crazily chopped down at the back Ma Zhengming's neck, right where it connected with the head.

Juan Zi was a woman of the countryside and often did farm work in Tooth Village, so her strength was greater than many of the men from cities.

Ma Zhengming was badly mutilated by Juan Zi very quickly and he let out a maddened yell, the blade over halfway through his neck. Seeing Ma Zhengming being badly mutilated, the 6 people sitting down all felt a wave of horror emerge in their hearts. Ma Zhengming's other wives all crouched in the corner, looking fearfully at this very bloody scene.

After frenzily killing off Ma Zhengming, Juan Zi took a small breather; she had a grim look on her face and her whole body was covered in blood. As if she were an evil spirit that had come out of a horror film, Juan Zi walked up to Yue Zhong and her eyes flashed with an ominous light. Without saying anything, she chopped down at Yue Zhong's head.

"Subdue her!" Yue Zhong ordered in a low voice.

At that moment, White Bones shot out a bone spear from its palm that instantly penetrated Juan Zi's right arm in which the knife was held, pinning her against the wall.

Seeing White Bones shoot out a bone spear, a hint of disbelief and madness. She desperately roared,

"How is this possible! People who have drunk the Divine Spring Tea will definitely have their bodies paralysed for five minutes. How can you move?"

Under the gaze of the others, Yue Zhong slowly stood up and coldly said,

"How is it impossible! Not only can he move, I can also move."

The Divine Spring Tea really did have a paralysis effect, but Yue Zhong's 87 points of vitality played a very big role: he was only paralysed for 30 seconds before he recovered his ability to move-it was just that he had continued staying at the side letting the show play out, since he might as well watch the carnage between the husband and wife.

Juan Zi looked at the upright Yue Zhong and her eyes flashed

with a hint of dimness, as she knew that it would be difficult for her to escape death.



# Chapter 206: Mother and Daughter

---

Yue Zhong looked at Juan Zi coldly and said, "Where's the Divine Spring Tea? Bring me to it and I will spare your life, but you'd better get lost from Tooth Village."

"Is that for real?" Juan Zi's eyes flashed with anticipation-nobody would want to die if given the choice.

White Bones retracted his Bone Spear and Juan Zi immediately fell from the wall. She looked at White Bones, which was capable of shooting such sharp spears, and her eyes had a hint of fear.

Yue Zhong coldly called out, "Lead on!"

Juan Zi gazed once more at the both of them and started to lead the way with big strides.

"It is this type of tea!" Juan Zi brought Yue Zhong along many turns before arriving at a burial site; right behind, there grew a small tea tree of not more than 30 cm tall with 7 forked branches, each branch growing 10 green tea leaves.

Yue Zhong walked towards the tea tree and an exotic fragrance wafted through the air, that was precisely the same fragrance as that of the Divine Spring Tea he had drunk before.

He pondered for a while before suddenly asking, "Are there many (zombie) corpses buried under here?"

Juan Zi's eyes flashed with surprise, "That's right! There are indeed many corpses buried here, how did you know that?"

Previously, the Lifesaver Grass, which had contributed to the recovery of many subordinates under Yue Zhong, was also discovered near a burial site. In the process of cultivating the Lifesaver Grass, Yue Zhong found out that the meat of Mutant Beasts and also zombie corpses, basically diseased meat, acted as a sort of effective fertilizer for the Lifesaver Grass, encouraging its growth. If it did not have any nourishment from the meat of

zombies or mutant beasts, its growth was unbearably slow. It was because of this that Yue Zhong came to the conclusion that the Divine Spring Tea was likely of the same circumstances, growing on top of corpses.

Yue Zhong ordered White Bones, "Dig it out, be careful not to damage the roots."

Upon receiving the order, White Bones bent its frame, 10 fingers pierced into the earth and it began digging frenzily.

With White Bones' efforts, the Divine Spring Tea tree that could strengthen one's body was dug up together with a sizeable amount of soil, before being wrapped in a big piece of cloth.

Juan Zi saw that White Bones had finished its task and asked meekly, "Can I go now?"

She was not willing to stay with Yue Zhong or White Bones for a moment longer than necessary-after all, she had wanted to kill them earlier. Being by their side was extremely stressful.

Yue Zhong glanced at the vicious woman and blandly said, "I promised you before and I won't go back on my word. Go back first!"

Juan Zi saw that Yue Zhong had no intentions of killing her and could not help but heave a sigh of relief. Her eyes flashed as she quietly walked behind Yue Zhong.

Upon returning to the village, Liu Erhei and the rest had recovered their mobility. However, they still remained in the room where Ma Zhengming had been hacked to death.

Tooth Village was very small, so Liu Erhei and the rest did not know where else they could turn to. Prior to this, their leader was Ma Zhengming, yet he had been killed. For the time being, they could only stay in the room blankly, with their hearts full of fear and unease over how Yue Zhong was going to deal with them.

Seeing that Yue Zhong's party of three had come back into the

house, their heartbeats accelerated, not knowing how Yue Zhong would deal with them.

"Since I promised you that you can live after helping to find the Divine Spring Tea, I naturally would not go back on my words." Yue Zhong looked at Juan Zi and spoke slowly.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Juan Zi's originally pale face regained some of its color.

At that moment, a cold glint flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes as he took one swipe with his sword down towards Juan Zi's shoulder, cleanly dismembering her entire right arm.

"However, while I did promise you're leaving alive, I did not say you would be leaving in one piece."

"AH!!!!!" Juan Zi screamed in a miserable voice, crying loudly as the stump of her shoulder bled profusely.

Yue Zhong coldly barked, "Get lost immediately! Otherwise I'll kill you!"

With regards to those who had intended to harm him, Yue Zhong was never lenient. This time, if it was not for the location of the Divine Spring Tea, he would not have left Juan Zi alive.

The outside world was now filled with zombies and mutant beasts everywhere. For someone as ordinary as Juan Zi, unless some fortunate incident were to occur, she would either starve to death or be eaten by the zombies and mutant beasts.

With the words from Yue Zhong, Juan Zi glared at him with venomous hatred, before gritting her teeth and rushing out of the garden towards the outside world.

Seeing this scene, Liu Erhei's party of 5 could not help but tremble, their faces pale as they looked at Yue Zhong and awaited their fate.

Yue Zhong eyed the 5 of them and coldly said, "From now on,

Tooth Village belongs to me! All the people are my personal belongings. You are all my property. Are there any objections?"

With Ma Zhengming's death, Yue Zhong harbored the intention to possess Tooth Village. The village had over 50 survivors, and in the current circumstances where the human populace was dwindling, it was considered a decent treasure.

White Bones was also hoisting its White Bone Axe on its shoulders, staring at the 5 of them; if any of them dared to make a move, it would not hesitate to kill them.

Liu Erhei and the rest of them could feel the thick killing intent from White Bones-if they disagreed, the person in black robes would not spare them.

Liu Erhei immediately called out loudly, "I have no problems. From now on, Boss Yue is the Village's Head. If anyone dares to not comply, I will punish that person myself!"

"Boss Yue, I'll listen to you!"

"Boss Yue, whatever you ask of me from now on, I'll do it!"

The rest all chimed in one after another. In the current world, following someone was not just following; instead, it ensured survival if the person was a strong evolver. As long as Yue Zhong did not ask of things that crossed their bottom line, they would be willing to work for him.

Yue Zhong continued to say, "Very good! Who knows the way to Chen Village?"

"I know!"

"....." All of them rushed to answer.

"Liu Erhei, you go back and prepare, tomorrow you shall lead the way. Cai Wen, when I'm gone, you will be the temporary leader. Gather everyone to go fish. I will come back to bring you all away after some time. Disperse!"

After giving a number of orders, Yue Zhong finally dismissed the members.

"Boss Yue, what about us?" After a little hesitation, the pretty wife of Ma Zhengming walked to Yue Zhong's side and asked uneasily.

The rest of the ladies all looked towards Yue Zhong. If he wanted them to sleep with him, they would definitely not resist. Before this, they had followed Ma Zhengming so that they could eat their fill; as for feelings, it was basically zilch. If Yue Zhong wanted them, they would not mind changing to serve another man.

"Go back to your rooms and rest!"

Yue Zhong waved his hands after taking a look at them. Although he was not someone virtuous, he was used to the likes of Ji Qingwu, Guo Yu, Lu Wen and Zhang Jingqiao, the rest of these women basically could not hold a candle to them.

(TN: Zhang Jingqiao is the rebel girl who hasn't appeared for a while. Also, here's the real question: what has happened to the tea that was stored in White Bones, who transformed his body into a cup to hold it?) The next morning, Yue Zhong brought Liu Erhei and left Tooth Village, towards the direction of Chen Village.

In a certain location at the top of a 3-storey building in Chen Village, having starved for 6 days, Zhuo Yatong was looking at her frail-looking daughter Yun Caiwei, her eyes gleaming with a strange light. Her stomach was growling like crazy, her hunger enveloping her entire body and slowly eroding her sense of reason and energy.

The amount of food in the room had already mostly been consumed 3 weeks ago, and during the span of these 3 weeks, Zhuo Yatong and her daughter Yun Caiwei had eaten very sparingly, taking small mouthfuls of food each day and limiting their movements as much as possible. However, 6 days ago, they had finally wiped their food clean. In these 6 days, Zhuo Yatong was

constantly tortured by hunger to the extent that she almost wanted to die: at the same time, under that immense hunger, a crazy thought had blossomed in her mind: "Eat her!!"

"No! She's my daughter. My precious daughter!" (TN: SMEAGOLLLL! Divinecelestialbeinglol: Kun, I'm scared of you now.)

"Eat her!!"

Under the intense moral conflict, Zhuo Yatong seemed to have been driven mad by torture. The look in her eyes as she gazed at her daughter changed, as though she had just seen a roasted turkey.

Under the state where her mind was half collapsed, she subconsciously got closer to her daughter, her hands stretching out to Yun Caiwei's neck.

Yun Caiwei opened her loveable eyes, rubbing them gently, and pulled out a piece of chocolate not even as big as a fingernail from her right pocket. She broke it into half and handed one half to Zhuo Yatong, saying, "Mummy, time to eat!"

(TN: Yea it was almost dinner time and you were the course, little girl, shudder really makes one realize how fortunate most of us are now.) Upon hearing her daughter's voice, Zhuo Yatong regained her senses and saw her own hands on her daughter's neck. A chilling sense of fear rise in her heart. If she had really killed her own daughter, she would break down and become insane.

Zhuo Yatong hugged Yun Caiwei tightly as she bawled, "Caiwei, you eat, you eat!"

Yun Caiwei continued on very sensibly, "Mummy, eat! Only when you eat, will you have energy."

Zhuo Yatong released her hug and smiled sadly, before taking the bigger piece and pushing it into her daughter's mouth as she took the smaller half and ate it.

"Little Wei, you stay here okay, mummy will go look for some food." Zhuo Yatong instructed Yun Cai Wei to stay as she got up shakily, walking towards the kitchen.

The kitchen was already swept clean of all edible items: even salt, soy sauce and items like vinegar were all eaten by the mother and daughter pair.

However, her aim was not these items-rather, it was a vegetable knife. She feared that she would commit something unthinkable under her frenzy, so her heart was dead-set.

She picked up the knife, her eyes empty; as her hands trembled uncontrollably, her heart also beat with fear and unease.

"If only someone could save us right now, I would agree to whatever he wants." Zhuo Yatong laughed bitterly before killing off that hope, closing her eyes as she swung the knife down towards her left hand.

(TN: Is that you, Zeff from One Piece?)

# Chapter 207: The Alluring Zhuo Yatong

---

Just as Zhuo Yatong closed her eyes, there came a sound of something being broken into from the outside.

Her hand trembled and the vegetable knife in her hand fell to the ground. She was not willing to die in the first place, so hearing the weird sound from outside led her to have renewed hope.

Zhuo Yatong ran quickly to the window and looked outside. Very quickly, she saw many zombies outside the convenience store lying on the ground; it seemed that the door had been kicked wide open.

Not long after, 3 people exited from the convenience store, with one of them hoisting a huge backpack, 1 holding a pot of the Divine Spring Tea and the last person also carrying a huge luggage bag, obviously filled up with items. Zhuo Ya Tong mustered all the strength she could summon and shouted loudly, "Help!! Save us!!!"

Yue Zhong had just brought White Bones and Liu Erhei out of the convenience store when he heard the plea for help.

Yue Zhong looked towards the direction where Zhuo Yatong had screamed from, and pondered for a while, before turning and walking towards her. He knew that there could be survivors in this village, yet he was not prioritizing their rescue. However, if it was convenient, he would not mind lending a hand.

Liu Erhei continued following Yue Zhong closely. While the trip in Chen Village was considered smooth sailing for Yue Zhong, it was fraught with dangers for someone like Liu Erhei. Without Yue Zhong's protection, he would not be able to walk beyond 100m from this place.

The convenience store was only 10m away from the Zhuo Yatong's residence, and the zombies that littered the way were disposed of easily by Yue Zhong.

Arriving in front of that small bungalow, with just the swing of



his blade, the huge door was cleaved in two and he kicked with strength, barging right in.

Yue Zhong strode up to the top with big steps and saw Yun Caiwei curled up into a ball, as if she was a weak cub, looking up at Yue Zhong's party with her huge eyes. She was dying of hunger and did not even possess enough energy to escape.

He walked to her side, taking one look and concluding that this little doll-like lolita had been starving. He pulled out a lollipop (Uhhhh...) and a bottle of water from the backpack, giving them to Yun Caiwei and saying, "Quickly, eat!"

(TN: Seriously what is with this author and his fascination with Lolis)

When a person has not eaten for a long period, he or she cannot suddenly eat huge amounts, or they can choke to death. That was the reason for why Yue Zhong only gave this girl a high calorie lollipop.

Yun Caiwei did not seem to mind that the food was from a stranger. She immediately put it into her mouth and started sucking it. The sweet taste of the lollipop seemed to give her a sense of revival. She felt as if it was the best thing on earth right at this moment.

Yun Caiwei was captivated by the lollipop and after eating it for a few moments, before using her strong willpower to suppress the desire to keep eating the lollipop, she used those huge eyes of hers to plead pitifully, "Big brother! Mummy's inside! Please go save her!!"

"Got it!" Yue Zhong immediately stood up and went into the kitchen.

Zhuo Yatong had used her remaining strength to shout earlier. After that, she crumpled down onto the floor, without any energy left to even climb up. If no one came to save her, she would

definitely become like a starved mummy.

Yue Zhong came into the kitchen and saw that Zhuo Yatong had fainted; pulling out a can of cola, he immediately poured it into her mouth.

Having drunk 2 mouthfuls of cola at once, Zhuo Yatong choked a bit before opening her eyes, seeing Yue Zhong feeding her.

Yue Zhong pulled out a piece of chocolate and stuffed it into her mouth, "This is chocolate! You should still have the energy to chew, right!?"

Zhuo Yatong looked at Yue Zhong and a small tear fell from her eyes as she started chewing the chocolate weakly. Soon after, she swallowed with great difficulty and regained her energy. After resting for a while, she looked at Yue Zhong expectantly before slowly climbing up. She wanted to eat, really wanted to eat.

Yue Zhong looked at Zhuo Yatong and said softly, "I just saved you and the little girl outside. If you want to follow me, you have to listen to my orders. I will protect you and feed you to the best of my capabilities. If you do not agree, I will not force you and we will part ways here."

Right now, Zhuo Yatong had a face completely covered dust and dirt, her hair was disheveled and there was a sour odor on her body. She had not bathed in close to 2 months, therefore her body naturally stank. Yue Zhong was not keen to bring her nor the little burden along with him, so coming here to save them was also about the most he could do as a human being. If they were to decline, he would immediately leave.

"My name is Zhuo Yatong and the girl outside is my daughter, Yun Caiwei. We are willing to follow you and your orders." Zhuo Ya Tong replied a little weakly. She knew that it was a critical decision to make, because if this man in front of her left, the mother-daughter pair would definitely die from hunger here.

"Eat this and properly rest for a while!" Yue Zhong pulled out a dozen lollipops, 3 chocolate bars and a small cake, before placing them into Zhuo Yatong's arms. Then he said lightly, "You have starved for too long, so you can only eat this for now. Once you have recovered a little, I will let you eat your fill."

When Zhuo Yatong saw the amount of high-calorie foods placed in front of her, her eyes flashed and she immediately tore into a bar of chocolate, her hands trembling as she unwrapped it. Without a care for her image or dignity, she stuffed it into her mouth whilst at the same time, her hands were already on the small piece of cake, also trembling as she unwrapped the packaging.

Yue Zhong looked at her as she was wolfing down the food and asked, "Can you drive?"

"Yes!" With her mouth full of food, she used her throat to sound out an affirmation. She grabbed the bottle of mineral water and washed down the food with a few gulps before replying hastily, "In the garage there is a BMW and the fuel inside can last us for at least 60km."

Zhuo Yatong knew she needed to show her value as a team member, otherwise she might be discarded. Hiding in this 3-storey bungalow, she had witnessed many cases in the leather shop nearby where people had been forced out, only to be eaten by the zombies. This was precisely because those people could only eat and were not useful to the boss.

10 days ago, even the boss of the leather shop could not bear the hunger anymore and made an attempt to enter the convenience store. The effort was in vain as he was devoured by the zombies and the scene had shocked Zhuo Yatong, preventing her from stepping out of the bungalow to look for food.

Yue Zhong frowned, as cars like BMWs were not of practical use in the current world. These types of cars would be dented just after

a few hits with the zombies; only vehicles like Hummers and the Dongfeng vehicles with a sturdy frame were more reliable. Using them to hit and crush zombies would not be a problem. Looking at the weak Zhuo Yatong, he pulled out a chunk of cooked Mutant Beast meat, saying, "Eat this."

Zhuo Yatong received the meat and took a huge bite. Not long after, a warmth blossomed in her body and she felt that her strength was recovering consistently. She was pleasantly surprised and immediately asked, "What treasure is this?"

Yue Zhong saw that Zhuo Yatong had recovered her energy in such a short time and his eyes could not help but flash with surprise, "You can stand and walk on your own? I don't want to stay here for too long."

Zhuo Yatong used her strength to prop herself up, standing up shakily. While she still felt weak, her body had a hint of energy. She looked at Yue Zhong and said firmly, "I can walk now!"

"Let's go!" Yue Zhong looked at her and immediately went outside in big strides.

With just a thought, Yue Zhong made White Bones pick up Yun Caiwei in one of its arms as though it was carrying a little kitten and it followed out. Zhuo Yatong got into the garage, and started to drive the BMW out. Yue Zhong sat in the front passenger seat, while Yun Caiwei and Liu Erhei sat behind.

White Bones acted as the vanguard in front of the BMW, clearing out the normal zombies that had been attracted to the commotion of the car starting.

As soon as the zombies got within range, White Bones would immediately decapitate them, so that they could not even touch the car. Under the protection of White Bones, Yue Zhong's group quickly made it out of Chen Village.

When they passed a small stream, Yue Zhong got Zhuo Yatong to

disembark and lightly said, "You and little Wei should go wash up!"

Zhuo Yatong's face turned red and she immediately got out of the car, walking towards the stream. She knew how she must have smelled after not having bathed for close to 3 months. Yue Zhong also grabbed the little loli Yun Caiwei and walked towards the stream.

"Can you turn around!?" After hesitating for a moment, Zhuo Ya Tong pleaded to Yue Zhong. She was not used to bathing under someone else's supervision.

(TN: Like, who is used to bathing under someone else's supervision?)

Yue Zhong took a look at her and said warmly, "Although there are no zombies in the wild, there are many more fearsome mutant beasts. If you two don't want my protection, I can wait outside for you."

Zhuo Ya Tong was frightened by this and immediately replied, "Don't go!!"

After that, she pondered a little more, before entering the stream fully-clothed with Yun Caiwei.

The water was not deep, only up to their waist, and it was so clear that one could see the bottom; other than the various schools of fishes and prawns, there were no scary mutant beasts to be seen. The moment the mother and daughter pair entered the water, they began scrubbing themselves with fervor.

After the world had changed, due to the fear of being infected, Zhuo Yatong and Yun Caiwei did not dare take a bath. They also only drank from bottled water and water that they had stored before. This was the first time that they had taken a bath for 3 months.

Yun Caiwei had also eaten the meat Yue Zhong gave her, so even though she had not regained her full strength, it could be said that

she had a little more energy now.

Yue Zhong sat down boredly, observing the surroundings. In the wilderness of the new world, the mutant beasts were considered the most dangerous existence out here, hence the moment he let his guard down, the mother and daughter could be in danger.

"I'm done! Do you have a set of dry clothes to spare?"

An extremely soft and beautiful voice sounded, making Yue Zhong turn towards the source. His breathing sped up. He saw an extremely beautiful woman with long black hair and snow-white skin, her slender body, long legs and perky butt like features from an exquisite painting; she exuded an alluring mature charm. Her clothes were all wet and transparent, and she was standing right there in front of him.

[TN: For those who have studied a little Chinese, the Chinese like to use a lot of idioms and 4-character phrases to describe things, like the weather and people in general. The entire last 2 sentences possessed 7 such phrases, which obviously shows that the author must have been fantasizing about someone, but in general writing skills, it is quite bothersome to translate HAHA but you get the picture. When I read the description, Liu Yifei comes to mind. She used to be my fantasy...]

(Divinecelestialbeinglol: and now you know how to make Kun do more TLing!)

## Chapter 208: Pushing Down Zhuo Yatong

---

That stunning beauty full of mature charm was precisely Zhuo Yatong. A soaked white shirt clung tightly onto her full figure, completely outlining her beautiful body. Yue Zhong could even see her black lace bra and sexy little black \*\*, full of mystery and maturity.

He was dumbstruck and stared at the woman in front of him; his throat was slightly dry and an evil fire gushed out from his groin, making his 'flag' suddenly rise up. Up until now, he had constantly been busy fighting, searching for resources, approving documents and thinking about how he should go about improving his power in the future. Everyday, he was dead tired from all this business. He had already gone for many days without satisfying his own desires. This time, place and scene had given birth to a strong urge inside him, making him want to take possession of this beautiful woman, whose body was extremely pretty all over and was full of a mature charm.

Zhuo Yatong also felt Yue Zhong's aggressive gaze; she was very familiar with this sort of gaze, since before the 'end of the world', there were many men who had once eyed her with the same aggressive gaze. It was just that due to fearing her family's background, those men didn't make a move; instead, they behaved courteously and gentlemanly to conceal their inner desires.

Yue Zhong suddenly took a big stride forwards and directly hugged Zhuo Yatong.

Zhuo Yatong let out a cry and anxiously exclaimed, "Don't. Don't do it here, little Wei is watching!"

(TN: I believe there's a more important matter at hand here, m'lady...)

She had already begun to make preparations for becoming Yue Zhong's \*\*. However, she didn't want her daughter to see the

shameful scene.

Yun Caiwei opened her innocent eyes wide as she watched Yue Zhong hug Zhuo Yatong and her eyes flashed with a strange light.

"White Bones!" Yue Zhong let out a low growl like a wild beast.

White Bones' right hand extended up to Yun Caiwei and grabbed onto her clothes; the bone shrunk back and took Yun Caiwei away.

Yue Zhong flipped over Zhuo Yatong's body straight away and grabbed onto her ample buttocks, entering her \*\* like a naughty puppy might jump into one's embrace.

An incomparably comfortable feeling surged into Yue Zhong's heart as he wantonly violated the stunning beauty below. It also made her constantly let out captivating \*\* cries from her cherry lips.

Only after sex did Yue Zhong carry Zhuo Yatong into the little stream for her to fully cleanse herself.

"Change into these!" Yue Zhong rummaged around in his backpack, taking out a pair of jeans and a white shirt before tossing them to Zhuo Yatong. In his storage ring, there was only this type of clothing and no women's clothes.

Zhuo Yatong hesitated for a moment before changing her clothes right in front of Yue Zhong, displaying her beautiful \*\* in front of his eyes.

That pair of jeans wrapped tightly around Zhuo Yatong's buttocks and her ample \*\* were also almost about to make the buttons on the white shirt burst apart. She hesitated for a moment again before telling Yue Zhong,

"It's a little tight."

After having intimate sex with Zhuo Yatong, Yue Zhong's tone when speaking to her had also softened to some degree.

"I know now! In the future, I will help you to find a set, but for



now, just bear with it."

Zhuo Yatong gently nodded and said,

"Mm!"

Looking at the sexy and impressive Zhuo Yatong, Yue Zhong suddenly took her into his arms and his big hands slipped into her clothes, grabbing onto that extremely ample pair of 'jade rabbits' full of elasticity. As he smelt her body's fragrance after bathing, he lightly said,

"Is Yun Caiwei your daughter? Today I see that your age does not exceed 27 or 28, how can you already have a daughter this old?"

Zhuo Yatong was sexy and also had a mature charm. Yue Zhong had already made her become his own \*\*: only now did he wish to understand her past. If it was a normal situation, Yue Zhong would have no interest in her story whatsoever.

As she lay in Yue Zhong's embrace, Zhuo Yatong slowly recounted her own past.

This year, she was only 28 years old and was right at the golden age. Her daughter Yun Caiwei was also only 11 this year. When she was 16, Zhuo Yatong had fallen in love with a man, and had thus 'eaten the forbidden fruit'. Not long after, she conceived and subsequently gave birth to that man's child. However, as soon as he saw their child, that man was scared of the burden and responsibility of child-rearing and broke up with Zhuo Yatong.

Zhuo Yatong's family could be regarded as a prominent one. Upon knowing of this matter, the elders of her family were absolutely furious and chased the mother-daughter pair away to a remote little village as some sort of banishment. Zhuo Yatong was very brave and relied on her own efforts, some funding from her parents and also her family's prestige to gradually operate a business that produced a decent career for her. Before the 'end of the world', she was already kind of a rich woman with a net worth

of several million.

At the time Z-day had commenced, Zhuo Yatong had just been preparing for a birthday party with her daughter. They had stored a large amount of grain, cakes, pastries and drinks in advance. It was because of this large amount of stored-up food that she and her daughter were able to luckily hold on for 3 months until Yue Zhong had rescued them.

With some overbearingness, Yue Zhong said,

"From now on, you are my \*\*. I will not let you be touched by other men, nor will I let you fall in love with other men. If I discover that you have betrayed me, I will definitely not let you go."

"I know now! Husband!" Zhuo Yatong said coquettishly as she curled up like a lazy cat in Yue Zhong's embrace. This was the first time in many years that she had acted as such to a man and it made her feel quite good.

If those men who had tried to court Zhuo Yatong before the 'end of the world' saw this, it would definitely make their eyes shatter all over the place. It's important to know that back then, her style at the market always appeared as an image of a strong woman in the eyes of others; she was an independent, modern woman.

If it was before the 'end of the world', men like Yue Zhong definitely wouldn't be the sort of partner chosen by Zhuo Yatong. She was able to build up a career without any help from a man and lived very well. However, after the 'end of the world', Zhuo Yatong could only choose to rely on Yue Zhong; she had rich experience and had witnessed the cruelty of post-apocalypse humans. Otherwise, with her beauty, she would be bound to experience a lot of suffering.

Upon hearing this stunning beauty Zhuo Yatong call him 'husband' and act so coquettishly towards him, Yue Zhong felt very comfortable. In his current \*\*, only Guo Yu's appearance and

temperament could be compared to that of Zhuo Yatong's. However, one was a sweet fruit that was gradually ripening, whilst the other was already mature, the whole body revealing a honey-sweet fruit: both were different types of beauties and couldn't really be compared.

Yue Zhong gently let Zhuo Yatong down and said in a deep voice, "Right! Let's go!"

Zhuo Yatong straightened her clothes, smiled sweetly and said, "Mm!"

After she finished speaking, as if she were a little girl who had just fallen in love, Zhuo Yatong's soft little hand as white as snow held onto Yue Zhong's big hand and they walked forward.

As he held onto Zhuo Yatong's little hand, Yue Zhong's heart was slightly swayed. Even though he had once had sex with 3 others, it was his first time holding hands with a woman whilst walking. Before, he had constantly been in battle, in more battles and in even more battles again; all this desperate effort was for the sake of survival and evolving.

Yue Zhong was not really a genius at fighting; he could only grow stronger through his constant, repeated efforts in finding opportunities to become stronger. He raised his own strength little by little, increasing his own power. Wave after wave of unexpected events made him exhausted, to the extent that he couldn't even properly go on a date.

(TN: raws were kinda vague about the sentence above but you get the idea~)

Holding onto Zhuo Yatong's hand, Yue Zhong arrived in front of the car.

"What a pretty \*\*!! Is she really that Zhuo Yatong? Boss Yue really has good luck." Liu Erhei looked at Zhuo Yatong with her stunning looks, sexy figure and dazzling fashion, and his eyes

flashed with a little shock. Since he was experienced in these sorts of matters, he naturally knew what had just happened below with Yue Zhong and Zhuo Yatong.

The loli Yun Caiwei trotted up to Yue Zhong and Zhuo Yatong, and using that pair of big blinking eyes, she asked Zhuo Yatong with an innocent expression,

"Mummy, what game did you play just now down there with big brother?"

Right now, Yun Caiwei had also changed into a large set of men's clothes; although this made her appearance rather strange, her innocent sweetness was still hard to conceal.

Upon hearing her own daughter's question, Zhuo Yatong's face was instantly covered in a scarlet glow as she felt endlessly ashamed. She had no way whatsoever of telling her innocent daughter that just now, she had actually been 'battling in the wilderness' with a man.

Yue Zhong went up and took a look at Yun Caiwei before saying in an unquestionable tone,

"We are going now. Little Wei, get into the car!"

"Yes! Big brother!" Yun Caiwei's pixy-like eyes turned and she didn't continue to ask this question that made Zhuo Yatong feel awkward. In a well-behaved manner, she went to the back seat and sat down there.

Gratefully, Zhuo Yatong glanced at Yue Zhong and said,

"Thank you!"

Yue Zhong smiled at her and directly sat down in the front seat. Zhuo Yatong got on as well and started the engine, leaving this place.

Evening. Dinner was barbecued meat, cakes and milk.

Zhuo Yatong and Yun Caiwei had both starved for a long time, so

as soon as they saw the delicious food, they couldn't resist and ravenously began to eat.

As he watched Zhuo Yatong eat in such an unrestrained manner, Yue Zhong gently patted her on the back and said,

"Eat a little slower! I still have a lot of food here."

"Mm!"

Zhuo Yatong's pretty face blushed and only then did she slow down her eating speed, regaining her elegant demeanor again. Coupled with her own stunning looks and that she had originally received good etiquette training as a young miss, even the picture of her eating could be regarded as a beautiful scene.

Yun Caiwei's big eyes wandered around a little on Yue Zhong and Zhuo Yatong's bodies, the light in her eyes briefly flashing before disappearing.

Liu Erhei sneakily took a couple of glances at Zhuo Yatong before not daring to look again, afraid that he might be charmed by that mature, sexy and elegant woman if he kept on looking.

(TN: Left out a couple of words in the description above because I think it's just overkill.)

"Husband! I have a headache!" After eating a chunk of barbecued meat, Zhuo Yatong's pretty face was suddenly dyed with a red glow. Both of her eyes seemed lost and her body swayed a few times before collapsing onto the ground.

"What's happened?" As he watched Zhuo Yatong collapse onto the ground, Yue Zhong's heart was shaken and he immediately brought her into his embrace. He saw that her face looked abnormally flushed and a sense of foreboding poured out from his heart. Immediately, he reached out and touched her forehead, and his hand felt an extreme heat.

"Do you have a fever?!" Yue Zhong's heart sank. In this apocalypse world where doctors were hard to find, there was a

great probability of dying from an illness.

## Chapter 209: The Evolved Zhuo Yatong

---

If it were in Qing Yuan County, Yue Zhong could get over 20 doctors to help diagnose and treat Zhuo Yatong, but here, he could only rely on the Life-Saving Grass and some herbs, stuffing them into her mouth and watching over her.

In Yue Zhong's storage ring, he had amassed quite a number of herbs. After all, the Life-Saving Grass was not entirely a miracle drug: although it could help recover internal injuries and treat external wounds, with regards to illnesses resulting from viruses, it was not much of a help.

Yun Caiwei looked at her mother whose face was currently pale, her entire body perspiring and her breath ragged. She pulled on Yue Zhong's hands and asked worriedly,

"Mommy! Big Brother, what's wrong with her?"

In this world, Yun Caiwei could only rely on her mother and Yue Zhong, so seeing her mother like this was enough to cause her to panic.

Yue Zhong helped Zhuo Yatong wipe away the sweat on her face while consoling Yun Caiwei: "Don't worry, it will all be alright!"

Yue Zhong himself did not know what had happened to Zhuo Yatong, but he knew for a fact that he could not be rash. Being rash would not help anything, so he pulled Yun Caiwei away from Zhuo Yatong's side and placed her into the car.

After the world had changed, many sorts of strange happenings had taken place. If Zhuo Yatong suddenly became a zombie, it would not be considered as unexpected.

Half an hour passed, then followed by a full hour, and with the flow of time, an entire night passed, yet Zhuo Yatong's fever did not subside one bit, although she had not turned into a zombie.

On the 2nd day, Yue Zhong cooked porridge again to feed Zhuo

Yatong and helped her wipe away her perspiration, busily taking care of her for an entire day. There was no intention to progress from their current spot.

On the morning of the 3rd day, Zhuo Yatong furrowed her eyebrows, opening those beautiful eyes of hers and seeing Yue Zhong lying beside her, obviously having taken care of her for an entire day.

Emotions rushed up in Zhuo Yatong's heart and at this moment, she fell in love with this youth younger than her by 8 - 9 years. Women were usually emotional creatures; whilst Yue Zhong had come to their aid at the start, she was thankful but not moved. Even their tryst by the riverside happened as a way of thanking Yue Zhong for saving them and it was not out of love, hence at that time, she didn't actually develop any feelings for him.

Yet when she found that Yue Zhong had taken care of her unconditionally when she was unwell, she realized that she had truly fallen for this man. This was because regardless of what his motives were, he had personally taken care of her very carefully, and this type of trait was hard to find in the current world.

Zhuo Yatong couldn't help but reach out her hand to stroke Yue Zhong's face.

As he possessed a strong sense of wariness, Yue Zhong had awakened the moment Zhuo Yatong had moved. He grabbed her delicate hands in his, saying,

"You're up! Let me go cook some porridge for you."

Not a single mushy sentence like "I love you" or "Without you I'll die" came from his mouth. Yet this simple sentence had moved Zhuo Yatong, her emotions stirred.

Yue Zhong also did not know that he had unintentionally won the heart of this beauty. He had chosen to take care of her simply because he had treated her as his woman, and he had the



responsibility to. He knew that even though he had won her body, he did not assume that he could win her heart.

Zhuo Yatong looked at Yue Zhong and a hint of tenderness flashed in her eyes. She said,

"I'm fine now, let me prepare the food! Looking after her man is a woman's basic duty."

After which, Zhuo Yatong sat up.

The moment she sat up, she was full of mature charm and her entire body seemed as though it was free of unnecessary weight. That pair of voluptuous mounds that were full yet soft at the same time seemed to push her unbuttoned blouse out even further, exhibiting her tender, snow-white skin to Yue Zhong. It was breathtakingly beautiful.

[TN: Yes, such a vivid imagination ;)]

Yue Zhong only took in the scene for a few breaths but it made everything else seem just as beautiful too. It was just for a few moments, yet he felt the surge of desire; should he continue looking, he was afraid he would leap on top of her again. He was deeply attracted to her mature body and demeanor.

Zhuo Yatong saw Yue Zhong's gaze sweep over her body and her mouth curled upwards-she was clearly delighted. With regards to her attractiveness, she was very confident.

Yue Zhong looked toward the corner of the tent and said lightly, "Are there any changes in your body?"

Zhuo Yatong became silent for a while before she suddenly responded in alarm,

"Husband, I think I've become an Evolver."

"An Evolver?" Yue Zhong heard this and his mind immediately went blank. He had a lot of Enhancers in his team, but as for true Evolvers like Yao Yao, she was the only one whom he knew. It was

really the first time that Yue Zhong had come across the process of an Evolution.

Yue Zhong continued his questions, saying,

"What are your current abilities and skills? In other words, did you gain anything during the evolution?"

Yao Yao was considered an agility-based Evolver. Yue Zhong had tried asking her before, right after her evolution and obtaining a huge boost in agility: every time she gained an increase in abilities from the system, other than 2 points of free allocation, she would gain a fixed increase in agility. It could be said that when comparing Evolvers with the normal Enhancers, the Evolvers actually reaped more benefits.

Zhuo Yatong's face did a weird change and she hesitated a little before saying,

"My Strength had received the strongest boost. Currently, my stats are Level 1, Strength 25, Agility 13, Vitality 12, Spirit 11, Stamina 12, and Endurance 13."

"Evolvers really do have an advantage!" Yue Zhong was partly depressed yet also happy for Zhuo Yatong at the same time.

Zhuo Yatong's basic attributes were already above average, hence even if she was only Level 1, after her evolution, she had attributes that had already surpassed normal Level 10 Enhancers. The 25 points of strength had bestowed upon her an immense strength. If she gave it her all, she could probably snap the neck of a normal zombie with just one punch.

Yue Zhong waved his hands and retrieved 3 Skill Books, throwing them to Zhuo Ya Tong and saying,

"These 3 books are for you. As long as you want to learn them, you can easily do it."

Those 3 Skill Books were the [Level 2 Skill: Super Strength Enhancement], [Level 2 Skill: High Speed Movement] and the

[Level 3 Skill: Enormous Power Solidification]. The Level 3 Skill book was obtained when Yue Zhong had killed the Mutant Water Snake. He had already learnt it before, hence there was no need to relearn. After receiving the 3 books, with just a thought, they turned into streams of light and entered her sea of knowledge, uniting to form strange runes within.

Yue Zhong retrieved a set of white gloves, Level 1 Enhanced Boots, a Replica Tang Sword, a Level 2 Armor and the Water Snake Skin Cape that he had swapped out earlier, passing it all to Zhuo Yatong.

That Water Snake Skin Cape was 1 of 4 sets that Yue Zhong had kept prepared in his ring. After all, being in constant battles could cause either the Rat King's Skin or Water Snake Skin to rupture, therefore when he had fully equipped Zhuo Ya Tong, her strength reached 41 points, stronger than most normal people by 4 times. If she used the Strength Enhancement Skill, she could unleash a strength 7 times that of a normal person. However, even though she possessed such strength, she did not have the relevant experience in battle. Any Level 10 Enhancer under Yue Zhong's training could easily dispose of Zhuo Yatong who had not gone through any training.

However, the fact remained that her strength vastly outstripped that of other normal Enhancers. It was precisely because of this that Yue Zhong chose to invest in her, giving her 3 skill books in one go.

"Is this my strength?"

Zhuo Yatong casually lifted up Yue Zhong's backpack that weighed a few dozen kilos and she couldn't believe that she, who looked so frail, could actually possess such strength.

Yue Zhong took a look at Zhuo Yatong and said in a deep voice,

"Yatong, you are now an Evolver and your abilities have vastly surpassed normal zombies. Now you possess the strength, but still

lack the actual experience to battle a zombie. After this, you will need to handle 3 normal zombies by yourself. Until you have finished disposing of 3 zombies, I will not lend a hand. Do you understand?"

Zhuo Yatong was not a stupid person, so as soon as she saw the firm expression on Yue Zhong's face, she gritted her teeth and replied heavily,

"Understood!"

As they continued on their journey at top speed, Yue Zhong's party came across a highway which was packed with many private vehicles.

On that densely packed highway, there were many zombies roaming around as well. Upon hearing the noise of the BMW, a number of the zombies started shambling over.

Yue Zhong saw the zombies making their way over and ordered White Bones,

"Leave one alive, kill the rest!"

The moment White Bones received the order, it moved as quick as lightning, rushing into the midst of the zombies in a short span of a few breaths. Immediately, White Bones waved its axe like a tornado, killing all but one before returning to Yue Zhong's side.

Yue Zhong took a glance at the remaining zombie before giving Zhuo Ya Tong the order,

"Go! Finish it! Your strength is much stronger than it! All of your attributes are superior to these zombies, so as long as you can muster the courage, you can kill them."

Zhuo Yatong grabbed her Tang Sword and walked a few steps forward. However, the moment she saw the rotting face with 2 huge holes as well as the blackened teeth, the murky white eyes and the shrivelled body, she could not help but feel fear rising in her heart. Her body trembled and she looked back at Yue Zhong.

Most people would not be able to overcome their fear of the grotesque appearance as well as the fear of infection if they didn't try killing the zombies. They also would not be able to engage in a battle with them, not to mention a brawl. To brawl with a zombie required courage; at that time in Qing Yuan County, Yue Zhong had to threaten the survivors with guns, in order to force them beyond their threshold before they actually rushed ahead to fight the zombies.

Facing the pleading look on Zhuo Yatong's face, Yue Zhong was unmoved and only sternly glanced at her before saying,

"If you don't want to become its food, you have to use your sword to chop off its head."

# Chapter 210: Sea of Zombies! -Dead End

---

"Why are you still hesitating!?"

After being scolded by Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong gritted her teeth, turned her head around and gripped her Tang Sword tightly, approaching the zombie carefully.

With just a thought from Yue Zhong, White Bones used its fiery demonic eyes to keep a close watch on Zhuo Yatong; as soon as there was something wrong, it would immediately shoot out a Bone Spear to save her life. Although he said he would not care about her life or death, in truth, Yue Zhong was not willing to let a woman whom he had a relationship with die here.

Zhuo Yatong could already be considered an independent woman before the world had changed; under the pressure of Yue Zhong, she was now forced to show her potential. She edged carefully towards the zombie and to her surprise, she found that the zombie's speed was extremely slow. She routed around the zombie at a quick pace before stopping behind the zombie and bringing down her Tang Sword swiftly, beheading it.

"This zombie is only so-so!"

After beheading her first zombie, Zhuo Yatong felt a surge of pride and her fear towards the zombie lessened. She smiled at Yue Zhong as she walked back haughtily to his side.

Yue Zhong looked towards White Bones and ordered,

"Go and lure 3 of them here!"

White Bones shot forwards like an arrow and once again attracted the attention of 6 zombies: after luring them away from the other zombies, it casually disposed of 3 of them.

Yue Zhong pointed towards the 3 zombies and gave an order to Zhuo Yatong,

"Go finish them! Remember, the Snake Skin Pelt on you can block even bullets, so as long as you don't let them reach your head, you will be safe."

Listening to Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong's original pale face regained a bit of color. She was still confident of dealing with 1 zombie, but 3 in one go seemed to be beyond her capabilities and she had not succeeded at something like that before.

Gritting her teeth and taking a huge breath, Zhuo Yatong rushed towards the zombies with huge steps. However, she maintained her guard and the moment she arrived in front of them, she started circling them constantly, looking for an opportunity to strike.

The 3 zombies could only helplessly move around shakily on the spot as they tried to get closer to Zhuo Yatong. However, their movement speed was slow and they were clustered together, giving Zhuo Yatong the feeling that she was like a mouse leading some tortoises around.

After circling the zombies 3 times, she could not take it any more and rushed towards one of them.

At this moment, one of the other zombies had just turned around, exposing the horrors of its face that had been bitten off as it reached out for Zhuo Yatong. She took a look at the zombie's face and clamped up in fright, which allowed the zombie to claw at her body.

"I'm dying!! I'm dying!!"

At that moment, Zhuo Yatong's mind only had this thought and she frantically used her Tang Sword to hack mindlessly at the zombie.

With strength that was 4 times that of normal humans wielding the sharp Tang Sword, the 2 zombies were hacked into several pieces by the desperate Zhuo Yatong.

The last zombie had just neared Zhuo Yatong before it

immediately entered the range of her frenzied attacks and was chopped into pieces.

After killing the 3 zombies, Zhuo Yatong took ragged breaths and her face was pale. With her current enhanced self, beheading 3 zombies wouldn't actually consume much stamina, but under the stressful situation, she had expended quite a bit of it.

Liu Erhei was watching Zhuo Yatong cut through the 3 zombies with ease and his eyes opened wide with shock. He did not expect that the woman who was saved by Yue Zhong, who looked so frail and delicate at the time, could deal with zombies on her own, which was something that not even most men could accomplish.

Liu Erhei's eyes glowed as he looked at Zhuo Yatong.

"It's too amazing, what exactly did Boss Yue do? He actually managed to raise this woman's abilities to this extent in these few days? If only I could be this strong as well."

"Wait a moment! He said before that the Snake Skin Pelt that I'm wearing can withstand scratches from the zombies."

After a few breaths, Zhuo Yatong remembered what Yue Zhong told her and looked at the spot where the zombie had attacked her. She saw that other than a hole in the village clothes, the Snake Skin Pelt was without a scratch.

"I shall guide you on killing the zombies more efficiently! Watch closely!"

Yue Zhong walked up to her and spoke lightly, before taking big strides towards the horde of zombies.

He arrived in front of the abandoned cars and lashed out viciously with his leg, causing a loud sound. A number of zombies started moving towards the source of the sound.

Yue Zhong entered the zombie horde, his blade flashing as though he was training, and one by one, the zombies that approached him only saw death. When he was surrounded by



dozens of zombies, as they attacked him simultaneously, he would retreat back a step, dodging a huge number of attacks. He allowed a few to reach his body, before a single flash of his blade struck out, beheading all of the zombies as if he were harvesting wheat. In just a few moments, the zombies were all killed by Yue Zhong and not a single one remained.

Zhuo Yatang saw how easy it was for Yue Zhong to dispose of all those zombies without batting an eyelid and she recognized the vast difference between her combat abilities and his. At the same time though, she felt overjoyed. Seeing as such a powerful man was her husband, she would naturally feel proud.

After slaughtering those zombies, Yue Zhong returned to Zhuo Yatang's side and started telling her about the various tactics and strategies to employ when dealing with different situations regarding zombies.

After the talk, Yue Zhong once again threw Zhuo Yatang into the midst of a zombie horde. She had the Snake Skin Pelt, so as long as she did not come across an evolved zombie or any other major issues, she would not be in danger. Furthermore, White Bones was constantly on guard beside her to provide protection should the need arise.

As she continued her training, she improved quickly and her speed of killing zombies became faster. Originally her abilities exceeded those of normal Enhancers by 10 times and she was also well equipped; the moment she overcame her fear of zombies, killing them became an easy feat. After an entire morning, the zombies in the whole area were cleared by her and there was even an L1 amongst those which she killed.

After killing such a large number of zombies, Zhuo Yatang rose to Level 8 and obtained a huge amount of enhancement points. Her strength was not lacking but her stamina was one of the weaker points, therefore Yue Zhong guided her to allocate 14 points entirely to her stamina. At the same time, in accordance with Yue

Zhong's conjecture, Zhuo Yatong, being a true Evolver, gained a fixed point in strength every time she leveled up. It was clear that she was a strength-based Evolver.

After the zombies in this area had been cleared, Yue Zhong brought Zhuo Yatong and travelled along the highway, making their way towards Qing Yuan County.

After travelling for about 2km, Yue Zhong came to a stop as a huge sea of zombies suddenly appeared in sight. Their numbers stretched for miles on either side and they cut off the intended road to Qing Yuan County, making it so that he couldn't even see the horizon.

Sitting inside the BMW, Zhuo Yatong and Liu Erhei looked towards the sea of zombies in the distance and their faces turned pale. It was their first time coming across a horde of such magnitude-against such a number, an individual's strength seemed so negligible.

Yue Zhong looked at the zombies and was lost in thought for a while, before swiftly climbing up a tree by the side of the road.

He stood atop the tree over 10m tall and took in the sight. He could see that the zombies had literally filled every place for up to a distance of at least a few kilometers away. Beyond that, the zombies had formed a sort of dam, blocking the road back to Qing Yuan County. Unless he made his way alone through the mountains that were devoid of any human activity, he would not be able to break through this sea of zombies. Even if he activated his Encompassing Body Armor, used the Bone Spears and also used various other skills, it would not be easy.

The sea of zombies was not remaining still; the zombies simply followed along the highway and progressed aimlessly.

"Turn back!!"

Yue Zhong observed the sea of zombies for a while before leaping

down and getting into the car, giving instructions to Zhuo Yatong.

The huge sea of zombies was not on a level for Yue Zhong to contend with and so he switched his priority to finding a radio communications tower. He would make use of it to contact his forces.

Zhuo Yatong stepped on the pedal and brought the car to turn around, going back the way they came from.

Yue Zhong's team did not make it very far before they came across a fleet of 5 buses, 4 Dong Feng trucks, 2 Humvees, 3 Jeeps and 4 cars that cut off the road.

Yue Zhong saw the appearance of the fleet and his eyebrows furrowed; with a wave of his hand, Zhuo Yatong stopped the BMW.

With just a flick, a .05 Light Assault Rifle with a silencer appeared in his hands.

This gun was lightweight and had a simple structure. With its small size, it possessed good accuracy and strong firepower at close range, and with its ammo capacity at 50 rounds per clip, it was currently one of China's most advanced weapons. Even though its firepower could not penetrate the defence of an L2, when dealing with humans, it could not be beaten.

"Hold this!" Yue Zhong gave a .54 handgun to Zhuo Yatong.

When dealing with zombies, it was possible to still engage in melee combat, but when dealing with other humans, using guns was a sort of assurance. Yue Zhong was not sure what kind of people were in front of him and he wanted to be safe than sorry.

Zhuo Yatong looked at Yue Zhong and her eyes flashed with shock: she didn't know how Yue Zhong managed to retrieve the .05 light submachine gun and .54 handgun.

"Just how many secrets is he hiding on his body?"

Zhuo Yatong thought silently in her mind as she accepted the .54 handgun and played with it for a moment, before glancing at Yue Zhong.

The fleet saw Yue Zhong's team in the BMW and one of the Jeeps came to a stop. Four men stepped out.

Amongst them, 3 of them held .81 rifles whilst the leader was very burly and only held a .79 assault rifle, with a Tang Sword hanging at his waist. His clothes were very tidy and his bearings gave the impression of a cheetah ready to pounce.

Yue Zhong opened the car door and strode out.

# Chapter 211: Another Survivor Fleet!

---

The 4 men saw that Yue Zhong was approaching them with the Dark Magic Sword by his waist and a .05 Light Submachine Gun in his hands. Their eyes narrowed as they raised their caution towards him. Someone who was well-equipped and prepared in the current world was not simple, and they didn't want to offend such a person needlessly.

The well-built man carrying the .79 assault rifle, with the gait like that of a cheetah, smiled at Yue Zhong and said,

"How are you, I'm Niu Jiang! I'm not sure how I should address you, the little brother here?"

"I'm Yue Zhong."

Yue Zhong took a look at Niu Jiang before asking,

"Niu Jiang, where are you guys headed for?"

Niu Jiang did not hesitate before responding,

"We want to head to the SY County gathering. The government has established stability there and has called out to survivors to gather there."

Niu Jiang looked at Yue Zhong and said warmly,

"Brother Yue Zhong, why don't you come along with us! Moving together brings more benefits."

Yue Zhong was well equipped and the items on him were not simple; if he joined this fleet, then their defence would also rise. Yue Zhong pondered for a while before nodding,

"Yes!"

That sort of government establishment would definitely have radio communications; since Yue Zhong's destination was the same as Niu Jiang's team, he naturally would not decline going together.

Yue Zhong joined Niu Jiang's team and the entire fleet continued on their journey.

When the sun set, the fleet chose a small, barren plain to set up camp.

In the fleet, there was a total of 200 survivors. The moment they disembarked, they would pull out pots and pans, and the children and women would forage for twigs and branches to start a fire for cooking.

Amongst these 200 survivors, a huge number of them had tattered clothes and emaciated appearances. However, there were a few who seemed much better off.

There was a handful who were led around by a fatty with a plump face and huge belly. He was surrounded by 5 men and 8 women of mixed ages, all of whom didn't seem weak. Yet another group comprised of a male cop dressed in his uniform leading his colleagues around and each of them had a .79 assault rifle. Another handful had Niu Jiang as their leader with 9 people in total, each of them equipped with either a .81 rifle or .79 assault rifle. There was one final group where the leader was a bespectacled male roughly 30 years old, and he was gathered with 34 other people.

The majority of the survivors gathered around the bespectacled male were mostly middle school students of 13-14 years.

This crowd of people was the largest with the most people. The other survivor groups would be as large as a family at most-no one else congregated on such a level.

Yue Zhong's team stepped out from the BMW.

Zhuo Yatong brought Yun Caiwei to wash the rice to cook. Liu Erhei was in charge of gathering the rotten leaves and debris for starting a fire. Yue Zhong pulled out 2 tents from the boot of the BMW and he set it up.

The 2 tents had just been pitched when they attracted almost

everyone's attention from the other camp. After the end of the world, luxurious goods were frowned upon and the most sought after items became food. When the 200 survivors were on the run, their focus was only on getting as much food packed as they could: luxury items like tents were considered unnecessary, and so none of them had one.

"Camping tents! Do they think they're on a tour?"

One of the students looked on with envy as she scowled in a low voice.

Currently, the year was already entering the autumn season, hence the air could get very cold in the night. Without camping tents, they could only squeeze together in the bus, where it was extremely cramped and uncomfortable.

Another student snorted coldly. With a hint of jealousy in his eyes as he looked at Yue Zhong's side, the student said,

"Let's ignore them. They will regret it once they run through their rations."

Amongst the grumbling of the envious and jealous people, one of the men under the fatty walked to Yue Zhong's side. His body was on the skinny side and he said with a hint of haughtiness,

"I'm called He Ye. How should I address this little brother?"

Yue Zhong glanced at He Ye, lightly saying,

"I'm Yue Zhong. Do you have any business with me?"

"I'm a driver for Secretary Huang from Jiao Yuan County. That person over there is Secretary Huang."

He Ye pointed towards the fatty surrounded by a few men before saying,

"Since it's autumn now, the winds are cold. I hope you can give this tent to him. Once we arrive at SY County's gathering point, Secretary Huang will definitely take care of you guys. With his

status, even getting you some civil servant positions would not be an issue."

After he finished talking, he looked on confidently at Yue Zhong. Although the world had changed a lot, the government had established a safe haven for the survivors at SY County. Secretary Huang could be considered someone of power even before the end of the world and his words had some worth. As long as they could reach SY County and establish themselves, securing a few civil posts would be an easy feat.

A position that allowed you to eat your fill in the current world was really an achievement. It was enough for people to fight bitterly to obtain it. He Ye did not believe that Yue Zhong would decline the offer.

Yue Zhong looked at He Ye with disgust before saying coldly,  
"Not interested. Please go back!"

He Ye heard the words and instantly turned pale. He had noticed the .05 light submachine gun in Yue Zhong's hands, so he could only hold back the harsh words at the tip of his tongue. He immediately turned on the spot and walked back towards his boss.

Secretary Huang glanced at He Ye and asked quietly,  
"How was it, He Ye?"

He Ye replied in a grieved manner,  
"Boss, he is not willing to give it to you."

Secretary Huang's face changed and he replied,  
"Alright, I understand. Go take a rest and prepare to have dinner."

Even though he did not express it explicitly, Secretary Huang started to bear a hatred for Yue Zhong. However, he would always seek counsel before taking action; if he didn't possess enough strength to handle the matter, he might end up creating a problem



for himself, thus he wouldn't be so stupid. Amongst the survivors, although there were the 5 police officers, these 5 policemen came from another place and were not willing to listen to him, nor take heed of his status as Jiao Yuan County's VIP.

Not long after, Zhuo Yatong and Yun Caiwei brought over the hot rice that they had cooked. On the other side, Yue Zhong set up a barbeque pit and began roasting the Type 2 Mutant Boar's meat.

Drops of the pig oil dripped onto the fire, feeding the flames. The smell of barbequed meat began wafting through the air.

"What is that smell!!"

"It's barbequed meat!! Who is barbecuing meat?!"

The moment the starved survivors caught a whiff of the barbeque, they immediately turned their heads around and looked towards the direction the smell came from. Upon seeing the countless envious gazes, Yue Zhong continued to constantly season the meat without a care, causing the smell to become even more fragrant.

One of the middle school students stared at the meat and said with his mouth practically drooling,

"Roasted meat, if I could get just one bite, I would die willingly!"

"That's right!!"

Another student took a look at the mixed gruel and bread in his bowl. The amount was so pitiful that the grains of rice could be counted. The student's gaze returned to the meat and he unconsciously swallowed gulp after gulp of saliva.

After the events of Z-Day, all the survivors faced a shortage of food. Niu Jiang and his party of 200 people had congregated over the course of the past 3 months after Z-Day. They were constantly on the move and searching for food, and had lost quite a number of people. Their equipment was running low and many were starving. Only those who were constantly on the frontlines

fighting and the government officials could eat their fill at the expense of others.

Niu Jiang walked to Yue Zhong's side. Looking at Zhuo Yatong sitting beside him, he was stunned and a strange light flashed past his eyes. Then he said,

"How fragrant! Yue Zhong, is this your wife? She's really beautiful! You're quite lucky!"

Niu Jiang had seen many beautiful women on his countless travels before Z-Day, yet he had seldom seen someone with the demeanor and aura of Zhuo Yatong, and also her beautiful looks and body.

Hearing Niu Jiang's sincere praise and calling her Yue Zhong's wife, Zhuo Yatong couldn't help but smile. Her heart leapt in joy and she also began to see Niu Jiang in a better light.

Niu Jiang only looked at Zhuo Yatong once before his gaze fell unto the meat Yue Zhong was roasting and his eyes couldn't move away. Peerless beauties were great of course, but he possessed enough strength to attract many women. The meat that Yue Zhong was currently roasting was the true attraction to him right now.

Yue Zhong looked at Niu Jiang before smiling and inviting him over, saying,

"Please sit! Let's eat together!"

"Oh, how could I!"

Niu Jiang was courteous, yet he did not hesitate to sit down with his eyes fixed on the piece of meat and his saliva already dripping.

After the events of Z-Day, the vast majority of biological creatures had undergone mutations, so almost every beast in the wild was much stronger than before. Subsequently, obtaining fresh meat was extremely difficult and Niu Jiang also hadn't eaten much.

After being called Yue Zhong's wife, Zhuo Yatong carried out her 'duties' as a mother and wife, helping scoop rice for Yue Zhong and also cutting a thin slice of meat, which she placed on a dish for Niu Jiang.

"Thanks!"

Niu Jiang received the plate and immediately devoured the meat. The meat was succulent and incredibly delicious, causing him to be endlessly mesmerized.

When he hastily chomped down that piece of meat, a smile broke out on his face; he had also received some enhancements. He looked at the huge piece of meat on Yue Zhong's plate and his gaze become even more intense.

Yue Zhong ignored the gaze of Niu Jiang and laughed as he asked, "Niu Jiang, I am not that familiar with your members of the fleet, why don't you introduce them to me?"

As the saying goes, the mouth talks when fed.

Niu Jiang had eaten Yue Zhong's meat, and he started carefully introducing the various people to Yue Zhong with attention.

"That person over there is ..."

At first, the fleet only had the 5 policemen and the bunch of students who were on an outing at the time. The leader of the 5 policemen was called Wang Jian. He had brought along his colleagues and the bunch of students, using only his handgun to deal with the zombies as they searched for and rescued other survivors.

# Chapter 212: The Attraction of Roasted Meat!

---

With Wang Jian's constant efforts to search for resources with his colleagues and rescuing survivors along the way, a small fleet was gradually formed. They roamed where they could, hiding from the zombies and searching for usables. Secretary Huang's actual name was Huang Weian and he was the county head of Jiao Yuan County; he and his group of people were all rescued by Wang Jian.

As for the group made up of students, at the beginning of Z-Day, only 12 of them had turned into zombies. Although most of them had actually thrown away their Novice Staff, the teacher and 13 other students had held onto their weapon. After that, when an Enhancer joined the fleet, he told them about the benefits of enhancements.

With Wang Jian as the leader, all 4 of the other policemen and himself became Enhancers by only using the Novice Staffs. The students also became Enhancers one by one with the help and guidance of Wang Jian and Liu Jin. It was just that leveling with the assistance of others only provided a little experience, therefore their aptitude was not high and the strongest person was currently only Level 9.

Niu Jiang was a retired soldier before the end of the world and afterwards, he relied on his own abilities to gain access into a police station and obtained firearms. After recruiting quite a number of people, they roamed about for a while. It was only after the zombies had started evolving and a huge number of his subordinates had perished that he fled with his remaining people. After they had escaped, they joined Wang Jian's fleet.

Wang Jian's fleet operated by equal distribution of the resources - everyone ate the same amount. Only those who went out to hunt for resources and those officials like Huang Weian would get to eat

more. Wang Jian was righteous yet not overly concerned with rules, and in fact, he was quite easygoing. Since they were headed to a government establishment, he knew it would not be wise to offend someone of status like Huang Weian.

It's important to know that prior to Z-day, if someone of Huang Weian's status wanted to 'play' with someone insignificant like Wang Jian, who was just a normal civil worker, they would not need to use much force. Of course, it didn't mean Huang Weian literally using his fat body, but with just a few words, it would be easy to remove Wang Jian from his post and rank; even sending him to be a security guard was not a difficult feat.

After Z-Day, no one knew what the establishment that the government had set up looked like, and so even less people dared to offend Huang Weian. They allowed him to retain his official post and an attack team all to himself.

Just as Yue Zhong and Niu Jiang were discussing about the various highlights of each team, a tall lady who was about 1.62m walked in front of Yue Zhong. She seemingly hesitated for a few moments before pointing to the meat and saying,

"Let me eat my fill! I will let you do me as you like!!"

Yue Zhong frowned as he lifted his gaze. He saw that the woman was really tall, and although her figure was not as perfect and alluring as Zhuo Yatong's, she did possess a C-cup bust, long slender legs, very white skin, an oval-shaped face and other defining features. It was just that her eyes seemed a little wan and sallow, and her face also didn't look too good. Even though she could not compare to Zhuo Yatong, she could be considered a beauty in her own right as well.

She stared at Yue Zhong and gritted her teeth before saying,

"I am Gu Manzi! I graduated from XXX University of the Arts and I am 25 years old this year. I don't have a boyfriend and am still a virgin! As long as you let me have my fill of that meat, I will let you

play with me however you like!! If you can feed me from today on, I will always follow you and be your woman."

[TN: Not literally sex if you interpret it like that, but the raws said XXX]

Gu Manzi had not eaten her fill for at least 2 months! She was tormented by her hunger to the extent that she was close to her tippingpoint. As Yue Zhong roasted the Type 2 Mutant Boar meat, the oil glistened all over. If it were before the end of the world, Gu Manzi would have felt revolt at the meat since she was all this time, the meat that was on the grill right now was extremely enticing to her, even more so than having 100,000 USD prior to Z-Day.

Gu Manzi did not even ask for Yue Zhong's name. All she knew was that he was carrying a .05 Light Assault Rifle, he had a Dark Magic Sword at his waist and he also had 2 pretty ladies by his side, one of them mature and the other still young. There was even an able-bodied man following him. She knew that he could be relied on, so if she wanted to sell herself, she would only sell herself to someone like him.

Truthfully, not many women could tolerate the hunger and in the end, they chose to sell themselves. The few ladies by Huang Weian's side also sold themselves and willingly became his mistresses just to be fed well. Among the fleet, there were even some females who secretly used their bodies in exchange for more food, thus it wasn't particularly shocking.

If it wasn't for the righteous and moral Wang Jian containing the reasoning of the people, there might have been cases of cannibalism already.

Upon hearing Gu Manzi's words, Zhuo Yatong could not help but feel nervous and she clasped her hands tightly as she looked towards Yue Zhong. Although she was sure that her own looks, demeanor and even strength were all way above Gu Manzi's, from

her experience, she knew men were creatures who always preferred new to old. Furthermore, Gu Manzi had something she did not have-virginity. To most men, being able to be the man who took the cherry was a huge attraction.

It was just that Zhuo Yatong knew she had no way of controlling the man in front of her, and if she chose to interfere with his decision, while he might listen to her temporarily, he would slowly generate a sort of dislike for her. Her wisest choice would be to use her own abilities and charm to slowly win over his heart.

Yue Zhong looked at Gu Manzi and asked coldly,

"Can you cook?"

"No!" Gu Manzi came from a well-to-do family; before the events of Z-Day, she was living like a princess. Other than ordering take-outs, she would go to various restaurants and dine there. With regards to preparing meals, she had not considered doing that before.

Yue Zhong continued to say softly, "Do you know how to wash clothes?"

"No!" Gu Manzi's expression was turning ugly. Every household had a washing machine before Z-Day and so a princess like her would not even know how to wash manually. However, after Z-Day, washing clothes by hand became an important task, as a huge amount of clothes had to be washed.

Yue Zhong grabbed Zhuo Yatong's hands, before looking towards Gu Manzi and asking,

"Are you as beautiful as her?"

Gu Manzi looked at Zhuo Yatong jealously, then with an expression that seemed as though she was about to break down, she said,

"No!"

Gu Manzi was very confident in herself, yet she knew that she could not compare to Zhuo Yatong's beauty, elegance or aura.

With her hand held by Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong felt a sweetness in her heart and she smiled at Yue Zhong.

Yun Caiwei saw that Yue Zhong was holding her mother's hand and her bright eyes lit up as she ate her meat with gusto. The Type 2 Mutant Boar meat was really a delicacy and its taste was amazing. She was also afraid of going hungry, hence until she had eaten her fill, she would not think about letting her mouth rest.

"I do need someone to wait on me, so if you do want to stay, you will need to learn how to be a maid. If you aren't willing, you are free to leave now. If you stay, then sit with us and have a meal together."

Just as Gu Manzi was prepared to leave, humiliated and holding back the tears, Yue Zhong's soothing voice resounded in her ears.

Yue Zhong was not willing to take in some other girl that he would have to take care of. He only let Gu Manzi stay because he needed a maid. Zhuo Yatong was already his woman, so he did not want to treat her like a maid and order her around.

Gu Manzi couldn't help but blurt out. "I'm willing!!"

After which, she immediately sat down with her eyes staring at the piece of meat, and she gulped down her saliva without any regard for her dignity.

Seeing her expression, Zhuo Yatong smiled understandably and proceeded to slice off pieces of meat, placing them on a plate for Gu Manzi. She had been, after all, in a similar situation not too long ago.

Upon receiving the plate, Gu Manzi immediately dug in and wolfed down the pieces of meat with gusto. She licking the plate clean, before continuing to stare at the roasted meat.

Yue Zhong glanced at Gu Manzi and said,



"You can only eat 3 plates of meat. Based on your current state, if you eat too much, it would not be good for your body!"

To someone who had starved for a long time like Gu Manzi, placing too much stress on the stomach after such a long period of hunger could cause death from over-eating.

Listening to Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong sliced off 2 servings worth of meat again with some rice, before giving it to Gu Manzi.

Gu Manzi looked down at the rice and meat in front of her, her eyes reddening as huge drops of tears flowed down her cheeks. This was the best meal she had eaten in the 3 months since the end of the world. However, having eaten this meal, she had to accept the fact that she was no longer a proud princess. Instead, she now had to wait on this man in front of her. Although she was a maidservant in name, she was very clear that should Yue Zhong want to obtain her body, she had no way of declining.

Since things had gotten to this point, although she was mentally prepared, she couldn't help but tear up a little at the humiliation she felt.

Niu Jiang did not pay attention to the crying Gu Manzi, as his gaze also fixed on the piece of meat. He asked,

"Give me one more plate, Yue Zhong! This meat is really too delicious. What meat is this?"

As he squeezed Zhuo Yatong's hands, Yue Zhong lightly smiled and said, "It's meat from a Mutant Beast."

Zhuo Yatong smiled back at Yue Zhong, before serving one more plate to Niu Jiang.

As he stuffed his face with the meat, Niu Jiang asked,

"Mutant Beast meat. Sure enough, you must be really powerful to be able to dispose of something as scary and fearsome as a Mutant Beast. At that time, more than 10 of my brothers died to a Mutant Cat. Oh right, Yue Zhong, you must be an Enhancer as well?"

What's your current level now?"

As Niu Jiang spoke these words, everyone looked towards Yue Zhong. They all wanted to know this secret.

Yue Zhong laughed lightly and said. "It's a secret!"

Every Enhancer's level was considered to be a secret. If it was known, it would be easy to deduce his/her abilities and skills, as well as how many attribute points they had. This was an important battle of wits, and so Yue Zhong naturally wouldn't let others find out so easily.

Just as Yue Zhong and Niu Jiang were resumed their idle conversations, 5 women walked out from the huge camp of survivors up to Yue Zhong's side.

## Chapter 213: Dastardly Huang Weian's Plot!

---

"Sir, please let us have some! I haven't eaten properly for a month already. As long as you feed me, I will do whatever you want me to." A somewhat pretty yet haggard-looking lady spoke as she combed her hair in an attempt to look more presentable, while her eyes were fixed on Yue Zhong.

Another plain-looking, yet the youngest of the remaining female survivors also pleaded to Yue Zhong, "Please give me some! 2 slices, if you just give me 2 slices, I'll let you have your way with me for the night."

"Please, let me have just one slice.....!"

"....."

"....."

The 5 of them continued staring at Yue Zhong, pleading and begging. Gu Manzi had earned a place with Yue Zhong and that gave all of them hope. They were all going crazy from the hunger: if they could just eat their fill, they were willing to forsake their dignity and face.

Hunger could drive anyone mad. In the history of mankind, during periods of famines, it was not uncommon for people to eat their own kin. In the most recent famine, there was an actual case of a father eating his own son's flesh. From this, it could be seen how scary hunger was. The 5 poor women were also almost driven crazy by starvation, and so there was no point considering their dignity or face when their hunger was much more urgent.

Even someone like Gu Manzi who came from a prestigious background disregarded her dignity and came to beg Yue Zhong for food. They naturally also had no hesitation.

Seeing the 5 women who were willing to sell their bodies for food and were begging Yue Zhong pitifully, Zhuo Yatong trembled in

her heart and unconsciously grasped Yue Zhong's big hands. She had experienced the terror of going hungry to the point of torment; if not for the appearance of Yue Zhong, the only road for her then would be death. Having experienced the cruelty of the current apocalyptic world, it reinforced her decision to follow Yue Zhong and led her to realize that she was so lucky to have him.

Yue Zhong looked at the 5 ladies and his eyebrows furrowed as he pointed to Gu Manzi and lightly said,

"If your conditions are better than hers, I will allow you to stay. Otherwise, please leave by your own accord. Don't force me to act."

The moment Yue Zhong finished talking, the silent 2m-tall White Bones stood up. Holding an axe the colour of black gold, it started circling the 5 women with its demonic fiery eyes constantly staring at them.

Under the effect of the Camouflage Skill, the people there only saw White Bones as a huge man of 2m, and the 2m long metallic axe in its hands gave a huge oppressing aura to anybody who saw it and made people feel uneasy.

The 5 of them looked at Gu Manzi who was busy devouring the meat and they immediately felt saddened. Although they were quite pretty, they could not compare to her.

Four of them took one last look at White Bones and its axe and their eyes flashed with a hint of fear, before they turned around and made their way back to the normal campsite. After Z-Day, normal society order had collapsed and humanity was also slowly eroding away; they did not know what would happen if they were to annoy Yue Zhong. They did not want to offend a strong person.

The remaining person was tall and fair-skinned. She had a round face as well as other beautiful features, and she started promoting herself to Yue Zhong,

"I am a fellow student of Gu Manzi and I also graduated from the

XXX University of the Arts. I am 24 this year. I can dance, sing, cook and even wash clothes. Sir, please keep me with you! My worth is certainly not below Gu Manzi's. As long as you let me eat my fill, I am willing to do anything."

Gu Manzi suddenly lifted her head and looked at Wang Ni before commenting coldly,

"Wang Ni. You lost your virginity when you were in university and after that, you still changed boyfriends 4 times. How can you compare yourself to me!"

After experiencing the cruelty of the post-apocalyptic world, Gu Manzi had changed for the wiser as well. She saw that Yue Zhong only had a car and his reserves were immaterial. The fewer the members in the team, the longer the team could hold out, and her personal portion would be more as well. If more people joined, she would have to share Yue Zhong with them and she was not willing to see that.

"Gu Manzi, why you!!"

Wang Ni's past had now been revealed. Her face paled as she immediately tried to explain to Yue Zhong,

"That was all in the past. I haven't had a boyfriend this year. I can cook, wash and do basically any household chores!!"

Yue Zhong looked at Wang Ni before coldly retorting, "Go away!"

Wang Ni's face turned the colour of ash as she looked towards Gu Manzi with a gaze full of hatred and cursed.

"Gu Manzi! From today onwards, you are not my friend anymore. You will get your just desserts! I curse you to have a horrible death!!"

Yue Zhong frowned and he made a gesture with his hand. White Bones immediately leapt forward and gave a huge slap across Wang Ni's face, causing it to swell.

He looked at Wang Ni coldly before saying,

"Gu Manzi is one of my people. The only one who can scold her, beat her or teach her a lesson is me."

Wang Ni covered her face. Huge drops of tears rolled down her cheeks and she immediately turned and left as she cried. After Z-Day, she had been dumped by her new boyfriend who left on his own. Now, even one of her girl friends had stabbed her in the back, causing her to feel even more hurt.

Gu Man Zi looked at Wang Ni from afar before lowering her head and continuing to eat her meat carefully. As of now, she had cut off ties with one of her friends, just so she could lead a better life for herself.

[TN: How cruel... }

(Divinecelestialbeinglol: Kun's too soft hearted for this sort of stuff ...)

Huang Weian saw these events from afar and he lowered his head in thought, before first walking towards Wang Jian and whispering something. Then he walked amongst the survivors to invoke some emotions.

Not long after, under the encouragement of Huang Weian, a huge number of survivors stood up and slowly walked towards Yue Zhong's campfire.

As the crowd of over 200 people started moving, there was an extremely oppressive force, as if Mount Tai was looming over and pressurizing Yue Zhong's camp.

Seeing the approaching forces, Liu Erhei became restless and nervous as he stood up immediately; he took out the .54 handgun Yue Zhong had given to him and fired a shot into the sky, before calling out loudly, "What do you think you're doing!"

With the 'bang', the 200 survivors immediately halted their steps, too frightened to advance. They saw the gun in Liu Erhei's

hands and their eyes were full of fear.

As a commoner, it was normal to fear guns. It was only those who lived constantly on the edge, or were on the wrong side of the law, who wouldn't be afraid of Liu Erhei's actions.

All the gazes filled with fear, indecision and hesitation naturally fell onto Huang Weian. After all, they had all been motivated to act by his doing-if no one were to lead them, they also didn't dare stir up trouble.

Under the gaze of so many people, Huang Weian sighed in his heart before standing up and calling out in a self-righteous voice,

"Yue Zhong, you have joined our vehicle fleet, so you can be considered one of our family members. We hope that you can take out all your rations and share them with us along the journey."

After that, his greedy eyes roamed over to Zhuo Yatong and Gu Manzi who were both sitting beside Yue Zhong. Even though he kept a number of decent looking ladies with him, compared to Zhuo Yatong and Gu Manzi, they were not much.

Huang Weian retracted his gaze and fixedly stared at Yue Zhong while thinking to himself,

"It's okay, as long as I gain control over the food, they will not be able to escape from the palm of my hand."

"I do have food here!" Yue Zhong looked at Huang Weian and he coldly laughed, before directly opening his backpack and showing the contents inside. Inside, there was a huge pack of rice, milk, cakes, candy, instant noodles and various other foods.

Seeing the huge amount of rations in Yue Zhong's opened bag, all the survivors turned green with envy. They clenched their fists tightly and their breathing becoming ragged. After Z-Day, gold was useless; there was only food, food was the true bargaining chip.

Gu Manzi saw the amount of food inside Yue Zhong's bag and sucked in a breath of air, silently celebrating her decision to follow

Yue Zhong in her heart.

"I do have food! But why should I give it to you?" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, before continuing,

"I scavenged all these based on my own efforts, my blood and sweat, from killing hundreds of zombies and retrieving these from their mouths. What justifications do you have to make me give it to you? Did you guys even contribute any amount of effort into obtaining these? So shameless!"

Facing Yue Zhong's rebuke, a large number of the survivors immediately felt ashamed, yet they continued staring at the rations in his bag.

Huang Weian looked towards the rations and his eyes flashed with a strange light as he spoke in his self-righteous voice again,

"Yue Zhong, it can be considered that we are in a national crisis now. Everyone should be working together, to get past this together. You should not prioritize your own self-interests above others, you should think for the masses instead. Do you know what your current actions are tantamount to? Selfish. Fine, let me represent the group, the government as well as the people to borrow your food and rations. When the country has overcome this obstacle, I will return it to you by 10 times. I also promise that when I have the rations, you will get your fair share. No one will starve as I bring you all into SY County."

"Yeah!! Bring out the rations!"

"Everyone should share!"

"Give the rations to Magistrate Huang !!"

"....."

"....."

Under the pretentious act of Huang Weian, the 200 survivors got riled up and started calling for Yue Zhong to surrender his rations.



If it weren't for the fact that they feared the firearms in Yue Zhong's hands, they would have already attacked and taken everything.

After all the bullsh\*t, the survivors were just after Yue Zhong's rations; Huang Weian was making use of their psychological states to provoke and rile their emotions.

Hearing the agitated calls of the survivors behind him, Huang Weian wore an extremely satisfied expression on his face. As long as he gained the control over the rations in Yue Zhong's hands, if he wanted to bed a woman, then he would be able to get the woman. Otherwise, they would be driven to insanity by their hunger.

## Chapter 214: A Violent Disturbance

---

Seeing the crowd of restless survivors, Niu Jiang's face changed slightly. After hesitating for a while, he stood up and smiled apologetically to Yue Zhong,

"Sorry! I am a member of this fleet after all!"

After he finished speaking, Niu Jiang left and returned to his own subordinates to silently watch the events unfold. A few slices of roasted meat were not enough for him to entrust Yue Zhong with his life and they were only acquaintances who had met by chance.

As she watched the zealous, imposing crowd of over 200 survivors, a hint of fear flashed through Gu Manzi's eyes and she retreated a few steps. If those survivors were incited and began to riot, they would be even more frightening than the fiercest beasts.

Yue Zhong instantly stood up with the silenced .05 Light Assault Rifle in his right hand and the .54 Handgun in his left, and directly fired a shot in front of Huang Weian.

"Trying to get my food! No way! All of you f\*ck off for daddy, you crowd of trash! If you have the ability, go and snatch back some food from the zombies yourselves! If you advance one more step, I'm warning you that my gun can't see what it's doing!"

An extremely accurate bullet shot right in front of Huang Weian, whose face suddenly paled. As he looked at the silenced .05 Light Assault Rifle and the .54 Handgun in Yue Zhong's hands, he took several steps backwards, no longer with that soaring spirit from before. Although his ability to incite people was impressive, his inherent nature was that of a coward.

"Yue Zhong..."

Huang Weian had just wanted to continue speaking when he was forcefully cut off by Yue Zhong.

"Huang Weian, you shut up for me and f\*ck off. Otherwise, the

first person to be shot by daddy will be you!"

After being berated by Yue Zhong, the color of Huang Weian's face changed back and forth from green to white. His mouth trembled a few times and then he turned around, walking away gloomily like a stray dog.

Yue Zhong suddenly pointed the muzzle of the gun in Wang Jian's direction and shouted in a voice full of hostility with a cold killing intent,

"Wang Jian, I'm warning you, don't point a gun at me. Otherwise, I don't mind killing all of you! I've killed several thousand zombies before, and the number of people who have died by my hands is also over one hundred. If I have to kill one then I'll do it, if I have to kill one hundred then I'll do it as well! I didn't come here to harm you, so you shouldn't try to harm me. If you make me mad, none of you should think of surviving! Put your gun away carefully, otherwise you'll definitely die!"

Wang Jian and the four other policemen had rescued 200 survivors and maintained order in the camp as well, letting the survivors here still have some humanity in them. This made Yue Zhong greatly admire their characters in his heart. However, if a conflict began between the two sides, Yue Zhong would still kill them without any hesitation. After all, this was an apocalypse world where human lives were only worth as much those of ants, and Yue Zhong only wanted to properly survive. Even if they were saints, he would still kill those who blocked his path to survival without error.

Of course, if there was no need, Yue Zhong didn't wish to get rid of the five policemen. Without the protection of them, very quickly, there might be heavy casualties in this fleet of over 200 survivors. The only remaining order and humanity would also completely collapse.

Yue Zhong had no interest in taking control of this fleet and

becoming its leader because it didn't have a stable base like Big Cliff Village, Stone Horse Village or Qing Yuan County. If he did take in this fleet, he could very well end up having to worry about their food supplies everyday. If it wasn't for that, he would have long gotten rid of an unreliable official like Huang Weian.

In the brutal apocalypse world, Yue Zhong was able to kill his enemies without even blinking an eye. Nevertheless, he wasn't willing to carry out any senseless killings and he also wasn't willing to watch the few remaining survivors die for no reason.

Wang Jian and the other four policemen had originally wanted to use their guns to subdue Yue Zhong, except Yue Zhong's speed vastly surpassed theirs. Wang Jian was just about to take action when Yue Zhong's silenced .05 Light Assault Rifle had already locked onto them. He was able to feel Yue Zhong's powerful killing intent: if they moved in the slightest, the opposition would definitely kill them without any hesitation. This made Wang Jian not dare to move at all.

As he endured the extremely strong pressure from Yue Zhong, Wang Jian slowly said,

"I understand now! Please put down your gun first! We promise not to point our guns at you. If you are unwilling to take out your food and share it with everyone, please leave our fleet."

The other four policemen also didn't dare to make any moves; although they had a very strong sense of justice, they were not madmen. They weren't willing to sacrifice their own lives in vain for no reason.

Pointing the silenced .05 Light Assault Rifle directly at the crowd, Yue Zhong said in an icy voice,

"Tomorrow I will leave! Right now, all of you guys, go back to your camp for me. I will count to ten, those who don't go, just lie down here for the better!"

"Ten!"

"Nine!"

"..."

After being threatened at gunpoint by Yue Zhong, those survivors with no backbone immediately fled desperately in the direction of the camp. Amidst the chaos and trampling, three frail-bodied female survivors were knocked down by the other survivors, then were trampled into meat paste.

Cries, cold voices and shouting sounded out throughout the crowd. Not a single person looked back at those three female survivors who had been trampled to death: in this apocalypse world, deaths were very common. Everyday there were humans who were killed, starved or committed suicide-after witnessing enough of this, people would naturally become insensitive to such matters. As long as the people who died weren't their relatives, none of them would care.

Yue Zhong glanced at the chaos in the crowd, then said lightly to Gu Manzi and Liu Erhei,

"It's alright now! Eat!"

Gu Manzi, Liu Erhei and Zhuo Yatong all gazed at Yue Zhong with awe. Just now, the 200 survivors who had all been instigated by Huang Weian and formed an extremely imposing force were now all very frightened. They would never have thought that Yue Zhong could resolve the crisis so easily, making Huang Weian go back to his own camp in the manner of a stray dog.

"How overbearing!"

Niu Jiang watched as Yue Zhong drove back those 200 survivors all by himself and a hint of radiance flashed past his eyes. He let out a sigh. Just now, he wasn't determined to stay on Yue Zhong's side, and now he felt a slight regret.

Truthfully, if Yue Zhong had been weak and cowering just now,

Niu Jiang probably would have gone and trampled on him as well, stealing away everything that he could steal from him.

In the apocalypse world, every survivor knew about the cruel law of the jungle. As soon as you revealed some weakness, the surrounding wolves would all pounce on you and take away everything you had.

If Yue Zhong had given his food to Huang Weian just now, after receiving the food, Huang Weian would immediately request Yue Zhong to join the armed forces. This way, he would receive unified command. He was compressing Yue Zhong's 'survival space' step by step, forcing Yue Zhong to become a chess piece in his hands. Only Huang Weian didn't think Yue Zhong would have such a fierce and decisive reaction, leaving him with no way of escape.

After Yue Zhong had exposed his vicious fangs, those survivors naturally didn't dare to come provoke him again. Yue Zhong and his party thus cheerfully finished their dinner.

After dinner, Gu Manzi obediently took the initiative to do the washing-up. Meanwhile, Yue Zhong made Zhuo Yatong start doing shooting practice with the .54 Handgun.

Within Yue Zhong's storage ring, there were 1300 rounds of ammunition for the .54 Handgun, so Zhuo Yatong could shoot as much as she wanted.

Hearing round after round of gunshots, those survivor's bodies were all trembling slightly. If they had continued to pressurise Yue Zhong just now, those bullets probably would've been fired at them.

"Do they really have that many bullets to waste? Perhaps what that Yue Zhong said about him killing several thousand zombies is true! I don't know if forcing him to leave the fleet was right or wrong!"

Wang Jian heard the constant gunshots from nearby and he had

some very complicated feelings in his heart. When Huang Weian had initially encouraged him, he had agreed to force Yue Zhong to hand over the food, but that was because the fleet's food supplies had already reached a dangerously low amount.

Food and drink for over 200 people was not a small amount. Their fleet simply didn't dare to enter towns, and so they were only able to find some small villages to search for resources. Even if they did come across a small village, they could only be like thieves and would secretly kill a few zombies, clear everything from a small supermarket or convenience store and then leave.

If they were discovered by a horde of zombies, they could only flee in panic. Subsequently, in the process of searching for zombies, there were constant deaths of fleet members, making the morale of the fleet lower and lower. Those who were willing to go out and search for resources became fewer and fewer.

As Yue Zhong stood beside Zhuo Yatong, he gave her pointers on her shooting skills. Zhuo Yatong was already a novice at fighting battles with zombies, so with her ability and equipment, finishing off evolved zombies like an L1 or an S1 was no problem. However, when it came to dealing with other humans, firearms were still more practical and were a great deterrent.

The time of year had already entered the autumn season. A night breeze blew and a chill swept across everyone.

The wind blew across Yun Caiwei, who was standing beside Yue Zhong, making her shrink back slightly. She tugged at the corners of Yue Zhong's clothes, using that big pair of delicate and charming eyes to look at him, saying,

"Big brother, can you hug me? I'm a bit cold!"

"Alright!" Yue Zhong looked at Yun Caiwei, who seemed as delicate as porcelain, and then he hugged her in his embrace. A hint of fragrance spread from her body.

Like a kitten, she curled up in Yue Zhong's embrace, feeling the warmth from his body; her face was filled with satisfaction. With this broad and warm embrace, she didn't need to worry about the wind and rain outside anymore. Not long after, she fell asleep.

After she had fired more than a dozen rounds, Zhuo Yatong returned to Yue Zhong's side.

Zhuo Yatong, Yue Zhong, Yun Caiwei and Gu Manzi all cleaned themselves up before getting into a camping tent. Meanwhile, Liu Erhei had luckily also gotten a tent for himself.

Holding its large axe, White Bones patrolled the surroundings.

"How comfortable!" After she got into the tent, Gu Manzi slept to the right of Yun Caiwei. She was covered with a blanket and stretched her own body, feeling how full her stomach was. Then she closed her eyes and happily fell asleep. This was the first time she had slept so sweetly since the beginning of the apocalypse world one month ago. She didn't have to worry about food, her own future or her safety.

Zhuo Yatong glanced at Yue Zhong, who was sleeping to her right, and she leaned forward, kissing him lightly on the face. Only then did she fall asleep, clinging onto one of his arms.

In this moonless night, a group of militants crept through the dark night one after another, as careful as mice. They silently approached the fleet.



# Chapter 215: Night Raid

---

In the darkness, a militant accidentally triggered a trap mechanism as he advanced. Not far from him, a few beer bottles dropped, hitting the rock floor and shattering with a loud crash. In the lonely and quiet night, the sound was amplified.

"ENEMIES!" A bus filled with night guards who were half asleep awoke and shouted loudly.

After the apocalypse, danger was everywhere. With fearsome zombies, fierce mutant beasts and even humans who became depraved, nowhere was safe. Without any preparation or safety, no one could even think of wandering around freely now, as it meant death.

The survivors in the buses awoke with a start as they looked out into the dark with fear, and sat helplessly in their own seats. All they could do was wait.

The bus drivers had also woken up at the start and had prepared their engines to drive off. Only by starting their vehicles could they break free from the ambush. As for retaliation, the thought had never even crossed their minds.

"Kill!! Kill the drivers!!" The leader of the militants issued an order loudly.

Immediately, those militants who were creeping around quietly and carefully like lizards stood up one by one, lifting their guns and aiming at the numerous buses. They let loose a barrage of bullets.

The barrage of bullets penetrated the windows of the vehicles, making glass shatter everywhere and rain down inside the vehicles. All the survivors inside the buses crouched down in fear. Most of them could not help screaming to vent their inner fears.

Under the sudden attack of these militants, 3 unfortunate bus

drivers were shot to death, collapsing limply in their seats.

Some of the other vehicles managed to start and began to make their way into the distance.

Right at this moment, another 2 huge buses came from the front of the lane, sealing off the road ahead. Another 2 buses drove from behind and cut off their retreat.

Huang Weian had a look of horror on his face; he grabbed the driver next to him, He Ye, and pointed to the right of the road before shouting, "Go!! DRIVE!! Why did you stop? Why did you stop?! There! Drive towards there!!"

He Ye saw the barren lands on both sides of the road and he gritted his teeth, veering the bus off the path and rushing towards the wilderness.

The remaining jeeps and humvees also split up and drove off the road, driving towards the wilderness. That was the only lifeline they had at the moment. They couldn't care less about the survivors in the 2 remaining buses.

A number of militants jumped off the 2 buses that had blocked the way forward, and in their hands, there were .81 Rifles and .79 Assault Rifles.

A dense barrage of bullets was fired through the windows of the survivor buses, instantly killing the drivers.

Under the firepower of the militants, the drivers of the Dongfeng vehicles panicked and rushed out towards the main road. Bullet after bullet hit the 4 Dongfeng vehicles, causing many sparks to fly out.

The militants saw that the vehicles were leaving one by one, making a beeline for the main road, and a small detachment of 30 people immediately chased. The land here was full of detritus and forests, and the direction that those vehicles were heading towards had a small forest: even if it were an off-road vehicle, its speed

would not be fast enough to navigate the forest in a short span of time. Sooner or later, the militants would catch up.

Another team of 12 militants strode towards the 3 buses-to them, the buses were already their spoils.

Right at this time, 5 policemen jumped out swiftly from one of the buses. The moment they disembarked, they rolled onto the ground and raised their .79 Assault Rifles, beginning their counter-attack on the 12 militants.

Caught off-guard and under the rapid fire of those assault rifles, three militants took heavy damage, with one of them instantly dying when a bullet penetrated his head. As for the other two, one received a shot to his chest, whilst another received a shot to his waist, falling down to the floor and wailing in agony.

The remaining militants immediately dived towards the side, searching for cover as they scrambled away; at the same time, they fired back at the 5 policemen.

Both sides were engaged in a fierce gunfight in the dark of the night.

On the other hand, the survivors in the 3 buses were a different story. They were panicking yet staying still like wooden chickens, feeling jittery as they watched the gunfight, waiting for their fate to be decided by the winners.

"Get up all of you, don't make a single sound!" The moment the beer bottles had smashed, Yue Zhong had jolted awake and he immediately patted the 3 ladies sleeping beside him awake.

[TN: 2 Ladies and 1 kid to be exact...]

Zhuo Yatong, Yun Caiwei and Gu Manzi all woke up and stared at Yue Zhong mutely. Although they were a little shocked, they knew that the man in front of them was reliable. As long as he was not panicking, they were not afraid.

"Stay here. I will go take a look at what is happening. My orders!"

Yue Zhong then swiftly left the tent, immediately rolling onto the ground and looking into the distance as he lay there.

Not long after, fierce gunshots rang out from the survivor camps.

Due to the events that had occurred the previous evening, when Yue Zhong had set up camp, he had set it up further away from the main camp. It was because of this that his danger perception did not act up, and he did not manage to catch onto the militants' actions.

"Kill them!" Yue Zhong saw 3 militants approaching and immediately gave an order to White Bones.

Upon receiving the order, White Bones' eyes flashed with a demonic fire; pulling out its huge White Bone Axe, it rushed towards the 3 militants like a tank.

The 3 militants saw White Bones rushing over and their faces had a hint of ridicule on them as they raised their guns and fired at it.

"What a stupid enhancer! Actually using a system weapon to charge at us, do you think we're zombies?" A militant thought in his heart as he was firing at White Bones, laughing coldly. They knew that the current world had given birth to many enhancers who were stronger than normal human beings, yet even their stronger bodies would die if they were to be hit by a bullet. There was nothing for the militants to fear.

However, their faces turned pale when they realised that the bullets were bouncing off White Bones' body, merely causing sparks to fly out and not doing anything to impede its charge.

Seeing that their guns were ineffective at hurting White Bones, the 3 militants were frightened and immediately turned around, starting to run back in a frenzy. An existence that could not be damaged by bullets was not something they had prepared for, and the huge axe in its hands was obviously a close-range weapon; they did not want to be dismembered by it.

White Bones saw the escaping militants and immediately stopped in its tracks as it raised its left claw. At that instant, 3 Bone Spears shot out from White Bones' left claw, piercing through the 3 militants' heads and killing them instantly.

After going through various enhancements, White Bones was able to act independently and it was now able to accurately manipulate 3 Bone Spears at once within a range of 100 metres. Subsequently, it could easily shoot out and control the bone spears, finishing off the 3 normal enemies.

Yue Zhong saw that White Bones had disposed of the 3 enemies who were approaching, and he called out in a low voice to those in the tent, "Come out now!"

Zhuo Yatong, Yun Caiwei, Gu Manzi and Liu Erhei all walked out of the tents. They had heard the gunshots from nearby-there had obviously been an intense battle going on out there. Upon realizing that fact, their faces turned pale.

Gunfight! They had only seen scenes like this before in the movies: now that it was happening to themselves, the fear of the stray bullets that might randomly hit them struck deep into their hearts.

The moment Zhuo Yatong and the rest saw Yue Zhong, their panic was quelled a little, as his face had not a single tinge of fear to it. Instead, it was endlessly calm.

"Follow me!"

Yue Zhong pulled away Zhuo Yatong and the rest; under the cover of the dark night, they arrived quietly at a small forest.

"I will leave Iron Bones (Yue Zhong's chosen moniker for White Bones) to stay behind and protect you guys. Don't leave this place. As long as Iron Bones is not dead, you guys will be fine."

Yue Zhong threw a huge pile of ropes and a .54 Handgun to Liu Erhei before saying lightly,

"I'm going to go take care of those guys. Liu Erhei, follow behind me and help me tie up some prisoners."

Liu Erhei's body twitched as his hands shook while lifting the ropes and the .54 Handgun; he had a pleading look on his face as he gazed at Yue Zhong. He was not willing to take part in such a dangerous operation because he was certain that if he was careless, then he would die.

Yue Zhong stared fiercely at him and Liu Erhei knew that he could not change his mind. He had also witnessed Yue Zhong's heavy-handedness before and was clear on Yue Zhong's behavior, therefore he could only resign himself to his fate.

Zhuo Yatong had a look full of worry as she said, "Do take care!"

Yun Caiwei also called out sweetly, "Big Brother, you must come back safely. Little Wei will pray for you, you will definitely be safe."

[TN: Little asian girls have a tendency to refer to themselves using the third-person]

Gu Manzi looked at Yue Zhong and was at a loss. She was vehemently against the idea of Yue Zhong taking action all on his own. To her, there were many people on the opposite side-with so many guns, the current best course of action was to sneak away while they were not paying attention. She did not know why Yue Zhong had such guts. She hesitated for a while before also saying, "Be careful."

Yue Zhong laughed, bringing Liu Erhei with him as they charged in the direction of the fight.

With the strengthening of his passive skill Night Enhancement, Yue Zhong's night vision had improved to a farther distance and he was now more aware of danger.

To most people, the darkness of the night was a hindrance to the eyesight, yet to Yue Zhong, it was the best cover. Under the cover

of the darkness, he quietly snuck into the survivor camp.

## Chapter 216: Tong Xiaoyun

---

A dozen militants had already surrounded the 2 buses; under the threat of the militants' firearms, the survivors in the bus had no choice but to exit the bus one by one, with fear written all over their faces.

Amongst the 70+ survivors that disembarked, the 30+ students were part of them as well. All of them looked at the militants with their guns and their faces were filled with fear and panic.

"This time, our harvest isn't bad at all!" One of the militants looked at the survivors, as if he were gazing at a flock of sheep.

"Yeah! This time, there are a lot of quality goods!" Another militant swept a look over the survivors and his eyes brightened as he pulled out Wang Ni from the crowd. He laughed before saying to the rest, "I shall have my fun first, I will let you guys have a turn later."

As Wang Ni was dragged out by the militant, although she was shocked, she did not resist. She knew that it would come to this sooner or later, but she couldn't care less; anyway, she was not some virtuous lady, she just wanted to live on. Resisting the militant could result in her death.

"Chen Jian! F\*\*\* your mother! Who wants to play with your leftovers!"

Another militant scoffed jokingly as his eyes flashed with an obscene light and also roamed across the survivors. At last, his gaze landed onto one of the students and his eyes lit up. He dragged out a female student of around 13-14 years old with an oval face and snow-white skin, as well as a seemingly very pure and beautiful appearance.

The student who was dragged out was called Tong Xiaoyun. She was both delicate and beautiful, her character was quiet and well-



behaved, and she consistently received good grades. She was considered the dream first love for many of the boys in the class.

The moment the militant pulled Tong Xiaoyun out, he stirred up the hornet's nest as many of the students called out emotionally and agitatedly.

"What do you think you're doing?!"

"Let go of Xiaoyun!!"

"....."

"Go die!" Facing the ire of these middle school students, the militant's face turned hideous and he immediately pulled out a gun, firing 6 shots at two of the boys who were especially agitated.

At such a short distance, one of the boys received a bullet to his brain and his eyes flashed with a hint of disbelief as he lifelessly crumpled to the floor. The other student had multiple shot wounds in his chest and flecks of blood splashed out as he also fell to the floor without another word.

Seeing this miserable scene, the rest of the survivors immediately wailed in fright and chaos was about to ensue once again.

With a sweep, the militants aimed their guns at the survivors and all of them shivered; they stood still, not daring to move.

The militant leader looked at the survivors with scorn before shouting out overbearingly,

"Damn it! All you measly pieces of sh\*t, you must be tired of living! If daddy wants to play with some women, what's it to you?! Do you believe that I will slaughter you and make you into human sausages!?"

After being hollered at by the leader of the militants, the survivors quietened down and looked at him in fear.

"Bah! Cowards!" The leader laughed coldly as he spat out a mouthful of phlegm directly onto the face of the most agitated

student earlier.

That student was called Zhang Mi. He had always been secretly admiring Tong Xiaoyun. Earlier, when she was dragged out, his emotions went into a disarray. He had also just received the humiliation of the militant and his heart was full of fury and resentment, yet the fates of those two classmates of his had warned him about the consequences of being rash.

"Chick! Do you see that? No one will come to your rescue!!" The militant pinched Tong Xiaoyun's cheeks and let her look at the teacher and students nearby.

"Wake up to the reality in front of you. No one will save you and no one is able to. If you service me properly, I don't mind feeding you. If you make me unhappy, then you will be passed around my brothers before we cook you!"

Tong Xiaoyun looked towards her teacher Liu Jin and classmates pleadingly, hoping for a brave person to stand up for her and save her from the hands of the militant.

However, it was in vain as her teacher and fellow students all avoided her gaze and didn't even dare to look at her. Amongst the students, there were enhancers but they did not possess strong skills and under the threat of firearms, even enhancers couldn't do much.

Tong Xiaoyun was starting to despair: she was brought up to be virtuous and traditional, and not as open-minded as Wang Ni. If she was raped by the militant, she would not be able to continue living.

The militant let out a perverted smile, licking his lips as he pushed Tong Xiaoyun to the ground. After that, he undid his zipper and pulled out his ugly thing; while holding his gun to Tong Xiaoyun's head, he laughed pervertedly and said, "Lick it!!"

[TN: That is horrible. She's only 14 for goodness' sake.]

[Divinecelestialbeinglol: I like pizza.]

After Z-Day, the constant pressure and stress to live on, as well as the uncertainty towards the future had resulted in the depravity of a lot of people's hearts. The militant was also a pervert to begin with and liked to humiliate girls in front of an audience, desolating their body and mind. The despairing look on their faces was like a drug to him, giving him immense pleasure.

Tong Xiaoyun was kneeling on the ground and could feel the gazes of the rest of them on her like knives. She was unwilling to perform this type of vile thing in front of other people, yet she could feel the gun pressing against her head; if she did not heed the perverted militant's words, she would be shot dead on the spot.

The militant used the gun and without a shred of pity, pressed it against her head and shouted out threateningly, "Faster! Do you want to die?!"

Tong Xiaoyun only felt that her world had suddenly collapsed and she began to cry, her hands trembling as she slowly reached out for the ugly thing in front of her eyes.

The militant's eyes flashed with a hint of pleasure; yet another pitiful creature was about to be conquered under his threats and he felt a sick sense of gratification.

'Bang!'

A last hint of fear flashed past the militant's eyes. In between his eyebrows, there was now an additional hole that had been created by a bullet. He crumpled to the floor lifelessly with disbelief on his face.

The rest of the militants, who were planning to enjoy themselves by watching the live-action performance in front of them, immediately went into an uproar.

Bang! Bang!

Clear gunshots rang out incessantly throughout the dark of the

night and with every gunshot, one more militant would be shot dead.

The militants couldn't care less about controlling the survivors right now and immediately split up to find cover.

Taking advantage of the chaos happening among the militants, Zhang Mi ran to Tong Xiaoyun's side and urged, "Tong Xiaoyun, hurry, let's escape!!"

Tong Xiaoyun looked at Zhang Mi, her pale face suddenly smiling and saying,

"Escape? Where can we escape to? Everywhere out there is filled with zombies, mutant beasts, and even scarier humans. Even if we make use of the chance to escape, without rations nor a vehicle, where can we run to?"

Tong Xiaoyun was a smart child to begin with, it was just that she was well taken care of and had been sheltered all her life. She had never had the chance to fully utilize her brain. Humans were like that-if not forced into a corner, people would not be able to exhibit their strongest traits. Under the earlier threats, she had begun to think a lot in the ugly situation.

Watching at the pitiful-looking Tong Xiaoyun, in a moment of hot-bloodedness, Zhang Mi couldn't help but cry out loudly, "Tong Xiaoyun, come with me! I will use my life to protect you!"

Tong Xiaoyun only looked at Zhang Mi coldly; if it was before, she would have been grateful, maybe even fall for him. However, she knew that his words were just that, words. When she was feeling despondent earlier, Zhang Mi had chosen to keep quiet to one side, looking on powerlessly. Whatever he said now, she could not believe even if she wanted to.

At this time, a huge number of the survivors were fighting to escape in other directions. The militants were obviously not decent human beings, especially the leader who mentioned human

sausages. It was obvious that this power was not a proper one in any way, and so the survivors were not willing to stay any longer.

"I'm leaving! Take care of yourself!" Tong Xiaoyun looked towards the darkness and her eyes flashed as she mustered her courage and determination, before running in the direction where the bullets were being fired from.

Zhang Mi looked at the departing back of Tong Xiaoyun and his face fell. In the end, he still turned around and ran back towards his classmates. As the leader was Liu Jin, even if he was a low level enhancer and could not do much to people who held guns, against the normal zombies, they had a small chance of prevailing. Searching for resources was also easier with others than by oneself.

In this current world, one would need to possess an adequate amount of strength to do things independently. Without it, only by joining together with others could one ensure a difficult but possible survival.

The one who was disposing of the militants was precisely Yue Zhong, who took to the darkness like a fish would to water. By himself, he had pressured the many members of the militant group in such a way that they couldn't even catch their breath.

In the dark of the night, the militants had no way of seeing anything beyond 20m into the distance, whilst Yue Zhong's vision remained accurate even over distances of 2000m.

Yue Zhong's body flashed about like a specter shuttling about in the dark. In his hands was the .03 Rifle, exhibiting his firing skills that he had honed tirelessly; every shot accurately found its target and blew apart a militant's head.

After each shot, Yue Zhong would immediately change his position. A huge hail of bullets would fire randomly at his previous position, yet they wouldn't hit anything. The militants could not even see where Yue Zhong was and could only helplessly fire in the

general direction. They even tried to use suppressing fire to force him out, but it was to no avail.

As he hunted down the militants one by one, Yue Zhong kept on changing his position. Watching their comrades die one after another from the bullets appearing out of nowhere, the militants lost their morale quickly. They scrambled into their 2 buses, afraid to even stick their heads out, waiting for aid to come.

# Chapter 217: Reversing the Tides of Battle

---

After Yue Zhong had forced the militants to retreat into the buses, he approached the buses swiftly like a ghost; with a wave of his hand, a grenade instantly appeared and he immediately pulled out the pin, throwing it into one of the buses.

"Grenade!!!" When they saw the grenade being thrown in, the militants who were cowering inside the bus and guarding the windows and doors with their guns were frightened out of their wits.

Boom! Following that horrifying explosion, hot air waves and shrapnel covered the entire bus in a matter of seconds, killing many militants and injuring the rest.

Yue Zhong didn't even pause for a second and followed up with another grenade into the other bus. With a 'boom', the militants in the other bus met the same end.

Yue Zhong rushed up to one of the buses, brandishing his blade and finishing off those militants who didn't die from the explosion, completely wiping them out. After clearing the first bus, he went on to the second bus and killed the remaining militants there as well, before absorbing all of their rations and equipment into his storage ring. As for their firearms, such things were considered very precious in the current world, so Yue Zhong didn't even leave a single bullet or gun behind.

After clearing the militants in those 2 buses, Yue Zhong disembarked and saw Tong Xiaoyun emerging out from the darkness and walking towards him.

Yue Zhong looked at Tong Xiaoyun as he furrowed his eyebrows slightly, saying, "What are you doing here?"

"It really is him!!" Tong Xiaoyun saw Yue Zhong's features clearly and affirmed her earlier conjecture.

Tong Xiaoyun walked towards Yue Zhong and mustered up her courage to promote herself.

"Boss Yue, let me be your underling! I can wash clothes, cook and will pick up arms to fight if need be. If you want, I can sleep with you as well. Rest assured, I'm still a virgin and I haven't let any other men touch me yet."

Tong Xiaoyun saw Yue Zhong taking care of the militants entirely on his own and she had made the decision to follow him. She desperately wanted to survive in this new world and knew that the only way for her was to rely on a strong person. Zhang Mi was obviously someone she could not rely on-only Yue Zhong possessed the strength for her to feel safe. As for her body, she knew that it was not within her control; even if it was not given to Yue Zhong now, sooner or later, someone would lay their hands on her, just because she was too weak and powerless.

"Don't make a sound!" Yue Zhong suddenly pounced forward and pushed her to the ground.

Tong Xiaoyun was about to push him off almost instinctively, but she fought against it. It was just that her eyes flashed with a hint of bitterness, as she did not expect Yue Zhong to be so urgent and want to do it here.

At the very next moment, she knew that she had mistaken his intentions. Bullets flew at the spot where they had been just before, causing tiny craters to appear one after another.

The militants who had gone on to give chase to the other fleeing survivors had returned, and upon hearing the explosions of the grenades, 12 of them had immediately rushed back to provide assistance.

Yue Zhong hugged onto Tong Xiaoyun as they rolled towards a huge rock for cover, before he took out a .54 Handgun and passed it to her, ordering,



"Stay here and don't move! I will go take care of them!"

"Mm!" Tong Xiaoyun was scared witless by the sudden hail of bullets, to the point that she could not stop her body from trembling. She held on tightly to the gun that Yue Zhong had passed to her. She was just a 13-14 year old girl after all, and had not experienced any sort of life-changing event before, not to mention that she was suddenly now part of a gunfight.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath before he rushed out like a cheetah.

Those militants were shooting into the distance where they couldn't see anything, and so they sprayed out their bullets without actually hitting anything. They quickly stood up from behind their cover as they carefully edged their way towards the area where Yue Zhong and Tong Xiaoyun had been standing before.

Yue Zhong took a look at those militants when they stood up and he immediately fired off 2 shots with his .03 Rifle. Two of the militants immediately had bullet holes appear in their heads and they crumpled to the floor.

The remaining militants immediately panicked and split up to find cover, while firing random shots in the direction where Yue Zhong was.

After Yue Zhong had fired his shots, he had already made a move; those militants were shooting at empty space, not even hitting his shadow.

Yue Zhong was like an assassin in the night as he made his way closer to the militants, and every shot of his correctly found its target, exploding each head upon contact.

It did not matter where the militants were finding cover, as they would still be taken out one by one. After another 6 militants had been killed, one of them finally could not bear to be hunted down

by such a terrifying opponent anymore. Being powerless to even counter-attack, he threw his gun to the floor and shouted frantically,

"Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!! I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

Yue Zhong had actually already aimed at that militant; when he saw that the militant had surrendered, he immediately fired a shot to the militant's side.

With a 'bang', the militant saw his comrade right beside him die with a bullet penetrating through his brain, falling lifelessly to the ground.

Upon witnessing this scene, the militant's heart went cold as he hugged his head with both arms and crouched down, not daring to make a single move.

"I surrender! Don't kill me!! I surrender!!" The remaining 2 militants also threw down their weapons in fear, shouting out loudly. They could not even see the enemy yet their friends had died one by one: there was nothing more horrifying than this. They were not zombies and could still feel fear. They wanted to live on, so they chose to surrender.

Yue Zhong stood behind the 3 militants, calling out to Liu Erhei, "Liu Erheii! Go retrieve their weapons and tie them up!"

Liu Erhei had been hiding behind a huge stone the entire time without moving, as though he was a corpse. He jumped up and brought along the rope before arriving in front of Yue Zhong and immediately began to flatter loudly, "The fight is finally over! Boss Yue, you're really amazing. I am too awed by you!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the lazy Liu Erhei as he frowned and spoke sternly, "Tie them up properly! We don't have any time to waste!"

After killing 12 of the militants, the matters on hand were not yet finished. There were still over 20 militants who were still engaged in battle with 5 policemen. Yue Zhong had to hurry over and kill

them as well.

"Yes!" Liu Erhei replied, as he quickly set down to tying up the militants tightly with the rope, and made use of rags to stuff into their mouths.

Yue Zhong glanced at the captives and gave a command to Liu Erhei, "Stay here and watch them. If they dare to make a move, then shoot them down."

Hearing those words, the 3 captives shuddered and did not dare make any more unnecessary movements. The current era was not a period of human rights or peace, so killing captives was not something people could be bothered to punish you for; if someone died, it was simply too bad.

After handing over the 3 captives to Liu Erhei, Yue Zhong once again made his way swiftly like a cheetah towards the location of the gunfight.

At night, the situation was not favourable at all for gunfights. Under the cover of the darkness, the hit rate would be very low unless the fight was at a close distance. It was only under the cover of the night that Wang Jian and his team of 4 policemen could continue to hold their ground against the 20-odd militants.

In this wild barren land, the gunshots were numerous, yet the death count was low. The gunfight had gone on for quite a while; Wang Jian's side only had one person who had been careless and received a wound to his arm from a random bullet, yet no one else had received an injury. It was just that with the flow of the gunfight, Wang Jian's side was slowly running out of ammunition: without their ammunition, they would soon be powerless to resist the advance of the 20-odd militants.

Right at this moment, Yue Zhong had already routed behind the militants and he fired 2 shots all of a sudden, killing 2 of the militants immediately.

"An expert!! There is an expert who can fight in the night!!"

The leader of this team of militants saw his 2 subordinates' heads explode and his heart went cold. It must be made clear that during the gunfight with Wang Jian's team, his team had expended over 200 bullets; other than a bullet grazing the other side and 3 of his own team members suffering injuries, no one had actually died.

Two militants had suddenly met their deaths, hence it was obvious that an expert had arrived. In the dark of the night, someone who possessed such fearsome night vision and a good aim was truly a killing machine to be feared. Even with their numbers, they might not necessarily be able to win over the enemy.

"The expert out there!! My name is Xiong Zheng! This time, our Fierce Tiger Team recognizes our loss!! Please grant us your mercy and let us leave with our lives. Women, food, weapons, any requests that you have, just say it and we will definitely do our best to provide you with ample compensation." The leader of the militants called Xiong Zheng called out loudly into the dark night.

The fact that Xiong Zheng could lead this small team was not just based on his battle abilities, but also his power of observation and judgement. He had already guessed that the explosions from the grenades were caused by Yue Zhong, and the team that had gone to provide reinforcements must have either perished or been captured. He could only negotiate for terms now, otherwise the only thing that awaited them was death.

Yue Zhong called out coldly from the dark, "All of you put down your weapons and surrender to me. I can leave you with your lives, otherwise, you will all die! You have only 3 seconds to consider. After 3 seconds, I will kill all of those still holding onto their weapons."

"Yue Zhong! That was Yue Zhong's voice. Has he come to rescue us? How did he manage to force them to beg for mercy? He really does possess an incredible amount of strength." Wang Jian heard

Yue Zhong's voice and his heart was shaken until he gradually calmed down. Regardless, with Yue Zhong's arrival, their lives were safe.

If Yue Zhong hadn't arrived, when Wang Jian and his team ran out of bullets, they would have been shot dead or captured by the militants.

Upon hearing those words from Yue Zhong, Xiong Zheng and his company hesitated for a while before dropping their guns. They were about to hand over their own fates like livestock.

"Who the hell are you!! Let daddy send you to your death!!" A militant with an overbearing nature shouted loudly as he raised a Knife-Type Assault Rifle and began to fire wildly towards Yue Zhong's direction.

# Chapter 218: Utter Surrender

---

Bang! The militant had not even finished a magazine of ammunition before a bullet found its way into his head. His body crumpled lifelessly to the ground.

Upon seeing this, the morale and courage of the militants took an even further dive, and everyone's faces were filled with fear. Not a single one of them wanted to die.

"The 3 seconds are up! Those who have not released their weapons yet, die!" Yue Zhong's ice-cold voice resounded throughout the area, as though it was hammering into the hearts of the militants.

With a 'bang', yet another militant who was still wielding his weapon received a bullet through his brains, falling lifelessly to the ground.

Watching another comrade die before them, the militants had faces filled with fear and they immediately threw their weapons to the ground.

Xiong Zheng saw his subordinates surrendering their weapons and he lightly sighed, before doing the same with his .79 Assault Rifle. At death's door, it was something even trained soldiers would do and choose over honour. They were not bandits after all—facing the threat of death, surrendering was a normal course of action.

Most of the militants had thrown their guns down, but there were still 2 remaining militants who lay prone on the ground, using their comrades as a cover and awaiting Yue Zhong's appearance. The moment he showed up, they would immediately make a move to kill him. However, they never expected that Yue Zhong had already grasped each and every militant's location clearly.

Seeing that the 2 crafty militants still held the notion of retaliating, Yue Zhong fired 2 shots that directly penetrated their skulls.

After the 2 militants were picked off by Yue Zhong, Xiong Zheng's backup plans were entirely quelled.

In the darkness, Yue Zhong coldly ordered, "All of you get out of the cover. Walk to the bus and squat down with your hands above your heads. Those who don't comply will be dealt with immediately."

After all, Yue Zhong was acting on his own: if he were to reveal himself and get ambushed, he would have to worry about the militants making use of the opportunity to escape one by one. At that time, it would be very troublesome to deal with them. If he could gather them together and keep an eye on them, if they did want to escape, then it would be much easier to take care of them.

One by one, the militants walked out from the cover, towards the direction Yue Zhong had indicated.

All of a sudden, one of the militants made a break for it, wanting to use the cover of the night to escape.

With a 'bang', the militant did not even make it past a few steps before receiving a bullet through his brain, becoming a corpse collapsed on the ground.

Witnessing this, the fear of Yue Zhong only grew even more in the militants' hearts as they made their way to the bus and squatted down with their hands above their heads; no one else made a further attempt to disrupt anything.

In fact, Yue Zhong was only by himself-if the militants all started running in different directions, he could at most kill 7 or 8 of them, and he wouldn't be able to give chase. However, under the power of fear, the militants could only comply with his orders and they didn't try to escape.

"Liu Erhei, come out! Tie them all up!" Yue Zhong ordered in a deep voice.

"Yes! Boss Yue!" Liu Erhei, who wasn't far away, answered immediately. He pushed the other 3 captives to join the rest in front of the bus then pulled out the ropes, proceeding to tie up the militants tightly.

Yue Zhong then came out from the dark and called out towards the policemen hiding behind the cover, "Wang Jian, the rest of you come out as well!"

Even if the 5 of them harbored any intent to make a move against Yue Zhong, he was confident of dealing with them in the dark of the night, which was why he emerged from the darkness.

Wang Jian heard Yue Zhong's voice and hesitated for a moment, exchanging glances with his colleagues. Only then did they step out from behind the cover. With the earlier display of Yue Zhong's strength, if he wanted them dead, they would have died already.

Yue Zhong took a look at the 5 policemen, before pointing to the captives and ordering, "Watch them, I will go deal with the rest!"

With that, Yue Zhong immediately retreated into the darkness. In the night, Wang Jian's team had neither any special abilities nor sufficient strength, so he would rather have them keep watch.

One of the policemen took a look at Wang Jian, before saying, "Old Wang, what do we do? Are we going to just stay here and wait for him?"

Among these 5 policemen, Wang Jian was the quickest and at the same time, he was a Level 13 Enhancer, thus the small team all treated him as the leader.

Wang Jian gritted his teeth as he said, "We shall wait!"

He understood the intentions of the other policeman-it was to take advantage of the time when Yue Zhong was busy dealing with the rest of the militants, and escape with a car on their own.



After all, Yue Zhong was temporarily on their side, but having someone else be in control of your life didn't leave a good taste in the mouth. Once Yue Zhong was back, they would be at his mercy. In the dark of the night, they had no way of overcoming him in a fight. Furthermore, from his performance in the daytime earlier, he was not a hot-blooded youth and didn't make any rash decisions.

Wang Jian was very clear on all these, yet he still chose to wait. One of the reasons was that the majority of their supplies were in some of the Dongfeng Vehicles that had driven off into the wilderness. Without ample rations, even if they could escape from here, they would soon face the problem of hunger.

Yue Zhong was running all the way and soon he saw the other group of militants pushing the captured survivors towards his direction. There was a total of 17 survivors and each one of them was carrying a huge load of supplies on their back. It seemed that the militants had ordered for the survivors to transport the supplies out of the Dongfeng Vehicles.

Those Dongfeng Vehicles were actually filled with various items, but the militants had only allowed the survivors to carry the necessary fuel and rations, abandoning the rest.

The amount of rations the vehicle fleet had was already alarmingly low, with not more than 50kg of rice left. Other than that, there were some other consumables, and due to the fact that there weren't many rations left, the 17 survivors could easily transport the items from the Dongfeng Vehicles.

Yue Zhong looked at the militants from afar and cocked his rifle.

With a 'bang', one of the militants immediately died with a bullet through his brain.

The rest of the militants were shocked and immediately split up to find cover, whilst at the same time, they returned fire in the direction that Yue Zhong was at.

The survivors made use of that momentary freedom to escape towards the darkness whilst carrying the rations. Only 4 or 5 of them chose to abandon the rations. All of the survivors were very clear on how valuable the rations were. Many would not be willing to leave the rations even as they were escaping for their lives. If they threw the rations away, should they escape from the current crisis, they would face the imminent problem of hunger right afterwards.

In the dark night, all the attacks of the militants came to nought.

Yue Zhong easily picked off the militants one by one all by himself, aided by the cover of darkness.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!!"

"I surrender!!!"

After five or six of the militants' heads had exploded, the remaining militants could not withstand the fearsome pressure anymore and began to surrender one by one.

In the dark, Yue Zhong coldly called out, "All of you come out! Pick up the rations from the ground and walk to the bus. I have my eyes on you."

The militants came out from behind their cover, carrying the 4 bags of rations that had been thrown to the ground by the survivors. They did not know how many guns were aimed at them currently and this fear filled their hearts.

Yue Zhong absorbed all the guns that the militants had put down into his Storage Ring and continued observing from the dark.

After killing the 2 militants who had tried to escape, the rest of the militants resigned to their fate and they fearfully transported the rations to the bus.

By this time, there were already many survivors gathered near the bus; upon seeing that the militants had been rounded up and captured, many had returned when the gunfight had come to an

end. Compared to the outside world, it was much safer here.

"Too amazing!! He's really too terrifying! Too strong!"

Seeing that Yue Zhong had chased the militants from the dark as though he was rounding up ducks, the survivors were all shocked beyond belief. As they thought about how they had tried to extort his supplies under Huang Weian's incitement earlier in the day, they now felt deep regret. If Yue Zhong had blew his top, they might have already died by then.

"He's too powerful!!! If only he was my man!!" Wang Ni stood amongst the survivors, watching Yue Zhong come out from the dark as her eyes filled with a complex gaze.

The moment the militants had arrived in front of the bus, they were tied up by Liu Erhei and pushed to one side as he maintained his vigilance.

Yue Zhong saw that the situation was calming down and called out loudly, "Iron Bones! Bring them over! Tong Xiaoyun, you come out too!"

Not long after, under the protection of White Bones, Zhuo Yatong and the rest, as well as Tong Xiaoyun, gathered in front of the bus.

"Did he subdue all these men by himself? It's too amazing!!"

Zhuo Yatong, Tong Xiaoyun, Gu Manzi and Yun Caiwei all looked at the kneeling militants who had been tied up, and their eyes flashed with a hint of shock and pride. They did not expect Yue Zhong to be that strong, to the point of turning the tide of the battle just with his efforts alone, and even capturing 30-odd militants.

[TN: What about poor Liu Erhei who tied them up?]

[Divinecelestialbeinglol: pfft insignificant side character]

The women amongst the pitiful survivors all looked at Zhuo

Yatong and the other three women with jealousy and envy. In the current world, having someone strong and decent to rely on was a huge blessing.

"It's great that this strong person is my man! I must have him fully in my grasp." Gu Manzi gazed at Yue Zhong with joy and pride in her eyes and heart. She could feel the countless jealous gazes from the other women amongst the survivors.

Tong Xiaoyun had similar thoughts as her feelings soared when she looked at Yue Zhong.

"I absolutely cannot give up on this person. No matter what, I need to stay by his side."

## Chapter 219: Choosing Sides

---

At this moment, what Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun were feeling for Yue Zhong could not be considered as love. They wanted to possess him, purely for the sake of living a better life in this cruel, post-apocalyptic world. Love was considered a luxury that only the strong possessed the right to enjoy. The weak could only focus on surviving, much less talk about love.

The fact that Yue Zhong could win Zhuo Yatong's heart was purely by chance. As for the relationship between him and the other 2 girls, there was no prior interaction-to suddenly develop feelings for each other would be considered a fantasy.

Under the eyes of the various people present, Yue Zhong walked up directly to Xiong Zheng, holding a .54 Handgun to his head as he coldly said,

"Who are you people? I only want the truth, if you say any lies, I will instantly blow apart your head!"

Seeing how aggressive Yue Zhong was, the survivors looked at one another and their fear towards him in their hearts increased by yet another notch. They knew that he was heavy-handed and could kill without blinking, but this sort of fierceness really made them feel cold in their hearts.

"Don't shoot!! I'll say!! I'll say whatever you want to know, as long as I know, I will tell you!!"

Xiong Zheng broke out in cold sweat the moment he felt the gun pointing at his head. From the very start, he hadn't been some heroic warrior who did not fear death: being threatened by Yue Zhong thus caused him to panic.

One of the militants suddenly called out loudly. "Xiong Zheng!! Our boss has not neglected you, yet you still dare to betray him!! Don't tell me you're not afraid that he will kill you and your

woman!!"

Yue Zhong did not even let him say another word before changing his aim towards that militant's head and pulling the trigger.

With a 'bang', the militant's head exploded. Bits and pieces of his skull, brain and blood splattered everywhere, causing the timid survivors to let out screams of horror.

Wang Jian and the other policemen frowned. They could not bring themselves to totally agree with Yue Zhong's methods as they had a strong sense of justice. However, while they were righteous, they were not pedantic or overscrupulous. Prior to the apocalypse, they had already known the dirty side of society.

There were even instances where as long as their threshold was not crossed, they would obey orders to carry out certain orders that might go against their moral code. If they had been too concerned with minor things and proceeded to lodge complaints, they might already have lost their rice bowls.

(TN: Basically, even if a mission crosses their bottom line, they still had to earn their keep)

Seeing the death of that militant who had suddenly spoken out, the rest of the militants became fearful and did not make any further sounds.

Yue Zhong coldly let his gaze linger around the militants, saying, "Those who still want to be loyal to their benefactor, just come out now. I will give you a chance and send you on your way to be loyal to him."

All the militants immediately shrank back in silence.

Yue Zhong then moved his gun back to Xiong Zheng's head, saying coldly,

"You can speak now! Tell me all that you know!"

"Yes! Yes! I'll speak!! I'll Speak!!" Xiong Zheng was also thoroughly frightened by Yue Zhong's killing without hesitation. He spoke like a jar of spilled beans, giving out all the information on the militants that he knew.

Xiong Zheng and the rest were from a gang called the Clear Wind Camp. After the apocalypse had occurred, there were simply too many zombies and also evolved zombies. The evolved zombies didn't fear bullets and were extremely difficult to deal with as well. Mutant beasts were also a huge problem, ferocious beyond belief and aggressive in nature. Compared to zombies and mutant beasts, normal humans were the weakest.

The Clear Wind Camp gang members were constantly on the lookout for small villages and after clearing the zombies, they would search for supplies. On the other hand, they would also make their move against other human survivors, absorbing the human survivors into their ranks and also taking possession of their food and other supplies.

The Clear Wind Camp's boss was called Lie Tianyang! He was an incredibly strong evolver. Under his leadership, the gang had been constantly absorbing various smaller groups and grew in number to about over 2600 people, with over 400 able-bodied fighters.

After the apocalypse, food sources had become scarce. Most of the seeds sown before Z-day had been unable to germinate; under these conditions, even though the gang had rounded up many survivors from different villages, they had barely managed to gather a small amount of food. In order to alleviate the situation, Lie Tianyang had actually ordered the massacre of some of the human survivors to be used as food to solve the food shortage problem.

Upon listening to Xiong Zheng's words, Wang Jian and the other survivors turned pale: if Yue Zhong had not acted against these militants, they would have been caught and dragged to the Clear Wind Camp to become food for their own species.

There was a total of over 100 survivors now-it used to be over 200, but some had escaped. By now, most of them had already witnessed the cruelty of the apocalypse world, with the frequent rapes, murders, robbery and other acts of debauchery. However, the very thought of cannibalism was something that definitely went way past the threshold of the many people present, and it was something they had yet to come across.

Yue Zhong's expression turned livid as he coldly asked Xiong Zheng, "Amongst you people, who has consumed human flesh?"

Xiong Zheng hesitated for a while, as he had already understood the underlying meaning of Yue Zhong's words. He did not want to betray his comrades who had gone through many battles with him.

Yue Zhong cocked the gun at Xiong Zheng's head as his killing intent rose, and he shouted,

"Say it! If you don't, I will still interrogate the others one by one!"

Xiong Zheng shuddered as he hastily pointed out a few of the militants.

"Him! Him! .....and him! These people have all consumed human flesh before!"

"Xiong Zheng! F\*\*\* your mother!"

"Xiong Zheng! You deserve death, you piece of trash!!"

"....."

Those who were pointed out by Xiong Zheng immediately turned pale as they loudly cursed at him.

Yue Zhong glanced at those militants before ordering the 5 policemen,

"Bring them away! Question them separately! Wang Jian, they are under your control now! Whatever you do, make sure you get the information quickly and inform me!"

"Understood!" Wang Jian was swept along with Yue Zhong's fury



and impulse as he answered resolutely, before dragging the militants away and beginning to interrogate them.

Without any limitation to the interrogation techniques, the 5 policemen quickly got the information they wanted and proved that everything Xiong Zheng had said was true.

The militants were quickly brought back and those who were confirmed to have consumed human flesh had expressions the colour of ash, whilst those who did not were similarly petrified, unsure of how Yue Zhong would deal with them.

Yue Zhong separated the militants into 2 camps, one consisting of those who had committed cannibalism and the other camp consisting of those who had not. He handed a Replica Tang Sword to Xiong Zheng, then pointed to one of the militants who had eaten human flesh and said,

"I need subordinates! Cut off his head, and from then on you will be under me! If you can't, then I will deem you to still be on his side!"

"What a vicious method! He is forcing us to choose sides!!"

Xiong Zheng received the Replica Tang Sword and his body shuddered involuntarily; he was aware of Yue Zhong's intentions to make use of him. If he could kill his old comrades, it meant that he was willing to cut off ties with the Clear Wind Camp gang, whereas if he couldn't, he was choosing death together with his comrades.

He gripped the Replica Tang Sword in his hands tightly and a ruthlessness arose in his heart, as he walked over to his comrade of days past. Xiong Zheng slashed down ferociously and decapitated his ex-comrade. Fresh blood sprayed out and dyed his entire body red, giving him the appearance of an evil spirit.

Xiong Zheng had killed his own comrade. He put the Replica Tang Sword to one side, before kneeling down in front of Yue

Zhong and loudly proclaiming his allegiance:

"Xiong Zheng is willing to swear fealty to Your Lordship and will fight for you. Lord, please accept this subordinate!"

Yue Zhong looked at Xiong Zheng approvingly:

"Very good! From now on, you are the captain of my 2nd Team! Get up!"

Xiong Zheng stood up and respectfully returned the Replica Tang Sword in his hands to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong immediately gave a .81 Rifle and 2 grenades to Xiong Zheng. At such a close distance, Yue Zhong could take care of him easily, so he wasn't worried about Xiong Zheng revolting.

Yue Zhong once again handed the Replica Tang Sword to another militant who had not touched human flesh, saying coldly,

"It's your turn! Do you want to kill him or die with him?"

The militant's heart went cold and in the end, he accepted the Replica Tang Sword. He gritted his teeth, stepped forward and swung it down, decapitating his former comrade, then knelt down in front of Yue Zhong to swear fealty.

In a cycle like this, the militants began defecting to Yue Zhong one by one. With one fell swoop, Yue Zhong obtained the submission of 15 militants, and the price of the exchange was the 18 heads of the other militants rolling on the floor.

Watching the slaughter of the militants, many of the survivors could not take it and walked back to the buses. Some had even wet themselves upon witnessing the scene, while others immediately vomited. Wang Jian and his team were also shocked, not knowing how to react.

After those militants had submitted to Yue Zhong, he returned their guns to them and split them up into 3 teams. Each team had 5 members and the captains of the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Teams were Liu

Erhei, Xiong Zheng and another ex-militant named Zhang Niujiang respectively.

Originally, the 15 team members would have only formed a single team, but for further convenience and easier micromanagement, Yue Zhong had split them up the way he did.

After settling the issue of the teams, Yue Zhong started obtaining detailed information about Clear Wind Camp's situation, including the amount of fighters, firepower and intelligence they had.

With the current strength of Clear Wind Camp and the threat they posed, if it were in Qing Yuan County, Yue Zhong would simply pull out one of his main teams to easily crush them. However, he was on his own right now and could not afford to be careless.

Yue Zhong had just finished the meeting when Wang Jian hurriedly ran up to him and asked,

"Yue Zhong! No matter how frugal we are, our current supplies for the vehicle fleet can only last for the next 3 days at most. Are you able to think of a solution?"

Initially, the rations could have lasted another 10 days or so, but amidst the disarray of the fleet earlier, most of the rations had been taken away by the survivors who had fled. Subsequently, regardless of how frugal Wang Jian was, the amount left could only last for 3 days.

# Chapter 220: Surprise Attack on Clear Wind Camp!

---

Yue Zhong glanced at Wang Jian, raising an eyebrow as he said lightly,

"That's your problem, what do you need me for? Didn't you already ask us to leave the fleet? We will be on our way tomorrow morning, as for this matter, you'd better sort it out on your own."

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Wang Jian felt incredibly embarrassed as he had asked Yue Zhong to leave not even 10 hours ago. He was now regretting his choice to follow Huang Weian's advice and try to force Yue Zhong to hand over his supplies.

When Huang Weian had wanted to use the masses to try and oppress Yue Zhong, Wang Jian had silently consented to it. He had also hoped to obtain the rations from Yue Zhong to distribute equally among the survivors. The reason was purely that the amount of rations that the vehicle fleet had was too little-without enough food, the whole fleet would eventually collapse.

"Yue Zhong, today's matters were my fault! If you are still offended, you may shoot me and I still won't blame you. But those 100 survivors are innocent! Out here, only you have the ability to lead them to survival.

Take it that I'm begging you, please help them!! As long as you are willing to lead them, you are the leader of this fleet! My team and I will listen to all your commands. As long as you don't make us do anything that crosses our bottom line, we will be willing to do anything!" Wang Jian gritted his teeth as he said loudly.

After this night's gunfight, the policemen had very little ammunition left. Wang Jian himself was a Level 13 Enhancer and his strength was decent, but the current situation was not like the initial stages of the apocalypse anymore. Currently, even Level 13

Enhancers would find it hard to protect themselves; meeting any Type 2 evolved zombies would mean certain death. The pressure on Wang Jian to ensure the survival of over one hundred people was massive.

Wang Jian had led this fleet of survivors for quite some time, and had slowly begun to feel the difficulties of being an upright and moral leader. He had to bear the burden of searching for food, mediating on any conflicts that arose, distributing the food and many other tasks, making him feel quite suffocated. Yue Zhong looked ruthless and vicious, yet he did not mindlessly slaughter the innocent, nor was he without empathy. It was because of this that Wang Jian wanted to rely on Yue Zhong, and thus pass the burden of 100+ survivors onto him.

Yue Zhong glanced at Wang Jian then asked in a deep voice, "Listen to me? If Huang Weian comes back, who will you listen to, him or me?"

Wang Jian hesitated a moment, before gritting his teeth and saying, "As long as you don't make us do immoral or despicable things, we'll listen to you."

Yue Zhong continued to pressure him.

"If we get to SY County, will you listen to the government's orders or mine?!"

It was rare to find that people like Wang Jian and his team could preserve their morality and righteousness in times of cruelty like this. Yue Zhong did want to keep and make use of people like them, who had a sense of justice and adhered to their own principles.

However, even though the apocalypse had finished its 3rd month, the influence of the government had not yet diminished, and in many people's hearts, the government was the proper entity to lead and govern. Especially for those who worked in civil posts,

such as Wang Jian and his team, to abolish the influence the government had left in their hearts would be much harder than imagined. Otherwise, they would not have let Huang Weian have his way and enjoy the high life, nor would he have been of any use anyway.

His original intentions were to follow SY County Government's orders, yet right now, he also wanted to preserve the lives of the 100+ people in the survivor fleet.

Yue Zhong looked at the hesitating Wang Jian and decided not to push him any further.

"Forget it! I just want you to promise me something. If SY County ever wants you to do something detrimental to my people, please decline. At the same time, you will have to bring your colleagues and leave my forces. This should be considered doable, right?"

Wang Jian heaved a sigh of relief, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong then continued, saying deeply,

"Fine! Go prepare yourself, we'll attack Clear Wind Camp shortly! Wrest it away from them!"

Xiong Zheng could not help but blurt out,

"Boss Yue! There are over 300 people standing guard at Clear Wind Camp, are we really going to attack tonight?"

This time, Clear Wind Camp had dispatched about 60 people on this seize-and-kill mission. There were also 300 guards at Clear Wind Camp. Yue Zhong's side only had about 20 people including the 5 policemen. To Xiong Zheng, wanting to get rid of 300 people with only this much strength was something too ambitious to accomplish.

Yue Zhong replied deeply,

"Yes! Go make preparations! We shall obtain Clear Wind Camp tonight!"

The darkness of the night was a great aid to those who possessed the Dark Knight Profession, like Yue Zhong. In the dark, he possessed eyesight far better than most; others were usually impeded by the darkness and could only exhibit 20% of their battle prowess at most. If Yue Zhong had to attack 300+ armed people during the day, he wouldn't have a chance of victory in the slightest. However, at night, coupled with White Bones' aid, he had around 70% confidence in conducting a sneak attack and overcoming the 300+ militants there.

Under the strong influence and insistence of Yue Zhong, the militants he had just absorbed into his ranks began making their preparations. Yue Zhong, on the other hand, did not request for the policemen to assist in the operation: instead, they were to stay behind and protect the survivors.

Under the cover of the night, Yue Zhong boarded a bus very quickly with the 15 ex-militants, Liu Erhei, the 4 ladies and White Bones as well. The bus headed towards Clear Wind Camp.

Although Wang Jian had agreed to obey him, Yue Zhong could not trust Wang Jian entirely, therefore he did not leave Zhuo Yatong and his team with the rest of the survivors. After all, the human heart was unfathomable-the other survivors might capture the girls to use as bargaining chips against him.

Not long after, the bus slowed down. Yue Zhong followed behind Xiong Zheng as they approached Clear Wind Camp with the utmost caution.

Soon, they came to a clearing which was about 50m away from the camp itself.

Clear Wind Camp was within a small town. Lie Tianyang might not be someone with values, but it was with no doubt that he was strong. After Z-Day, he had made use of his own strength to carve out a group for himself, as he stylized himself as Big Boss and occupied this small town. In the course of events, he had lost over

300 subordinates to the zombies.

After gaining control over the small town, he started hunting for survivors everywhere, negotiating his way about, clearing the surrounding towns and absorbing their powers. This was how Clear Wind Camp had its current strength.

After Yue Zhong and his team had gotten into the vicinity of the camp, they observed the situation carefully. They noticed that there was a timber fence surrounding the entire camp, with only a front and back door for entry and exit.

At the 2 doors, there were 4 militants on guard. At the same time, near the camp itself, there were two 8m tall towers erected that were equipped with machine guns.

Atop the towers, there was a team of 2 militants in each tower, providing surveillance on the ground below. Right beside the camp gates, there was a small camp of 40 militants; if there was a disturbance near the gates, they would be able to swiftly provide reinforcements.

After breaking past the perimeter, you would directly reach the normal survivors' living area. Moving further inwards to the centre, you would then reach a small district where the wealthy and powerful stayed. That was where Lie Tianyang was currently staying. Surrounding his residence were the various living quarters of his most loyal soldiers, otherwise also known as the strongest of Clear Wind Camp, the Green Wolves Mount Team.

The warriors of the Green Wolves Mount accompanied Lie Tianyang on his crusades to hunt, kill and pillage. They received the best treatment in the camp, enjoyed the best women, drank the best alcohol and even feasted on the best food. They were loyal to a fault and extremely overbearing with their strength.

Xiong Zheng and the other militants had also once belonged to these elites; however, when forced to make a choice between loyalty to Lie Tianyang and their own lives, they had all chosen



their own lives in the end.

Yue Zhong glanced at the 8 militants guarding the gates before ordering,

"Bring me over! I will take care of them in an instant!"

"You girls wait here!" Yue Zhong told Zhuo Yatong and the rest. Attacking the camp was going to require all of his concentration and effort, so he could not afford to make White Bones stay outside just to protect them.

Xiong Zheng and the two other Team Leaders looked at Yue Zhong, before steeling their nerves and bringing Yue Zhong towards the gates.

The few militants looked at Xiong Zheng curiously as they asked,

"Xiong Zheng, what happened? How come it's only the few of you, where are the rest?"

"We were ambushed! We only managed to catch this captive, the rest of our brothers are all dead. I want to inform our Big Boss quickly. Hurry up and open the gate!!" Xiong Zheng shouted as he stood before the gate.

The other ex-militants had expressions of shock and were feeling tense. If the militants inside those towers decided to crazily open fire, they would not be able to survive.

Hearing Xiong Zheng's words, those surveillance guards confirmed Xiong Zheng's identity before giving the go-ahead for them to enter.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the camp, his eyes lit up as he surveyed his surroundings, as he had discovered 2 sentries who were very well hidden.

At the next moment, he activated his Art of Fear Skill. A hugely oppressive and menacing aura was emitted from him, and it thoroughly encompassed the whole area containing the sentries

and watchmen atop the towers.

Under that huge pressure, all the militants immediately fainted.

At almost the same instant, White Bones had already shot out its sharp bone spears, piercing directly into the hidden sentries' skulls.

In the space of a moment without making any sound, Yue Zhong had seized the gates of Clear Wind Camp. And not even a single soul had yet to discover what had happened.

White Bones made use of its Bone Spear, leaping onto the towers and immediately killing all the militants up there, after which it brought down the 2 Heavy Machine Guns.

Yue Zhong brought out a bottle of mineral water, with which he doused his subordinates who had also fainted under the heavy pressure, waking them up.

"It's really been dealt with!!" Xiong Zheng exclaimed the moment he woke up. He looked around and his heart filled with shock.

Yue Zhong pointed to the 2 Heavy Machine Guns as he gave an order to Liu Erhei:

"Liu Erhei, you take your men and stand guard here. Other than us, whoever passes by here, kill them with these guns!"

Liu Erhei replied deeply, "Yes! Boss! I will definitely not let you down!"

"The rest of you, follow me!"

Yue Zhong led the way, bringing White Bones and the other 10 militants with him as they rushed towards the army camp.

In actual fact, the army camp was only a single-storey building, guarded by 2 militants holding .81 Rifles who were constantly yawning. They thought that it was just a formality, because in their hearts, as long there was no trouble caused at the gates, they would be safe here.

All of a sudden, 2 Bone Spears shot out from White Bones' right hand, piercing through the 2 militants' heads and killing them before they even had a chance to let out a sound.

As they followed behind, Xiong Zheng and the other ex-militants had looks of amazement and joy on their faces. The ability of White Bones was an extremely efficient tool in carrying out assassinations in the night.

After taking care of those 2 militants, Yue Zhong brought his men as they swiftly made their way through each room, breaking open the locks and killing the militants in their beds, ending their lives before they even woke up.

Some of the militants had faster reactions than the rest and wanted to counter-attack, but before they could make a move, their heads would have already been penetrated by White Bones' bone spears.

When it came to killing their old comrades, the methods of the traitors were the most vicious and cruel. This was because they had no other options, and could only follow their new leader and slaughter onwards. Xiong Zheng and the group of ex-militants did not have a shred of mercy towards their old comrades, and every swing of their blades saw blood as they ruthlessly slaughtered all the militants.

Under the command of Yue Zhong, Xiong Zheng and the rest quickly subdued the entire building without triggering any mass alarm.

"Continue our advance!" After having dealt with the army camp, Yue Zhong commanded the rest to move on.

Xiong Zheng and the rest were also feeling the battle lust, and their bodies were in excited states. They followed closely behind Yue Zhong, moving towards the depths of Clear Wind Camp.

There were also some guards patrolling the living quarters of the

normal survivors, yet under the lead of Xiong Zheng and his team, who knew the place inside out, those poor guards never even saw what had hit them as they were mercilessly taken out by Yue Zhong and White Bones.

With the guidance of the ex-militants, Yue Zhong managed to cross into the inner living quarters, killing all the way without causing too much of a disturbance.

In contrast to the outer regions, the inner zone was heavily guarded with well-hidden sentries all over the place, as well as 5 teams of militants who constantly patrolled. Wanting to simply confront them the way Yue Zhong had done previously was definitely impossible.

Yue Zhong carefully observed the situation before sighing deeply. Together with his team, he took a detour around the compound, mounting a surprise attack on the other side of the camp. Yue Zhong dealt with the militants at the gate, and also killed all of the militants sleeping within the army camp building.

He didn't take any captives since his military strength was insufficient in the first place, not to mention sparing precious manpower to guard captives.

## Chapter 221: Insta-Kill on Scarface!

---

After quietly disposing of over a hundred militants on the outskirts of Clear Wind Camp, Yue Zhong quietly led his team of 10 back towards the villa compound.

This time, Yue Zhong carefully observed the militants in the compound.

Lie Tianyang had engaged in many depraved acts of debauchery and was naturally fearful of his retribution. The compound had many sentries hidden all over, as well as 5 teams who were constantly on patrol. At every pass, there were also machine guns and barbed wires, so wanting to sneak inside was virtually impossible.

Even for someone of Yue Zhong's calibre, under such heavy security, to be able to sneak past all of that without alerting anyone would only have about a 20% chance of success. However, if that was the case, then the certainty of killing Lie Tianyang would be even less. After all, those 200+ members of the Green Wolves Mount were not for show; if Yue Zhong had to deal with those 200 militants, even he would face his death with the slightest mistake.

Yue Zhong lay prone on the ground, silently observing the militants for over half an hour.

Eventually, a militant dressed in a black suit, with a scar running down his face, led 24 militants with him as they walked out of the compound.

Xiong Zheng looked at the man with the scar walking out, and he immediately went up to Yue Zhong and said,

"That Scarface is the leader of the Green Wolves Mount and he is an Enhancer. He possesses the ability to become a werewolf and when he morphs, his strength is enhanced beyond belief. Normal bullets can only penetrate his outer hide and no further. His

strength is astonishing."

"Stay here and keep watch. I'll go handle them."

Yue Zhong watched Scarface and his 24 men of the Green Wolves Mount approaching, before his figure flashed and he ducked swiftly into an alley.

One of the team leaders under Scarface complained,

"Boss, where are we going this time? It was finally our turn to have some fun at the Hundred Beauties Garden, but now you've mobilized us. The next time it's our turn, we'll only be able to enjoy all the used goods."

The Hundred Beauties Garden was thought up by Lie Tianyang. Inside, there were all the beautiful females that Lie Tianyang had grown sick of toying with. Every few days, there would be a new addition to the garden and the members of the Green Wolves Mount could take turns to enjoy pleasuring themselves with the women. This was one of the few things that they could look forward to after the events of Z-Day.

Scarface's expression turned dark, as he said,

"Big Boss told me to go outside and take a look. Based on the time, Xiong Zheng's team should have already come back with some spoils. However, they are not back yet, so there must be something amiss."

Another team leader immediately began to curse loudly,

"Those bastards must have started playing around with the goods first, damn that motherf\*\*\*er, they should have let this daddy here lead the operation!"

This bunch of militants from the Green Wolves Mount were not good people. Whenever they went out to hunt survivors, they would reserve the pretty ladies originally intended for Lie Tianyang's enjoyment first, while they would also take turns wasting the other women.

Some of them couldn't resist and would immediately get to raping some of the more beautiful ones. If Lie Tianyang didn't find out, then it would be alright, but if he did happen to find out, then those who had engaged in the acts would be immediately skinned by him and burnt alive.

Every time there was an operation to head out, all the members of the Green Wolves Mount and the other militants would scramble to be the ones sent out. Even if the all pretty ladies were to be offered to Lie Tianyang, the other women could still be wasted and no one would care.

[TN: The meaning of all this is that each time they finish an operation, the militants get to have a turn at the Hundred Beauties Garden. Probably.]

Just as the Green Wolves Mount member cursed, Yue Zhong suddenly shot out of the alley like lightning and activated his Art of Fear Skill.

A terrible, oppressive aura was immediately exuded from Yue Zhong, enveloping the 25 Green Wolves Mount members.

Under the horrifying pressure from Yue Zhong's spirit, 24 of the members immediately fainted from fear.

As for Scarface, he immediately activated his Level 3 Werewolf Transformation Skill. In just a moment, a tremendous amount of thick fur sprouted out from all over his body and the teeth in his mouth elongated to become sharp canines like those of a wolf. His hands grew claws sharper than needles, and his muscles became extremely defined and solid with veins protruding all over. In fact, those bulging muscles even tore apart his clothes.

The Level 3 Werewolf Transformation Skill allowed a person to become a werewolf, with all attributes receiving a huge boost; however, after activating this skill, it would wear down the user's stamina. Furthermore, whilst in the werewolf form, it was not possible to make use of any other skills. Even with all these

disadvantages, it was still a powerful ability.

Scarface had made use of this skill to raise his level up to Level 20, and he had levelled the skill up twice: he could maintain this form for 10 minutes, and while he was in a transformed state, any bullets smaller than .09 Calibre would be unable to hurt his body.

Furthermore, while he was in his werewolf form, he possessed a higher resistance to most attacks, hence rendering Yue Zhong's Art of Fear Skill to be useless against him.

When Yue Zhong had activated his Art of Fear Skill, he had already pushed his speed to the maximum, rushing over to swing his Dark Magic Blade towards Scarface's head.

Yue Zhong's [7 times that of a normal human's speed] was truly too fast, too furious. After Scarface had transformed, he only had enough time to raise his right hand in front of him to block the incoming blade.

A 'bladelight' flashed and a look of fright shone past Scarface's eyes; his throat twitched, as though he wanted to say something. The very next moment, his arms and head directly shifted, and fresh blood sprayed from the wounds on his body, dyeing the ground red.

Had it been a fair confrontation, and if Scarface had known how sharp Yue Zhong's Dark Magic Blade was, even if Yue Zhong wanted to kill him, it would require at least 10 strikes. However, Scarface knew nothing about Yue Zhong, whereas Xiong Zheng had told the latter all there was to know about Scarface. Adding to the fact that Yue Zhong's prowess was way above that of Scarface's anyway, with an ambush as such, killing Scarface within the span of a second was not a problem at all.

After disposing of Scarface, Yue Zhong walked over to those Green Wolves Mount members who had fainted, using the Dark Magic Blade to decapitate them one by one.



When he was done, Yue Zhong then returned to patting down Scarface's corpse, and began retrieving the God and Devil System Items.

Scarface had only equipped a Replica Tang Sword, a pair of White Gloves, a pair of Level 1 Enhanced Boots, a Level 2 Defense Armor and also a Level 3 Power Ring.

"I'll just give this ring to Zhuo Yatong." Yue Zhong thought silently as he stored away the rest of the items.

Amongst the items from the system, apart from some special items, most of the items' effects couldn't be stacked. Yue Zhong already possessed a Power Ring, so he decided to give the one that he'd just found to Zhuo Yatong.

After silently killing these Green Wolves Mount members, Yue Zhong returned to where Xiong Zheng was.

Xiong Zheng saw Yue Zhong returning by himself, and his eyes couldn't help but flash with a hint of disbelief as he timidly asked,

"Boss, did you really take care of Scarface and the rest?"

Yue Zhong continued staring at the compound as he answered calmly,

"Mm, I have taken care of them."

Inside the compound, there were still 7 other Green Wolves Mount members who were his real opponents.

Upon hearing Yue Zhong's words, a hint of veneration flashed past the eyes of Xiong Zheng and the rest: even assassinating just two Green Wolves Mount members without causing any disturbance would already have exceeded their expectations.

Yue Zhong carefully circled the compound a few times, but no matter what, he could not find a gap in the defence to break through. There were lights everywhere and the patrol teams did their jobs diligently without stopping; there were also sentries

were hidden everywhere, so wanting to sneak in silently would be impossible.

"We can't afford to wait any longer. Otherwise, they will have made preparations."

Yue Zhong finally made his decision. He ordered to Xiong Zheng and the rest,

"Later on, spread out, and when you guys fire, change your position after each shot. There's no need to pay attention to your hit rate, just attract their attention. I'll handle the rest. Remember, only when I have opened fire should you guys then do the same."

"Understood, Boss!" Xiong Zheng nodded his head, before giving orders for his team of 5 to split up.

Zhang Niujiang also brought his men and split up.

Yue Zhong brought White Bones with him, as he climbed up one of the huge trees over 100m tall. He waved a hand and brought out a QJZ8 Machine Gun.

Just as 2 of the patrol teams were preparing to switch over, Yue Zhong pulled the trigger and opened fire. In that split-second, the machine gun spat out countless bullets, completely enveloping those 24 members of the Green Wolves Mount as he ruthlessly gunned them down.

The large-calibre bullets of the machine gun were extremely terrifying, and many of the members' heads directly exploded or they were severed at the waist; some even had their bodies torn apart.

The scene became as though it had just experienced a rain of blood. Under Yue Zhong's sudden frenzy of firing, those 24 members became tattered corpses within a matter of seconds.

The QJZ8 machine gun was a fearsome weapon that could even create dents in armored vehicles-using it against humans was simply overkill.

After slaughtering the 24 Green Wolves Mount members, the piercing sound of gunfire had resounded throughout the compound and an alarm sounded out crisply.

Those hidden sentries also began to open fire at Yue Zhong's position in a frenzy. However, it was in vain, for all the bullets hit empty air as Yue Zhong had already changed his position.

"Kill them all, White Bones." Yue Zhong changed his position and immediately gave the cruel order to White Bones.

White Bones hoisted its huge axe and began making its way like a tornado towards the hidden sentries.

"Fool!" Those hidden sentries saw White Bones rushing towards them, their expressions fleeting as they all began firing at White Bones.

The next moment, their expressions turned ash-grey as they realised that the bullets were bouncing off White Bones' body, not harming it in the slightest. White Bones extended its right arm and 3 Bone Spears immediately shot out, penetrating the heads of 3 sentries.

It then retracted the blood-covered spears, before shooting out another round of spears, drawing blood once again and killing another 2 hidden sentries.

Xiong Zheng, Zhang Niujiang and the rest began to open fire at the compound.

## Chapter 222: Assault on the Villa!

---

Amongst the militants, only Xiong Zheng had decent accuracy and managed to hit 2 targets. The rest didn't have much luck-after all, they were not suited to fighting in the dark like Yue Zhong. However, with them being spread out and firing all around, it gave the illusion that there was a huge force right outside the villa. The members of the Green Wolves Mount were forced to take cover and randomly return fire in the dark.

Although Xiong Zheng, Zhang Niujiang and the rest were not effective at taking down the enemy, their additional firepower was enough to attract the enemy, making them panic to aid Yue Zhong's attack.

After White Bones had killed those 6 hidden sentries, the remaining Green Wolves Mount members on their side were also easily taken care of by Yue Zhong and it.

With a slash of his blade, Yue Zhong split the barbed wire open and proceeded to charge towards one of the villas in a frenzy with White Bones. From the information that Xiong Zheng had provided, Yue Zhong knew that this villa contained the resting and living quarters for most members of the Green Wolves Mount.

The members of the Green Wolves Mount also frequently needed to rest-after all, there was close to a hundred militants simply patrolling outside alone, so whenever they switched shifts, the rest would take the chance to sleep inside the villa.

Pushing his speed that was 7 times that of a normal person to the limit, Yue Zhong crossed the entire distance of 150m in just 6 seconds, leaping straight into the villa.

[TN: So that means normal people take 42 seconds to cross 150m... I think something is wrong here but nvm]

In the huge hall, there was the rancid smell of alcohol, sweat and

also a strange sour odor. Twenty-plus women were all lying around exhausted on the floor, sofas and tables, their bodies covered with foul-smelling white specks.

Many members of the Mount were sprawled all over the place as well, in deep sleep. Only 2 or 3 of them who had higher perceptions of danger than the rest were currently dressing themselves. As they saw Yue Zhong rushing in, their eyes flashed with a hint of fright.

Yue Zhong had already pulled out his .05 Light Submachine Gun, and without further ado, he began to spray bullets at the 3 who had stood up, turning them into sieves (i.e. full of holes).

After disposing of those 3 members, he continued his advance towards the upper level.

Other than the Mount members in the great hall, the 2nd storey had many members as well.

Yue Zhong had just rushed up to the 2nd storey when White Bones entered the great hall right behind him; as it looked at the sleeping humans, its fiery demonic eyes lit up. It proceeded to pierce through their heads continuously with its bone spears, killing all the humans in the great hall.

After Yue Zhong had reached the 2nd storey, he would slash at the locks on each door before kicking the door wide open, then wildly open fire and instantly decimate the sleeping Green Wolves Mount members. One by one, the inhabitants of each room met their doom as Yue Zhong advanced. If they were awake, they might have posed some sort of threat to him, but since they were asleep, they were completely harmless.

After he had cleared up the 2nd storey, Yue Zhong went back down. All the people in the great hall, be it man or woman, had already been killed by White Bones.

[TN: not quite sure why he killed the women as well, maybe to

put them out of their misery?]

Killing the members of the Green Wolves Mount in this villa meant that the total number of enemies Yue Zhong had to face had now been reduced by yet another huge portion. He immediately rushed out of the villa with White Bones.

As soon as he exited, he came across the first patrol team that had arrived as reinforcements.

Yue Zhong immediately activated his Encompassing Body Armor, and White Bones turned into a stream of light that encompassed his body, which then transformed into an external armor that covered Yue Zhong's whole body minus his eyes.

Yue Zhong then raised his .05 Submachine Gun as he opened fire at the approaching Mount members, instantly taking down 4 of them.

The other members immediately dove for cover while returning fire at him.

However, the bullets would bounce off Yue Zhong the moment they hit the Bone Armor, not injuring him in the slightest.

Yue Zhong was like a human tank as he advanced forward fearlessly, constantly firing at the militants; every shot of his found its aim and within moments, the entire team was decimated.

After killing this team of Green Wolves Mount members, Yue Zhong made his way towards the team that was pressuring Zhang Niujiang's team. He wanted to take care of all the insignificant members before finally tackling Lie Tianyang, the leader of Clear Wind Camp.

All Yue Zhong knew about Lie Tianyang was that he had great strength, but Yue Zhong didn't know to what extent this strength reached. He did not want to engage in an all-out fight with Lie Tianyang, only to be suddenly decapitated by some random Green Wolves Mount member.

With the protection of the Bone Amor, Yue Zhong was like a tank as he used the .05 Submachine Gun to take down the gunners in the team, before killing the rest of the normal members. He was swift and every shot fired meant another militant was dead. Shots fired at Yue Zhong were also useless as they would just deflect off him, causing the militants' moral to constantly drop.

Just when the militants had been picked off one by one until there were only about 23 of them left, Yue Zhong had a sudden premonition. He perceived an extreme danger and immediately retreated 3 steps backwards.

With a 'bang', a large calibre projectile penetrated Yue Zhong's bone armor near the chest area, landing on the Rat Skin Leather. It managed to leave a white mark before its momentum was depleted.

Yue Zhong himself was flung 5-6m backwards, as though he had been hit by a martial arts practitioner and he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

If he did not have the protection of the Bone Armor or the Rat King Skin, receiving this bullet directly would have meant certain death. Even with the protection of the Encompassing Body Armor, Rat King Skin, Water Snake Skin and the Level 3 Defence Armor, Yue Zhong still received a heavy injury. If his body strength hadn't reached 49 points, even with all the protective layers, he still would have suffered some broken bones.

The moment Yue Zhong was sent flying, a huge number of rifle bullets flew at him, but they were immediately repelled by his Bone Armor.

"What a good marksman!! I was too careless!"

Yue Zhong braved the hail of bullets, before swiftly rolling behind a nearby cover. He immediately swallowed some Life Saving Grass and began to recover from his injuries.

After checking his Bone Armor, for the sake of wiping out the Green Wolves Mount members in the shortest time possible, Yue Zhong re-entered the fray. Braving the incoming hail of bullets, Yue Zhong killed his way through the militants. The speed at which he slaughtered the members was very fast, but it exposed him to some of the other Enhancers, causing him to receive some light injuries.

"Still not dead? What a monster!"

The leader of this particular Green Wolves Mount Squadron was an Enhancer called Wei Ji. He was hidden in one of the villas and possessed the Level 3 Sniper Specialization Skill. As he watched Yue Zhong deftly leap behind a cover through his lens, he couldn't help but inhale some cold air.

Wei Ji had utmost confidence in his sniping skills-as long as the enemy did not get close, other than Lie Tianyang, no one else in Clear Wind Camp was his match. Wei Ji's only weak point was close quarter combat, since any four members of the Green Mount Wolves would be enough to deal with him once they were close enough.

"I have to get rid of this sniper!"

Yue Zhong looked left and right carefully, before rushing out like a cheetah, firing rapidly at all the streetlights.

Following the clustered sounds of gunfire, the road lamps were all broken one by one and the entire district was engulfed in darkness.

"Damn it!!" Wei Ji saw that the entire street was in complete darkness and couldn't help but curse out loud. Without any vision, even if he could shatter a toothpick from a distance of 1000m under normal conditions, he was currently unable to do anything about Yue Zhong. Darkness was the ultimate nemesis of snipers.

Wei Ji began to quickly disassemble and pack up his beloved



Barrett Sniper Rifle and then left this particular villa. If it was during the day, he could still make use of his superb aiming skills to pressure Yue Zhong; however, in the night, staying here any longer was undoubtedly awaiting death.

Countless lamps were broken by Yue Zhong's shots, and the entire compound was soon shrouded in darkness.

In the darkness, Yue Zhong was like a fish in water, silently killing all the members of the Green Wolves Mount like a grim reaper wherever he went.

All members of the Green Wolves Mount were caught off guard by the sudden darkness. Since they had all started to panic, they simply could not put up any resistance, letting Yue Zhong take them down one by one with ease.

"What kind of an audacious person dares to come to my Clear Wind Camp and act wildly!!"

Just as Yue Zhong was about to finish slaughtering the 5 remaining members of the Mount, an enraged howl resounded out from one of the villas. A man who was wearing a black suit, a green hat, a green cape and green agility boots suddenly rushed out towards Yue Zhong like a meteor with a green staff in his hands. This person was precisely Lie Tianyang.

[TN: So much green! In brightest day, in darkest night lol]

[Amaranth: he kind of reminds me of the grinch xD]

[Divinecelestialbeinglol: this guy seems really suspicious-btw raws can also mean cyan/azure as some of you might know, but gangsters just don't wear cyan]

Yue Zhong only took one glance at the man before he pulled the trigger, turning another 2 militants into sieves. In a flash, he appeared behind the last 3 Mount members, raising his hand and shooting out 3 bone spears, which immediately pierced their heads and killed them.

Other than those who had been acting as guards outside, all the members of the Green Wolves Mount had been killed by Yue Zhong!

"Bastard, you're courting death!!"

Lie Tianyang was furious and a hurricane began to encircle him, increasing his speed by 3 times; in just a few breaths, he had crossed a distance of 100m and was crazily approaching Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at the enraged Lie Tianyang who was rushing towards him and answered with a wild burst of bullets from his Submachine Gun!!

Before any of those bullets could hit Lie Tianyang though, they were swept away by the hurricanes which appeared around him and were blown to one side.

"Damn ants!! Just based on this, you think you can to injure me? I will skin you alive, you swine!" Lie Tianyang smiled grimly as he waved his green staff at Yue Zhong.

All of a sudden, sharp blades of wind which could even cut through steel were conjured up, and they rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's sense of danger kept alerting him, warning him about the impending danger. Just then, his face changed greatly and he immediately rolled towards one of the buildings at the side. Those blades of wind were extremely fast-even though Yue Zhong had managed to dodge a large number of them, he still received wounds from 2 of them. The sharp blades even managed to cut through the Bone Armor and only after they hit the Rat King's Hide did the blades lose their power, leaving behind a white mark and disappearing.

"What a fearsome person! No wonder he's their leader! Don't tell me he's an Evolver too?"

Yue Zhong's eyebrows furrowed as he thought to himself quietly.

Yue Zhong had always thrown himself onto the front line, battling against countless zombies and mutant beasts in order to get to where he was today, a Level 35 Enhancer. Compared to most, he was definitely very strong.

# Chapter 223: Defeating Lie Tianyang!

---

In Qing Yuan County, Flame King Gu, who was hailed as one of the top 4 Enhancers, could conjure up 6 fireballs at most. With just a wave of his hand, Lie Tianyang could actually summon over 10 blades of wind, showing that his battle ability was clearly above that of Flame King Gu's.

Even scarier was that while Lie Tianyang was activating his Wind Blades Skill, he could still maintain a hurricane armor around himself. Other than the possibility of being an Evolver who was favored by the heavens, Yue Zhong could not think of any other possibility that could allow a normal Enhancer to possess such strength.

When comparing Evolvers and Enhancers, the former could be considered geniuses, whilst the latter were simply normal people. Geniuses could easily possess great power and abilities, yet for normal people to catch up to geniuses, they would have to put in at least 10 times the effort.

Lie Tianyang's eyes were red with fury; filled with venomous hatred and killing intent, he laughed maniacally and said,

"Hiding there is useless, you damn rat. You actually dare to destroy my Green Wolves Mount! I definitely will not spare you. I will tear your limbs away from your body and then toss them into a pit to let the maggots feast on!"

On this night, Yue Zhong had single-handedly wrecked the entire elite Green Wolves Mount division. Out of Lie Tianyang's top 4 subordinates, 3 had died at Yue Zhong's hands. (Other than Scarface who tried to put up a fight, the other 2 had died earlier in the villa's great hall). Excluding himself, Lie Tianyang's military forces had been wiped out in just one night, making him absolutely furious.

"If normal bullets are ineffective, how about those from a

machine gun?"

Yue Zhong opened his right hand towards the ground and a bone spear shot out, propelling him to the rooftop of a villa. With a wave of his hand, a QJZ8 Machine Gun appeared and he aimed it at Lie Tianyang.

Surrounded by his hurricane armor, Lie Tianyang looked like a demon as he swiftly rushed to where Yue Zhong had originally been hiding; however, he did not see anybody when he got there.

"Go die." From the rooftop of the villa, Yue Zhong pulled down on the trigger of the QJZ8 Heavy Machine Gun.

Countless bullets that could even pierce through the armor of small tanks were fired towards Lie Tianyang like a torrent of water.

Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong who was wearing the Bone Armor, Rat King's hide, Water Snake skin and a Level 3 Defence Armor, wouldn't be able to resist the firepower of a QJZ8 Heavy Machine Gun. Although the Rat King's hide would be able to stop the bullet from penetrating any further, the force exerted from the impact would not be fully negated.

Those countless bullets bombarded Lie Tianyang in a frenzy; like what had happened previously though, they seemed to be swept away by his hurricane armor. Yet their penetrative force far surpassed the previous bullets and some bullets actually came close to Lie Tianyang's skin.

Lie Tianyang's eyes flashed with a hint of shock. He shouted out and waved his staff, causing the hurricane armor around him to become even denser. The bullets were now swept away even faster by the force of the hurricanes.

Lie Tianyang followed the machine gun's line of fire to discover Yue Zhong's position and he snorted in anger, his eyes bloodshot and the veins bulging out on his body. He waved his staff towards

the sky and a huge azure tornado streaked off in Yue Zhong's direction.

The moment the azure tornado appeared, Yue Zhong's sense of danger reached the highest level and he immediately stowed the machine gun away. He covered his head with both his hands and rolled off to one side.

The tornado reached the rooftop very quickly and Lie Tianyang immediately shouted out loudly,

"Explode!"

At that moment, the azure tornado instantly exploded, with countless wind blades raining downwards.

5 of the blades landed on Yue Zhong's body, splitting apart the Bone Armor and leaving many deep white marks on the Rat King's Hide. Although the wind blades did not actually cut through Yue Zhong's skin, it was as if a Muay Thai expert had struck Yue Zhong's back viciously 5 times, causing his blood and internal energy to be unstable.

After executing that huge move, Lie Tianyang himself had turned very pale and was gasping for air. As the hurricane around him continued to swirl, he rose up high into the air.

After the tornado had released all its wind blades, Yue Zhong, who had originally intended to roll down from the rooftop, stood up immediately. His face flashed with a hint of ferociousness and with a flick of his hand, a Type 40 Rocket Launcher appeared.

His figure flashed several times before he appeared at the edge of the roof. He aimed the rocket launcher at Lie Tianyang as he said,

"If a heavy machine gun can't get rid of you, will a rocket launcher be able to?"

Seeing the rocket launcher in Yue Zhong's hands, Lie Tianyang, who was slowly rising in mid-air, immediately turned pale. He mustered all his strength and tried to condense his hurricane

armor into a shield in front of him.

The moment the shield was condensed, Yue Zhong had already fired out a huge rocket that exploded onto the hurricane shield.

With a 'hong', the huge rocket was actually blocked by the hurricane shield.

However, the shield was immediately shattered by the resulting shock wave from the explosion.

Lie Tianyang fell out of the air as he tumbled to the ground and spat a mouthful of fresh blood.

"I cannot go on like this, I might even die! I am an Evolver!! I'm supposed to have an amazing future, I definitely cannot die here."

Lie Tianyang felt fear in his heart the moment he landed. Prior to the apocalypse, he was just a cowardly thief, but after going through the events of Z-Day, he had actually gained powers after evolving. Everything had been smooth-sailing. Today was the first time he actually felt that his life was in danger.

Without any further hesitation, the hurricane began to revolve around him again and his figure flashed. He fled far into the distance, soon disappearing into the darkness.

"He escaped?"

Yue Zhong had just reloaded another rocket and was preparing to send him to meet his maker, when he discovered that Lie Tianyang had long since disappeared.

Yue Zhong lightly furrowed his eyebrows: those Evolvers with special abilities were the hardest to deal with, since if they wanted to escape, Yue Zhong had no means of preventing them from doing so.

With Lie Tianyang's escape, there was now no one else in the entire compound who was strong enough to withstand Yue Zhong's onslaught. He used the bone spears to descend from the

roof, before making his way into the main villa.

There were 4 Green Wolves Mount members guarding the entrance; the moment they saw Yue Zhong appear, they were frightened out of their wits and wanted to make a run for it.

Yue Zhong opened his left hand and 3 bone spears shot out, penetrating the brains of 3 members, while he held a .05 Submachine Gun in his right hand and fired ruthlessly at the remaining member, turning him into a sieve.

After killing those 4, Yue Zhong pushed open the villa's main gate.

"We humbly welcome your visit, Master."

Yue Zhong had just entered the villa when he saw a butler-like person wearing a tuxedo together with 20 suave young men dressed in waiter suits and 20 beautiful ladies dressed in nurse uniforms. They knelt down on the ground and called out respectfully.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across the group, as he said lightly,

"I'm not your master Lie Tianyang. Stand up and speak to me."

The head butler wearing the tuxedo and the 40 other people all stood up on their feet. He looked towards Yue Zhong and spoke respectfully,

"Honourable Master, since you have won in battle with Lie Tianyang, you have now become our new master. We are willing to swear loyalty to you and contribute what measly strength we have."

After Z-Day, whoever had the hardest punch was the boss. Other than the Green Wolves Mount, the majority of the people in Clear Wind Camp didn't really have much loyalty to Lie Tianyang.

Yue Zhong looked at the head butler and asked,

"What's your name?"



The butler maintained his reverential manner and said,

"Your slave is called Chen Ming."

Lie Tianyang had liked people to refer to him as 'Master', while referring to themselves as 'Your slave'. Chen Ming had wanted to get on Lie Tianyang's good side, and thus referred to himself as 'your slave'. Chen Ming had no qualms about the term, he simply wanted to live on.

Yue Zhong continued asking,

"Are there any more Green Wolves Mount members here?"

Chen Ming swiftly replied,

"This is Lie Tianyang's private manor, so there are only Green Wolves Mount members standing guard outside. Other than us, there is no one else inside the villa."

Lie Tianyang had an extremely powerful skill; if it was not for the fact that Yue Zhong possessed the storage ring and had kept so many types of arms, it would have been much more difficult to deal with Lie Tianyang. Since this was his private manor, there naturally wouldn't be many Green Wolves Mount members stationed here.

Yue Zhong took out a .54 Handgun and 2 grenades, handing them to Chen Ming. He said lightly, "You are now my new officer, keep guard here carefully. Whoever dares to cause any trouble, kill them."

Chen Ming's heart rejoiced and he immediately replied, "Yes, Master."

After delegating duties to Chen Ming, with just a thought, Yue Zhong deactivated the Bone Encompassing Skill, causing White Bones to immediately turn into a streak of light and peel off him. Then, White Bones coagulated into human form before the shocked gazes of the people nearby.

Yue Zhong ordered White Bones,

"Stay here and keep guard. Other than me, whoever wants to go out or come in, kill them without hesitation."

Within the block of villas, there was something extremely valuable, and that was the granary of Clear Wind Camp. A granary as such was crucial to any huge force and Lie Tianyang was also very mindful about rations, hence the food source for the whole of Clear Wind Camp was under his control in his private villa.

As long as he held onto the granary, Yue Zhong would gain control of Clear Wind Camp. Otherwise, even if he did chase Lie Tianyang away, wanting to gain absolute control would be tough. The problem of feeding over 2000 people was enough to pressure him-even if he took out all the food in his ring, he would not be able to provide for long.

White Bones' demonic fiery eyes flashed and it nodded towards Yue Zhong as it quietly stood on guard.

Yue Zhong then proceeded to meet up with Xiong Zheng and the rest.

"Captain Yue, you managed to subdue all of the Mount?" Xiong Zheng looked at Yue Zhong who had just appeared before him, his eyes filled with shock and disbelief.

The 4 warriors beside Xiong Zheng had the same expression; inside the compound, there were supposed to be over 200 members of the Mount. In addition to experts like Lie Tianyang and Wei Ji, Yue Zhong had still managed to completely subdue the enemy by himself, so they didn't dare to believe it.

Yue Zhong then ordered Xiong Zheng and Zhang Niujiang,

"Mm, bring all your men to the main town district. Whoever is taking advantage of the chaos to rob, rape or murder, kill them on sight. Maintain the peace and security."

The intense gunfight in the villa compounds had definitely

aroused the panic of the survivors in the main town. There were many people who had made use of the chaos to rob, kill and rape. The town had already been plunged into widespread panic and chaos. People who wished for there to be chaos were everywhere on earth.

"Yes, Boss Yue!"

Xiong Zheng and Zhang Niujiang replied with fervor. Being able to follow such an amazing and miraculous leader was an honour to them, and it filled their hearts with valor.

Xiong Zheng and Zhang Niujiang brought their small teams and killed their way into the centre of town, instantly executing any rioters who caused trouble; at the same time, they herded the masses back to their homes like sheep.

After executing about 40 rioters, the chaos was finally suppressed and most of the survivors had returned back to their homes, albeit with anxiety in their hearts.

"Clear Wind Camp has been captured just like that?"

Zhuo Yatong and the other 3 girls had been led by Yue Zhong to the villa compound. Seeing the spacious and clean buildings, suave waiters and beautiful maids, it felt like a dream to the 4 of them. Not too long ago, they were still unsure of their future out in the wild, yet just one day later, they had suddenly been thrust into a lavish lifestyle, staying in nice accomodation and being served by other people. It did not feel like reality to them.

Chen Ming walked up to Yue Zhong's side and reported in a very deferential manner,

"Master, the bath has already been filled with warm water, please head there to refresh yourself."

Chen Ming was a man who knew how to read people. He knew that Yue Zhong's first priority would be to relax after such a huge battle, which was why he had prepared the bath in advance.

Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun's eyes lit up. They had been on the run for so long and hadn't bathed for several days.

"Go ahead and rest if you want, let Chen Ming make the arrangements."

Yue Zhong pointed to Chen Ming, before allowing himself to be led away by one of the maids towards the bath.

"I want to go and rest" Zhuo Yatong carried Yun Caiwei as she spoke to Chen Ming. Yun Caiwei had already succumbed to slumber after trying to stay awake the entire night.

Chen Ming called a maidservant over and yelled,

"Chen Lan, bring this Ma'am over to room 203 for a good rest."

"Ma'am, please follow me." A maidservant with a pretty oval face came up to Zhuo Yatong and said respectfully.

Led by the maidservant, Zhuo Yatong left this area, carrying Yun Caiwei.

Tong Xiaoyun glanced at Gu Manzi as she smiled sweetly and said,

"Gu-Jiejie, it's so late, aren't you going to rest?"

[TN: Jiejie is the Chinese way of saying older sister, Meimei means younger sister.]

Gu Manzi looked at Tong Xiaoyun and a hint of enmity flashed past her eyes, yet she still smiled. She glanced at Tong Xiaoyun's chest and pointed out,

"Xiaoyun-meimei, if you don't rest early, it will not be good for your growth."

Tong Xiaoyun was pretty and her skin was fair, and she had a pure, refined air to her. However, her chest was still not very well-developed, and it seemed to only bulge outwards slightly. Compared to Gu Manzi's ample C-cups, they were still far from comparable.

[TN: I have a feeling that it's lewd time again...]

## Chapter 224: Alluring Services

---

Tong Xiaoyun's smile became slightly tense, as she maintained her smile while saying,

"Gu-Jiejie, I'm not in a rush. After all, I'm only 14 this year and am still far from maturity. Who knows, I might even catch up to you. However, Gu-Jiejie, you must really hurry up. I heard that if a lady doesn't give birth before she is 30, it will definitely be harder to give birth after her 30s. Gu-Jiejie, you must be 26 this year, right? You only have 4 years left so you'd better hurry up."

Hearing those words, Gu Manzi's expression froze,-her age was a big blow to her. After all, a lady's best years were usually from 18 to 30. After 30, her beauty would start to wither away just like a flower.

Gu Manzi was already 25 this year and she was at the prime of her life, yet after a few years, she would begin to lose her beauty. And the little girl in front of her who was like carved jade would become even more beautiful. To Gu Manzi, any mention of her age was a huge blow to her.

"Gu-Jiejie, excuse me!" Tong Xiaoyun laughed sweetly at Gu Manzi before she ran off in the direction of the bath.

"Damn that little vixen!" Gu Manzi started to curse under her breath as she hesitated for a moment. In the end, she gritted her teeth and chased after Tong Xiaoyun.

Being led by the maid, Yue Zhong strode into a bathroom made entirely out of marble. It was clean and bright.

In the bathroom, there was a huge pool 10m in diameter, and in the middle of the pool there was a man-made rock formation from which hot water flowed out.

At both sides of the pool, there were two beauties of not more than 20 years of age kneeling down, dressed in white garbs made of

muslin. One could make out their fragrant bushes and bright red cherries.

Seeing Yue Zhong walking over, the two ladies immediately walked up to his side and helped him take off his clothes.

"That Lie Tianyang really knew how to enjoy life!" Receiving such service from 2 beauties, Yue Zhong could not help but let out a sigh.

When Yue Zhong was at Qing Yuan County, he had always been busy and never had any time to enjoy himself.

Yue Zhong looked at the 2 girls who were standing beside him, one to his left and the other to his right, before he slowly asked,

"What are your names?"

The girl to his left had a round face with skin as fair as could be, making her look very delicate. She was a 1.6m tall beauty with curves in all the right places and she had long black hair. The girl to his right also had an oval shaped face with healthy, beige-colored skin. Her eyes were full of vigor and she had red lips and pure white teeth. Her body was slim and she was a refreshing sight, a short-haired beauty.

The round-faced girl with long hair said, "I am called Ma Lili! I am 18 years old this year and a freshman at university. I'm still a virgin!"

The oval-faced girl also looked at Yue Zhong before carefully replying, "My name is Zeng Fang! I'm 19 this year and I used to be a swimming instructor. I'm also a virgin!"

Chen Ming had always been good at finding the needs of other people, and so he had arranged for these 2 virgins to take care of Yue Zhong. Although there were other women who were prettier than these two, Chen Ming had only been able to arrange for these two girls in such a time short span, who were most suitable for serving Yue Zhong the first time.

Ma Lili and Zeng Fang were not absolute beauties, but they could still be considered the cream of the crop. Before the 'end of the world', they had many suitors as well.

Yue Zhong stored his clothes and equipment into his storage ring before leaping into the pool.

When he felt the warm water wash over his body, it was so comfortable that his eyes closed involuntarily. The night's battle had drained his spirit and stamina. If it wasn't for the power of the rocket launcher inside his storage ring, the victory over Lie Tianyang might not have been so easy.

(TN: it wasn't that easy tho... you even let him get away YZ)

Other than Lie Tianyang himself, Wei Ji of the 4 Kings had also left a deep impression on Yue Zhong. If the distance between them had been 10m, Yue Zhong could have executed Wei Ji in a single move. Outside of 100m distance though, Yue Zhong would have to exhaust all of his strength to get rid of Wei Ji..

Seeing Yue Zhong entering the water, Ma Lili and Zeng Fang hesitated for a moment before following suit.

Ma Lili lifted Yue Zhong's leg to one side, while Zeng Fang started massaging and washing Yue Zhong's other foot with her small hands. After a while, she lowered her head and placed his foot into her mouth.

Although they weren't the most beautiful ladies Lie Tianyang had gathered, they were the best at servicing others. Chen Ming had taken a lot of effort to choose these 2 girls to serve Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong felt his foot entering somewhere warm and moist; at the same time, something soft started to lick his toes and he immediately opened his eyes, seeing Zeng Fang provide her services with great care.

Zeng Fang felt Yue Zhong's gaze linger on her and her body froze for a moment, before her face then went scarlet in shame. She



knew that what she was doing was shameful, but she didn't just want to survive. Rather, she also wanted a better life than most other women and to achieve that, she was willing to do anything necessary, even if it meant falling into depravity herself.

Under Lie Tianyang's rule, Zeng Fang and Ma Lili had witnessed the cruel fate of those who were not willing to serve. There were some top beauties who had figures and looks surpassing both of them, yet because of their stubbornness, they had angered Lie Tianyang. He had tortured them to death and turned their corpses into human sausages.

After witnessing the fates of those great beauties, Zeng Fang, Ma Lili and the rest of the women were frightened out of their wits: they did not dare to go against those who had control over their lives anymore.

After Zeng Fang had finished servicing one of Yue Zhong's feet, she then lifted his other leg up and Ma Lili immediately lowered her head to do the same.

Seeing this scene in front of him, Yue Zhong suddenly felt a rush of blood. Before the apocalypse, he would have immediately stopped them from doing these kinds of shameful acts, but in the depths of his heart, he instinctively wanted to see what other types of exotic service they would provide.

"Forget it! It's not like I am forcing them to do it anyway!"

If he was a gentleman or a righteous man like the ones in stories, or perhaps a chivalrous knight or saint, he would immediately stop the girls from doing these acts and advise them not to use their bodies this way. However, after a short dilemma in his heart, Yue Zhong had an excuse of some sort for himself, and he had no more qualms about enjoying this treatment.

Right at this moment, Tong Xiaoyun strode into the room wearing nothing but a white bathing robe. She saw the half-kneeling Zeng Fang and Ma Lili, who were servicing Yue Zhong in

such a demeaning way with their bodies mostly exposed, and her face fell. Although she was willing to give herself to Yue Zhong, she was not quite prepared to do something on that sort of level.

Suddenly there was a flash in her beautiful eyes as she thought of an idea. She hurriedly entered the pool, hugging onto one of Yue Zhong's arms tightly as she said with an expression of veneration on her face,

"Brother Yue, you're really strong. You were actually able to bring down the entire Clear Wind Camp by yourself, you truly are extraordinary."

Hearing those words, Zeng Fang and Ma Lili were both slightly shaken and expressions of shock flashed past their eyes. They knew that Clear Wind Camp was subdued by the man in front of them, but they had thought that he had brought an army of over hundreds of subordinates with him, seeing as he had been able to take care of Lie Tianyang in such a manner.

After all, there were over 300 militants in Clear Wind Camp and 200 of them were members of the elite Green Wolves Mount; those 200 members were ruthless and cold-handed, whether they were against zombies or other humans. Now that they'd realised that Clear Wind Camp had been subdued single-handedly by the person who was currently right in front of them, they naturally could not help but feel endless astonishment in their hearts.

Yue Zhong had obviously made use of a brilliant strategy to attack at night and had used the ex-militants to create diversions. Tong Xiaoyun knew how to curry favour, which made him delighted. He extended his arms, bringing Tong Xiaoyun into his embrace before letting out a self-satisfied grin.

When Tong Xiaoyun was brought into Yue Zhong's embrace, her face turned red and her slender, petite body also couldn't help but tremble as it turned slightly redder. She had already made the decision of giving herself to Yue Zhong but at the end of the day,

she was still inexperienced and as the actual deed was looming ever so closer, she could not help but feel slightly apprehensive.

Yue Zhong felt the trembling of Tong Xiaoyun as he lowered his head to look at her; seeing that her face was flushed red with an extremely shy expression, he found her extremely cute.

Yue Zhong lowered his head to plant a kiss on Tong Xiaoyun's lips as the traces of a young lady's fragrance constantly spread out from her body.

Tong Xiaoyun's body froze after she was kissed by Yue Zhong. Only after a while did she stick out her tongue and intertwine it with Yue Zhong's.

Just as Yue Zhong and Tong Xiaoyun started making out, Gu Manzi, who was also wearing a white robe, walked in and witnessed the scene.

If it was before the apocalypse and her boyfriend had dared to kiss another girl, she would immediately give a strong slap to the bastard without a second thought, before breaking up with him on the spot.

However, when she saw the scene in front of her, all that arose was a strong sense of jealousy as she cursed in a low voice, "She really is a little vixen, already knowing how to bait men."

Gu Manzi swept an arrogant gaze over Zeng Fang and Ma Lili like a proud swan; after seeing her gaze, they were intimidated and quietly retreated over to the side.

Zeng Fang and Ma Lili were very obedient, not daring to fight against the ladies Yue Zhong had brought. Furthermore, Gu Manzi surpassed them in terms of beauty, causing them both to feel a little inadequate.

Gu Manzi entered the pool naturally as if she were a mermaid, before she started to hug onto the other arm of Yue Zhong, using her voluptuous mounds to press against his arm.

Once his and Tong Xiaoyun's lips had parted, Yue Zhong saw the incredibly beautiful and sexy Gu Manzi beside him.

Gu Manzi smiled at Yue Zhong charmingly before going underwater, using her snow-white hands to grab onto Yue Zhong's 'poisonous dragon' and delivering it into her mouth.

Yue Zhong was immediately aroused.

Nevertheless, Gu Manzi could not hold her breath underwater for too long; when she came back up, the hot water was giving her delicate skin a very pinkish hue-adding on to the fact that her figure was voluptuous, it gave her an extremely irresistible charm. She was in her golden years, plus she was very attractive to begin with. This time, her attractiveness far surpassed that of Tong Xiaoyun.

Gu Manzi cocked an enchanting eyebrow as she called out seductively,

"Brother Yue, come and eat me up!"

[TN: Not literally, but literally. You know what I mean. ]

Divinecelestialbeinglol: that's Kun for you.

## Chapter 225: Giving “The Speech”

---

Seeing the charming Gu Manzi, Yue Zhong had a sudden urge to push her down by the side of the pool and engage himself in pleasure. However, he quickly held himself back. The sneak attack on Clear Wind Camp had taken its toll on his stamina and spirit—he had to maintain his condition in case Lie Tianyang suddenly came back.

If he expended too much energy and Lie Tianyang suddenly returned, he wouldn't even have enough time to cry.

In fact, when Yue Zhong had started his assault on the villa compound, Lie Tianyang had been indulging himself with a few beauties at his side. This had expended quite a lot of Lie Tianyang's stamina, hence his lower concentration level and response time during the battle. After all, he had even appeared later in the battle than the rest.

Yue Zhong smiled lightly and he told Gu Manzi,

"Come here! Today I'll spare you."

Gu Manzi swam over obediently and she asked with a face full of concern,

"Brother Yue, are you exhausted? Let me give you a massage!"

"Mm!" Yue Zhong slowly closed his eyes.

Gu Manzi looked at Tong Xiaoyun and she smiled, before moving across to Yue Zhong's side and beginning to massage his body, making his muscles relax.

Tong Xiaoyun was not angered by Gu Manzi's provocation: instead, she started watching Gu Manzi's actions very carefully, absorbing and learning what she could.

Yue Zhong continued soaking in the pool for a while, before drying himself and allowing himself to be led away by a

maidservant to his resting quarters.

After Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun had also cleaned themselves, they too followed the servants back to their rooms.

Before the second day had even dawned, a petite figure opened the door to Yue Zhong's room and burrowed into the covers, before hugging onto Yue Zhong and then falling into a deep sleep.

Not long after, another petite figure also darted into the room and did the same thing, diving beneath the covers. However, those 2 small figures soon collided with each other. Both of them emerged from underneath the covers as they stared at each other.

Those two petite figures were the two lolis Yun Caiwei and Tong Xiaoyun. Both of them stared at each other for a while, before each grabbing onto one of Yue Zhong's arms with a mutual understanding and falling asleep.

At 8 o'clock in the morning, Yue Zhong's internal body clock caused him to wake up. Usually, he would wake up at 7, but after the huge battle that had gone on the previous night, the recovery process of his body had caused him to sleep until 8 am.

When he opened his eyes, he immediately noticed that 2 lolis were sleeping beside him, one on each side. Yun Caiwei and Tong Xiaoyun were both in deep slumber. With Yue Zhong by their side, they were not afraid of what the future might bring. Regardless of any dangers or obstacles, Yue Zhong would be in front of them, shouldering it all.

"Time to get up!" Yue Zhong called out loudly as he pulled off the covers and gently slapped the two lolis' buttocks.

Tong Xiaoyun sat up and rubbed her hazy eyes. The nightgown she was wearing had slipped down halfway, exposing her little cherry-pink rabbits. Coupled with her snow-white skin, it was truly a sight to behold.

After Tong Xiaoyun's head had cleared, she looked at Yue Zhong

and smiled sweetly, saying, "Good morning, brother Yue!"

Yun Caiwei also got up groggily, before saying, "Big Brother, good morning!!"

Seeing their cute and innocent appearances, Yue Zhong also started to feel extremely comfortable; he reached out to pinch their cheeks, before throwing them unceremoniously out of the bed, telling them to go wash up.

After they had a shower, he led the 2 of them into the dining room.

Very soon, Gu Manzi and Zhuo Yatong also finished washing up and arrived at the dining area.

Chen Ming walked up towards Yue Zhong and asked, "Master, can I begin to serve breakfast now?"

"Yes, you may!"

Right after Yue Zhong had just finished his sentence, Chen Ming had already gestured towards a few maidservants to bring breakfast over from the kitchen and to start serving.

Breakfast actually consisted of sausages, eggs, warm milk, deep fried fritters, corn porridge, steamed buns and so on. In the current world, this type of breakfast could be considered extremely luxurious.

Ever since Z-day, Zhuo Yatong and the other 3 girls hadn't eaten anything even remotely close to what they were seeing right now. Without another word, they all lifted their utensils and proceeded to dig in.

As soon as they had filled their plates, the demeanor and etiquette of the 4 ladies began to show. This applied especially to Zhuo Yatong, who grew up in an esteemed background and had to learn special etiquette; each and every movement of hers was refined, and she was truly a sight to behold.

Gu Manzi also grew up in a family with a prestigious background, and so she had gone through similar training in manners and etiquette. Although she could not quite be compared to Zhuo Yatong, she did look elegant in her own right. Tong Xiaoyun might not be as refined as those two women, but she was still equally loveable.

After finishing a fried fritter, Yue Zhong signaled to Chen Ming, "Get Zeng Fang and Ma Lili to be my personal maids, their remunerations will increase by one grade."

Chen Ming replied respectfully, "Yes! Master!"

The maidservants at the side had a momentary look of jealousy on their faces-since Zeng Fang and Ma Lili had just become Yue Zhong's personal maids, their supplies and treatment would be a lot better from now on.

Yue Zhong continued, "Chen Ming! Get Xiong Zheng to bring all the survivors to the assembly area."

"Yes! Master!" Chen Ming nodded and retreated.

After a while, Chen Ming returned and said, "Master, Wang Jian requests an audience. Do you wish to see him?"

Since Yue Zhong was the new leader of Clear Wind Camp, if Wang Jian wanted to see him, he would have to go through Chen Ming first.

Yue Zhong replied lightly, "Let him in!"

Wang Jian was brought into the villa under Chen Ming's lead; when he saw Yue Zhong casually digging into the food in the dining room, a complex look flashed past his eyes. He knew Yue Zhong was strong, but he could never have imagined that Yue Zhong had actually managed to take down the entire Clear Wind Camp by himself with a dozen ex-militants who had just surrendered to him.



Yue Zhong glanced at Wang Jian and asked, "Have you eaten your breakfast yet?"

Wang Jian looked at all the fritters, buns and milk upon the table and he couldn't help but start salivating as he replied, "Nope!"

Wang Jian had not eaten anything comparable to the items on the table for more than a month. He was only the leader of the survivor fleet and whilst he could satiate his hunger everyday, the food he ate was mostly rice-there was basically nothing else in his stomach right now.

Yue Zhong chuckled and he grabbed 2 fried fritters, 2 buns and a bottle of milk, placing them on a plate and pointed to Wang Jian. The servant girl on his side immediately brought it forward to Wang Jian.

"Thanks!" After receiving the plate, Wang Jian didn't bother with any more manners and he immediately started to devour the food with gusto.

Wang Jian finished his meal very quickly without any hassle, before asking Yue Zhong, "How do you plan on dealing with our group of survivors?"

Wang Jian's side had over a hundred survivors and he was representing them to enquire about their future.

Yue Zhong looked at Wang Jian and replied lightly,

"I will treat everyone equally-the way I treat the survivors of Clear Wind Camp will be the same as for you guys. If you guys want better treatment, you will have to put in more effort. I will not give anybody any special treatment."

"Follow me!" Yue Zhong said to Wang Jian as he stood up, before striding out of the villa.

Zhuo Yatong and the other 3 girls immediately stopped eating, and started following Yue Zhong. Since this was a place they were unfamiliar with, the moment Yue Zhong was out of their sight,

they would lose all sense of security.

There were over 2000 people gathered at the town square and all of them were waiting with stiff expressions, unsure of the life that their new leader was going to bring them. To them, it did not really matter if the current leader was Lie Tianyang or Yue Zhong, because all they wanted was to survive. Since they were living purely for the sake of being alive, they were essentially walking corpses.

On both sides of the town square, there were 16 heavily armed soldiers monitoring the 2000+ survivors.

Under the gazes of so many people, Yue Zhong walked towards the center of the podium, while the four women and Wang Jian only stood at the edge.

Wang Ni was standing amongst the survivors when she saw Gu Manzi standing by Yue Zhong, and her eyes were filled with jealousy and unwillingness:

"Damn it, why didn't that guy want me!! Why did he only want Gu Manzi, I am obviously better than her! Why! Why!!"

One of the students also saw Tong Xiaoyun, who was standing on the other side of the podium as well, and he called out dejectedly, "That's Tong Xiaoyun!! She also followed Yue Zhong?"

Another student couldn't help but reply with extreme jealousy, "I really didn't expect for her to be that kind of girl as well, a lowly woman who sells her body in exchange for the protection of a man."

The faces of those students who were looking at Yue Zhong and Tong Xiaoyun were all full of envy and hate.

One after another, the female students also looked at Tong Xiaoyun, who was splendidly dressed in nice clothes and bursting with life. Their hearts were all envious as they thought to themselves, "Tong Xiaoyun followed Yue Zhong! If I could get her

to recommend me, then I can follow him as well and will never have to suffer again."

Standing atop the podium, Yue Zhong gazed at the 2000-odd survivors as he spoke coldly,

"I'm Yue Zhong! From today onwards, you are my citizens. As my people, your basic allowance will be 3 bowls of porridge as relief meals. Although those relief meals may not be filling, they should be enough for you to survive. If you don't want the relief meals, it's fine as well.

I can arrange jobs for you so that as long as you work, you will have ample food supplies. If you are unwilling to stay here, you can leave now. I will not stop you. As long as you're staying here and eating my food, you will have to follow my orders. Otherwise, don't blame me for being merciless."

Hearing those words, the eyes of many survivors brightened up and not a single person was willing to leave. Under the rule of Lie Tianyang, the survivors were made to eat chicken feed, pig feed and they even had to dig for wild vegetables in their own town.

Every now and then, they would be fortunate enough to get some gruel. Compared to the conditions now, where Yue Zhong was promising them 3 bowls of porridge a day, it was a huge blessing. No one was willing to strike it out on their own in the wild.

## Chapter 226: Fury Up!

---

Even those students who were filled with either hatred or jealousy towards Yue Zhong did not dare to leave the camp. Without the protection of Wang Jian, they would not even last 3 days outside, be it due to hunger or zombies.

Yue Zhong observed the people who had gathered again, before continuing to say,

"Since no one has chosen to leave, I will take it as you have agreed to become my citizens. Come forward to report your name and your occupation before the apocalypse, together with your current strength. If you have any talents to boot, you may even get better meals."

After that, he released a huge amount of killing intent as he said coldly,

"Now, let me make it clear before you start to queue up. Whoever dares to cut the queue will be hauled away to receive 20 whips. If anyone dares to assault somebody else, you will be executed on the spot."

Hearing those words, all of the survivors started to tremble and under the watchful gazes of the soldiers, they obediently formed 20 long rows. Not a single person dared to cause trouble, which miraculously dispelled the usual notion of Chinese people causing problems in queues.

The five policemen, Gu Manzi, Zhuo Yatong and Chen Ming proceeded to register the particulars of each survivor, with help from the 20 fine attendants of the villa.

Yue Zhong remained on top of the podium, gazing at the survivors below. To prevent any accidents, Yun Caiwei and Tong Xiaoyun were seated on either side of him, massaging his shoulders and legs to keep themselves busy.

The entire camp was busy all the way till evening; only then had all the particulars of every survivor been recorded.

At some time during nightfall, Xiong Zheng seemed to mull over something. He came up to Yue Zhong and said,

"Boss Yue, please come with me for a moment."

Yue Zhong frowned as he replied, "What's the matter?"

Xiong Zheng hesitated before replying with great difficulty, "I need your guidance, how should we deal with the factory? There's still a dozen women and a few tonnes of meat inside."

Yue Zhong pondered for a while before replying, "Bring me there to take a look."

"Don't follow this time." Yue Zhong told the 4 ladies beside him.

"I want to check it out."

"Me too."

Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun both exclaimed loudly. They wanted to prove themselves, to let Yue Zhong know that they weren't women who were just concerned about the rivalry between each other.

Zhuo Yatong had a pale face because she could guess what the factory was for; she held the little loli Yun Caiwei tightly in her embrace, who wanted to go see as well.

"Suit yourselves." Yue Zhong glanced at Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun, and he did not speak any further.

With Xiong Zheng's directions, Yue Zhong's group arrived at a factory located in the corner of the villa quarter.

The moment they entered the factory, Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun saw a scene that they would never forget in their entire lives. Women's heads were hanging up in rows, decapitated bodies were strung up in the air, their innards were hanging from metal hooks and the entire factory was filled with the nauseating scent of

blood.

Their faces turning pale, Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun covered their mouths, before running out of the factory and vomiting right outside. They had assumed that they had already seen the worst of humanity in terms of cruelty and insanity, but what they saw in the factory went way beyond their belief. At that moment, they knew that they had truly been very fortunate.

"Damn you, Lie Tianyang, I will definitely kill you!"

Yue Zhong had also thought that he was mentally prepared, but even he had fight back against the vomit rising in his throat. He began to harbor a strong killing intent towards Lie Tianyang, whose depravity was beyond human. If he appeared in front of Yue Zhong again, Yue Zhong certainly would not hesitate to give his it all and get rid of that beast.

Inside the processing factory, there were a few dozen female bodies that were hung up. At the same time, Yue Zhong and his team found a huge cage behind the factory, inside of which were 20 women full of fear and unease. A large number of them even seemed to have lost their minds.

"What do we do? Shall we kill them, Boss Yue?" Xiong Zheng asked with great difficulty.

Clear Wind Camp did not have ample rations to begin with, therefore Xiong Zheng was not willing to retain these 20 women to partake in the rations. To him, these clearly unsound women had no value and taking care of them would just require more resources.

Yue Zhong looked at those naked women with filthy bodies, some of whom might have gone crazy, and rejected Xiong Zheng's proposal,

"No, bring them back and take good care of them. They are women so they still can help to give birth."

Xiong Zheng hesitated for a moment, before pointing towards a storage facility and asking,

"What about those?"

Inside the storage facility, there were a few tonnes of human meat sausages. During periods of food shortage, if Yue Zhong and Xiong Zheng were to play dumb and distribute the sausages out, no one would ever know. Even if they were to find out, they would feign ignorance. Without meat, it was not like they would die from hunger, but they would not have much energy.

Lie Tianyang wanted to maintain the energy of his elite troops and so he constantly fed them the human sausages. Of course, there were members of the troops who could not accept or stomach such vile acts, and they would rather stay weak and hungry than eat human meat.

Yue Zhong said in a deep voice, "Bury them all."

"Yes." Xiong Zheng also heaved a sigh of relief and took his men with him to bury those sickening things.

The moment Yue Zhong left the factory which was filled with evilness, Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun immediately grabbed hold of either of his arms, their faces pale. Only by doing were they able to gain a little bit of their courage back. Yue Zhong gently patted their backs to console them, before taking big strides to leave the place.

The second day, Yue Zhong started recruiting fighters from the survivors.

After the apocalypse, fighters received the best treatment and also possessed the strongest battle abilities. The moment Yue Zhong opened up recruitment, a lot of survivors fought with each other in order to volunteer first.

Amongst the 2000 survivors, there were about 1200 males, 1000 of whom were fully-grown men. Lie Tianyang wasn't an idiot and

had already selected a good number of strong and able-bodied men to be his subordinates or members of his Green Wolves Mount. The majority if the men left were either malnourished, weak or lacking in stature.

Yue Zhong was very careful with his selection and managed to choose about 450 males with great difficulty. A total of 400 people, together with Liu Erhei, Zhang Niujiang and Xiong Zheng, formed one of his battalions.

Liu Erhei, Zhang Niujiang and Xiong Zheng were Commanders, whilst Yue Zhong acted as the Direct Company Leader.

The other 50 males were given to Wang Jian for training so that they could become qualified policemen. Wang Jian was an upright and moral person, thus Yue Zhong assigned him to be the Chief Policeman of Clear Wind Camp.

With the open-minded and morally upright Wang Jian as the head of the police, the policemen trained by him would at least make Yue Zhong feel a bit more reassured.

Due to the shortage of manpower, the clever and meticulous Chen Ming was promoted to become the Officer for Internal Affairs within the camp. He was responsible for managing internal affairs, organizing personnel, the overall distribution of resources and a series of other jobs.

As for the palace itself and also the affairs of the women, Yue Zhong left it all to Zhuo Yatong. After all, she was a strong woman who had handled her own business prior to the apocalypse, therefore managing the affairs of the palace naturally wouldn't be an issue to her.

(TN: in this case, the 'palace' can also be interpreted as the 'harem'. Just think of it as all the affairs related to the villas and women~)

Under Yue Zhong's orders, Chen Ming divided the remaining



survivors into groups to strengthen the defences of the camp; at the same time, the survivors dug pits around the perimeter of the camp.

All those who were willing to participate in the digging could fill their stomachs. Under those attractive conditions, a huge number of the survivors joined the digging troops. Outside Clear Wind Camp, other than upon the main roads, huge pits were being dug out all over the place.

Back when Yue Zhong was at Qing Yuan County, Chen Jianfeng had made use of this tactic to great effect. At the time, there were at least a few thousand zombies that had fallen into the deep pits, never to rise again. Against intelligent humans, the pits were of no use, but they were extremely effective against zombies.

In the process of digging the pits, those survivors were engaging in strenuous physical activity-combined with the satiating meals, it was a form of training for their bodies as well.

Yue Zhong was building up a whole battalion of soldiers and adhered completely to military rules for their training. At the same time, he set unbelievably high levels for their training, which caused them all to be rather unhappy, except for the fact that Yue Zhong himself took the lead to do training 6 times more difficult everyday. In addition to the fact that they could eat their fill and even consume some of the delicious Type 2 Black-scaled Ferocious Boar meat, they would not have been able to continue.

Although the Type 2 Mutant Boar meat could not suddenly transform them into strong Enhancers, it was able to let them quickly recover their vitality, which had been greatly diminished by hunger and exhaustion. This gave their faces a little more colour and even their bodies began to recover their original strength.

After the high intensity training that lasted for 10 days, the soldiers of the battalion had completely recovered their original

vitality and they even had a small increase in physical strength compared to what they had before the end of the world. Following this, the training intensity was reduced to a normal level, with the focus now being on the formation of troops and standing at attention..

It wasn't that Yue Zhong did not want to carry on with the intense training and churn out a few elite troops. The reason was that there was the issue of rations. After continuing with the high-intensity training for almost 10 days, the original 20+ tonnes of meat kept in Yue Zhong's storage ring had been reduced by 4 tonnes. This was done by just that battalion alone.

On top of that, with a huge number of survivors participating in the pit-excavating or the repairs of Clear Wind Camp, the original amount of rations in Clear Wind camp was rapidly running out just like flowing water.

Lie Tianyang had not chosen every single male to join his troops for the very same reason. It was not that he did not want to, but rather that he did not have enough rations to support the food consumption of the army. After creating the elite Green Wolves Mount and even using human meat as a food source, it could be seen that the problem of food was starting to worry him.

"If we maintain this rate of consumption, in a month's time, our food source will be completely depleted." Chen Ming was holding a document in his hands as he stood in front of Yue Zhong and presented his report.

He then suggested to Yue Zhong, "Master, should we stop the excavation and repair works? That way, our food supplies can be conserved for a longer period of time."

Yue Zhong pondered a while before saying to Chen Ming, "Bring Xiong Zheng over."

Chen Ming withdrew and brought Xiong Zheng over very quickly.

Xiong Zheng, whose skin had become darker due to the long hours he'd spent under the sun, was led by Chen Ming up to Yue Zhong. He immediately asked in a boisterous manner,

"Boss Yue, did you want me for something?"

Even though Yue Zhong wanted to mold these troops into proper soldiers, in such a short time, it was actually quite hard to eradicate their previous habits. After all, the whole troop was filled with 'bandits'. Even Yue Zhong himself, the Battalion Commander, hadn't received any complete and rigorous military training before.

Yue Zhong glanced at Xiong Zheng and asked directly,

"Where is the nearest granary around here?"

Upon hearing the word 'granary', Xiong Zheng laughed bitterly as he replied,

"Boss Yue, you're thinking of opening up some of the granaries to alleviate the food issue, right? Lie Tianyang had the same idea before, so all of the granaries within the vicinity of Clear Wind Camp have already been opened by us. Other than perhaps clothes, dishwashing liquid, laundry detergent and other damned things like that, there's not a single grain of rice left in those granaries."

"The granaries have no food inside?"

When Yue Zhong heard this, he was surprised for a moment, but then he thought about the granaries that he had opened in Shanglin County; there had been a few empty granaries there as well, and this made Yue Zhong finally understand the problem. The food inside the granaries must have been completely sold off ages ago by the officials responsible for them, who had then rented out the empty warehouses for some extra income.

Yue Zhong stared at Xiong Zheng and said heavily,

"There should be a National Grain Reserve nearby for use in times of war. There should be food there."

"There are indeed 2 huge granaries here, one of which is located towards the north. It is roughly 100 miles out in Xia Qi County itself, which has already been occupied by the SY County forces. There's another one which is situated in the east, in Ning Guang County about 50 miles away, which is currently occupied by a force that calls itself the Ferocious Tigers."

"After the Ferocious Tigers obtained this granary, they set up a military camp with a battalion's worth of equipment. They have 2 Infantry Fighting Vehicles and countless machine guns. At the same time, they control a large amount of the goods, so a lot of survivors are willing to throw their lives in for them. There are around 10,000 survivors there and I've heard that just the number of their armed forces is over 2000. This is one of the biggest military forces out there other than the actual Chinese Army.

Xiong Zheng's words made Yue Zhong furrow his eyebrows. The Ferocious Tigers had 2000 militants and a whole battalion with standard PLA (People's Liberation Army) equipment-it was no wonder that Lie Tianyang did not dare to provoke them.

Although Yue Zhong had managed to recruit 400 militants, they had only gone through 10 days of training so far. They had not experienced war or witnessed bloodshed yet, and they were only equipped with old rifles from the previous Green Wolves Mount members. On average, each fighter only had a couple of grenades and if they were to be bombed, their morale would definitely go right down the drain.

Yue Zhong had only just started to form this battalion: if he were to meet a force like that which he had raised in Qing Yuan County, his forces would be completely wiped out. In terms of battle awareness, experience and fighting skills, his current battalion was simply incomparable to the others..

Yue Zhong pulled open a map, pointing towards an area in the northeast that had been crossed out and saying,

"Which places in this area haven't you guys opened yet?"

# Chapter 227: Attacking Herd of Mutant Pigs!

---

Xiong Zheng pointed to a small town on the map and said to Yue Zhong, "We have not opened up this town yet!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Qi Shi town and pondered for a while, before deciding to use the town as a training ground for the troops.

"Not good! Not good!! Master, something's happened!! There's an attack, attack!!"

Right at this moment, Chen Ming ran into the room in a panic and shouted to Yue Zhong.

Seeing Chen Ming in such a distressed state, Yue Zhong called out deeply before striding out,

"Let's go!"

Xiong Zheng followed nervously behind him.

Yue Zhong quickly climbed up the machine gun turret at the gate of the camp and looked into the distance, only to see a huge, oppressive-looking herd of white Mutant Pigs chasing a Hummer in a frenzy.

When looking into the distance, one would not even be able to see the end of the herd, so their numbers could very well be over 10,000.

[Level 11 Mutant Beast: Mutant House Pig. It possesses sharp teeth and immense strength.]

The moment Yue Zhong saw the Mutant Pigs, the information about them flooded into his brain.

"Fuck!!"

Yue Zhong took a look at the densely-packed herd of Mutant Pigs and his complexion turned ashen; he gritted his teeth and couldn't

help swearing.

If it was just one Mutant Pig, then it was a god-sent meal. However, the numbers that were approaching ranged in the tens of thousands-to Clear Wind Camp, this was simply a disaster. Clear Wind Camp lacked weapons and ammunition, whilst the militants were lacking in training and had only recently regained their strength from eating Mutant Beast meat. Under the current circumstances, if they had to face the incoming stampede of 10,000 Mutant Pigs, even Yue Zhong had no confidence of saving the entire camp.

The moment Clear Wind Camp was breached, the 2,300+ people there would end up in the Mutant Pigs' mouths without a doubt.

With a wave of his hand, a QJZ89 Type 12.7 Calibre Heavy Machine Gun appeared in his hands.

Yue Zhong grabbed it and fired at the Hummer in a frenzy. Regardless of who was in it, he had to kill the person inside. Over 2,300 lives were being endangered by the Hummer's driver and Yue Zhong's was already filled with killing intent.

The heavy machine gun easily tore holes in the Hummer, turning it into a sieve. A person wrapped in tornadoes immediately burst out from the vehicle and raised his middle finger in Yue Zhong's direction, laughing coldly before immediately disappearing into one side of the wilderness.

Yue Zhong could already make out from the person's shadow that it was Lie Tianyang.

After being defeated by Yue Zhong 10 days ago, he had constantly been harboring hatred for Yue Zhong in his heart. He had found an entire herd of Mutant Pigs and after killing a few, he managed to lure them towards Clear Wind Camp.

Before Z-Day, the entire herd was actually from a large breeding pen. After the apocalypse, the herd had undergone a mutation and

had started feasting on zombies. Since there were zombies littered around everywhere, the herd had no lack of food or water. The size of the herd hadn't decreased and their numbers had grown by around 1000 instead.

"Lie Tianyang!! Damn you!!"

The fury in Yue Zhong's heart transcended the heavens, yet he could still do nothing about Lie Tianyang. After all, Lie Tianyang had already escaped-if Yue Zhong were to give chase, he would have to leave the camp, of which he was the backbone. As soon as he left, Clear Wind Camp would immediately collapse.

At this moment, the first battalion of warriors from Clear Wind Camp had already gathered upon Yue Zhong's orders. From within the camp, they could already see the herd rampaging in their direction. Every single face turned incredibly pale and many people's hands trembled as they held onto their guns.

Yue Zhong immediately fired off a series of orders to Chen Ming as he said,

"Chen Ming! Go gather all the people in the camp together. Arrange for a group to use debris to block off all areas, other than the main transport channel!! Then arrange for a group of people to prepare molotovs-any completed ones are to be sent to the front lines immediately!

Afterwards, arrange for another group to gather all combustible materials and pile them up to the west of the town's department store. Finally, arrange for a group of 400 men to transfer those materials to the front lines to be prepared as reserves. In terms of weaponry, bring whatever you can find!"

"Yes!" Chen Ming heard the orders and the panicking within his heart also calmed down a little. He bowed respectfully and immediately retreated to carry out Yue Zhong's orders.

Despite being a man who did not do too well under stressful



situations, Chen Ming was excellent at executing orders from above. Immediately after he retreated, he delegated the instructions to different stewards who then quickly passed Yue Zhong's orders further down, assigning various tasks to everyone..

The entire Clear Wind Camp bustled with activity, as all of the residents knew they were about to face the siege of over 10,000 Mutant Pigs. Once all of them had gathered, they immediately dispersed in their teams to carry out their assigned tasks.

A large amount of debris was moved out of the various rooms that had been destroyed, before being piled up at the various alleys, roads and tunnels to block them off.

Within a building, a few hundred women constantly filled up countless bottles with precious gasoline, completing makeshift molotovs. Clear Wind Camp did have some resources like fuel, but not much. After all, fuel was an extremely valuable, non-renewable resource even before the apocalypse: without it, the teams searching for resources would not be able to function properly as their vehicles would be useless. They would not be able to travel out too far and this would be extremely detrimental to the searching process.

Many other ladies and children were also gathered to move wooden planks, waste paper, plastic sheets, foam and various other items, placing them to the west of the department store.

400 able-bodied men were rounded up too, as they gathered shovels, hammers, knives, bats, watermelon knives and any other bizarre weapons they could find, before sending them to the front line for use as backup preparations.

Yue Zhong took a look at the 800 men who he had trained, before he spoke out with huge killing intent,

"I won't bother too many with useless words! Now that the end is already nigh, if the camp is broken into, then we will definitely be torn into pieces by those beasts in the wilderness! No one will

survive unless we defend this place-only then we will have a sliver of hope. From now on, without my orders, whoever dares to retreat will be shot dead on the spot! Defend the camp now and I will let you eat meat everyday for an entire month!"

Upon hearing Yue Zhong's words, everyone's hearts turned cold.

After he finished speaking, Yue Zhong leapt down from the watchtower. Zhuo Yatong brought Yun Caiwei, Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun with her as she followed behind Yue Zhong.

After all, Zhuo Yatong was a Strength-type Evolver, so in order to bolster the strength of Clear Wind Camp's forces, she was allocated to be one of the frontline fighters. Although killing other humans was impossible for her, she had an advantage when it came to Mutant Beasts.

Xiong Zheng brought his 2nd Company over and began to lay out defenses atop the platform.

Amongst the 3 Companies that Yue Zhong had trained up, Xiong Zheng's Company was the most outstanding and showed the most potential; it was also the Company that had the best fighters.

The densely packed herd of Mutant Pigs was rushing towards the camp like a flood: as they neared, Yue Zhong could make out their features more clearly.

When comparing these Mutant Pigs with those normal pigs prior to the apocalypse, these Mutant Pigs had bigger, rounder, red eyes. In addition, their 4 limbs were thicker and stronger, their muscles more taut and powerful, and they exuded an aggressive atmosphere. While running, their speed was comparable to wild boars of the pre-apocalypse days.

As soon as that herd of Mutant Pigs came over to this region, they caught onto the smell of the large number of humans within Clear Wind Camp. They became excited and charged in the direction of Clear Wind Camp.

The main source of food for these Mutant Pigs was zombies, but they preferred to eat live humans if they had the chance to.

Yue Zhong had gathered a large amount of manpower to dig many pits 3m deep and 4m in diameter outside of Clear Wind Camp. Apart from the main road, the surroundings of Clear Wind Camp were now riddled with one pit after another.

When facing the Mutant Pig Herd, those pits displayed an astonishing usefulness: one after another, the charging Mutant Pigs directly fell into the pits, whilst the other Mutant Pigs behind simply couldn't stop and ended up leaping into the pits as well.

The Mutant Pigs were constantly falling into the pits, then being crushed or trampled to death by the other Mutant Pigs behind. So far, the two sides hadn't even properly made contact, yet several hundred Mutant Pigs had already fallen into the pits and had been killed by their own companions.

Even though Yue Zhong had ordered for many pits to be dug, those Mutant Pigs continued charging with unparalleled fierceness towards their direction and very quickly, they appeared within 100m distance of Clear Wind Camp's gates.

"Fire at will! Fire!!" Yue Zhong called out in a deep voice.

Xiong Zheng brought over the 1st Company to fire continuously at the Mutant Pigs; as the bullets rained down on them, a dozen of them were injured or killed.

"Catch 3 of them alive for me!" Yue Zhong shouted out an order to White Bones!

White Bones shot out 3 bone spears through its right hand, immediately piercing through the heads of 3 Mutant Pigs, before tossing their corpses into the camp.

"Chop them up!" Yue Zhong ordered the 4 soldiers holding the Replica Tang Swords.

The 4 soldiers of the 1st Company swung their Replica Tang

Swords down towards the 3 injured Mutant Pigs, killing them instantly. Even though it was with the help of Yue Zhong, 3 of the soldiers managed to level up and become Enhancers the moment after they killed the pigs..

"Add all your points to your stamina, then swap over!" Yue Zhong boomed out.

3 of the soldiers gave their Replica Tang Swords to the others before they immediately withdrew.

The very next moment, yet another 3 Mutant Pigs flew into the camp and were immediately slaughtered by 3 soldiers of the 1st Company.

The Mutant Pigs' corpses were dragged over by those well-equipped men and then thrown aside.

White Bones continued to hunt the Mutant Pigs in that way, essentially transforming them into orbs of lights that constantly strengthened and enhanced the troops.

However, White Bones could not block the entire herd on its own: as the herd rushed down and viciously slammed onto the camp gates, their heads exploded violently upon impact. The Mutant Pigs that followed up met with the same end, advancing fearlessly before immediately dying as they charged into the gates.

One by one, the Mutant Pigs died upon impact when they rammed into the gates, forming a road of corpses that constantly piled up.

## Chapter 228: Success of the Pits!

---

Originally, Clear Wind Camp only had a single wooden fence surrounding it. After Yue Zhong took over, while digging up pits all around the camp, he also made use of the dug-up soil to reinforce the fence. Subsequently, the current defenses of Clear Wind Camp had been greatly reinforced, and so they were not damaged too much by the pummeling from the Mutant Pigs.

However, the fence was only 3m high and as the Mutant Pigs rammed suicidally into the gates, over one hundred corpses were left behind, forming some sort of corpse path.

The Mutant Pigs behind made use of the corpse path consisting of their dead comrades to wildly leap into the camp.

In accordance with Yue Zhong's orders, Zhuo Yatong was already standing guard, defending in front of the path of corpses. The moment the Mutant Pig had jumped across, she immediately cleaved it into two with her elegant blade.

After Zhuo Yatong disposed of the Mutant Pig in one move, she levelled up again to reach Level 9 and instantly allocated 3 points all to strength, giving her strength a huge boost.

(TN: I think that she received 2 points to distribute freely, whilst 1 point was automatically added to strength... well, that's what Kun put at least-it's probably what actually happened, except the raws don't go into that much detail.)

One by one, the Mutant Pigs continued jumping over from the corpse path, before being killed instantly by Zhuo Yatong.

Watching a lady like Zhuo Yatong daring to slaughter those Mutant Pigs, bloodlust filled the hearts of the warriors of Yue Zhong's 1st Company. Ten of them wielded Replica Tang Swords in their hands as they rushed to defend in front of the corpse path, slashing at those Mutant Pigs that Zhuo Yatong hadn't managed to

block in a frenzy.

Watching the Mutant Pigs fall one by one at the combined efforts of Zhuo Yatong and the warriors of the 1st Company, the 2nd Company warriors calmed their hearts and their hit rate also increased by a lot.

Just when the situation seemed to have improved, the herd had already lost over 1000 Mutant Pigs, filling up the holes that the 2000+ people organized by Yue Zhong had painstakingly dug.

The ferocious herd of Mutant Pigs immediately laid siege to all sides of the fence one after another, battering against it until their brains ruptured before dying on the spot.

"Throw the molotovs!" Yue Zhong immediately gave the order for the molotovs to be thrown over.

Those men who did not dare fight on the front lines now threw the molotovs with great concentration.

One by one, the bottles sailed over the fence and upon landing on the ground, they exploded and blossomed into flames, burning the Mutant Pigs' corpses. Smoke rose as the stench of burning flesh filled the air.

Over one hundred Mutant Pigs rushed into the fire and they were soon engulfed by it as the stench continued to spread out.

From within the herd, the Mutant Pig King immediately let loose a huge grunt and the rest of the Mutant Pigs retreated a little, one after another.

"Is there a Mutant Pig King?"

Yue Zhong swiftly climbed up the machine gun turret and looked down, hoping to discover the King's location. As he gazed over the camp, all he saw was a huge white mass consisting of the normal Mutant Pigs, and not even a shadow of the Mutant Pig King's particularly striking body.

A huge number of the Mutant Pigs retreated and the defenders took the moment to catch a breath, all of them heaving a sigh of relief.

However, the main road to Clear Wind Camp had not been affected by the molotovs. Zhuo Yatong was still killing the Mutant Pigs as they came, her level increasing wildly as she continued her slaughter. She had already reached Level 13 and currently, her strength had already surpassed that of Yue Zhong's by quite a lot.

The warriors around Zhuo Yatong had already swapped out 3 times: they did not possess good equipment from the God and Devil System like Zhuo Yatong, who was a strength-based Evolver as well, which made her able to last longer.

Strength-based Evolvers were particularly effective against Mutant Beasts, due to the fact that they possessed great strength; killing those normal Mutant Beasts only required a little stamina, and so an Evolver's fighting strength was naturally more prolonged.

"What a powerful lady! She really is the Boss Yue's woman!"

Xiong Zheng had just shot dead a Mutant Pig. As his eyes roamed across towards Zhuo Yatong, his heart slightly skipped a beat-he really could not be compared to her.

Zhuo Yatong had been slaughtering the Mutant Pigs without pause and her stamina was rapidly being depleted. After killing over 60 Mutant Pigs, her stamina had gone down by over a half, while her body was soaked in fragrant perspiration. (TN: uhhh...) After all, Evolvers were not invincible-they too would eventually die from fatigue once overwhelmed by numbers. Fighting a prolonged, high-intensity battle was one of the best ways to deplete the opposition's stamina.

"Let me take over. Go rest for a moment!" Yue Zhong strode forward and stood in front of the road, calling out to Zhuo Yatong.

She nodded her head and retreated.

After Yue Zhong took over Zhuo Yatong's position, he casually slashed twice at 2 Mutant House Pigs that were charging towards him, slicing them both into two pieces. The Dark Magic Blade was much sharper than the Replica Tang Sword, hence killing those Mutant Pigs was as easy as it was for normal people to cut a piece of paper with a knife. Upon reaching Yue Zhong's level, killing low-levelled existences like the Mutant Pigs would give the orbs of 'divine light', although wanting to rise in level would require you to kill at least a few hundred of them.

Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun gathered around Zhuo Yatong as they asked with great envy,

"Big Sis Yatong, you're really amazing! Can you tell us how you became so strong?"

In the current era, only those who possessed strength had the ability to live with dignity. Although Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun had both set their hearts on possessing Yue Zhong, they themselves wanted to become strong as well. If they had enough strength, then they would naturally become more valuable to Yue Zhong.

Zhuo Yatong smiled sweetly and looked at Yue Zhong's back as she slowly said,

"My strength is only possible because of him! If you two want to become strong, go ask him."

Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun both watched Yue Zhong as their eyes glistened.

Without any regard for the danger before her, Tong Xiaoyun gritted her teeth and rushed up to Yue Zhong's side, saying loudly,

"Big Brother Yue! I want to become strong too, let me fight beside you!!"

Yue Zhong nonchalantly sent out two slashes that swiftly



bisected another 2 Mutant Pigs, before he turned to glance at Tong Xiaoyun, who had a stubborn look on her face. Her beautiful, large eyes full of the desire for strength captivated him: with a wave of his hands, he immediately threw a Replica Tang Sword to her.

"Take this! Kill it! When you level up, add everything to strength!"

Right after Yue Zhong had finished speaking, White Bones had already thrown a Mutant Pig over.

Tong Xiaoyun picked up the Replica Tang Sword and she strode towards the Mutant Pig that had been pinned to the ground by a bone spear.

The Mutant Pig was struggling frantically as it grunted out in fear at the sight of the approaching Tong Xiaoyun.

Her desire for strength had completely suppressed the fear within her heart. She walked towards the head of the Mutant Pig and raised the Replica Tang Sword up high, before viciously swinging it down.

Tong Xiaoyun was, after all, a normal girl, and she had not gone through any enhancements or evolutions before, therefore her strength was quite weak. Although the Replica Tang Sword was sharp, in her hands, it only managed to cut into the pig's head, causing it immense torture and pain. Blood continuously flowed out and the Mutant Pig constantly squealed out in pain, but it still wasn't dead yet.

Tong Xiaoyun looked at the struggling Mutant Pig and she gritted her teeth again, before raising her sword again and chopping down in a frenzy, turning the Mutant Pig's head into pulp. It continued to struggle for quite some time before it finally took its last breath and died.

After killing that Mutant Pig, Tong Xiaoyun was also exhausted and was gasping for breath. She now understood fully how much

stronger Yue Zhong and Zhuo Yatong were in comparison to her.

With the Mutant Pig's death, a huge 'divine light' orb of experience immediately entered Tong Xiaoyun's body, letting her level up twice to become a Level 3 Enhancer.

"I have become an Enhancer too!!"

Tong Xiaoyun allocated 4 points into strength and felt the wonderful surge of energy in her as she exclaimed in delight.

White Bone retracted its spear and 4 men walked over, dragging the Mutant Pig's carcass away and throwing it directly at the foot of Clear Wind Camp's podium.

With another toss from White Bones, another Mutant Pig was thrown in front of Tong Xiaoyun. This time, she grabbed her Replica Tang Sword with excitement and immediately swung down at the Mutant Pig. After the 4 point increment from killing the previous pig, her strength had now reached 10 in value and was comparable to that of a fully-grown man. This time around, with the new experience and strength she had gained, Tong Xiaoyun managed to smoothly decapitate the Mutant Pig in one strike.

With the passing of time, the burning molotovs began to die out. Following a mighty grunt from the Mutant Pig King, the Mutant Pigs resumed their onslaught as they rushed madly towards the camp.

Facing the impending siege of the Mutant Pigs, the men standing atop the podium threw the molotovs in their hands down towards the Mutant Pigs one after another, starting the tumultuous, raging flames within the herd once again.

Only this time, the amount of molotovs had diminished by a lot and the blazing flames created by them could do nothing to impede the assault of the herd.

One by one, the Mutant Pigs used their own bodies to build up a path for the others behind to use, and so the Mutant Pigs that

followed were able to leap into the camp one after another.

This time, Zhuo Yatong could not rest any longer and she immediately drew her Replica Tang Sword, shooting forward like an arrow and beginning to massacre those Mutant Pigs.

"First Company! Advance!"

After Yue Zhong had easily disposed of yet another 2 Mutant Pigs, he shouted out loudly to his soldiers.

12 brave warriors of the First Company stepped forward with their Replica Tang Swords to provide reinforcements. The rest of the people used their guns and pointed them in the direction of the 3 paths outside Clear Wind Camp, firing at the Mutant Pigs as if their lives depended on it.

The Mutant Pigs were soon riddled with bullet holes and they either died on the spot or fell to the ground, struggling in pain. Nevertheless, there was still a dozen of them who managed to break through the blockade line and jumped into the camp.

The moment those Mutant Pigs leapt up onto the podium, a number of them were immediately slaughtered by those who were defending. However, there was a channel on the right where a Mutant Pig had made use of its companion being under attack to divert the fighters' attention. It leapt up onto the podium and charged forward viciously, directly knocking two sword-wielding soldiers of the First Company to the ground.

The Mutant Pig possessed immense strength and its charge had directly broken the 2 soldiers' legs. Without pausing, it charged savagely at another soldier and bared its sharp fangs. Then the Mutant Pig lowered its head and instantly ripped the soldier's throat apart, causing fresh blood to sputter across its face, giving it an even more sinister appearance.

The other Mutant Pigs took advantage of the chaos to leap up from the channel, rushing towards the inner defenses.

Seeing the frightening Mutant Pigs up close, the fighters of the First Company were frightened out of their wits. Very quickly, they were overwhelmed by fear and completely broke down, while 6 of them even turned tail and ran. When they were fighting a favorable battle, they could still manage, but the moment the tide turned, they wouldn't be able to withstand the pressure at all.

## Chapter 229: Breached Gates, Town Ablaze!

---

Bang! Bang! 2 of the soldiers who had retreated the fastest were instantly shot to death.

Yue Zhong was holding a gun in his left hand and the Dark Magic Sword in his right, as he stared at them and shouted out fiercely,

"I will kill whoever dares to flee without my orders!"

Yue Zhong pointed to Zhuo Yatong, who was already drenched in pigs' blood yet still constantly slaughtering the Mutant Pigs. He roared at the soldiers,

"Even this lady is still fighting, yet you damn wusses still want to run?! Are you guys not even comparable to a woman?!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's rebuke, the soldiers of the First Company all glanced at Zhuo Yatong, who was bravely fighting a battle full of bloodshed, and a hint of shame flashed past their eyes. At the same time, under the death threats from Yue Zhong, they already had no other choice: rather than being killed like dogs at the hands of Yue Zhong, they would much prefer to go down with a fight. Those 10 remaining soldiers of the First Company immediately turned towards the Mutant Pigs one by one, their eyes all crimson, before rushing towards the pigs with their blades in hand.

"Iron Bones, go provide assistance!" Yue Zhong called out a order to White Bones.

Upon receiving those orders, White Bones stopped helping Tong Xiaoyun and the other soldiers of the First Company rise in level- instead, it held its great big axe and took the lead to rush towards the 4th channel (corpse road 'constructed' by the pigs).

White Bones' battle ability was extremely shocking. As it waved its huge axe around, it became like a horrifying meat cleaver as it ground and chopped up those Mutant Pigs that stood in its way. Under its lead, the warriors of the First Company also rushed out

with valor; despite paying the price of 3 injured men and 1 fallen comrade, under the support of the firing squad behind them, the group managed to wrestle back the channel using force.

As the heavily injured warriors were carried away, the other 1st Company warriors who had undergone enhancements would step up and take over, maintaining the frontline defense against the Mutant Pigs. At every moment, there would be several warriors who were slammed onto the ground, resulting in severe wounds and perhaps even death. Nevertheless, there was still no sign of Yue Zhong's side receiving a heavy blow yet.

Not long after winning back the 4th channel, Yue Zhong saw that the Mutant Pigs were now using their dead comrades' carcasses to 'construct' a 5th and 6th channel against the fence. He knew that they wouldn't be able to protect the city gates for much longer.

Clear Wind Camp was different from Yue Zhong's Qing Yuan County. Here, there was no steel industry, and so not even a blade could be manufactured. The sharpest weapons currently in use were the 16 Replica Tang Swords, which Yue Zhong had pulled out from his own storage ring. The other people used all sorts of 'weapons', but for them to hope for a swift victory over a single Mutant Pig was incredibly difficult.

As soon as the 5th and 6th channels were set up, the podium would become a very perilous place for the soldiers to fight on.

Yue Zhong swiftly ordered,

"The reserve squadrons, immediately evacuate from here and retreat to the east of the department store."

Hearing the order to retreat, all the men in the reserve squadrons heaved a sigh of relief as they withdrew. Under Yue Zhong's strict guidance, these reserve soldiers had all learnt how to comply with orders, resulting in no chaos. Of course, they were only able to retreat orderly because they had not met with any enemies yet-otherwise, if they were being pursued by the enemy, they would

definitely fall apart into disorder.

"Second Company, fall back to the east of the department store and defend there!"

Receiving Yue Zhong's orders, those soldiers also heaved a sigh of relief.

Xiong Zheng glanced at Yue Zhong before summoning his vice-captain; after passing on some orders, he let his second-in-command lead the Second Company away to retreat. He himself then walked up to Yue Zhong's side.

Yue Zhong furrowed his brows as he asked with some surprise, "Why haven't you retreated yet?"

Xiong Zheng grinned at Yue Zhong as he drew his own Replica Tang Sword, decapitating an incoming Mutant Pig in one strike:

"Heihei! Boss Yue, you haven't retreated yet, so I will not retreat either! I also want to use these Mutant Pigs to test if my swordsmanship has become rusty or not!"

Xiong Zheng was, after all, an ex-Green Wolves Mount elite member. He was also a Level 13 Enhancer and like most people, his chosen enhancement path had been in strength and stamina. Although his level was not low, he did not have any particularly strong skills, therefore his fighting strength couldn't be compared to that of enhancers like Scarface and Wei Ji at all. However, he could kill normal Mutant Beasts like the pigs in front of him with ease.

Although Xiong Zheng belonged to such a bandit troupe and had a boorish aura, he was still extremely hot-blooded and placed great importance on brotherhood. Back then, when he had submitted easily to Yue Zhong, other than Yue Zhong's death threat, it was also due to the fact that he did not agree with Lie Tianyang's actions.

Yue Zhong rapidly called out another order,

"First Company, retreat! Iron Bones and Zhuo Yatong, come towards me!"

In an orderly manner, the First Company quickly retreated backwards under the lead of Vice-Captain Zhang Sunzhuan. White Bones and Zhuo Yatong also swiftly retreated to Yue Zhong's side and formed a small circle of defense, constantly killing the Mutant Pigs one by one.

After the First and Second Companies had retreated, there were no squadrons left to suppress and defend against the herd from a distance. A huge number of Mutant Pigs made use of all 5 channels to leap into the camp.

The moment they leapt into the camp, the pigs immediately surrounded Yue Zhong and his subordinates on all sides. The pressure on Yue Zhong's team instantly increased by over 10 times. If it wasn't for the fact that the core fighters consisting of Yue Zhong, White Bones and Zhuo Yatong had all remained incredibly calm, this small team would long have been swallowed up by the herd.

Even so, at every moment, Yue Zhong and the others (White Bones, Zhuo Yatong, Tong Xiaoyun and Xiong Zheng) still had to deal with a dozen Mutant Pigs pouncing over from the surroundings at the same time. It was truly difficult to the extreme.

As the pigs' blood continued to splatter everywhere, Tong Xiaoyun was beginning to feel very afraid, knowing that she could die at any moment. However, with her strong thirst for strength and no room for retreat, she released her latent potential in a frenzy as she used her Tang Replica Sword to slash at the Mutant Pigs without pause. Even though she did not have much strength, it was still enough for her to kill 2 Mutant Pigs by herself, and a huge experience orb of 'divine light' flew into her body, instantly making her rise up to Level 7.



Yue Zhong brought his subordinates as he slowly retreated from the podium, continuing to fight along the way; only then did the pressure on them greatly lessen.

The moment they descended from the podium, other than the main transport channel, the rest of the channels had all been blocked by various bits of debris and the Mutant Pigs' corpses. The huge number of Mutant Pigs simply could not break past the blockades, therefore at any one time, Yue Zhong's detail only had to deal with about 5 of the pigs, which simply wasn't even enough for them to kill.

However, even after they had descended, quite a few people had expended an enormous amount of stamina: Tong Xiaoyun and Xiong Zheng were currently gasping for breath, their bodies covered in sweat. This applied especially to Tong Xiaoyun, who was barely even able to hold on to the Replica Tang Sword; she had reached her limit and she practically had no fighting strength remaining.

The Mutant Pigs that had died at Yue Zhong's hands already numbered above 150, yet his stamina had only been depleted by 28 points so far, with over 50 points left. His battle ability was still very strong. Zhuo Yatong had also enhanced her stamina by quite a lot and being an Evolver, she had immense strength to. She had already consumed over half of her stamina, although she still had considerable fighting strength.

With Yue Zhong, White Bones and Zhuo Yatong as the main force, the 5 people slowly made their way to the east side of the department store.

Even with the debris blockade, the Mutant Pigs continued to rush into the camp from all directions, with the blockades only able to slow down their advance. Most of the Mutant Pigs had already entered the camp and had spread out in all directions.

Yue Zhong had relied on the huge pits to take down over 1000



killed the most pigs, yet they still continued to defend on the frontline without any intention of retreating.

Once the Enhancers of the First Company had joined the fray, the Mutant Pigs rushing over from the main transport channel were firmly suppressed, and so the pressure on Yue Zhong and the other two was abruptly alleviated by a considerable amount.

Yue Zhong only left White Bones as the main force defending on the frontlines, whilst he and Zhuo Yatong both retreated.

Once Yue Zhong had retreated, he commanded the warriors of the First Company to take turns in battling the Mutant Pigs, while at the same time, he also lent a hand to save the warriors who were in great danger. Those who gained experience through this ordeal were the most valuable warriors to Yue Zhong: as long as they did not die, they would bring courage to the entire First Company.

After an intense fight that lasted 20 minutes, the Mutant Pigs were still unable to advance and were stuck outside of the department store.

However, very quickly, the Mutant Pigs began to appear from the other corners of the camp and they began to charge in a frenzy towards the humans.

Yue Zhong looked at the Mutant Pigs burrowing out from the other corners and his face turned very pale. He called Xiong Zheng over and said loudly,

"Xiong Zheng, take over! Everyone will be at your command! Whatever happens, you must hold on for 5 more minutes!"

Xiong Zheng did not ask too much and responded loudly, "Yes! Boss Yue!!"

Yue Zhong activated his Encompassing Body Armor Skill in a flash and walked up to Zhuo Yatong's side, saying heavily,

"5 minutes!! Help back me up for another 5 minutes, I'm relying completely on you now!"

Right now, the only expert at Yue Zhong's side who could act as a pillar of strength was Zhuo Yatang. If there wasn't a powerful Evolver like her to help defend on the frontline, this new camp established by Yue Zhong would already have many casualties and losses due to the horde of Mutant Pigs, so much that it might even have directly crumbled apart.

Zhuo Yatang picked up her Replica Tang Sword and stood up, smiling sweetly at Yue Zhong as she said,

"Don't worry! I'll wait here for your return!"

At this moment, Zhuo Yatang was covered from head to toe in vile-smelling pigs' blood, yet the smile on her face was still extremely enchanting in Yue Zhong's eyes.

"Wait for my return!!"

Yue Zhong lowered his head to kiss Zhuo Yatang lightly on her pretty cheek, before rushing ahead like lightning into the town center, which had already been overrun by the Mutant Pigs.

Yue Zhong constantly moved around in the town center, taking out the molotovs from inside his storage ring and throwing them down onto the piles full of flammable substances.

As he continued to burn all sorts of combustible materials at the corners of the town, the greater part of Clear Wind Camp quickly became a sea of fire.

At this moment, most of the Mutant Pigs had already rushed into the camp. Within the tumultuous flames, countless pigs were squealing out miserably in pain and rampaging around, before being completely engulfed by the blazing flames.

The whole town was filled with the Mutant Pigs scurrying around. Some escaped frenzily outside of the camp, whilst others continued to rush crazily in Zhuo Yatang's direction. The seemingly unstoppable tide of Mutant Pigs was finally thrown into chaos.

After setting fire to all the combustible items, Yue Zhong did not choose to search for the Mutant Pig King's whereabouts: instead, he swiftly sped along in the direction of Zhuo Yatong's current position.

The entire town was engulfed in towering flames that seemed to reach the heavens. Most of the Mutant Pigs were burned to death, or they were currently fleeing out of the town in disarray; however, over 200 of them had leapt over the wall of flames and were currently charging towards Zhuo Yatong in a frenzy from all directions.

6 heavy machine guns were spewing violent flames non-stop at the Mutant Pigs, tearing many of them apart into pieces. Yet quite a lot of them still managed to break past the deadlock and began to engage in fierce battle with Zhuo Yatong and the warriors of the First Company behind her.

Zhuo Yatong was instantly decapitating the Mutant Pigs one by one, while the remaining pigs were also caught up in battle with the First Company. To lighten Zhuo Yatong's load, many fighters even took up things like watermelon knives, hacksaws, makeshift spears, baseball bats and various other 'weapons', rushing up to entangle with the Mutant Pigs.

Zhuo Yatong had been fighting constantly on the frontline without retreating, and this gave rise to a huge boost in morale. The warriors were not willing to hear about how they could not even compare to a lady, and they somehow all released an unbelievable amount of bloodlust and courage. Nevertheless, the substandard weaponry resulted in many losses for the First Company-a lot of people were not able to immediately kill the fierce Mutant Pigs and were rammed into the ground by the pigs instead, before having their throats ripped apart. At the same time though, a huge number of the Mutant Pigs were rapidly being slaughtered by the fighters.

In fact, when compared to facing zombies, these normal warriors

fought much more bravely against the Mutant Pigs, because as soon as they received a wound from a zombie, they would become infected and eventually turn into one as well. However, even after receiving heavy injuries from the Mutant Pigs' assault, there was still a chance to live on.

It was just that in the heat of the battle, those 6 heavy machine guns had been firing non-stop, whilst the warriors who were hiding behind covers also began to fire their rifles one by one. In Clear Wind Camp, ammunition was a very scarce resource to begin with and simply wasn't enough to fight a huge battle. Right now, Clear Wind Camp had finally run out of ammunition.

# Chapter 230: Great Victory

---

After shaking off the suppression from the firepower, the remaining Mutant Pigs started their mad assault on Zhuo Yatong and her team once again, crushing the hopes of almost the entire team.

Zhuo Yatong swung her blade and immediately killed 2 of the Mutant Pigs in succession, but due to exhaustion, her timing was off and she was struck viciously by another Mutant Pig. She was knocked back by 5 or 6 metres and she spat out a mouthful of fresh blood.

2 of the Mutant Pigs came pouncing over fiercely, as they opened their bloody mouths and prepared to bite down at Zhuo Yatong's throat.

"Am I going to die?" As she watched the Mutant Pigs drawing closer, her eyes flashed with bitterness. Those 2 Mutant Pigs could have been killed easily had she been in top condition, but she had virtually no stamina left and had just been injured by another Mutant Pig-she couldn't even move anymore.

An expression of regret and sorrow flashed past her eyes:

"What a pity, I can't even see him or Caiwei one last time before I die!!"

The Mutant Pigs arrived in front of her and they opened their mouths full of razor sharp teeth, biting down at Zhuo Yatong's throat. She could even smell the putrid breath from their mouths.

Right as Zhuo Yatong was about to meet her death, 2 bone spears shot down from the skies, immediately piercing through the Mutant Pigs' heads and nailing them to the ground!

"Boss Yue!!"

"Battalion Commander!! He's back!!"

"....."

The warriors, whose morale was about to shatter due to Zhuo Yatong being knocked back, saw Yue Zhong suspended in mid-air, supported by his Bone Spears. They immediately let out an earth-shaking roar of celebration and their morale instantly shot up.

Still suspended in mid-air, Yue Zhong hollered,

"The majority of the herd has escaped! These are the last of the Mutant Pigs, so as long as we kill them, then we will have won this battle!"

Upon hearing this great news, all the warriors got excited. They immediately erupted with unbelievable valor and began to engage in a frenzied slaughter with the Mutant Pigs.

"I'm sorry, I was late!!"

Yue Zhong disengaged the Encompassing Body Armor Skill and let White Bones join in the fray. He then disposed of a few more Mutant Pigs himself, before he came to Zhuo Yatong's side and hugged her blood-soaked figure tightly, placing some Life-Saving Grass powder into her mouth.

Zhuo Yatong lay comfortably in Yue Zhong's embrace as she smiled gently and said,

"I should be the one to apologize, for not being able to persevere all the way till your return."

At this moment, that unbelievably beautiful face was covered in blood, yet in Yue Zhong's eyes, she was even more attractive than before.

Yue Zhong laid her down on a stretcher with a little reluctance as he said,

"Stay here and rest well! I will go end the battle!"

After all, the battle was not yet over, and as the strongest fighter, Yue Zhong had to return to the battlefield.



Zhuo Yatong was also a little reluctant to part, but she still put on a gentle smile as she said,

"Mm! Be careful!"

Yue Zhong glanced once more at Zhuo Yatong, before rushing with hesitation towards the herd of Mutant Pigs.

The total number of Mutant Pigs remaining was no more than one hundred, and with Yue Zhong and White Bones both joining the fray, they quickly disposed of many of the pigs. Right when there were less than 30 of them left, the Mutant Pigs suddenly became dispirited and tried to make a break for it. However, they were immediately chased down by Yue Zhong and his men, who pierced through the pigs' forelimbs and thus captured them alive.

Inside the villa compound, there were over 1000 survivors gathered, with people crowded around everywhere in the place. At the same time, all sorts of items had been piled up, forming a crude fence together with some barbed wire.

Everyone's hearts felt anxious as they looked into the distance, awaiting the results of the battle. They had already done all that they could: if the frontline fell, then they could only pick up simple weapons, like metal or wooden sticks, and prepare to engage in battle with the savage Mutant Pigs.

No one present believed that they had a chance to win against the Mutant Pigs with those simple and crude weapons. All their strongest warriors had already been sent to the frontlines, hence only the weaker adults and children were left.

"Victory!! We've won!!! The Mutant Pigs were wiped out by us!! We've won!!!"

A warrior covered entirely in blood rushed back from the frontlines and was shouting loudly with joy.

"Victory!!"

"We've really won!!!"

Hearing the joyous news, all the survivors within the villa compound immediately broke out in celebration. Many of them were overjoyed and were hugging one another. They had finally made it through this tribulation and had survived. Everyone was overcome with endless happiness.

The warrior continued to say,

"The Battalion Commander has said!! Tonight we shall feast, everyone will be able to dine on pork and have their fill!!"

"Long live Yue Zhong!! Long live Yue Zhong!!"

"That's great!! Long live Battalion Commander Yue!!"

Hearing this news, all the survivors were even more elated, since they had not eaten meat in a long time. Yue Zhong's decision had filled them with endless gratitude and approval towards him.

"The battle this time has resulted in about 70% of the houses in Clear Wind Camp being burnt down. 58 people had died, 23 have sustained heavy injuries which they can't recover from-even if they were to use your miraculous medicine, they would still be handicapped and won't be able to fight in future battles.

43 others have sustained light injuries and are expected to be able to recover. Our machine gun ammunition has been completely depleted, whilst we have less than 100 rounds worth of rifle bullets remaining; as for the handguns, we are left with about 40 rounds of ammunition for them."

"There is less than a tonne of gasoline left, although diesel is slightly better with over a tonne left..."

As the other survivors were celebrating after the calamity, Chen Ming was fulfilling his duties as an Operative Officer by reporting the specific details and losses from this battle.

In the fight against the Mutant Pigs, Yue Zhong was successful in leading the survivors to overcome them, but he himself had suffered huge losses. He had expended almost all of his

ammunition and there were more than one hundred casualties. A huge number of the deaths came from the warriors of his First and Second Companies that he had just established, which was quite a blow to Yue Zhong.

The only consolation was that after such a devastating battle, most of the warriors in the First Company had already become Enhancers and had seen bloodshed, and so they were no longer a disorganized mob. They were beginning to possess the courage and confidence needed to fight.

On top of that, Yue Zhong had gained a huge number of Mutant Pigs' corpses and many God and Devil System items, as well as Level 1 and Level 2 Skill Books. He decided to turn the hide of the Mutant Pigs into leather armor, to distribute all the Mutant Pork (lol) as food and even to use the bones to make soup, which could nourish the survivors' bodies. As for the Skill Books, he decided to reward them to the warriors of the First Company who had fought hard in the battle.

Yue Zhong then said deeply,

"Those 23 casualties with heavy injuries will be allocated the same amount of resources as those soldiers on active duty-not a single one is to be given any less. For those with no wives, arrange one for them. Is that understood?"

Yue Zhong never mistreated his subordinates who fought for him.

Chen Ming replied in agreement,

"Yes! Master!"

Yue Zhong pondered a while, before asking Xiong Zheng,

"Xiong Zheng! Do you know if there are any military camps around here?"

Yue Zhong was currently lacking in ammunition and weapons the most rather than food. Without those two, they could still

manage against zombies; however, if they had to deal with humans armed with firepower, then even if they were to obtain victory, it would be at a huge cost.

Xiong Zheng replied bluntly,

"Boss Yue, I know of one location, but it has already claimed by the Ferocious Tigers as their territory!"

Yue Zhong furrowed his eyebrows tightly as he tapped his index finger lightly against the table: he was considering a relocation of the entire camp. Without any weapons or ammunition, this camp comprising over 2000 people was akin to a huge piece of fatty meat-anyone who had enough power could come and take a bite out of it.

If Lie Tianyang wanted revenge, all he had to do was to provide information about Clear Wind Camp to any major power, and those major powers would definitely then send out troops to annex Yue Zhong's stronghold.

It was just that the relocation of over 2000 people was not a simple task, as it would require all kinds of preparations to be made in advance. The first step was to verify a suitable location to relocate to. Yue Zhong stared at a map, looking over the villages one by one and trying to find a suitable place.

A soldier entered the room and said,

"Reporting in! Battalion Commander, there's a survivor outside who requests an audience. He claims to have been a reporter prior to Z-Day, and has some important news for you."

Yue Zhong continued to gaze at the map without lifting his head up as he said lightly,

"Bring him in!"

The soldier quickly brought in a slightly tanned, astute-looking male with a frail body who looked about 20 years old.

Yue Zhong glanced at the young man and simply said,

"Say whatever business you have!"

The young man laughed lightly and said,

"Battalion Commander Yue, my name is Xu Feng! Before the apocalypse, I was a reporter. Just last year, I conducted an interview at an army camp. I can still remember the location. Would you like to know where it is?"

Yue Zhong stared at Xu Feng before he retracted his gaze and asked,

"What do you want?"

A hint of passion flashed past Xu Feng's eyes as he said,

"I want to obtain a Level 2 Skill Book and become a warrior of the First Company."

During the apocalypse, the highest death rates came from the people who fought on frontlines. At the same time though, the frontline warriors also received the best benefits. After the victory in the battle against the Mutant Pigs, Xu Feng desperately wanted to become an Enhancer and enter the upper echelons of Yue Zhong's system.

Back when Lie Tianyang was in charge of Clear Wind Camp, Xu Feng had wanted to hand over this vital piece of information in exchange for a better position. However, Lie Tianyang was too brutal and Xu Feng was worried that passing on this piece of information might bring more harm to himself than good. Subsequently, Xu Feng decided to withhold the information he had and so Lie Tianyang never got his hands on it.

Yue Zhong replied in a deep voice,

"I promise to give you what you want: however, the army camp's position must be nearby and it must not have already been opened by others. Come over here and point out to me where the army

camp is located."

Exchanging a Level 2 Skill Book for the location of an army camp was definitely worth it for Yue Zhong.

Xu Feng walked up to Yue Zhong and took a look at the map, before pointing out a place and saying, "It's right here!"

# Chapter 231: Jealousy and Courage

---

Xiong Zheng looked carefully for a while, before shaking his head and saying,

"No! I haven't heard of anybody setting up a military camp here."

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at Xu Feng and asked directly,

"Since you have been there before, you should be clear on its establishment. How many squads are there?"

Xu Feng smiled and said,

"This place is the XXX Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station. There were over 3000 people stationed there. There are tanks, armed helicopters, autonomous artillery and many other kinds of equipment."

Hearing this, Xiong Zheng's eyes lit up and he exclaimed excitedly,

"Mechanized Infantry Brigade?!! We've really struck it rich!! This time we'll strike it rich!!"

Yue Zhong was equally as excited, since with the Mechanized Infantry Brigade and its equipment, his troops would gain a huge boost in battle power.

Yue Zhong suppressed the excitement in his heart and his expression remained calm as he gave an order to Chen Ming:

"Chen Ming, go prepare by gathering all the working vehicles and fuel. Tomorrow, I'll bring some men to open up this place."

Regardless of whether the information was accurate or not, Yue Zhong was willing to take a risk and concentrate his forces on opening up this place.

Chen Ming nodded and replied, "Yes!"

After making a decision, Yue Zhong dismissed the rest of the

people. He himself walked out of the conference room and strode towards the main villa compound. Although most of the buildings in the town had been burnt down, the villa compound was still intact and most of the survivors had settled here. Currently, each and every family was cooking the Mutant Pork, and there was a delicious scent wafting through the air. Everyone had a rarely seen look of expectation on their faces.

Along the way, whenever the survivors saw Yue Zhong, most of them would voluntarily salute him. The man in front of them had saved their lives, and had even provided them with meat that was hard to come by. At this moment, they were all extremely grateful to Yue Zhong. After taking over Clear Wind Camp, their lives had improved a lot in such a short period of time-compared to Lie Tianyang, they greatly preferred Yue Zhong as their ruler.

Yue Zhong entered Zhuo Yatong's room and immediately saw the incredibly beautiful and mature lady sitting there quietly, elegantly reading a novel. A cute loli was sleeping beside the beauty.

Zhuo Yatong's body had been in excellent condition, and it was only due to the exhausting battle that she was rammed against by the Mutant Pig, causing her to lose her mobility. After taking the Life-Saving Grass and resting for the entire afternoon, she had already made a full recovery, although her stamina was yet to fully replenish itself.

Yue Zhong gazed at the quiet and elegant Zhuo Yatong as he thought back to her outstanding efforts in the bloody battle against the Mutant Pigs. His heart racing, Yue Zhong reached out to hug this absolute beauty as he inhaled her fragrance and slowly spoke out some heartfelt words,

"It's been really tough on you today. However, if you face a similar situation next time, I hope that you will retreat before you lose all your strength. I don't want to lose you."



Earlier today, if it wasn't for Zhuo Yatong's determination, the defence line at the department store would have already been broken down. If that had happened, the death count would have definitely been in the hundreds, thus Zhuo Yatong could be considered as a hero as well. However, everyone has some selfishness in them, and deep down, Yue Zhong placed more importance on Zhuo Yatong than the other survivors. If he lost his troops, then he could train new ones; if he lost survivors, he could search for more. Even if 300 survivors were to die, it would not affect him as much as if Zhuo Yatong were to perish.

"Mm!"

Zhuo Yatong could feel Yue Zhong's sincere concern and the corners of her mouth raised slightly, before revealing a captivating smile. With just these words from Yue Zhong, she felt that it was all worth it. Yue Zhong truly cared about her and did not view her as one of his normal subordinates.

Gazing at the beauty in front of him, Yue Zhong could not resist and planted a kiss on her cherry-like lips. Zhuo Yatong also returned the kiss passionately, and soon their tongues entwined.

In the heat of the passion, Yue Zhong became increasingly aroused and he unconsciously started unbuttoning her blouse; he slipped his hands into her clothes and grabbed hold of her ample 'white rabbits' full of elasticity.

Zhuo Yatong was surprised and her face immediately flushed red. She gritted her teeth and resisted Yue Zhong's advances, before pleading pitifully,

"Not here!! Caiwei is right beside us!!"

The moment she mentioned Yun Caiwei, Yue Zhong also became clear-headed and he stopped his onslaught with extreme reluctance.

Yue Zhong had just drawn his hands back when Yun Caiwei's

petite body shook a little, as she rubbed her eyes and sat up groggily. Looking at Yue Zhong and her mother, whose clothes were in a disarray, she asked innocently,

"Mummy! What were you doing with Big Brother?"

Zhuo Yatong's face immediately turned a deeper shade of red, since she did not know how to answer her daughter. She could not help but stare at the culprit, Yue Zhong, with a slight accusing look.

Yue Zhong's expression did not change, as he ruffled Yun Caiwei's hair and smiled gently,

"Go change and have dinner! There's your favourite roast meat tonight!"

Yun Caiwei gazed at Yue Zhong and her eyes immediately lit up as she asked,

"Roast meat? Is it the same as the tender and fragrant roast meat we ate the other day?"

That Type 2 Mutant Black-scaled Boar meat was the tastiest meat that Yun Caiwei had ever eaten, and she had constantly craved for it.

Yue Zhong smiled lightly at Yun Caiwei and said, "Mm! It's precisely that type of meat!"

"Yayy!! Big brother is the best! This is your reward!" Yun Caiwei immediately threw herself into Yue Zhong's arms, lowering her head and planting a kiss on his cheek.

Zhuo Yatong gazed lovingly at Yun Caiwei as she called out gently,

"Caiwei, don't bother your big brother! Quickly go change your clothes, otherwise there won't be any roast meat left for you."

Yun Caiwei bolted off like a little deer and smiled back sweetly at her mother,

"Mm! Got it, mummy!"

After they had changed their clothes, Yue Zhong brought the mother and daughter pair into the dining hall.

Gu Manzi and Tong Xiaoyun were already sitting there waiting.

At this moment, the way Gu Manzi looked at Zhuo Yatong had already changed: after seeing Zhuo Yatong dispose of the Mutant Pigs so easily, her heart was now full of both envy and admiration. She wanted to become as strong as someone like Zhuo Yatong, a heroine with tyrannical strength who could freely kill all her enemies.

All sorts of delectable delicacies were laid out on the table. Fried pork loin, fried pig heart, steamed pork ribs, braised pig tail soup, roasted pork chops and a variety of other dishes were served. The tastiest was still the Type 2 Mutant Boar meat, which was much more beneficial to the human body than the normal Mutant Pig meat.

After finishing their dinner, Yue Zhong took out two Level 2 Skill Books and passed them to Tong Xiaoyun, saying,

"This is your reward. Work even harder in the future!"

Those two Level 2 Skill Books were [Explosive Strength] and [Shadow Steps]. They were also the most common Level 2 Skill books, but to normal people, these skill books were valuable beyond compare. Each Skill Book could let one possess incredible explosive power and fighting strength.

Tong Xiaoyun received the 2 Skill Books and her eyes brightened up as she smiled sweetly. With these two Level 2 Skill Books, her strength could instantly rise severalfold. After today's battle, she had become a Level 8 Enhancer, so as long as she gained another 2 levels, she would become a Level 10 Enhancer. (TN: Like duh)

Tong Xiaoyun was elated as she hugged Yue Zhong and kissed him twice consecutively:

"Thank you, big brother Yue!!"

Gu Manzi saw that Tong Xiaoyun had received two Level 2 Skill books and her eyes flashed with a hint of envy. She walked over and hugged one of Yue Zhong's arms, as she pressed her ample chest against him and said coquettishly,

"Brother Yue! I also want a Skill Book, can you give me one? I want to help you fight the enemies too."

Yue Zhong glanced at Gu Manzi and directly rejected her, saying,

"No way! You don't have the necessary courage. Once you've proven to me that you can fight, I will then give you a Skill Book!"

During the battle with the Mutant Pigs, driven purely by the desire for power, Tong Xiaoyun had gone to Yue Zhong's side and had gone through a life-and-death situation with him. This led Yue Zhong to look at Tong Xiaoyun differently. Although her talent might not be as outstanding as that of Zhuo Yatong, this seemingly weak girl in junior high school possessed a courage that would put most men to shame. Yue Zhong was willing to nurture her as long as she had enough courage.

Although Gu Manzi was pretty and alluring, she still feared death like normal people did. There was nothing wrong with that in itself, but Yue Zhong did not want to waste any precious Skill Books on such a person.

Hearing those words, Gu Manzi's expression froze, and out of sheer habit, she wanted to vent her frustrations like a spoilt child, to fling his arm away and ignore him.

However, just when she was about to shake him off, she thought back to the days when she had to worry about food and warmth in the survivor fleet, as well as the decapitated human heads that she had seen in the bloody factory. The 'young miss' managed to suppress her temper. It was just that there were now only feelings of grievance and envy towards Tong Xiaoyun in Gu Manzi's heart.

Since they were going to open up the military station the next day, Yue Zhong did not do anything to Zhuo Yatong or Gu Manzi; instead, he sensibly went to bed early to replenish his own energy.

"I want to join you and fight!! I will prove my courage!!"

Early the next morning, Gu Manzi had gotten into attire and arrived in front of Yue Zhong to directly announce her intentions.

"Good! Take this!"

Yue Zhong immediately passed a Replica Tang Sword to Gu Manzi, before taking her with him to join the vehicle fleet heading towards the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station.

After two days and one night of constant travel, Yue Zhong's team finally managed to arrive outside the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, which Xu Feng pointed out.

Along the way, they saw a few scattered zombie hordes, consisting of zombies in the tens and hundreds. Those zombies were easily disposed of by Yue Zhong, White Bones, Zhuo Yatong, Xiong Zheng, Tong Xiaoyun and all the other Enhancers. After Tong Xiaoyun managed to kill an L1 zombie, she rose up in level to become a Level 9 Enhancer.

"There's something wrong!"

Observing the extremely quiet army station, Yue Zhong's eyebrows furrowed slightly.

## Chapter 232: Devil Vines

---

The Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station covered a very wide area, with its back facing the mountain and verdant greenery surrounding it. There was even a small brook leading to who-knows-where beside the camp. The scenery could be described as enchanting, an extremely beautiful scene.

However, as Yue Zhong gazed at the picturesque scenery, his heart was on full alert. It was too quiet for his liking, the entire station was truly too peaceful.

Yue Zhong and his team had travelled for such a distance, and the noise from the vehicle fleet had attracted the zombies, yet now that they had arrived at the camp, there were absolutely no disturbances at all. It made no sense whatsoever.

It must be made clear that there were supposed to be over 3000 soldiers garrisoned in here, and Yue Zhong was already prepared for a huge battle: even if he had to sacrifice 100 people, he absolutely had to claim this military station. However, the eerie silence gave him goosebumps.

"Don't tell me that this camp has already been opened?"

The inauspicious thought flashed by in Yue Zhong's mind.

However, upon closer inspection, he immediately saw where the strange phenomenon was occurring. Inside the camp, there stood many bizarre trees that were extremely tall, as though reaching for the heavens, with each of them easily over 20m in height. Their leaves were different than those of before the apocalypse: there were some that bore resemblance to ferns, some that looked like banana leaves, and some that reminded Yue Zhong of vines. It was an extremely strange sight, as though a mutated botanical garden was putting on an exhibit of some sort.

"Stay here while I go check it out!"

Yue Zhong left some orders as he activated his Encompassing Body Armor and immediately rushed into the encampment.

In just a few moments, Yue Zhong entered the military camp and he immediately saw a few Type 9 Attack Helicopters parked on a landing strip. However, beside those incomparably valuable helicopters was an extremely tall tree with countless vines that wrapped tightly around them, to such an extent that those helicopters were already deformed.

(TL: not too sure about the actual name of the helicopter so just take it with a pinch of salt for now)

"My attack helicopters!!!"

Seeing those helicopters bent out of shape by those vines, Yue Zhong's heart felt like it was bleeding. If he had those helicopters, dealing with that bastard Lie Tianyang would be as simple as firing a few guided missiles to send him straight to hell.

Yue Zhong looked at those helicopters and he hesitated for a moment, before drawing his Dark Magic Blade and walking straight over to them. If that tree did not pose any threats, then he would not spare any expense to salvage whatever could still be saved from those helicopters.

Yue Zhong carefully approached the Mutant Plant: right as he was about 5 metres away from the helicopters, his sense of danger immediately went off and he retreated hastily.

The vines that were scattered across the ground all shot up together, and were now shooting towards Yue Zhong like countless tentacles.

As the Dark Magic Sword in Yue Zhong's hands erupted with blade images, he cut off those countless vines one by one; however, due to the sheer number of them, Yue Zhong was forced to defend with his life. He was ultimately still hit by 6 of the vines, resulting in them rigidly piercing 6 small holes into his Bone Armor.

After chopping those 6 vines in half with one slash, he retreated even further, creating a 40m distance between him and the tree. Only then did Yue Zhong get out of the range of those vines.

The attack range of the Mutant Vine Plant was only 70m, and so once Yue Zhong had gotten to the 90m mark, the vines could not do anything about him.

"What monstrous vines!!"

After he had succeeded in escaping, Yue Zhong took a careful look at the Mutant Plant and his eyes had a tinge of fear to them. If it had been anyone other than him, even someone like Zhuo Yatong wearing a Level 2 Defence Armor would have been instantly pierced by the vines, and would subsequently become nutrition for the Mutant Vine Plant.

Yue Zhong finally understood why there wasn't a single zombie corpse lying around. If the entire military camp was filled with these terrifying Mutant Plants, the number of corpses wouldn't even be enough for these plants to feed on.

Yue Zhong took one more look at the Mutant Plant, which he had named 'Devil Vines', before deciding to give up on all notions of trespassing the area. He turned around and headed further into the camp. Although the Devil Vines were 'as many as the hair of the ox', wanting to destroy them was not completely impossible; however, it would require at least 2 days, and Yue Zhong could not afford to waste his precious time here.

(TN: as many as the hair of the ox = idiom meaning countless)

Yue Zhong proceeded carefully throughout the camp whenever he came across a Mutant Plant. However, not all the Mutant Plants were aggressive or carnivorous: for example, the Divine Spring Tea Plant in Yue Zhong's possession was also a species of Mutant Plant. Long-term use of its tea leaves by normal people would have the effect of boosting their 'spirit power', yet the Divine Spring Tea Plant was not aggressive in nature.



Yue Zhong carefully touched the branches of a giant tree that seemed to form a cloud-like shape. The huge tree was similar to the very rare Sequoia species and it did not display any form of aggression. Hanging down from the branches of the gigantic tree, there were many black fruits the size of fists.

Yue Zhong thought for a moment before extending his hand, making a bone spear shoot out and pierce through a branch that had 6 of the fruits, causing them to fall down.

When the black fruits landed in Yue Zhong's hands, they immediately exploded. From each fruit, a sharp seed the size of a knuckle shot out explosively, with 2 of them shooting towards Yue Zhong.

Those sharp seeds bombarded Yue Zhong's body before immediately ricocheting off one by one. Their explosive and penetrative power were similar to that of a normal rifle bullet, hence they were not able to do any harm at all to Yue Zhong.

"They're quite similar to hand grenades! Who knows, maybe these fruits can be used as substitutes for grenades."

Yue Zhong looked at those fruits and had that sudden thought; he climbed up the tree swiftly and plucked 2 black fruits. However, he exerted a little too much force and those fruits instantly exploded, shooting out their sharp seeds in all directions.

The moment those sharp seeds hit the other fruits, they triggered further explosions, resulting in a chain reaction; it wasn't long before the entire tree was filled with fruits exploding one by one and countless seeds shooting everywhere like rain, leaving Yue Zhong with no way of dodging them whatever.

He could only lower his head and let the seeds rain down on his body. Using the Encompassing Body Armor coagulated from White Bones, Yue Zhong was able to protect himself from the entire barrage of seeds from the huge tree.

A huge number of the Mutant Tree seeds hit Yue Zhong's Bone Armor and bounced off, and so the ground was littered with a layer of them.

"Seems like it won't work, the explosive fruits are too unstable. They can't be used!"

Yue Zhong jumped down from the Mutant Tree and thought to himself dejectedly.

He then climbed down from the tree and continued to advance. Right after Yue Zhong passed by another huge tree, his sense of danger immediately went off, as a huge Mutant Water Snake suddenly shot out from the grass patch with its bloody mouth opened wide, intending to chomp down on him.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at the Mutant Water Snake, and with a slight movement of his body, he dodged its attack. He followed up with a swing of his blade just 7 inches away from its head, decapitating it and causing fresh blood to spray everywhere.

After the Mutant Water Snake was killed with one strike, its body struggled for a while before it collapsed lifelessly onto the ground. A Skill Book appeared beside its carcass.

[Congratulations on rising to Level 38, you have gained 2 enhancement points.]

When the experience orb from the Mutant Water Snake entered his body, Yue Zhong finally rose up in level again. When he was defending Clear Wind Camp, despite having killed many Mutant Pigs, he was not able to level up; however, he was just one step away from the next level, thus the killing of this Mutant Water Snake was naturally the final push for him to successfully reach the next level and gain enhancements.

"Add 2 points to Agility!"

Yue Zhong chose to increase his agility. All martial arts would only be impenetrable if they were fast; speed was extremely

important in battle.

After Yue Zhong killed that Mutant Water Snake, it was like he had hit a hornets' nest. From all corners, many large Mutant Water Snakes slithered out one after another, preparing to strike at Yue Zhong. As those snakes slithered around in the underbrush, they seemed to be monsters choosing which humans to devour and they looked extremely sinister.

As Yue Zhong watched a few dozen Mutant Snakes slither over from all directions, a hint of shock flashed past his eyes:

"Is this a snake's nest? How come there are so many Mutant Water Snakes?!"

Although Yue Zhong was shocked, he did not lose his composure. Even though a few dozen Mutant Water Snakes might look quite frightening, the current him was completely capable of taking them down.

Yue Zhong's figure explosively retreated, luring the 13 snakes over as he darted amongst the trees, appearing one moment and disappearing the next. He then suddenly increased his speed, and rushed towards one of the Mutant Water Snakes.

Having reached 72 points in Agility, Yue Zhong could now unleash a terrifying speed and before the Mutant Water Snake could even react, Yue Zhong had leapt over it and slashed down at the back of its neck, causing it to die on the spot.

(TN: so the actual term here isn't actually 'neck' here, but rather '7 inches'. This comes from the Chinese saying, 'to hit a snake you must hit it 7 inches from its head'. Of course, this sounds quite awkward when put into a sentence, so I've used neck instead. Wait... does the snake even have a neck? Nvm, lol)

After getting rid of that Mutant Water Snake, Yue Zhong's figure flashed several times in succession. He appeared in front of another Mutant Water Snake, and raising his sword up high, as

Yue Zhong swung down viciously and beheaded it.

After Yue Zhong had taken out 2 Mutant Water Snakes in a row, the other 3 Mutant Water Snakes nearby finally reacted, stretching out their heads as they opened their jaws wide and shooting towards Yue Zhong like arrows.

Yue Zhong shifted his body and dodged all 3 attacks; then, as his figure flashed several times in succession, there came a flash of 'bladelight' and fresh blood poured out of the 3 Mutant Water Snakes' necks.

Yue Zhong's continuous strengthening of his Agility had now let him reap generous rewards: he constantly dashed about in the forest like a demon, suddenly jumping out from time to time with his blade raised high and killing one or two Mutant Water Snakes. Proceeding like this, he managed to take them down one by one, whilst the Mutant Water Snakes were unable to do anything about him.

After killing 7 more Mutant Water Snakes, the rest of the snakes finally got frightened, and they started slithering back to the bizarre forest.

Yue Zhong swiftly followed, intending to kill all of them; their bodies were all full of treasures, and he did not want to let even a single one off.

He continued his pursuit and managed to slaughter another two of the snakes, before the remaining four burst into the depths of the bizarre forest, which was full of Mutant Plants.

Those 4 Mutant Water Snakes quickly escaped to an extremely tall tree with a diameter of 10m. It had flourishing branches and a lush foliage that blocked out all the sunlight nearby, and the tree was covered entirely in countless pink flowers.

Surrounding the huge tree, there were two Mutant Water Snakes over 30 metres long with a small bulge on their heads; they were

currently devouring those pink flowers upon the tree.

There was also another enormous snake coiled around the top of the tree; when compared to this snake atop the tree, even a beast as large as a normal Mutant Water Snake seemed insignificant. It was thus clear that there was a huge, terrifying monster coiled around the top of the tree.

Beneath the gigantic tree, there were countless human bones, making the scene seem like that of a demon's lair, which gave off an extremely horrifying feel.

[Level 43 Mutant Beast: Mutant Elite Water Snake!]

[Level 53 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant Water Snake!]

The moment Yue Zhong laid eyes on those 3 monsters, his Eyes of Perception activated and all the information regarding the beasts flowed into his brain.

"Damn it! To think that there are such monsters here!!" Yue Zhong's face immediately turned pale. He could still hold his own against the 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes, but he had no confidence all in being able to beat the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake.

He had experienced first-hand the fearsome power of Type 2 beasts, the most recent being the Type 2 Mutant Black-scaled Boar: even after exhausting all his means, he could not even leave a single scratch on its body. If he had made the slightest mistake, he would have been killed by it. He was naturally unwilling to provoke such a terrifying beast. Facing an opponent that one could not beat and still wanting to rush headlong to fight it was not courage; rather, it was extreme stupidity.

The 4 Mutant Water Snakes slithered up to the 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes and began to let out agitated hissing noises.

Those 2 beasts immediately stopped swallowing the pink flowers, simultaneously swivelling their heads around to stare at Yue Zhong coldly. They suddenly uncoiled their bodies and shot

towards Yue Zhong like arrows.

Yue Zhong was startled, immediately turning tail and fleeing. Facing 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes and a Type 2 Mutant Water Snake on top of that was the equivalent seeking death.

When the 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes moved, their speed was extremely explosive; even though they possessed huge bodies, they were as quick as they were large, and the dense forest could not slow down their speed at all. Yue Zhong had 72 points in Agility yet he had no means of shaking them off-instead, they seemed to get closer and closer.

"Damn it!" Yue Zhong eyed the 2 beasts which were getting closer, before opening his right hand and shooting a bone spear to propel himself into the air, making him fly up onto one of the huge trees.

Those 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes did not falter, swiftly climbing up that huge tree and opening their mouths, preparing to bite down on Yue Zhong.

The speed of those 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes far surpassed that of normal Mutant Water Snakes, and as Yue Zhong was placed under immense pressure, he activated his Shadow Steps Skill. His speed breaking past the 100 point mark, Yue Zhong dodged the incoming attacks by a hair's breadth.

## Chapter 233: Advancement to level 40!

---

Yue Zhong knew that he could not fight against these beasts in terms of stamina or speed; he had to defeat them in the shortest amount of time, otherwise all that awaited him was death.

After dodging the attacks of those two Mutant Elite Water Snakes, his right hand shot out a Bone Spear towards another tree, propelling him towards one of the snakes' heads. He took out his Stinger (TN: Finally, it makes its appearance.) and immediately let loose a barrage of 6 shots.

At such a close range, the power of the Stinger was fully exhibited: the bullets pierced through the scales of the Mutant Elite Water Snake and into its brain.

The Mutant Elite Water Snake writhed in agony as it thrashed about, managing to break the bone spear that Yue Zhong had shot out with its brute strength. However, the snake itself fell down from the tree, and it landed heavily on the ground as it continued to struggle.

The other Mutant Elite Water Snake saw its companion's miserable state and it opened its huge mouth, spraying out a dense cyan poisonous mist towards Yue Zhong, ready to engulf him.

That Mutant Elite Water Snake had just opened its huge mouth when an extreme feeling of danger arose in Yue Zhong's heart. He immediately retreated hastily, not daring to go near the Mutant Elite Water Snake and jumping onto the branch of another huge tree instead.

Although Yue Zhong had retreated with all his strength, he had still unfortunately come into contact with the poison mist; other than the areas covered by the Encompassing Body Armor, long scars actually appeared on the exposed parts of his body.

Yue Zhong's face turned pale: if he had been enveloped by that

mist earlier, he might already have been dissolved into nothingness. The fear towards the Mutant Elite Water Snake in his heart upped by another notch. A moment ago, if he had been closer to the beast by just a bit, he definitely would not have been able to escape the poison mist.

Yue Zhong swiftly changed the bullets for his Stinger before he fired it at the Mutant Elite Water Snake. With the aid of his Firearms Control Skill and superb aiming, the Stinger Bullets accurately hit its right eye. As the snake's right eye directly burst open, a huge amount of mucus mixed with blood flowed out from the wound.

Blinded by the bullets, the Mutant Elite Water Snake opened its bloody jaws painfully, before spraying out balls of cyan-colored poison mist one after another at Yue Zhong once again.

Yue Zhong's Danger Perception Skill kicked in effectively again: as the Mutant Elite Water Snake had just opened its mouth, Yue Zhong's figure had already shifted in advance, avoiding the snake's attack. At the same time, he took aim with his Stinger to continue his assault on the snake's other eye.

6 Stinger bullets were fired out, breaking through the snake's other eye; the Mutant Elite Water Snake immediately emitted hisses of grief, as it continued to constantly spit out small clouds of poisonous green fog.

Under the constant exposure of the poison mist, the surroundings all became a scene of deathly stillness. Grass withered, the trees started to putrefy, and two unsuspecting Mutant Rats that had just passed by immediately died, dissolving into fluids within a span of 3 seconds.

Yue Zhong hid far away, watching the Mutant Elite Water Snake spray out the poison mist.

After spitting out a few more clusters of poison mist, the snake suddenly calmed down. It stuck out its tongue, which vibrated in



the air for a while, before quickly shooting out like a thunderbolt towards Yue Zhong.

After all, snakes used their tongues to perceive their surroundings and to hunt their prey; even though the Mutant Elite Water Snake had undergone evolution, it had still retained its basic snake instincts and abilities. The reason for why it had spat out the poison mist just now was because of the severe pain in its eyes, which incurred the snake's wrath and made it feel very indisposed.

At this moment, the duration for the Shadow Steps Skill had already passed the 30 seconds mark and it deactivated. Ignoring his stamina usage, Yue Zhong activated the skill once again and once again, his speed soared past 100 points in a flash.

As the Mutant Elite Water Snake opened its mouth wide and bolted towards Yue Zhong like lightning, Yue Zhong dodged the impending attack and leapt onto its head. He stabbed down at the snake's head using his Dark Magic Blade with all his strength.

Covering the scales of the Mutant Elite Water Snake, there was a layer of mucus membrane. After Yue Zhong had stabbed the snake, the greater part of the attack had been negated by the membrane; in addition, the Dark Magic Blade actually slid off the scales, with no way of penetrating them.

Yue Zhong frowned as he thought,

"Even the Dark Magic Blade is no good? What a pity, if only I had learnt the Blade Strengthening Skill!"

When it came to dealing with the higher level Mutant Beasts, the most difficult part about them was always their scales, fur or skin. It was incredibly difficult to harm them with just normal methods. Coupled with the fact that these monsters possessed huge strength and various abilities, wanting to achieve victory over these monsters was extremely difficult. Although Yue Zhong could easily dispose of an L2 or a normal Mutant Water Snake with his Dark Magic Sword, he had no way of slashing open this Mutant Elite

Water Snake's scales.

The Mutant Elite Water Snake felt Yue Zhong lying on its head, and as it shook its head around, the snake immediately rushed over to knock its head against a large tree.

Yue Zhong did not dare to stay on the snake's head for any longer. He let go and rolled towards the side.

Meanwhile, the Mutant Elite Water Snake had rammed viciously against the large tree that was 30 cm in diameter; that tree was hit squarely in the middle with great force, causing it to snap into two like a twig. From this, it could be seen how incomparably ferocious the attack was.

The moment Yue Zhong landed, he quickly escaped to the side.

Once again, the Mutant Elite Water Snake used its tongue to sense its surroundings, before charging frenzily towards Yue Zhong once again.

Yue Zhong shot out a Bone Spear and propelled himself up into the air, before landing on the head of the beast once again. He hugged onto its head and pressed the Stinger against the snake's skull, firing off 6 shots.

The 6 Stinger bullets managed to tear through the incomparably hard scales of the Mutant Elite Water Snake, penetrating through its head and piercing its brain.

After firing those 6 shots, Yue Zhong quickly leapt off of the snake's head.

Upon receiving the 6 shots, the Mutant Elite Water Snake immediately began to writhe about in excruciating pain, its huge body constantly striking against the surrounding trees as it struggled.

[Congratulations on reaching Level 39, you have gained 2 Enhancement Points!]

[Congratulations on reaching Level 40, you have gained 2 Enhancement Points!]

[Congratulations on reaching Level 40, you have gained 1 Skill Strengthening Point!]

Once those 2 Mutant Elite Water Snakes had fallen, 2 huge orbs of experience entered Yue Zhong's body; adding onto those 10 normal Mutant Water Snakes that he had killed before, the total amount of experience he had gained pushed him up to Level 40.

Yue Zhong quickly chose to enhance his Agility by 4 points. As he examined the skills he currently possessed, he sighed and chose to spend his Skill Strengthening Point on the Devil Flame Skill.

[Level 3 Skill: Devil Flame: (Enhanced +1).

Consumes 5 Stamina Points and 5 Spirit Points to activate; upon activation, it will consume 1 Stamina Point and 1 Spirit Point every 10 seconds. Its power is dependant on your Spirit, Stamina, Endurance and Vitality.

Under the circumstances where the amounts of Spirit and Stamina being channelled out are the same, the Devil Flame's output will be twice its original power. You can now also use the flame to form other shapes.]

With just a thought, Yue Zhong activated his upgraded Devil Flame Skill. He felt that it was now a lot easier to conjure up the flames, and with another thought, the Devil Flame immediately left his hand and was suspended in mid-air.

"So this really was the case!!"

Yue Zhong had seen Enhancers like Flame King Gu Zhixing and Ice King Zhang Yun controlling their respective skills without any restrictions, manipulating the elemental forces to conjure up different forms, such as fireballs or ice cones.

Yue Zhong thought of the action in his heart and the suspended fireball flew out, bombarding a huge tree and causing a fist-sized

scorch mark to appear on it.

He looked at the scorch mark and quietly assessed the damage potential of his Devil Flame Skill: "Compared to the Fireball Skill, it's just slightly weaker! If I continue to increase my Spirit and Stamina, then I should be able to cause the same amount of damage as the Fireball Skill can."

After finishing up, Yue Zhong walked up to the corpse of one of the Mutant Elite Water Snakes. He used his Dark Magic Blade to pierce through a small hole in its head that had been created by the Stinger, before using all his strength to saw through and prise open the scales nearby.

He reached inside the head and forcibly dug out a red nucleus the size of a finger, as well as a small bead of blood essence.

Yue Zhong did the same for the other Mutant Elite Snake, eventually digging out the same things.

[Level 4 Skill: True Seeing Eye!

This is an active skill, and with its usage, one can see through most illusions. Also allows user to see through the level of an Enhancer at a lower level, as well as anyone not more than 5 levels above user. Skill requires one to possess 100 points of Spirit, not including enhancements from equipment.]

Out of the 2 Skill Books that dropped, one was the Level 4 True Seeing Eye Skill, whilst the other was a Level 2 Firearms Control Skill.

After storing those 2 Skill Books into his storage ring, Yue Zhong started to eat a precious Apple of Vitality. The Apple of Vitality was also a 'God and Devil System' item with a very low drop rate. Previously, when he had defended against the herd of Mutant Pigs, there were only 5 that dropped out of the thousands of Pigs.

After resting for 25 minutes and consuming all 5 Apples of Vitality, Yue Zhong activated his Encompassing Body Armor once

again, before proceeding carefully towards the direction of the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake in the depths of the forest.

Having reached Level 40 and enhanced his Devil Flame Skill, only now did Yue Zhong possess a thread of confidence in confronting the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake. He wanted to see if there was any opportunity for him to defeat it.

# Chapter 234: The EXPLOSIVE Overkill of the Type-2 Mutant Water Snake!

---

Yue Zhong proceeded with great care along the way which he had previously escaped, until he came to the towering tree with countless pink flowers that seemed to reach the clouds.

"It really is huge!!"

Yue Zhong looked at the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake coiled atop the huge tree, and his heart was filled with alarm. The Type 2 Mutant Water Snake's body spiralled all the way up to the top of the great tree, so its body length might well be over 100 m.

Yue Zhong carefully observed the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake for a while, assessing the gap in strength between it and him, before he quietly sneaked off.

Once Yue Zhong had left the area, he tried to find any place where the previous occupants might have stored weapons. Along the way, he saw an Infantry Fighting Vehicle and a Type .69 Tank that had either been flipped by onto its side by the Mutant Plant, or attacked by the strange Mutant Vines.

As Yue Zhong looked at the remnants, his heart ached: if he possessed those vehicles, even facing a horde of zombies in the tens of thousands would not be a problem. However, the steel machines had already been seized by the Mutant Plants; there were obvious signs of damage and it was unknown if they could still be operated or not.

There were Mutant Plants growing all over the place inside this Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, hence Yue Zhong had to search for quite some time before finally locating a storage facility for weapons.

"I've struck gold!!"

As soon as Yue Zhong opened up the storage facility, his eyes

immediately began to blaze with unbridled fervor. Everywhere inside, there was brand-new modern weaponry.

Type .03 Rifles, QJZ89 Type 12.7mm Heavy Machine Guns, grenade launchers, PF98 Type 120mm Anti-tank Bazookas, 95 Type 5.8mm Light Machine Guns-all sorts of advanced weaponry were displayed inside the facility.

Yue Zhong swiftly placed the PF98 Type 120mm Anti-tank Bazooka into his storage ring, since only weapons as such could bring about harm to the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake. The rest of the light weapons simply had no way of harming the beast.

He continued to search within the station and it wasn't long before he came across an ammunition dump. After retrieving plenty of ammunition for the bazooka, he made his way back to the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake.

Once again, Yue Zhong arrived in front of the huge tree that the huge Type 2 Mutant Water Snake was coiled around. He did not dare approach it too casually. Instead, he jumped onto a nearby tree and started to climb up towards that huge tree without pausing.

After reaching the top of the tree, he still had not come across the head of the huge Type 2 Mutant Water Snake. Only then did he truly realise the sheer size of the beast.

Yue Zhong hoisted the PF98 Type 120mm Anti-tank Bazooka and aimed it at the body of the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake, before directly firing an explosive shot.

With a fiery flash, the rocket instantly bombarded the huge body of the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake and exploded violently upon impact.

At its greatest power, the bazooka artillery could penetrate vehicle armor 800mm thick; as for the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake, regardless of how freakish its scales might be, it definitely

could not compare to a tank.

Under the immense firepower of the bazooka rocket, the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake's body was directly blown into 2 parts and a huge amount of blood sprayed out. The lower half of its body fell down to the ground, twitching painfully for a while before stopping.

The beast had received heavy damage, causing it to drop down from the huge tree, thus allowing Yue Zhong to finally see it in its entirety.

It was about 80m in length and 2m in diameter, and its entire body was covered in pale yellow scales. There was also a black horn 1.5m long growing on its head, giving it the frightening aura of a flood dragon.

This monstrous beast had already lost around 30m of its body after being injured by Yue Zhong's bazooka, but it still had over 50m of its body remaining.

When the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake landed on the ground, it immediately began to writhe in agony, its massive body exploding with an immense force that directly snapped the surrounding trees in half one after another.

Yue Zhong's position atop the tree was also undermined when the tree was felled by the beast's thrashing. He immediately shot out a Bone Spear from his back, piercing through another tree behind him, which directly pulled him over.

When using White Bones as his Encompassing Body Armor, he could shoot out Bone Spears from anywhere on his body; it was just that using both hands to do so was more intuitive to humans and it was easier to control them that way.

As he was being dragged backwards by the Bone spear, he had already taken out another rocket for the PF98 Type 120mm Anti-tank Bazooka from his Storage Ring. The Bone Spear stopped



retracting, fixing Yue Zhong in mid-air. He aimed at the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake that was struggling in agony once again, before bombarding it with another rocket.

With a blazing flicker, the fearsome rocket exploded upon impact on the beast's body once again; yet another huge hole was created on its body, which increased the extreme suffering of the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake.

Yue Zhong did not dare be careless and reloaded the bazooka once more. He aimed at the struggling beast and shot out another rocket at its body, creating another massive bloody hole.

Yue Zhong consecutively reloaded and shot out ten rockets from the PF98 Type 120mm Anti-Tank Bazooka at the beast, turning most of it into a pile of flesh and blood, with its body broken into several parts.

After the 10th rocket had exploded on the beast, the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake flailed for a moment, before finally ceasing to move.

Yue Zhong gazed at the immobile Type 2 Mutant Water Snake and secretly heaved a sigh of relief. The fearsome behemoth had caused him to reconsider using his current enhanced self and abilities to fight it. The slightest mistake would have caused him his life. Therefore, he had chosen the safest method, using advanced heavy-duty weaponry to take it down. Even though he would lose out on the huge experience orb a monster as such might provide, at least he could ensure his own safety.

Yue Zhong carefully hoisted his PF98 Type 120mm Anti-Tank Bazooka as he circled around the snake to a location 50m behind its body. He aimed carefully at the beast's intact head and cocked the trigger again.

Another explosion sounded out as the anti-tank rocket landed on the snake's head and exploded, directly blowing out an enormous bloody hole.

Upon receiving such a fatal wound, the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake's head was penetrated; it struggled a few more times before it truly died and finally stopped moving.

As Yue Zhong looked at the bloody mess of the skull, he switched out the bazooka for a .03 Rifle, firing 3 consecutive bullets that all went through the massive hole in the snake's head.

After suffering from an attack like this, the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake did not struggle anymore, so it was obvious that it was really dead. Upon seeing this scene, Yue Zhong was finally able to relax.

Yue Zhong proceeded carefully towards the carcass of the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake, preparing to immediately escape if he detected anything amiss by activating his Shadow Steps Skill..

This time, the behemoth was truly dead. No accidents happened and Yue Zhong successfully arrived atop the snake's head. He reached inside the skull and dug around with his big hands for a while, before discovering a red nucleus the size of 3 fingers and a scarlet bead of blood essence.

Yue Zhong glanced at the black horn atop the snake's head and thought for a moment, before taking out his Dark Magic Blade and starting to saw away at it.

Yue Zhong tried to saw the horn off before he was quickly forced to give up, as the black horn's toughness was beyond that of steel. Regardless of how much strength he used, he was only able to leave a long white mark on the horn. If he wanted to saw off this horn, it might take more than an entire day's worth of time. After all, the Dark Magic Blade was not meant for sawing.

"Exactly what's on that tree, for this beast to keep guard there so strictly?"

A thought flashed past in Yue Zhong's heart as he looked at the huge tree that had pink flowers growing all over it, as well as a large hole in it that had been caused by the explosions earlier.

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong swiftly climbed up the tree.

After reaching the top, Yue Zhong still saw countless pink flowers growing there. Furthermore, there were 7 fruits growing amidst the sea of flowers. Of the 7 fruits, one was red, three were pink and another three were cyan in color.

The red fruit was the largest amongst them, about the size of a grown man's fist. The three pink ones were about as small as an infant's fist. As for the 3 cyan fruits, each of them were only about the size of 2 fingers. A fragrant aroma was being emitted from the red fruit, and the moment Yue Zhong caught scent of it, his entire body seemed to become extremely comfortable and his spirit felt uplifted.

"This really must have been the treasure that the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake was guarding!!"

As Yue Zhong looked at the red fruit, he couldn't help himself from plucking it and taking a bite. A lusciously sweet juice quickly spread through his mouth, before flowing down his throat and into his stomach. It was rapidly absorbed by him and transformed into an incomparably refreshing energy as it circulated around his body, nourishing every single part of him.

Yue Zhong finished that red fruit in just a few bites and the refreshing energy flowed through his body for another while, before its nature suddenly changed. It became a surging force that crazily rampaged inside him, as it forcefully strengthened and reconstructed every single part of his body, right down to his individual cells.

Yue Zhong's face immediately turned red with the change as his body temperature soared. His head started to feel giddy from the sudden surge of energy, as though he had a fever. He collapsed powerlessly atop the tree and fainted.

With the passing of time, those who were standing guard outside started to feel more and more anxious.

"Why is he not back yet? Did something happen?"

Zhuo Yatong looked at the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station as a hint of concern flashed past her eyes.

"Miss Yatong, should I send some brothers out to take a look?"

Xiong Zheng came up to her and asked deeply. He was also extremely worried about Yue Zhong's current safety.

Gu Manzi also came up to Zhuo Yatong's side and said with a worried face,

"Yes! Sister Yatong, let's send someone in to have a look! Brother Yue still hasn't returned, he might be in danger."

# Chapter 235: Yue Zhong Evolves! Dual Attribute Evolver!

---

Zhuo Yatong furrowed her eyebrows as she shook her head and declined,

"No! He said that without his orders, no one is to move."

Gu Manzi looked at Zhuo Yatong and demanded,

"But he could be in terrible danger right now. Are we just going to stay here and not care about him?"

The nearby soldiers turned their heads around and watched the argument. These few days, Yue Zhong's display had already led them to be quite convinced about his ability. Yue Zhong had not only given them food and shelter, but he had also led them to victory against the Mutant Pig horde, raising their aspirations and morale to the max.

He did not abandon the heavily wounded warriors, but rather kept to his promises and provided support for them. Furthermore, in every battle so far, Yue Zhong had always charged up to the frontlines to fight, making those soldiers all approve of him.

Zhuo Yatong glanced at Gu Manzi before replying blandly,

"Let's wait another 2 hours. If there is still no news about him, I will bring people to go in. Sister Manzi, how about entering the station with me?"

Gu Manzi's face turned pale and she pondered for a while, before eventually replying,

"I don't have the sort of strength that sister Yatong has. Even if I do go, I'll just be a burden. I think I'd better wait out here for sister Yatong and brother Yue to return together."

Zhuo Yatong glanced disdainfully at Gu Manzi as she said coldly,

"You shall just wait here then!"

Tong Xiaoyun walked up to Zhuo Yatong's side, as she gripped tightly onto her Replica Tang Sword and said,

"Sister Yatong, I'll go in with you! I believe that brother Yue will definitely be fine!"

Before the apocalypse, Tong Xiaoyun had been a very fragile loli who would shriek incessantly even at the sight of a cockroach. However, due to the harsh apocalyptic environment that she had suffered under, she had begun to undergo astonishing changes. After experiencing the battle to protect Clear Wind Camp with Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong and the rest, she started to become more courageous and confident.

Zhuo Yatong gave Tong Xiaoyun an extremely gentle smile:

"Mm! Sister Xiaoyun, you've got guts."

Zhuo Yatong was also growing fond of this brave and cute little girl.

"They're starting to band together! What do I do?"

As Gu Manzi looked at the growing relationship between Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun, her face turned very pale and a trace of panic flashed past her heart.

The 2 hours passed by very quickly, and Yue Zhong still hadn't returned yet. Zhuo Yatong decided to directly pick a few of the warriors from the First Company, intending to walk towards the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station together with them.

"Miss Yatong! Let me take a few people to check instead!"

Just as Zhuo Yatong was about to set off, Xiong Zheng came over with a few of his men and said to her.

Even though Xiong Zheng had once been an enemy who had then surrendered, Yue Zhong still considered him as a very valuable asset, and had let him be in charge of an entire company. Xiong

Zheng received all sorts of goods as remuneration for his work, and thus he held Yue Zhong in great esteem as well.

"Xiong Zheng, you are one of Yue Zhong's generals. You must remain here to direct the troops if needed. My combat ability is higher than yours as well, so if there is any danger inside, I can somewhat protect myself. I'd better be the one to enter!"

Zhuo Yatong said firmly as she rejected Xiong Zheng's suggestion.

Xiong Zheng did not press any further and warned,

"Please take care!"

During the battle to protect Clear Wind Camp, Xiong Zheng had seen Zhuo Yatong's incredible fighting strength for himself, therefore he was fairly confident in her ability.

Leading Tong Xiaoyun and 6 warriors with her, Zhuo Yatong carefully made her way into the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station.

"Attack helicopters!!"

As soon as they entered the encampment, Zhuo Yatong and the others saw those attack helicopters that had been entangled by the Devil Vines, and all of their eyes lit up. The combat potential of these attack helicopters was extremely formidable; even possessing just one of the helicopters would be sufficient to deter the nearby powers.

Since it was their first time seeing the attack helicopters, they couldn't help themselves from moving forward a few steps towards the helicopters.

As Zhuo Yatong looked from afar, she saw the countless vines that had been severed by Yue Zhong, which were currently scattered on the ground about 5 or 6m away from the Devil Vines. She hurriedly shouted,

"Don't go over!! It's dangerous there!!"

After being berated by Zhuo Yatong, those 6 warriors immediately stopped advancing and returned back to her side.

Zhuo Yatong observed the surroundings carefully, before bringing the party further into the depths of the dense forest.

"These were all killed by him!"

Zhuo Yatong and her party hadn't traversed the forest for too long, before they came across multiple monstrous-looking Mutant Water Snakes lying dead on the ground. All of them had been beheaded cleanly in one strike.

Seeing the corpses of these gigantic Mutant Water Snakes, all of those present began to worship Yue Zhong's combat prowess even more.

Zhuo Yatong brought the others with her as she followed the trail of corpses; eventually, they came to the clearing where the huge tree covered entirely with pink flowers was growing.

All of them saw the behemoth that was over 80m long and 2m in diameter. It was reminiscent of a prehistoric monster, yet it had still been bombarded into chunks, leaving everyone with a peculiar feeling in their hearts.

The Type 2 Mutant Water Snake looked like the flood dragon from Chinese myths, yet a huge beast as such had actually been disposed of by Yue Zhong. Everybody's reverence and admiration for him instantly reached the peak.

Right at this time, they saw White Bones, who always went campaigning with Yue Zhong: holding a large axe, it stood quietly beneath the huge tree. There was the corpse of a Mutant Water Snake lying at its feet.

Upon seeing White Bones, all the members of the party relaxed. They recognized this 'person' who had always followed Yue Zhong, as if it were his perpetual shadow. White Bones' strength was



tyrannical, and aside from Yue Zhong and Zhuo Yatong, 'he' was also currently one of Clear Wind Camp's top combatants. White Bones' loyalty to Yue Zhong was known to everyone as well.

(TN: Poor folks, they don't know that they're referring to a sack of bones)

(Divinecelestialbeinglol: skeletons have rights too)

Zhuo Yatong walked up to White Bones and said,

"Mr. Iron Bones! May I ask where Yue Zhong is?"

After Yue Zhong had used Skill Points to enhance it thrice, White Bones now possessed some initial intelligence. It stared at Zhuo Yatong and recognized her as Yue Zhong's woman, eventually extending one of its hands and pointing a finger to the top of the huge tree.

Zhuo Yatong continued to ask,

"Can I go up to see him?"

White Bones directly extended its axe in front of Zhuo Yatong to block her path, using this action to signify that she couldn't do so. Yue Zhong was currently undergoing a crucial point in his growth. As Yue Zhong's summon, White Bones would definitely not allow anybody to go and disrupt him.

Zhuo Yatong also did not insist and she proceeded to give an order to one of the warriors beside her,

"Liu Guang! Both you and Zhang You go and notify Xiong Zheng, let him know that Commander Yue is safe and sound, and is currently resting. Tell him not to worry and to continue waiting."

"Yes! Miss Yatong!"

Liu Guang and the other soldier Zhang You replied, before immediately going back the way they came from.

After receiving the information that Yue Zhong was fine, everyone heaved a sigh of relief and continued to wait quietly for

his return.

Eight hours. The rampant energy inside his body constantly alternated between hot and cold, causing Yue Zhong to constantly toss from side to side. As his body temperature fluctuated between ice-cold and blistering hot, Yue Zhong endured this torture for an entire eight hours. Only then did he slowly wake up.

[Congratulations on successfully evolving and becoming an Evolver. Your innate evolution attributes are Spirit and Endurance, making you a Dual Attribute Evolver.

You are currently already a Level 40 Enhancer; this time's evolution has let you gain 10 points of Spirit and 10 points of Endurance as bonus enhancements for opening the entrance to evolution. On top of that, you have gained additional enhancements of 39 points in Spirit and 39 points in Endurance for rising up in level. In total, you have gained 49 points in Spirit and 49 points in Endurance.]

[Your current occupation is Dark Knight. Since you have become an Evolver and your level is above 30, you have gained the passive skill 'Heart of Darkness'.]

[Level 5 Passive Skill: Heart of Darkness. Once you have learnt this passive skill, all your Dark Knight class-related skills will automatically gain 1 point in enhancement.]

[Level 2 Skill: Art of Fear (+1 Enhancement)... Skill can be used on a single target within a radius of 300m. It can also be used indiscriminately within a distance of 60m. Effect of skill has been strengthened.]

[Level 2 Skill: Night Enhancement (+1 Enhancement)... You temporarily gain 2 additional points in all 6 major attributes when in darkness.]

[Level 3 Skill: Tamer Technique (+1 Enhancement)... The number of intelligent beings that you can tame has now increased from 1 to

2.]

[Level 3 Skill: Devil Flame (+2 Enhancement)... Devil Flame's damage output has increased threefold compared to its power before enhancement.]

[Level 2 Skill: Shadow Steps. (+1 Enhancement). Upon activation, user gains an extra 35 points in Agility for 5 minutes, requires 10 points of Stamina.]

[Level 2 Skill: Encompassing Body Armor (+1 Enhancement)... Duration, 30 minutes.]

[Level 3 Skill: Summon Special Skeleton (+4 Enhancement).]

[Your Special Skeleton has evolved and gained new skills.

New Skill 1: Sharpen! This skill allows the Special Skeleton's bones to become sharper.

New Skill 2: Basic Intelligence. This ability allows your Special Skeleton to possess basic intelligence. It is now capable of independent judgement.]

[Special Skeleton (White Bones): Level 30

Strength: 59 (10)

Agility: 59 (10)

Vitality: 59 (10)

Stamina: 59/59 (10)

Spirit: 59/59 (10)

Endurance: 121 (10)

Possesses Skills:

Skill 1: Utilizing Bones Ability

Skill 2: Strengthen Bones.

Skill 3: Bone Manipulation.

Skill 4: Feign.

Skill 5: Return to Hell.

Skill 6: Immediate Summon.

Skill 7: Sharpen.

Skill 8: Basic Intelligence.]

[Summon Special Skeleton], [Shadow Steps] and [Devil Flame] were actually all active skills that were linked to the Dark Knight class. This was why Yue Zhong was able to select the hidden profession Dark Knight as his class back then.

Yue Zhong quietly assessed the changes to himself after evolution. After swallowing that scarlet fruit, he had finally become an Evolver. Due to his evolution, his own strength had also changed tremendously. This applied especially to the Level 5 Passive Skill [Heart of Darkness], which instantly gave a huge boost to his power.

Other than that, due to his status as a Dual Attribute Evolver, Yue Zhong's evolution potential was now much greater than other people's.

"I've finally become an Evolver!"

Yue Zhong could feel the earth-shaking changes in his body and he thought to himself elatedly.

Ever since he had come across Yao Yao, the first Evolver he had ever met, Yue Zhong had always hoped to become an Evolver as well. It was just that those natural Evolvers he knew were all geniuses with outstanding aptitude, who had only awakened their inner potential and become Evolvers due to a stroke of luck.

Yue Zhong's aptitude was mediocre (TN: pffft who needs aptitude when they have plot armor?) and he was only able to reach his current state by constantly putting in effort. He had to depend on that strange scarlet fruit to awaken his natural abilities as an Evolver, and it actually turned out that he was a Dual Attribute Evolver with unlimited potential.

Yue Zhong could vaguely guess the key to his evolution,

"The fruits here were probably the key to my evolution. That Type 2 Mutant Water Snake must have been guarding them."

As Yue Zhong expected, the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake had precisely been guarding the scarlet fruit, waiting for it to mature. If it had been successful in swallowing the matured scarlet fruit, it could continue evolving to eventually become a Type 3 Mutant Beast. It was just that the strange scarlet fruit hadn't completely matured yet, and the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake just happened to meet its end at Yue Zhong's hands.

In reality, the strange scarlet fruit that Yue Zhong had consumed still hadn't fully matured; otherwise, if it had, it would have benefited his evolution a whole lot more.

After guessing how this matter came about, Yue Zhong immediately plucked the remaining 6 fruits and placed them into his Storage Ring. He did not know if there would be another chance for him to wait for these fruits to ripen, and so the best choice was for him to pluck these half-ripened fruits right now; even though the effects from eating them certainly wouldn't be as effective, it was still better to have them kept safely with him.

"Since these fruits were obtained from fighting the Mutant Water Snakes, I shall call them 'Snake Birth Fruits'. These Snake Birth Fruit flowers might also be useful towards evolution-I'll get someone to pluck all of them later."

Yue Zhong glanced at the pink flowers that covered the entire Snake Birth Fruit Tree, before climbing down nimbly.

The moment he climbed down from the tree, Yue Zhong saw Zhuo Yatong, Tong Xiaoyun and a few warriors waiting for him below.

When he saw them, he felt extremely touched, yet a little upset at the same time. He asked sternly,

"How come you guys are here? Didn't I tell you to wait outside? It's very dangerous here!"

Within the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Camp, there were all sorts of dangerous Mutant Plants growing all over the place. If they had been just slightly careless, then they could very well have all perished in this place.

Tong Xiaoyun felt a bit wronged and refuted him, saying,

"We're only here because we were all concerned about your safety!"

When Yue Zhong saw that Tong Xiaoyun dared to answer back, he raised an eyebrow and was preparing to scold her, to let her understand the importance of complying with military orders.

"That's enough, Sister Xiaoyun!! Husband was also just worried about our safety."

Zhuo Yatong patted Tong Xiaoyun's shoulder, before walking up to Yue Zhong's front and looking straight at him. As always, she spoke in a voice as gentle as water,

"It's my fault! I disobeyed your orders and brought people to find you without permission. No matter how you want to punish me, I will still have no complaints ( ?◆? ?? ?◆? ) ."

Yue Zhong saw the tender expression of Zhuo Yatong and he was not able to let out his angry rebuke. After all, Zhuo Yatong only brought people over to find him because she was concerned..

"Just this once! Let's go!"

Yue Zhong could only say something like this before he led them out of this place.

This time around, for the sake of gaining control over the entire Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station all in one go, Yue Zhong brought over the entire Battalion from Clear Wind Camp. As soon as he returned to the camp, he immediately ordered all the troops

to enter the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station. The troops began to frenzily transport all the weaponry and equipment that they could find in the encampment.

There were all sorts of advanced technology, such as Type 69 Tanks, Z-9 Attack Helicopters, multi-barrelled rocket launcher vehicles, armored command vehicles, meteorological radar vehicles, ammunition supply vehicles, anti-tank artillery vehicles, Type 95 SPAAA Vehicles, HJ8 Anti-tank Vehicles, unmanned surveillance aircraft...

All this greatly widened the horizons of Yue Zhong and his team, since they were essentially country bumpkins who had never seen such advanced weaponry before.

Xiong Zheng found Yue Zhong and inquired with both excitement and helplessness,

"Boss Yue! How should everyone move these away?"

Although there were many Type 69 Tanks, attack helicopters, IFVs and all sorts of other vehicles that had damage caused to their armors by those Mutant Plants, there were still some undamaged armored vehicles. Yue Zhong and his men managed to find 10 intact Type 69 Tanks as well as some other armored vehicles that were free from damage, such as a few HJ8 Anti-tank Vehicles.

However, the greatest problem lay right there, as there weren't enough people in Yue Zhong's team who were able to drive these advanced weapons of war. Driving a tank certainly was not as easy as driving a normal car. Furthermore, even the number of people who knew how to drive large vehicles in Yue Zhong's Battalion was less than 30.

Yue Zhong pondered for a while, before firing off a series of orders,

"Let's first use those jeeps to transport as much light weaponry as possible! I remember we have 4 people in this Battalion who have

operated bulldozers before, let them drive four of the Type 69 Tanks back..."

Not long after, an enormous vehicle fleet brimming with modern weaponry departed from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, driving into the distance. This vehicle fleet was much larger than the one that had originally come to the station.

Yue Zhong's team transported back a large amount of firearms, ammunition, bazookas and grenade launchers, grenades, landmines and various other types of light weaponry. As for those armored vehicles, they did not take as many. This was because they lacked people who knew how to operate the machines; even if they did somehow drag all the vehicles back to Clear Wind Camp, they still wouldn't be able to use many of them.



## Chapter 236: Venomous Blood Essence, Saved By Gu Manzi!

---

Mahogany Town was the place where Yue Zhong had settled his people after moving away from Clear Wind Camp. It was only a small town, and prior to Z-Day, there weren't more than 2000 people living there. It had already been opened once, hence most of the resources inside had already been cleared out, but it was still suitable to live in.

After Yue Zhong had returned to his own quarters, he took out one of the Mutant Elite Water Snakes' blood essences and absorbed it. He did not dare to absorb it back when he was still in the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, in case he fell into a deep sleep or there were any unpleasant side effects. Here in Mahogany Town, there were over 2000 people nearby who could protect him.

The moment the blood essence was swallowed by Yue Zhong, it transformed into a surge of energy that circulated in his abdomen, constantly nourishing his body.

[Congratulations on gaining 7 points in Vitality and 1 point in Endurance.]

After the surging energy came to a rest, the pleasing notification resounded beside Yue Zhong's ear.

Yue Zhong did not feel anything wrong with his body, and so he immediately proceeded to swallow the blood essence from the other Mutant Elite Water Snake too. Once again, the same sort of energy current circulated rapidly through his body, constantly nourishing it.

[Congratulations on gaining 3 points in Vitality.]

This time, the effects of the snake blood essence had diminished by over a half: evidently, Yue Zhong's body was already beginning to develop a resistance to this type of blood essence. The blood

essences of normal Mutant Water Snakes were now of no use to Yue Zhong whatsoever.

Furthermore, since he had already absorbed the blood essences of Mutant Water Snakes many times before, the enhancements he received this time around from taking the Mutant Elite Water Snake blood essence weren't even as great as the benefits which he had gained from his first time taking the blood essence of a normal Mutant Water Snake.

Yue Zhong did not hesitate in the slightest and swallowed the last blood essence from the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake in one gulp. This time, as soon as the blood essence reached his abdomen, it transformed into a much more violent rush of energy. As the scorching energy current circulated within him, it nourished his body and made it bursting with vitality.

[Congratulations on gaining 14 points in Vitality and 5 points in Endurance.]

Following the sweet sound of a notification, Yue Zhong's vitality (including the added bonus from equipment) reached 111 points. Even without his equipment, he still had at least 100 points in Vitality, which was 10 times that of a normal person. He immediately pulled out the Level 4 Skill Book and directly learnt it.

(TN: Level 4 Skill Book: Rebirth! - gained from killing the L3 zombie a while back)

A ray of light flashed, and within his sea of knowledge, an abstruse rune representing the Rebirth Skill was coagulated. Upon possessing this skill, Yue Zhong's survival ability increased enormously. Even if his limbs were severed during a battle, he would still be able to make use of this skill to slowly regenerate them. With this skill, his rate of recovery also soared-in a battle where both parties possessed similar strength, this would be particularly useful.

"This time I have really gained a lot!!"

Yue Zhong could clearly feel that after this experience, his power had undergone an earthshaking change.

Suddenly, a scorching burst of energy rose from Yue Zhong's abdomen and rushed directly to his brain. At that moment, his body heat rose dramatically, and the fiery energy almost obliterated his sense of reason.

"Sh\*t!!"

Yue Zhong could feel that something was wrong and he immediately bolted out of the room.

"Master!"

There were 4 maids standing right outside his bedroom; amongst them were Ma Lili and Zeng Fang. As they saw him rushing out, they all bowed slightly and saluted him.

Both of Yue Zhong's eyes were scarlet, filled with unbridled lust. He directly pulled Ma Lili and Zeng Fang into the room in a rather barbaric manner, and threw them onto the large bed. Without even closing the door, he immediately ripped apart Ma Lili's clothes and directly penetrated her body.

A beautiful red flower immediately blossomed on the pure white bed sheet as Ma Lili's eyebrows furrowed. Once the look of pain on her face had passed, a joyful expression soon appeared as she took the initiative to hug Yue Zhong and kiss him on the face.

In the current apocalyptic age, if a girl wanted to live on comfortably, then they would have to become a strong Enhancer like Ji Qingwu, who possessed superb combat awareness and instincts. Alternatively, they could be like Yao Yao, who became a powerful Evolver from the very start. Other than that, most of the girls living through the apocalypse right now could only rely on a strong person to live well.

Ma Lili belonged to the category where she had nothing other than her looks. She did not have any other outstanding talents,

and so she could only attach herself to Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong didn't enjoy tormenting girls like the perverted Lie Tianyang, and he also had great abilities and strength; this made her adore him to no end.

It was just that there were already outstanding beauties like Gu Manzi, Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun beside him, hence Ma Lili knew that it was very difficult for her to receive Yue Zhong's attention. She actually felt very happy and proud for him to treat her in such a manner today.

As Zeng Fang watched the entangled couple, her charming face blushed a little before she took off her clothes as well. She was left wearing only black laced underwear and a black flowery bra, making her seem even more appealing than before.

After she had removed her clothes, Zeng Fang also climbed onto the huge bed. She stuck out her tongue and licked all over Yue Zhong's body like a lamia, livening things up even more.

Under Yue Zhong's powerful assault, Ma Lili soon gave a huge groan of pleasure before collapsing powerlessly.

Yue Zhong directly dragged Zeng Fang over and stacked her on top of Ma Lili, before proceeding to fiercely penetrate her body as well. Once again, a beautiful red flower blossomed upon the (partly) snow-white bed sheet.

The two other maidservants standing outside heard all sorts of sounds from within the room and their faces turned red. They were no longer naive little girls after being immersed in the explosive information age. Naturally, they fully understood what was going on within the room. They couldn't help themselves from feeling jealous and envious of the two girls who had obtained Yue Zhong's favor. After this, Zeng Fang and Ma Lili's positions would certainly be above theirs.

The two pretty maids outside glanced at each other and couldn't help feeling curious as they peered into the room that had its door

wide open.

A petite maid stared fixedly at Yue Zhong before inadvertently blurting out,

"So big!"

A curious light flashed past the eyes of the pretty, baby-faced maid as she said,

"Master really is quite robust! Will Zeng Fang still be okay after this?"

"Hehe, little Jie. Since Zeng Fang has been 'broken' by Master, why don't you go over and help?"

"Pah! You damn girl, watch if I don't tear your mouth apart!"

"....."

Those 2 girls laughed loudly outside the door. Even though Chen Ming had gone to take care of governmental affairs, the orders that he had laid out before were extremely strict; even though those two maidservants wanted to obtain Yue Zhong's affection, without him actually calling them in, they did not dare to enter.

Right at this time, Gu Manzi walked over and saw the commotion. She frowned and asked,

"What are the two of you doing?"

The two maids instantly straightened up and said anxiously,

"Miss Manzi!!"

Gu Manzi had also heard the peculiar sounds coming from within the room. She looked inside and saw the scene could make the girls blush.

Even though Gu Manzi was usually full of jealousy and lacked the courage to fight, she was not stupid at all. She immediately inferred that something was wrong with Yue Zhong,

"That's not right! Yue Zhong is normally not someone without

restraint. Even if he did want to sleep with these two girls, he definitely wouldn't leave the door open. There must be something wrong with his body. I should go ask Zhuo Yatong for advice."

Just as she was about to leave, Gu Manzi suddenly remembered how many times she had disappointed Yue Zhong before. She paused for a moment before coldly ordering the two maids,

"What has happened here, no one is to talk about it, understood?"

The two maidservants didn't dare to argue with Gu Manzi and replied,

"Yes! Miss Manzi!"

As Gu Manzi strode into the room and closed the door, she saw Yue Zhong ravaging the 2 girls. Gritting her teeth, she took off her own clothes, revealing her ample breasts, tender white skin and her incredibly sexy figure that was full of youthful vigor.

Carrying a fragrant scent on her, she entwined around Yue Zhong like a bewitching lamia, before kissing him on the face.

Yue Zhong had already pounded Zeng Fang until her body was sore. He swiftly grabbed Gu Manzi and pressed her onto him, directly penetrating her beautiful body.

Once again, another bright-colored rose blossomed on the bed sheet. Within Gu Manzi's eyes, there were two limpid teardrops suspended there. Before the 'end of the world', she had been a proud, swan-like princess who countless men had pursued. After the world has changed though, she actually had to resort to measures like this to obtain the affection of the man in front of her. Even though she had long since mentally prepared herself, she still could not help tearing up a little at the thought.

(Divinecelestialbeinglol: Kun has been ranting about how the bed sheet could still be magically snow-white even after taking the 'cherries' of three girls, which is how the bed sheet is always described in the raws lol)

Yue Zhong hugged Gu Manzi's alluring body as he pounded for a long time, before finally releasing his seed into her. By doing so, the aphrodisiac poison from the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake's blood essence was also completely expelled.

(TN: I'm guessing that the poison wasn't expelled... uhhh... into her, or it had already been nullified and basically dissipated upon release)

After his release, Yue Zhong quickly woke up and saw the three women whom he had just devastated. They looked very weak and were collapsed sloppily upon the bed. He felt slightly apologetic, yet there was also a strange feeling in his heart.

"It's a pity! If only I had done it when I was still wide awake! "

\(-\_-really?!)-/ ...well at least he's honest...

Yue Zhong looked again at the three incredibly beautiful ladies around him and his eyes flashed with a hint of regret. Drawing the three beauties into his embrace, he then fell into a deep sleep.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong's nose felt itchy and he couldn't help but sneeze. He opened his eyes and saw Gu Manzi using her fine black hair to tickle his nose.

Gu Manzi propped up her charming face with both her hands as she gave Yue Zhong a bewitching smile and said,

"Good morning! Brother Yue!"

Her lush black hair, smooth white skin, ample chest, deep cleavage and exquisite facial features made it so that when Yue Zhong looked at her, the breathtakingly beautiful scene brought about a sudden urge in him.

"Morning!"

Yue Zhong pulled her over into his embrace and kissed her extraordinarily beautiful face. His slight dissatisfaction with her vanished like smoke in thin air: even if she did not have any

courage or battle strength, it was still alright. In any case, he was there to shoulder everything before them.

Zeng Fang and Ma Lili had also just woken up. They looked at Gu Manzi with envy, but they didn't go over to compete with her.

After this eventful night, Zeng Fang and Ma Lili's statuses soared; other than Zhuo Yatong and the other three girls (Gu Manzi, Tong Xiaoyun, Yun Caiwei), the rest of the community all began to show more respect to them. The knot in Gu Manzi's heart was also undone, seeing as she had now found her own place. She was starting to



## Chapter 237: Ning Guang County Invades!

---

In a lavish villa within Ning Guang County, Yue Zhong's arch-enemy Lie Tianyang was currently sitting on a sofa. Beside him sat a fat man with a large head and big ears, whose bulging stomach made him seem as if he was 6 months pregnant.

There were 4 stunning young ladies in revealing clothes who knelt before him, massaging his legs, as well as another two ladies as such kneeling on the sofa beside him and gently kneading his shoulders. There were also two ladies standing behind him who were carefully massaging his back.

Four bright-eyed men wearing black suits stood beside the fat man, staring fixedly at Lie Tianyang.

The fat man was the Ferocious Tigers' controller of Ning Guang County, Tao Zhengyi. Prior to the apocalypse, he had been the tyrant of Ning Guang County, colluding with various officials and simply doing as he liked. He had a few hundred henchmen under him, and he had opened all sorts of businesses such as a real estate company, a bar and an internet cafe: in total, he had possessed over 2000 workers and lackeys in Ning Guang County.

After Z-Day, Tao Zhengyi had managed to overcome the initial difficulties, wantonly using the name of the government to persuade survivors to join him. At the same time, he began to organize his own forces, eventually opening up a military camp and obtaining a large number of weapons and ammunition. Not long after, he brought people to subdue the entire Ning Guang County and began to widely recruit subordinates. By borrowing the name of the government, he was able to gather many survivors.

Once the number of survivors under him had grown to more than 12,000, adding onto the fact that there hadn't been any news from the central government for a long time, Tao Zhengyi decided

to discard this pretense. He formed the Ferocious Tigers Group and declared himself the leader, before continuing to rule Ning Guang County under a dictatorship regime.

With an entire military camp's worth of modern weaponry and a substantial amount of resources like food, Tao Zhengyi began to swallow up the various surrounding powers one by one. The total number of survivors currently under him was already over 16,000. In this region, he could be considered as a real big shot.

Lie Tianyang laughed lightly as he said,

"Chairman Tao, are these women to your liking?"

These days, Lie Tianyang had relied on his own abilities to decimate the leader of a small-scale power. With his overbearing nature, he became the leader of the small-scale power and these beautiful women were actually brought over from that small community by him.

Tao Zhengyi rolled his eyes at Lie Tianyang. As if he were scolding a dog, he cursed unhappily at Lie Tianyang, saying,,

"Not very satisfied. Out of these 8 ladies you've sent me, 4 of them have been used before by others! You f\*ckin want to insult me, don't you! You're so insincere, yet you still wish to borrow my troops, no way!"

'Damned fat pig. Do you know how hard it is to find pretty virgins after the apocalypse? Finding you 4 of them is already a blessing!! You didn't say anything when you were about to receive them, but now that they're in your hands, you want to go back on your words! How shameless!"

Lie Tianyang was full of indignation in his heart, but he actually maintained his smiling facade and said slowly,

"Chairman Tao, as long as you lend your troops to me, I promise you that I will be able to find you 20 beautiful virgins. Remember, Clear Wind Camp's population actually numbers in the 2000s. If

we attack Clear Wind Camp and assimilate the people there, your power will definitely be enlarged by one step. Furthermore, they have just gone through an attack by a herd of Mutant Pigs. Their ammunition has already been depleted, so right now is the best time for you to launch an attack on them!"

Tao Zhengyi's small eyes blinked a few times, before he squinted at Lie Tianyang and slowly asked,

"What's in it for you if we wipe out Clear Wind Camp?"

There were no free lunches in this world. Tao Zhengyi was well aware of that, and he certainly didn't believe that Lie Tianyang would deliver such a delicious piece of cake right up to his mouth for no particular reason.

Lie Tianyang gritted his teeth as he replied savagely,

"Clear Wind Camp's Yue Zhong stole my base and my women. I really want to consume his flesh and skin him. After destroying Clear Wind Camp, I don't need anything. All I want is Yue Zhong and his women."

Tao Zhengyi pondered for a while, before replying shamelessly,

"Alright! Since it's like that, I'll make an exception JUST for you. However, my Ning Guang County has a shortage of workers, and you seem to have over 300 survivors under your control, right? Hand them over to me and we'll treat that as the fee for borrowing my troops."

Upon hearing that Tao Zhengyi actually wanted to take away the 300+ survivors under his control, Lie Tianyang was so furious that his lungs almost exploded. A small force like this was all that he had right now, yet Tao Zhengyi still wanted to take it away, which filled his heart with resentment. As a faint killing intent started to seep out from him, an extreme desire to kill the fatty in front of him emerged from within Lie Tianyang.

Right at this moment, another strong killing intent, which was

by no means inferior to that of Lie Tianyang's, seeped out from the other corner of the room, shaking Lie Tianyang awake.

Tao Zhengyi was only a normal person, whose fighting strength couldn't even measure up to that of normal citizens. However, being the controller of Ning Guang County, he had been able to use means like food and beauties to rope in many experts. This was why Lie Tianyang didn't have the slightest bit of confidence in being able to successfully kill Tao Zhengyi in this place.

Lie Tianyang suppressed the anger within his heart and pretended to hesitate for a moment, before nodding his head in agreement and saying,

"Sure! I will hand them over to you. When will you dispatch your forces?"

Lie Tianyang didn't have any plans for those 300 survivors anyway. After all, with the existence of two major powers in this region-Tao Zhengyi and the Chinese Army itself-being trapped in the middle left him with no future prospects whatsoever. He intended to first take down Yue Zhong, before immediately moving somewhere else to establish himself again.

To normal people, there was danger everywhere after the apocalypse, leaving them with no way of travelling elsewhere. However, to Evolvers like Lie Tianyang, as long as he didn't provoke any fearsome Mutant Beasts or come across a vast horde of zombies, then travelling was basically not a problem.

Tao Zhengyi seemed to be unaffected by Lie Tianyang's outburst of killing intent. Instead, he pinched the cheek of a beauty kneeling down in front of him and casually replied,

"Once your people have arrived, I will send out my men!"

"I shall go gather them now! I hope that you can keep your word."

With that, Lie Tianyang stood up and strode out of the room.

"All of you are dismissed!"

After Lie Tianyang had left, Tao Zhengyi waved his hands towards those 8 beauties and 4 bodyguards, telling them all to withdraw.

A thin man with protruding temples slowly walked out from the shadows. He had dark skin and the thenar spaces (webbing between thumb and index finger) of both his hands were covered with calluses. Both of his eyes flashed with a bright light.

Once the man had walked out, the frivolous and haughty expression of Tao Zhengyi was wiped away, replaced by a stern and serious one.

"Bao-zi, what do you think?"

(TN: the suffix '-zi' is used here to express affection of some sort, a bit like '-kun' from Japanese. There isn't really a good way of translating it, so I just left it like that. Interestingly, Bao Zi can also mean leopard/panther, although it is only part of a name in this case. Perhaps this man's abilities have something to do with leopards/panthers though.)

The middle-aged man who had walked out of the shadows was called Zhang Bao, the strongest Evolver under Tao Zhengyi's command. Prior to Z-Day, Tao Zhengyi had saved Zhang Bao's life and had even done all sorts of favours for him. After the events of Z-Day, Tao Zhengyi had also fiercely protected Zhang Bao's life when he was undergoing evolution and had a fever. This led Zhang Bao to have absolute loyalty to Tao Zhengyi, as well as being his strongest subordinate.

Zhang Bao said unhurriedly,

"Yue Zhong could usurp Lie Tianyang's position all by himself, so he's obviously not someone simple. I feel that Lie Tianyang's intention is to let both us and Yue Zhong's side fight it out, making both sides sustain heavy losses, from which he stands to gain. Of course, his supposed hatred for Yue Zhong is probably real."

Tao Zhengyi rubbed a jade ring on his index finger with his right thumb as he asked back,

"That's right! That bastard Lie Tianyang really is a mad dog right now, wanting to bite at anyone who he's unhappy with. How confident are you of killing him?"

Zhang Bao pondered for a while before replying in a low voice,

"I am confident in being able to defeat him! However, in order to kill him, unless I join hands with Dong Zi, Tie Ya, Niu Sheng and the others, there is only a 10% chance of finishing him off."

Dong Zi, Tie Ya and Niu Sheng were the other three Evolvers that Tao Zhengyo had recruited. Each of them was very overbearing, possessing powerful skills and abilities.

Tao Zhengyi contemplated for a while before saying,

"I've decided. I must have this fat piece of meat that is Clear Wind Camp. Once Lie Tianyang has brought his people over, you, Dong Zi and Niu Sheng will bring troops to go open up Clear Wind Camp. At that time, let Lie Tianyang be at the very front. Bring some additional rockets, so that when the time's right, you can deal with both him and Yue Zhong at the same time."

(TN: Tie Ya has not been accidentally left out by the author in this chapter-the next few chapters show only Zhang Bao, Dong Zi and Niu Sheng, so there are no mistakes if you're wondering about what happened to him.)

"Understood!"

Zhang Bao nodded.

Two days later, Lie Tianyang delivered the 300+ survivors into Tao Zhengyi's hands, as well as bringing along with him the address of the place that Yue Zhong's stronghold had just migrated to. As a tyrant of this area, Lie Tianyang knew this region like the back of his hand, and his new subordinates had constantly been monitoring the direction in which Yue Zhong's army was moving.

Within a day, he was able to work out the exact location of Yue Zhong's new stronghold.

Tao Zhengyi also did not go back on his words and dispatched 2 Battalions, forming an army 1000 men strong. With Zhang Bao in command, they made their way towards Yue Zhong's stronghold.

Tao Zhengyi's current armed forces consisted precisely of 5 Battalions, a total of over 2500 people. Although he had such a strong army, there naturally wasn't enough equipment or weapons for all his soldiers, and so many of them were only assigned Type 54 Handguns; some were even given machetes, watermelon knives and butcher knives. However, according to Tao Zhengyi's way of thinking, as long as they had the numbers, then they would have enough power. Using some of the men as cannon fodder was completely fine to him.

Of course, there was an Elite Company within each of the 5 Battalions, which was equipped with modern weaponry and equipment taken from the military camp that the Ferocious Tigers had opened. The Elite Companies possessed the greatest power and only they could truly be considered as Tao Zhengyi's trump cards.

Approximately 5km to the east of Mahogany Town, 10 warriors were hiding on the top floor of a small 2-storey bungalow, taking turns to keep watch over the main road. If there were any vehicles passing by, they definitely would not escape the warriors' eyes.

A fragile-looking young man of small stature walked up to another young man, who was sporting a beard and was dressed neatly in clean clothes. He said,

"Squad Leader, go and rest! It's my turn!"

These 10 warriors were all reconnaissance fighters from the 1st Platoon of Yue Zhong's 1st Company; all of them were Enhancers above Level 8. Amongst them, there was the Squad Leader Guo Quan, who was a Level 10 Enhancer. After Yue Zhong had returned from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station with a huge amount

of equipment, their team had been keeping watch here. They had already been stationed here for 4 days.

When the horde of Mutant Pigs had attacked, it had caused Yue Zhong's stronghold to sustain disastrous losses; at the same time though, it produced many new high-levelled Enhancers all at once.

"Xu Yang, I'll keep watch for a little longer! Go back and rest first!"

Guo Quan smiled at the small-statured young man, before both his eyes suddenly narrowed and he said in a deep voice,

"There's something wrong! Quickly notify headquarters, enemies are on their way!"

In the distance, a huge fleet of vehicles could be seen making its way towards them.



## Chapter 238: Guo Quan!

---

"There is an enemy attack impending. Their main force consists of jeeps, trucks, buses and an unknown number of people. There are no infantry fighting vehicles..."

One of the warriors was using a military walkie-talkie to rapidly report back to headquarters. Although he had been selected to join the reconnaissance squad, prior to this, he didn't have a lot of experience in warfare. It was thus understandable that he was unable to report back to headquarters like a genuine recon warrior would, using the proper protocol and giving accurate information. He could only give a broad outline of the most important information.

Guo Quan looked towards the warrior and asked,

"How is it? What are headquarters' orders?"

The warrior solemnly replied,

"Headquarters have given their orders! We are to slow down their advance with everything we've got! After destroying the first armored vehicle that passes by here, we are free to retreat as we see fit."

This reconnaissance squad was full of elite soldiers trained by Yue Zhong, who had no plans of sacrificing them for naught. Trying to obstruct a few hundred enemies with just 10 warriors was really too difficult.

Guo Quan's mouth curled upwards as he patted the two Type QLBo6 .35mm Light Grenade Launchers. He called out to the rest of his team,

"Just one armored vehicle?! Headquarters seem to think too lightly of us! With these guys, we should at least take down five of them! Do you guys have the confidence?!"

"Yes!!" The rest of the team hollered back.

Each member of this reconnaissance team had a .05 Light Submachine Gun, four hand grenades, armor sewn from the Mutant Water Snake scales and also two Type QLBo6 .35mm Light Grenade Launchers, making a total of 24 grenades.

They could be considered to be armed to the teeth. After the battle with the herd of Mutant Pigs, they gained courage, self-confidence and even became Enhancers. They were also equipped with modern weaponry, which filled their hearts with confidence and had them in high spirits.

Guo Quan glanced at his team of warriors in a pleased way then proceeded to give out a series of orders.

The huge vehicle fleet was getting closer to this small bungalow that they were stationed in.

Guo Quan was lying on the rooftop, using the Type QLBo6 .35mm Light Grenade Launcher to aim closely at the foremost vehicle of the enemy troop, a Dongfeng Warrior Vehicle mounted with a machine gun.

Just as that Dongfeng vehicle was about 100m away from the building, Guo Quan immediately pulled the trigger; at the same time, another warrior - named Xu Yang - also fired his QLBo6.

With two huge 'booms', the two grenades exploded on that leading vehicle, with one of them landing on the fuel box, immediately causing the Dongfeng vehicle to explode into a huge fireball.

Facing the sudden attack, the vehicle fleet was suddenly plunged into chaos. They simply did not have any experience in dealing with modern warfare weaponry.

Some of the vehicles wanted to retreat, whilst others wanted to continue in their advance: in the ensuing chaos, many vehicles crashed against one another. Two buses filled with soldiers crashed violently into each other, killing or injuring a few dozen of

the soldiers inside.

Guo Quan hadn't expected their attack to be so effective, and so he immediately lifted the QLBO6 to continue his assault on the vehicles, firing wildly.

One by one, explosions rocked the vehicle fleet, causing a Jeep and another Dongfeng vehicle to directly explode. Most of the vehicles then came to a stop and countless passengers armed with all sorts of weapons scrambled out.

Up until now, Tao Zhengyi's subordinates had only fought against zombies and normal humans, but never against humans that possessed heavy weaponry. They did not possess a sliver of experience in this sort of warfare. The other eight members of the recon team opened fire on the chaotic scene in front of them, bombarding the 1000+ enemy soldiers. Some of them cried as they tried to flee, trampling over each other, resulting in a disastrous number of casualties.

"Ambush! AMBUSH!!"

Immediately after the first attack, Zhang Bao had rushed out from his vehicle and was now hollering at the top of his voice.

The moment he rushed out, other than the soldiers from the two elite companies of Ning Guang County who had plenty of battle experience, the rest fled in all directions and went seeking for cover.

While the soldiers of Ning County were busy looking for cover, Guo Quan and Xu Yang nonchalantly took aim with their grenade launchers and shot at the vehicles, destroying them one by one.

"Charge!"

Zhang Bao looked at the constant barrage of grenades coming from the bungalow and a grim expression flashed past his face. Leaving behind the two elite companies, he commanded the other two normal companies to act as cannon fodder and charge

forward.

Under the urging of Zhang Bao and the other elite soldiers, the two companies' worth of cannon fodder, who were scared witless, began to launch an assault on the bungalow.

"Good!!"

As Gu Lian watched the few hundred people rushing towards the bungalow, he smacked his lips and from one of the bungalows windows, he immediately began to wildly open fire at the cannon fodder.

The concentrated barrage of bullets rained down on the unfortunate warriors and instantly decimated a few dozen of them, while the rest of them turned pale and immediately turned tail, fleeing ignominiously.

Zhang Bao was furious as he and the elite warriors continuously shot down those who had escaped the fastest. Only then, was the frenzied retreat of the cannon fodder survivors stopped.

Following that, Zhang Bao organized two more groups of cannon fodder to rush towards the bungalow, resulting in the deaths of a few people each time. There was a pathetic outcome reach time, with none of them possessing the courage to even fire at the bungalow.

Lie Tianyang saw how useless the assaults were as his eyebrows furrowed and said,

"This won't do!! Brother Bao, let the two elite companies charge!"

The elite companies were the lifelines of Tao Zhengyi and were also of extreme value to Ning County. It was precisely because of this that Zhang Bao wanted to first use the cannon fodder to engage in a war of attrition with those in the bungalow; he just didn't expect the cannon fodder to be such cowards.

Zhang Bao's face turned ashen as he coldly stared at Lie Tianyang and said,

"Lie Tianyang! Didn't you say that they don't have any ammunition left? What's the deal with those grenade launchers?"

If Lie Tianyang hadn't claimed that Yue Zhong had already expended all his ammunition, Tao Zhengyi would have considered striking a deal with Yue Zhong. Otherwise, even if he conquered the enemy, he would have faced huge losses as well. When fighting against a formidable powerhouse, it was not as easy or simple as swallowing up a small stronghold. Conquering small strongholds would only require Tao Zhengyi to launch a single assault, which would easily result in the small stronghold's armed forces being destroyed and assimilated.

Lie Tianyang was equally depressed as he replied,

"Maybe he got lucky and came across a military camp recently."

Lie Tianyang hated Yue Zhong from the depths of his heart. Now that Yue Zhong's power had further increased, this only served to fuel his jealousy and rage.

Zhang Bao glanced at Lie Tianyang, before ordering in a low voice,

"There doesn't seem to be many people in the bungalow. Go and take care of them!!"

Lie Tianyang's eyes flashed with a hint of anger. After all, he wasn't one of Tao Zhengyi's lackeys, yet this Zhang Bao was obviously treating him like cannon fodder.

Lie Tianyang's eyes were surging with anger and his expression turned cold. He silently walked towards the tall and sturdy middle aged man named Niu Sheng, as well as the ferocious-looking young man named Dong Zi with dyed blonde hair who watched everything with a gaze sharper than daggers.

Zhang Bao, Niu Sheng and Dong Zi were all Evolvers under Tao Zhengyi, who had in turn spent a huge amount of resources to nurture and enhance their growth. This enabled him to have quite

a few exceptionally powerful experts by his side.

Lie Tianyang also knew that Niu Sheng and Dong Zi were Evolvers with great strength. So with great difficulty he suppressed his anger, before saying to Zhang Bao:

"Then I shall go and kill them now!!"

After which, he jumped out from behind the vehicular cover and activated his hurricane armor, rushing towards the direction of the bungalow.

"Lie Tianyang!!"

Upon seeing the approaching Lie Tianyang with his hurricane armor, Guo Quan and the rest of the warriors turned pale. After all, they were recently still at his mercy, and upon seeing the cruel and fearsome ex-tyrant of Clear Wind Camp, they naturally could not help but feel a bit fearful.

In a flash, a concentrated barrage of 5.8mm bullets and grenades was fired at Lie Tianyang.

However, it turned out that Lie Tianyang was actually just feinting. He did not attack the bungalow, but rather changed direction and fled instead, which accordingly led to most of the ammunition hitting thin air. Although some of the bullets actually entered the vicinity of his hurricane armor, they were then promptly swept away one by one.

In just a few moments, Lie Tianyang had already escaped without even his shadow to be seen, leaving only the forces of Ning Guang County to contend with the recon team under Yue Zhong. Seeing that Lie Tianyang had actually chosen to escape during this moment of crisis, Zhang Bao cursed,

"Damn bastard!!"

Niu Sheng frowned and asked Zhang Bao,

"What do we do? Brother Bao, should we send out the elite

soldiers?"

Those cannon fodder troops could not be relied on, and so the only forces that could actually seize control over the bungalow were the elite soldiers, who were the core of Ning Guang County's military power.

Zhang Bao pondered for a moment. Now that Yue Zhong's forces possessed enough weapons and ammunition, he was rather worried. However, after some hesitation, he still gave the order,

"Let the Elite 3rd Company's 1st Platoon go forth!"

A whole platoon of soldiers immediately crouched down and made their way carefully to surround the bungalow on all four sides.

These elite soldiers of Ning Guang County had also seen and fought their fair share of zombies. Even though their achievements were far-off compared to those of a proper army, they were still much better than those cannon fodder troops.

As the platoon began to surround the bungalow, the recon warriors inside could feel the pressure. They continuously opened fire with their .05 Light Submachine Guns at the soldiers from Ning Guang County below them.

The dense barrage of bullets caused three casualties amongst the elite warriors of Ning Guang before the rest immediately dove for cover. Afterwards, they began to open fire, spraying unceasingly at the bungalow. Soon enough, both parties were engaging in an all-out gunfight.

As a hail of bullets rained down on this area, one bullet found its way through the brains of one of the recon warriors, ending his life instantly. There was finally a casualty within the bungalow.

"Old Wu!!"

As Guo Quan saw his comrade falling beside him he howled, his eyes scarlet like those of an injured beast. He fired the grenade

launcher repeatedly at the enemies outside and two grenades exploded on a small dirt mound, instantly killing the two Ning Guang County soldiers taking cover behind it.

"What tenacious enemies!!"

Zhang Bao glanced at the small bungalow and furrowed his brows slightly. In most of their previous conquests, the battle ended as soon as they fired and killed some people, upon which the rest would completely lose their morale and directly surrender.

Although Guo Quan was only in command of one squad, they were all fully equipped and had plenty of ammunition. They could maintain their firing accordingly and actually suppress all the enemy soldiers, giving them no space to even lift their heads, thus causing a lot of damage to the opposing side as well.

Zhang Bao looked at the bungalow, which they still hadn't captured even after 20 minutes, and his face turned ashen. Angrily, he ordered,

"3rd Company 2nd and 3rd Platoons, begin your assault on the bungalow! I want those enemies inside dead!"

Zhang Bao had originally wanted to conserve the fighting strength of the elite soldiers until they reached Mahogany Town, so that they could commence their onslaught on Yue Zhong's stronghold in prime condition. However it seemed that if he did not send them out now, he would have to spend even longer taking down this bungalow.

Once the soldiers of Ning Guang County's Elite 3rd Company had joined the fray, the recon soldiers in the bungalow felt the pressure on them rise severalfold. In the gunfight that ensued, they began to receive bullet wounds one by one.

Fortunately, they were dressed in the Mutant Water Snake armor, which meant that as long as they did not suffer any wounds to the head, they could still survive. After such a long battle, only



one other warrior had died to a head wound; the rest were still alive and fighting.

Nevertheless, facing the huge increased barrage of firepower from the Ning Guang County troops, Guo Quan and the rest could barely even lift their heads under the complete suppression.

Zhang Bao saw that the situation was swinging in their favour, yet he still frowned deeply. While the Elite 3rd Company of Ning County was still firing at the bungalow from the outside, not a single one of them dared to rush in. If this continued, who knew how much longer it would take to completely wipe out the warriors inside the bungalow.

Unfortunately, Zhang Bao's side were severely lacking in heavy weaponry. If they had heavy artillery, then the bungalow would already have been blasted to smithereens, and this battle wouldn't have been dragged on for so long.

"3rd Company charge!! Not a single enemy is to be left alive!"

Zhang Bao shouted out his command fiercely. He had already fought this war of attrition for too long, and he didn't want to waste a single second more.

At Zhang Bao's order, the soldiers of the Elite 3rd Company moved in from three different directions, crouching and making their way closer towards the bungalow that Guo Quan and his team were stationed in.

"They're here!!"

Seeing the elite soldiers of Ning County launching their assault, Guo Quan spat out some saliva before starting to open fire with his grenade launcher at the soldiers.

There wasn't anywhere good to seek cover near the bungalow, and so the 3rd Company soldiers sustained huge losses halfway through their assault.

One by one, the grenades exploded on the poor elite soldiers of

Ning Guang County, killing them piecemeal. The constant barrage of fire from the .05 Light Machine Guns was also effective at picking off the soldiers as many of them fell lifelessly to the ground.

Seeing that their comrades were constantly falling to the ground, the elite soldiers' morale crumbled apart, whereupon they immediately retreated like a receding tide. After all, they were not actual soldiers who had undergone rigorous military training and had firm resolutions. The outcome of this assault would be the deaths of another 2 recon warriors at best.

There were currently only five people remaining amongst Yue Zhong's recon warriors.

"Damn it!"

Zhang Bao frowned as he could feel the determination of Yue Zhong's forces. Breaking past the defenses of the bungalow was not difficult in itself, but the morale and fighting spirit displayed by the warriors inside the bungalow gave Zhang Bao a huge sense of unease!

"We can't drag this out any longer! Dong Zi, go and take care of them!"

Zhang Bao gave the order to Dong Zi in a low voice.

Dong Zi's eyes flashed with a cold gleam as he activated the Shadow Steps Skill, which he had enhanced twice.

He was an Agility-based Evolver in the first place, but with Shadow Steps active, his speed was over 11 times greater than that of normal humans.

## Chapter 239: Hella Reinforcements!

---

The moment Dong Zi charged forward, his entire person looked like a specter speeding towards the bungalow.

As Guo Quan and the remaining warriors watched Dong Zi draw closer, they raised their guns and fired wildly at him. It was just that their eyes could barely keep up with his movement trajectory, whilst their gun handling simply wasn't fast enough at all to hit him accurately.

Dong Zi zig-zagged his way towards the bungalow at high speed, making full use of his Level 3 Danger Perception Skill to help him avoid incoming attacks. Those bullets would be enough to take his life if they landed on him, but as long as they did not hit, even 35mm Grenades would not be able to cause him any harm.

Dong Zi had a smug look on his face as he dodged each of the bullets with relative ease, before arriving in front of the bungalow. He fired several shots at the lock and destroyed it as he viciously kicked down the door.

The moment he kicked the door open, his smug look was wiped clean from his face, which promptly turned ash grey.

With a resounding 'BANG!', the claymore that Guo Quan had placed behind the door exploded upon the impact of the door being kicked in. The fearsome expulsion of flame and whistling shrapnel completely engulfed Dong Zi, directly blasting his head off and turning his body into a fountain of tattered, bloody pieces.

"Dong Zi!! Damn bastards!!!"

Zhang Bao's eyes were filled with fury and shock as Dong Zi, an Evolver with tyrannical strength, had actually died to a claymore!

Evolvers were naturally gifted. As long as they were nurtured, their latent potential far outstripped that of normal Enhancers. If it was a normal battle on the ground, Dong Zi, as an Agility-based

Evolver, could easily take care of Guo Quan and his men. However, due to his carelessness and complacency, Dong Zi had fallen for the claymore trap set by Guo Quan. This led Zhang Bao to feel angry, since he had always been proud of being an Evolver and believed Evolvers to be a special existence. Yet Dong Zi had been killed by a normal person, which led to his belief being shaken.

When Dong Zi was killed, the morale of the Ning Guang County soldiers plunged. Dong Zi, Zhang Bao and Niu Sheng were the strongest Evolvers in the whole of Ning Guang County, yet one of them had actually died while trying to assault the bungalow! Coincidentally, this gave rise to fear in the remaining soldiers' hearts.

"Haha, we killed that bastard!"

Inside the bungalow, Guo Quan and the other 4 remaining warriors were celebrating with raucous cheers.

Dong Zi's dodging capabilities and wraith-like speed had allowed Guo Quan and the other recon warriors to experience for themselves the fearsome abilities of Evolvers. The fact that they had actually managed to bring one down filled them with pride.

One of the warriors piped up worriedly,

"Squad Leader, our ammunition is running low. Each of the .05 Light Machine Guns have only a handful of bullets left. We are also left with only 4 grenades, while hand grenades number about 39. I'm afraid we won't be able to hold out much longer."

As they had been constantly laying down suppressing fire in attempts to push back the enemy troops, they had expended a huge amount of their ammunition.

Guo Quan brought out a canteen of water and he took a large gulp before saying lightly,

"We'll just allow them get closer before using the hand grenades to bomb them!"

Guo Quan looked at his fellow soldiers who had fought hard, as he spoke out apologetically,

"I'm sorry my brothers, initially we were to pull back after destroying one of their vehicles. I should have brought you guys and retreated. This time, I'm afraid that I've caused you all to face death in battle with me!"

Gu Lian looked at Guo Quan as he guffawed,

"Leader, why are you standing on ceremony?! We are definitely willing to fight by your side all the way. Since we have become warriors, there will definitely be a day when we have to die. Even if it's not during a battle with enemies, it will likely be during a battle with zombies. Being able to die with you, I have no regrets! After 18 years, I'll be a hero once again!\* Haha!"

[TN: A Chinese saying where people believe that after death, they get to reincarnate and can still lead a good life, especially if they are worthy in the current life/good karma. Adulthood is reached at 18 years of age, so after 18 years in their next life, they'll become great once again.]

"That's right!! Leader, we have already killed so many of those evil bastards, it's definitely worth it!"

The rest of the warriors cheered enthusiastically. Even at death's door, their morale remained high. They had previously led lives not worth living at Clear Wind Camp while under Lie Tianyang's rule, and it was Yue Zhong who had given them a new lease on life. He brought them into the army, gave them strength and respect, and led them on to victory after victory. They were completely willing to fight for him.

Right at this moment, in the blink of an eye. The back wall of the bungalow had a hole blown right through it and Yue Zhong strode in. Upon seeing his valiant warriors in such dire straits, he said, "Don't worry, you won't die here!"

"Battalion Commander!!"

"Commander, you've come!!"

Upon seeing Yue Zhong appear, Guo Quan and the rest stood up excitedly.

Yue Zhong patted Guo Quan's shoulder and said,

"This time, it's all thanks to you guys that they have been stalled. Join me and we shall stop their advance for a while! Let's kill them all!"

In fact, Guo Quan and the other recon warriors had dragged out the advance of Ning County for so long, that it actually went far beyond Yue Zhong's high expectations. After all, although the recon warriors had excellent equipment, they were still only a 10-man team that was up against a force over 1000 men strong!

[UBPC: This! Is! SPARTAAAAAAA! XD]

The efforts of the recon warriors gave Yue Zhong's side precious response time, and a huge 'net' was being cast out swiftly right now to surround and decimate the invaders in one go.

"Yes!!" Guo Quan and the rest cried out, full of exhilaration.

Yue Zhong then threw a large bag on the ground, revealing its contents: a great amount of ammunition! When the recon warriors saw it, they immediately stepped forward to take 3 magazines each, reloading their weapons.

Next, Yue Zhong activated his Encompassing Body Armor, before walking to the front of the bungalow to observe the enemy's current situation.

Zhang Bao hesitated for a while, before ordering the advance of the Elite 3rd Company once again.

Under the pressure of Zhang Bao, the elite warriors set out on another assault attempt.

Yue Zhong watched the incoming soldiers before laughing coldly

at their actions. Taking out his .05 Submachine Gun, he proceeded to fire in wild swathes at the elite soldiers of Ning County.

Regardless, Yue Zhong's shooting skill was now extremely valiant after he had polished it countless times in the past; he constantly shot at the elite soldiers charging at him, killing them one by one.

Those elite soldiers also began to return fire at Yue Zhong one after another. However, he did not dodge as the bullets simply ricocheted off of his armor. He was like an indestructible killing machine that was constantly bringing death to all the enemies, decimating the elite Ning Guang County soldiers one after another.

Once twenty of the enemy soldiers had been wounded or killed by Yue Zhong, the Elite 3rd Company's morale plummeted once again. They flooded backwards in retreat, leaving behind corpses and injured comrades alike.

After several charges, the 3rd Company had already lost 45 of its members, the loss amounting to more than half of their initial size. The final result was the loss of all fighting spirit. Of course, It would be the same even for actual military troops before Z-Day, not to mention these soldiers who have not even gone through strict military training.

Only zombies with no intellect or Mutant Beasts would be able to continue attacking under this much mental pressure.

Zhang Bao gritted his teeth as he ordered fiercely,

"Elite 4th Company, you're up! Bring 4 of the rocket launchers, destroy that building and annihilate the enemies!"

Zhang Bai had coincidentally packed along 8 rocket launchers with 40-round drums. He had intended to use them against Yue Zhong and Lie Tianyang, but he had never expected that such a small resistance force could force him to reveal his hand. He had no choice but to thoroughly exterminate them.

Heavy weaponry like 40-round Rocket Launchers were

considered valuable assets in Ning Guang County, and they were obviously limited in numbers. Zhang Bao was also quite conservative in their usage. However, after being forced to such a state, he had no choice but to blow them away.

If Zhang Bao didn't give his all in exterminating this troublesome enemy, he wouldn't be able to dispel the shadow in his heart.

"40-round Rocket Launcher! Are they finally using heavy weaponry?"

Yue Zhong gazed at the four enemy soldiers hoisting the precious weapons as he laughed icily. With a few gestures, he ignited 4 Devil Flame fireballs in the air, before sending them away swiftly to bombard the four rocket launchers.

Following four horrifying sounds, the four 40-round Rocket Launchers immediately exploded! The resulting blast directly killed or injured the four elite soldiers carrying them, as well as wounding eight others in the vicinity, leaving behind little but their resounding wails of agony.

After Yue Zhong had raised his Devil Flame Skill to Level 2, he was able to summon the flame with just a thought. He could also conjure up four blazing fireballs simultaneously, which he could use to attack enemies far away.

Upon destroying the four 40-round rocket launchers, Yue Zhong took out his own deadly QJZ89 127mm Heavy Machine Gun, firing wildly at the remaining warriors of the 4th Company who had only just begun to charge at the bungalow.

The terrifying 127mm-caliber Heavy Machine Gun was like a frenzied killing machine as it spewed forth a terrifying hail of bullets. Any elite soldier caught in its line of fire would be immediately torn apart with their head exploding, shoulders blasted to pieces, and even their limbs shredded by the bullets. The entire scene of blood and carnage was quite terrifying.



The elite soldiers who had tried to rush forward earlier had instead served their lives on a platter to Yue Zhong, and within moments, another 20 soldiers had perished. The remaining soldiers discarded all thoughts of advancing as they dove for cover and shivered while thinking about the scene they had just experienced.

"An Evolver? There's an expert on their side!! It's very likely that the assault this time around has already failed, so our priority right now is to retreat."

"Retreat immediately!!"

Zhang Bao looked at the defeated soldiers of the 3rd and 4th Companies, his expression turning sour as he quickly issued orders to flee.

The moment the Ning Guang County soldiers heard Zhang Bao's orders, they immediately began to scramble back towards their vehicles; not a single person was willing to stay here even a moment longer.

"We're finished!! The return route is blocked!!"

"Tank!! It's a tank!! Oh my God, there's actually a tank!!"

Just when the soldiers were preparing to escape in their vehicles, four Type 69 tanks suddenly appeared behind them and cut off their retreat route, leaving them momentarily stunned. The appearance of the tanks filled all the soldiers' hearts with a creeping sense of dread and despondence, as none of them were equipped to deal with tanks.

# Chapter 240: Seizing Ning Guang County

---

When Zhang Bao saw the four Type 69 tanks, his face immediately turned deathly pale,

"Tanks!!!! They actually have tanks!! How is it that they have things like them?!"

On land, tanks were the kings of modern weaponry. As long as the target was hit, one shot fired by the tank was enough to turn even an Evolver like Zhang Bao into mincemeat. The 2 battalions of elite troops from Ning Guang County would be almost completely crushed once the 4 tanks began their assault, whilst those remaining would be slaughtered by Yue Zhong and his men.

Niu Sheng ran to Zhang Bao's side, his face deathly pale as he exclaimed,

"Brother Bao! Let's quickly escape!! If we stay here any longer, we will become Yue Zhong's captives!"

He had already noticed that there were military vehicles mounted with machine guns coming towards them, indicating that Yue Zhong's main forces were now hurrying over.

If Yue Zhong's main forces managed to reach them, the Ning Guang County soldiers would have absolutely no way of escaping.

Zhang Bao glanced at the army vehicles and tanks that were noisily approaching. He was very clear that his side didn't possess the necessary strength to even defend against a single attack from Yue Zhong's forces. Eventually, he gritted his teeth and made a prompt decision to abandon the elite soldiers from the two companies as he escaped together with Niu Sheng into the wilderness.

When the Ning Guang County soldiers saw that their two leaders were escaping, they, who already had low morale, lost all of their remaining willpower, causing their force to completely collapse as

they escaped one after another.

"Throw down your weapons, we won't kill those who surrender!! Surrender and you shall be spared!!"

Yue Zhong's forces closed in on the despairing soldiers, managing to round up a huge portion of them. However, some of the luckier ones managed to evade capture as they ran away.

Due to the outstanding efforts of Guo Quan and his team, Yue Zhong's side had only lost 5 men in the throes of battle, yet they had caused 98 casualties on the opposing side, captured 687 of the remaining enemies and even killed an Agility-based Evolver. They had even gained 2 whole companies' worth of equipment and a large number of vehicles.

"Battalion Commander! What do you need me for?"

Liu Erhei shouted as he excitedly ran forward towards Yue Zhong. Just now, he had led some soldiers to chase and round up those Ning Guang County runaways, causing him to become elated about his success.

Yue Zhong said heavily,

"Bring some people and take the captives back to town. I'm taking our forces out to take down Ning Guang County. Until I'm back, you have to defend Mahogany Town well! All you need to do is coordinate with Chen Ming to protect the town and you will have rendered a great merit!"

Liu Erhei's greatest strength was his ability to follow orders,

"Yes! Battalion Commander!"

Yue Zhong lightly nodded before bringing Zhang Niujiang and Xiong Zheng with him. Both warriors were armed to the teeth. Their subordinates drove the four Type 69 tanks and a large number of other military vehicles that were fully loaded with arms as they sped towards Ning Guang County.

In the current era, the strong devoured the weak. The attack by the 2 battalions from Ning Guang County had revealed that their soldiers lacked training. Their morale wasn't high, nor was their fighting spirit strong. Adding to the fact that they lacked heavy weaponry, Yue Zhong couldn't resist the desire to obtain this tasty piece of meat.

When Clear Wind Camp was at its weakest, Ning Guang County had tried to take advantage of the fact to swallow them up. Yue Zhong now wanted to turn the tables and make use of this chance to subdue them instead. As long as he could obtain Ning Guang County's food and people, Yue Zhong's forces would grow tremendously.

Ning Guang County was not like Qing Yuan County with a huge city wall surrounding it. However, to prevent possible assaults by zombies or Mutant Beasts, there were many tall wooden fences that surrounded the roads leading to the main town.

At the same time, they had garrisoned soldiers who were in charge of keeping watch along the main road.

A Ning Guang County soldier, who was carrying a Type 03 Rifle, was currently yawning from time to time. As he lazily gazed into the distance, he suddenly straightened his eyes and hollered loudly,

"Attack! There's an enemy vehicle fleet approaching!!"

The other 7 soldiers on duty immediately stood up and looked into the distance. Upon confirmation of the enemy, their faces turned pale as they shouted,

"Tank! There is actually a tank!!"

In the distance, four steel behemoths were constantly getting closer. Following behind the tanks, there was a long line of military vehicles fitted with various machine guns.

Right as the eight soldiers were considering whether to escape or

not, a young man carrying a white flag strode up to the 8 soldiers and spoke in a manner that was neither servile nor overbearing,

"I am Xu Feng, a representative for Mahogany Town's Yue Zhong. I would like to request an audience with your Highest Commanding Officer Tao Zhengyi."

Inside Ning Guang County's CPC county committee conference hall, Tao Zhengyi was currently staring at Xu Feng and the person standing beside him with an ashen face. The person acting as Xu Feng's bodyguard was actually Yue Zhong. Tao Zhengyi spoke coldly,

"What do you want?! Speak!"

Xu Feng and Yue Zhong had already been searched, and did not possess any weapons. Tao Zhengyi had also brought along 11 Enhancers for his own protection, and so he wasn't too concerned about his own safety.

Xu Feng immediately came on strong and said,

"President Tao, the 2 battalions you previously sent to attack us have already been annihilated. This time, we have brought along our own forces and hope for you to surrender unconditionally. In exchange, we would protect your assets and guarantee your family's safety. If we have to force our way in, I'm afraid we can't promise the same."

Tao Zhengyi's small eyes glinted maliciously with a look of shock. He retorted coldly,

"Are you threatening me right now? Ning Guang County has a population of 15,000 and a 4000-man strong army. We even have an entire military camp's worth of equipment, if you dare to attack my Ning Guang County, just know that my 4000 soldiers are not vegetarians.\*"

[\*TN: It's said that vegetarians have not seen blood, so if you are not a vegetarian... you get the gist.]

[UBPC: Celery bleeds green >.>]

"Nevertheless, this matter truly was an error on my part first. I'm willing to hand over 3000 tonnes of rations, 20 beautiful ladies, 1 tonne of fuel and 150kg of gold as compensation."

After 'flexing his muscles', Tao Zhengyi immediately attempted a soft approach.

Ning Guang County had 5 main battalions, as well as an additional battalion that was dedicated to public security, making its forces number about 3000 people in total. Tao Zhengyi's claim of 4000 soldiers was just a figure of speech, and it didn't mean that his numbers equated to strength. Amongst the 5 battalions, Yue Zhong had already subdued 2. There were 4 battalions left, and if the soldiers in charge of public security were to try and fight with their cold weapons, it was tantamount to suicide. As for the other 3 battalions, only they had proper military equipment, but they did not possess enough heavy weaponry.

Ning Guang County had 2 infantry fighting vehicles that could be dangerous, but like Yue Zhong, they lacked the manpower and knowledge to operate the advanced weaponry. Therefore, when facing Xu Feng's intimidation, Tao Zhengyi wanted to display his own power and threaten them before offering another way out. This was all in the hope that they could try to reconcile matters between Yue Zhong's side and his.

The four Type 69 tanks outside Ning Guang County were also giving Tao Zhengyi a huge amount of pressure. Tanks, they were considered the kings of land-based modern warfare!

Yue Zhong looked at Tao Zhengyi and he instantly activated his Art of Fear Skill, causing a terrifying spiritual pressure to spread out with him as the centre.

Everyone was caught off-guard, and other than Yue Zhong, everyone was engulfed in the huge area of effect of the Art of Fear. Since Xu Feng and Tao Zhengyi were only normal people, they

immediately fainted. Out of the 11 Enhancers that Tao Zhengyi had brought, 7 of them also fainted directly while 3 others could only hug their heads in agony.

Only the strongest, Tao Zhengyi's only remaining Evolver Tie Ya, remained conscious despite the sharp pain in his head. His eyes were filled with shock and fear as he pointed at Yue Zhong and exclaimed,

"Evolver!!"

Yue Zhong looked at Tie Ya, saying coldly,

"You're also an Evolver right? Surrender or you'll die here!"

"Go to hell!!"

Tie Ya bit the tip of his tongue as a scarlet glow flashed past his eyes. With a wave of his hands, many blades of air were flung in Yue Zhong's direction one after another.

Tie Ya was a Spirit-based Evolver. He possessed the Level 3 Skill: Air Manipulation, which had already undergone 2 enhancements to reach Level 5, making its power truly fearsome. The sharp blades of air could even cut through a gun! Furthermore, the air blades were formless and left no tracks, making them very hard to defend against.

[Deduction: Gun? What type of gun? For all I know, this might be a plastic gun designed for undercover missions. Ambiguous way to let me know his strength. Pfft...]

"It's useless! You're too weak!"

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps Skill and with a flash of his body, he easily dodged the air blades. He then appeared behind Tie Ya and grabbed his neck, before forcefully twisting and breaking it with a resounding 'Crack'!

Yue Zhong then directly poured a drink onto Tao Zhengyi's face, waking him up.

He took out a gun and held it to the space between Tao Zhengyi's eyebrows as he spoke with a voice full of killing intent,

"Will you surrender to me right now! Or should I cut your head off and show it to all your subordinates? Do you want to try and see who will still fight to the death for you after your death?"

Yue Zhong had risked entering Ning Guang County purely for Tao Zhengyi. If Tao Zhengyi had surrendered willingly, then that would've been it. Even if he had refused, Ning Guang County would be without a leader after killing him, and so seizing the county would be easier.

Tao Zhengyi could feel the gun pressed against his head as he looked at the fainted soldiers and the defeated Tie Ya. Laughing bitterly, he spoke,

"I admit defeat. I surrender, please spare my life."

Tao Zhengyi was not a soldier who did not care about death. Like most people, compared to death, he would rather live on.

Tao Zhengyi then asked carefully,

"May I know who you are?"

Tao Zhengyi's perception was rather good, and he could tell that the person in front of him was not ordinary. He guessed that the person before him had to be Yue Zhong. In Clear Wind Camp, the only person who could take care of his Evolver Tie Ya so easily was Yue Zhong himself.

Yue Zhong gazed at Tao Zhengyi for a moment before replying blandly,

"I'm Yue Zhong."

Tao Zhengyi laughed bitterly. He didn't expect that he had actually brought in such a huge shark, nor did he expect that Yue Zhong would actually enter the enemy camp by pretending to be an envoy, even when he was the backbone of Clear Wind Camp.



With Tao Zhengyi's cooperation, Yue Zhong's forces successfully entered Ning Guang County easily and occupied all the strategic locations. At the same time, they disarmed the 4 remaining battalions and carefully gathered all the equipment.

All of this was witnessed by the indifferent survivors of Ning Guang County.

Although Ning Guang County possessed 80,000 tonnes of rations, like many other rulers, Tao Zhengyi had only provided his direct subordinates with ample supplies. As for the normal survivors, he gave them barely enough to survive. It was the same tactic that Yue Zhong and most other leaders would have used.

After all, the current situation was still quite bleak and crops could not be grown yet. They would save as much as they could, just so it would last longer in the future. Tao Zhengyi naturally wouldn't squander the rations in his possession.

## Chapter 241: Tong Xiaoyun evolves, the Military attacks!

---

After Yue Zhong gained control over Ning Guang County, he immediately increased the rations from 1 bowl of gruel to 3 bowls a day for the survivors, hence gaining the appreciation of most of them.

The original 6 battalions of Ning Guang County also went through changes, with Yue Zhong only selecting the best. With the original soldiers under him as the main core, he formed a strengthened regiment that comprised 4 battalions.

Liu Erhei, Xiong Zheng and Zhang Niujiang were all promoted to become Camp Leaders. From the previous battle in which Guo Quan's decisive actions had caught Yue Zhong's eye, Guo Quan had also now been promoted to a Company Leader.

After the battalion was formed, Yue Zhong continuously put them under strict training. The meat from the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake was also beneficial in boosting the recovery rate and strength of the soldiers who were pushed past their daily limits in training, letting them enter a period of immense growth.

"There's news of Yue Zhong!"

In Qing Yuan County's conference hall, Chi Yang had gathered all the high-ranking officers.

Da Gouzi could not help but exclaim,

"Where is Boss Yue right now??"

Lu Wen was also anxious and she asked,

"Chi Yang, where is Yue Zhong! Quickly tell us!"

"Vice Commander Chi, where is Captain Yue right now? Tell us quickly!!"

Liu Yan asked with scarlet eyes.

The rest of the people gathered also looked towards Chi Yang anxiously, awaiting info about Yue Zhong's location.

After Yue Zhong had lured the Type 2 Mutant Black-scaled Ferocious Boar away to protect the 1st Battalion's main soldiers and was declared missing, Qing Yuan County had lost their core. Some were even affected adversely. However, under Chi Yang's leadership, they stuck to their plans according to Yue Zhong's instructions. As per normal they continued to clear the zombies and expand outwards while looking for other survivors and rations. They simply didn't engage in any major operations.

Chi Yang's expression did not falter as he replied lightly,

"Yue Zhong is currently in Ning Guang County. He has subdued them and established another stronghold. He is currently the leader of over 17,000 people."

17,000 people!!

Hearing that number, the officials present could not help but let loose a cool breath. During the time that Yue Zhong was declared missing, they also had a huge number of survivors join them, but their total number was still currently only 12,000. Yue Zhong had actually established such a huge base all by himself, and in such a short period of time as well! It filled them with veneration, yet also pressure of some sort!

Guo Yu's pretty features were currently frowning as she said worriedly,

"Ning Guang County! That's the county just down from SY County right! There is a huge sea of zombies there blocking the way, and their numbers are definitely above 10,000."

Guo Yu was in charge of gathering intelligence, and so she was very clear on the information about the huge sea of zombies.

Obtaining intel was a very important task. If they received

knowledge of an impending zombie horde, they could set things in motion to prepare for a counter-attack or defense. Therefore, there was a specific department set up purely for gathering information.

After Yue Zhong had 'swallowed' Ning Guang County, his total number of dependants had well exceeded the number in Qing Yuan County. However, their fighting force and administrative system could not compare to Qing Yuan County at all.

Chi Yang had a serious expression as he said,

"That's right! Yue Zhong has requested that we start an attack on the horde towards Ning Guang County. He will also dispatch people to attack from his side. From now on, our main priority is to clear the zombies on the road towards Ning Guang County. I hope that everybody will give their all as the faster we clear a path, the faster we can meet up with Yue Zhong again."

"Yes!!"

All of them replied loudly in unison and their morale reached a high.

After coming to a decision, the entire Qing Yuan County went up in a buzz. All the elite warriors of the First and Second Battalion were mobilized to head towards Ning Guang County's direction and commence small-scale attacks on the zombie hordes.

"Brother Yue, did you want me for something?"

Back in Ning Guang County, after an entire day of training, the originally fair-skinned beauty Tong Xiaoyun had now become quite tanned; she came up to Yue Zhong's side and asked curiously.

Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun both joined in the tough military training that the soldiers of the forces undertook. Both of them originally had fair, satiny skin, which was now quite tanned.

Both Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun hoped to gain more strength to fight alongside Yue Zhong. As for Gu Manzi, Ma Lili and Zeng Fang, they were unwilling to put themselves through all

that hellish training, preferring to enjoy the lavish lifestyle within the comfort of the villa instead.

"Eat this!"

Yue Zhong took out a pink Snake Birth Fruit and gave it to Tong Xiaoyun.

Once she had received it, Tong Xiaoyun popped it into her mouth without any hesitation. After spending quite a lot of time together, she knew that Yue Zhong would definitely not harm her.

As soon as the pink Snake Birth Fruit entered Tong Xiaoyun's abdomen, it transformed into a warm surge of energy that started to strengthen every part of her body. She was immediately affected by the rise in temperature and her own body started burning up. Feeling light-headed and short of breath, she promptly fainted in Yue Zhong's arms.

"Husband! What are you doing?"

Zhuo Yatong looked at the limp Tong Xiaoyun in Yue Zhong's arms, wrinkled her nose and said tactfully,

"If you want her, just let her know. Why do you need to resort to means like drugging her?"

Tong Xiaoyun had a reddish hue to her skin and was breathing heavily. In addition to the fact that she was collapsed limply in Yue Zhong's embrace, it looked as if she had just been drugged and was about to be taken advantage of. Yue Zhong looked at Zhuo Yatong and said lightly,

"I'm just trying to help her evolve!"

Zhuo Yatong carefully observed Tong Xiaoyun again, before saying apologetically,

"I'm sorry, I've wronged you."

Yue Zhong just smiled to show that he didn't take it to heart.

Tong Xiaoyun had a fever for the entire day. She woke up the

next day and the moment she awakened, she saw Yue Zhong sitting beside her.

Yue Zhong looked at Tong Xiaoyun as she awoke and he smiled lightly,

"You're awake! Feeling better?"

Tong Xiaoyun looked at Yue Zhong excitedly and exclaimed,

"Mm! I'm much better!! Brother Yue, I've become an Evolver! I am a Spirit-attributed Evolver and I even possess the Telekinesis Ability!!"

To demonstrate, she pointed to her right and a flower vase flew straight into her hands. It really was telekinesis.

Upon obtaining this ability, Tong Xiaoyun was elated and she continually moved different objects about the room, making them fly around.

Yue Zhong looked at Tong Xiaoyun indulging in her new ability and asked,

"Can you try moving me?"

Yue Zhong wanted to see if this new ability could be used on humans. If so, then this ability was truly overpowered. It could almost be invincible.

"I'll try!"

Tong Xiaoyun's eyebrows furrowed as she used her ability on Yue Zhong. However, when the power landed on Yue Zhong, it felt like a stone sinking down into the huge ocean-there was no effect.

"It's no use!"

Tong Xiaoyun said dejectedly.

Yue Zhong consoled her,

"It's alright. Your power is already strong enough as it is. I'm guessing that this ability cannot be used on living things. But you

can definitely use your telekinesis to make use of objects to attack enemies. If you're strong enough, I think you could even stop bullets."

"Mm!"

Tong Xiaoyun nodded her head as she looked down at her hands. She was taken aback before running to the washroom and squealing,

"My skin is fair again. My skin is fair again!!"

After consuming the Snake Birth Fruit, she had undergone a transformation and the pollutants in her body were dispelled. Even her skin that had become tanned under the sun regained its fairness.

[Divine: Yue Zhong is going to make a fortune from selling this miraculous fruit to all those peerless oval-faced beauties with jade-like snow-white skin and charming eyes out there!...]

Tong Xiaoyun had chosen to go through the high intensity training with the soldiers. Even though she had gained strong combat abilities, she was still a girl and as she watched her skin become more and more tanned under the sun as the days went by, she also felt pained.

"Brother Yue! You're the best!"

Tong Xiaoyun ran out from the bathroom and leapt into Yue Zhong's arms, kissing his face a few times.

Being kissed by a beauty was definitely something Yue Zhong felt good about. He lowered his head to kiss Tong Xiaoyun, and she responded by wrapping her arms around Yue Zhong and began to passionately make out with him.

Once their lips had parted, a thin strand of saliva still hanging between them broke.

Tong Xiaoyun's face turned a deep shade of red once again, but

this time her eyes seemed to fog over as she licked her lips seductively and said,

"Brother Yue, I'm all yours!"

Her joy at successfully becoming an Evolver, as well as her gratitude and veneration towards Yue Zhong, culminated in an overwhelming desire to express her love physically.

Yue Zhong stared at the welcoming beauty before him, a delicate, alluring girl who was still in her youth, and he couldn't help but feel some arousal in his heart.

"Husband, something's happened! The military has sent people over!"

Right when Yue Zhong was about to start doing something, Zhuo Yatong pushed open the door and walked in, her face full of worry.

"What? The army is attacking?"

Yue Zhong's face paled, and all notions of getting frisky with Tong Xiaoyun immediately went out the door as he strode outside.

Tong Xiaoyun cursed the army under her breath for having such bad timing. She fixed her clothes and donned her protective equipment, before taking up her Tang Replica Sword and walking out.

Not far from Ning Guang County, there was an army squad dressed neatly in proper army uniform that looked extremely well-disciplined. They advanced towards Ning Guang County in Armed Personnel Carriers (APCs), with two Infantry Fighting Vehicles and two 122mm Self-propelled Howitzers leading the way.

"This is going to be tough!"

Standing on high ground with a reconnaissance company, Guo Quan observed the neatly-dressed, well-trained official military soldiers and his eyebrows furrowed tightly.

Yue Zhong had obtained ten Type 69 Tanks and even some



122mm Self-propelled Howitzers when he had opened up the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station. However, the problem was that there was no one under him who knew how to operate these modern weapons. That time when he had taken over Ning Guang County, the 4 tanks were purely there to intimidate the enemy and not a single shot was fired.

Right now, the approaching official military force possessed two IFVs. Even more fearsome was the fact that there were also two 122mm Self-propelled Howitzers. Furthermore, they had an entire battalion of properly-trained soldiers, with fighting strength that might even exceed ten times that of the 3000 soldiers once under Tao Zhengyi.

Just when the army had reached the gates of Ning Guang County, Xu Feng brought a white flag as he walked towards the army and said,

"I am Ning Guang County's representative Xu Feng and I hope to exchange a few words with your commander."

Two of the soldiers stared at Xu Feng coldly before saying heavily,

"Move!"

Under the watchful escort of the 2 soldiers, Xu Feng was sent into the midst of one of the battalions to see the leader of this entourage.

"Damn! What a stunning yet cold beauty!"

The moment Xu Feng entered the camp, he saw an absolute beauty with a head of jet-black long hair and an incredibly sexy body that would not lose to that of Zhuo Yatong, However, she possessed an icy personality that seemed to even seep out from her bones, causing him to exclaim out loud.

Two other ladies dressed similarly in military uniform, also with striking features, stood to either side of that peerless beauty. All

three of them seemed to form a picture of a safflower flanked by its beautiful green leaves.

"I am Shen Xue, the leader that you seek. What do you want! Speak!"

The ice-cold beauty stared at Xu Feng and coldly asked.

Xu Feng replied without skipping a beat,

"I am Xu Feng, a subordinate of Ning Guang County's leader Yue Zhong. May I be so bold as to ask, what's the purpose of this visit by the esteemed army to our Ning Guang County?"

One of the beauties, who was tall, extremely refined, had short hair and a goose-egg face, spoke out smilingly,

"Hi there, Xu Feng. I am L?? Ning. The municipal leading body of SY County has a very good impression of your group of survivors, having reorganized yourselves, rescued the masses and defended your resources. This time, the purpose of our visit is to convey the message from SY County, that there will be an appointed leader being sent down to take over. Your survivors will soon be able to return to the government and reunite with the other citizens."

(TN: goose-egg face is just another one of those Chinese beauty things...it's basically self-explanatory)

Standing to the left of Shen Xue was the short-haired L?? Ning, while standing to the right was a beauty with an oval face, Gao Lina. They were Shen Xue's confidants and best friends.

When Xu Feng heard this, he knew L?? Ning and the rest were here to capture Ning Guang County, this big fat piece of meat. Yue Zhong had not taken over for a very long time and another tiger who had been eyeing this piece of meat had now made its move.

Xu Feng pondered a while, before replying warmly,

"Ning Guang County already has a decent government and

administration set-up, we do not need any new leaders. Please head back to SY County."

Shen Xue immediately refused flatly,

"You go back and tell Yue Zhong! Tell him to surrender immediately and I'll spare his life. Otherwise, when my army attacks Ning Guang County, I will definitely take his life. I'm only giving you people 30 minutes to consider! Now go back!"

Xu Feng had wanted to reply, but was forcefully sent out by Shen Xue's subordinates.

Seeing that Xu Feng had been dismissed, L◆◆ Ning laughed at Shen Xue,

"Xuexue, you're so aggressive!"

With an electric gaze, Shen Xue stared at her friend and said,

"This is wartime! You should address me as Battalion Commander Shen!"

L◆◆ Ning laughed lightly and said,

"Yes! Yes! Commander Shen! You're so overbearing. That Yue Zhong really doesn't know what's good for him. He actually wants to reject our Commander Shen, he really is courting death!"

Shen Xue's eyes flashed with a resolute gleam,

"When our nation is facing a crisis, those who establish their own base of operations are the worst kind of scum. I will definitely wipe them out and let them know the prowess of the People's Liberation Army."

# Chapter 242: Overbearing Military Soldiers!

---

"As expected, strength speaks volumes!"

Xu Feng swiftly relayed Shen Xue's intentions to Yue Zhong and after some preparation, he started walking towards the front.

As he had just successfully snatched Ning Guang County, he would definitely not give it up. Whomever wanted to take it from him had to pay the price in blood. It was the same even if it was the army.

"It is indeed the military!!" After arriving at the front lines, Yue Zhong noticed that the battalion members were already well hidden behind cover in the distance. Furthermore, there seemed to be a few snipers located in some unknown areas. He could only sense the killing intent enveloping him but not the direction.

Although the opposing force consisted of only a battalion, Yue Zhong was very clear that if both sides clashed, the 4 battalions under him would not be a serious match for the enemy's single battalion.

With a thought Yue Zhong activated his Encompassing Body Armor, and dashed out into the wilderness. He proceeded for some time in a roundabout manner, making his way behind enemy lines.

There, placed behind the army, were the two 122mm Howitzers. A squad of soldiers were stationed as guards for these 2 advanced weapons, surrounding them in a group fashion.

[https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/122\\_mm\\_howitzer\\_2A18\\_\(D-30\)](https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/122_mm_howitzer_2A18_(D-30))

These 2 Howitzers could be considered the most important weapons for the army! With just the cumulative firepower of these 2 monsters, they could wipe out almost anything. It was also an instrument that could seriously impact the morale of enemy troops. Facing that kind of firepower was enough to cause feelings of desolation in any soldier. Cruelly crushing and eradicating any

hope of fighting back. Only the toughest in terms of mental strength could stand in the face of such weapons and fight to the death without retreating.

Yue Zhong slowly made his way nearer to the 2 metal behemoths before suddenly erupting! Making his move, he drew his PF98 120mm Anti-Tank Missile Launcher and fired a shot at one of the Howitzers.

<https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/PF-98>

A flash, immediately followed by a huge explosion! The 122mm Howitzer instantly became a huge ball of fire and scrap.

Yue Zhong's utterly crazy actions had shocked the soldiers surrounding the two Howitzers for a second; just as fast, they started firing at him.

The difference in shooting capability between the military soldiers and those under Tao Zhengyi was basically heaven and earth. Even under the barrage of firepower as well as Yue Zhong's constant evasion, a number of bullets still found their way to his body, only to ultimately be repelled by his Encompassing Body Armor.

Dodging another hail of bullets, Yue Zhong rolled on the ground as he once again aimed the PF98 and fired a shot at the final remaining Howitzer.

With a flash, the huge metal monster exploded into flames.

In response, the military displayed their fearsome aiming skills. As soon as Yue Zhong had fired the anti-tank missile, 2 separate bullets from distant snipers managed to find their way to the spot between Yue Zhong's brows, only to be repelled by the Encompassing Body Armor once again!

Without White Bone's ability, Yue Zhong could have well died under even one of those sniper shots.

After eradicating the 2 Howitzers, Yue Zhong took out several

hand grenades. Aiming at the line of enemy soldiers, he threw them using his strength that was 5 times that of a normal person. Upon impact, the grenades immediately exploded on their targets.

A total of 7 soldiers were caught by the huge explosion and were blasted to smithereens!

Yue Zhong made use of the ensuing chaos to leap from his position and swiftly escape off into the distance.

While it was true that normal rifle bullets could not do anything to Yue Zhong, that was not the only weapon the military had! There were also grenade launchers, rocket launchers, mortars and many other different types of weaponry. The moment the warriors recovered enough to group together and attack him, he would be dead in a matter of seconds.

Ping! Ping!

The telltale sounds of 2 gunshots rang out once more as Yue Zhong, who was in the middle of escaping, received another 2 bullets, this time to the back of his head. However, they too were deflected off by the Encompassing Body Armor and seemed to not affect him in the slightest.

Yue Zhong escaped into the forest some ways before climbing up a huge tree quite easily. He took out a JS12.7mm Sniper Rifle and aimed towards the line of remaining soldiers.

[Kun: Couldn't find this rifle for reference. Any of our gun readers know?]

[Dcblol:<http://baike.baidu.com/view/1447109.htm> (explanation of some sort in Chinese). But yeah, do any of our gun readers know anything about it?]

With a 'peng!', one of the soldiers immediately died on the spot after suffering a fatal headshot.

The remainder of the soldiers immediately opened fire towards the location from which the shot originated, but due to the great

distance, the bullets flew randomly and not a single one was able to hit Yue Zhong.

Having climbed up the huge tree, Yue Zhong proceeded to take down the enemy soldiers with ease.

After another 5 soldiers were quickly picked off by Yue Zhong, they didn't dare to risk showing themselves again. Instead, they did the only thing they could and sent for reinforcements.

Shen Xue was currently in the middle of discussion with L?? N??ng and Gao Lina on how to situate the matters of Ning Guang County after they had successfully taken over. All of a sudden, they heard the sounds of the violently explosive destruction of the Howitzers.

"They have made their move!! The time limit we set is still not up and yet they dare to make a move first???"

When Shen Xue heard the huge explosion, her expression froze before she gritted her teeth and forcefully spat out each of those words. She had never imagined that before her imposed time limit of 30 minutes was even up, Yue Zhong had already taken the initiative to launch an attack first.

The Army represented the most superior force after the apocalypse. All along, no one had dared to go against the military. Not to mention even attacking military soldiers, Yue Zhong was the first to actually attack an entire military base!

If it wasn't for Shen Xue forcing Yue Zhong, he really would not have resorted to such extreme measures just to end up antagonizing these fully equipped and well-trained soldiers. However, the 4 battalions he just established were simply not enough to go against this 1 battalion. Their combat prowess was incomparable! His only choice was to rely on their sheer numbers as well as his own tyrannical strength.

L?? N??ng also found herself gritting her teeth as she said,

"That was from the direction of our Howitzers! That asshole is too cunning! Arggggh! He actually destroyed our Howitzers!"

Those two 122mm Howitzers were their most prized killing machines. With a single shot, they could instantly decimate the opposing firepower.

The bungalow that would be in the way of Shen Xue and the military was manned by Guo Quan and his team of 9. With just a single blast from the Howitzer, they would be pulverized, completely regardless of how strong their fighting spirit was!

Without those Howitzers, Shen Xue and her battalion would have a much harder time trying to fight their way through.

Gao Lina's eyes met Shen Xue's before saying,

"Commander Shen, should we assign men to take care of the hassle behind us or do we proceed to attack Ning Guang County directly?"

Shen Xue had seen through Yue Zhong's weakness and made the correct decision,

"The person behind this is most likely Yue Zhong himself! He is an extremely powerful Evolver, so if he wants to escape, no matter how hard we try, it would be difficult to kill him. Accordingly, my decision is to directly attack Ning Guang County. As long as we rout them he can only surrender at the end of the day."

You must remember when compared to Shen Xue and her battalion of trained soldiers, the fighting capabilities of Yue Zhong's men was still considered inferior. If Shen Xue had called for the majority of her troops to deal with Yue Zhong, it would be playing right into his hands.

With this decision, the entire battalion started making their way towards Ning Guang County. On the frontlines in charge of defending against the assault of the military was Guo Quan and his team. They were considered the elites amongst the soldiers Yue



Zhong had trained up.

From the moment the battle commenced, Guo Quan could feel the immense pressure issuing forth from the enemy.

With a hail of bullets, the soldiers on the military side began to fire rapidly at Guo Quan's location. The snipers hidden amongst the soldiers were also firing tirelessly, and any soldiers under Yue Zhong unfortunate enough to stick their head out would immediately be picked off by the enemy snipers.

Concurrently, the military soldiers were extremely efficient and systematically firing nonstop, using rocket launchers to concentrate fire on that single location.

Both sides had been engaged in a crossfire for at least 10 minutes, and given the terrain, the Army could only send out smaller companies to engage in the firefight. Guo Quan's company had already lost their 1st line of soldiers. If they weren't the most elite amongst Yue Zhong's troops, they might already have lost all their fighting spirit long ago.

"Company Commander! We can't hold on for much longer!! If this goes on, the brothers will be wiped out!! Let's make a break for it! Please let the brothers preserve their lives!"

One of the platoon commanders was begging Guo Quan. Out of the 30 men he commanded, 13 had died, while 5 had sustained heavy injuries. They had basically lost the greater half of their fighting force

Guo Quan maintained a resolute expression as he ordered,

"Permission denied!! We have received orders to hold this position for 30 minutes!! Regardless of anything, we have to complete this mission!! If the brothers below are wiped out, you will stand your ground. If you are all wiped out, then I shall stand my ground! No matter what, we have to stay for 30 minutes. Get back to your position!"

This strategic entry to Ning Guang County was small and didn't allow too many people to cross it at once. Guo Quan knew he had to wear down the enemy numbers and stamina at this bottleneck, otherwise the battle would be even harder once the military broke past this point.

The platoon commander cursed using a loud voice, before he crouched down and went back to his position.

"F\*ck!! Let's fight to the death then!"

Under the command and leadership of Guo Quan, although Yue Zhong's first company was not enough to win against the enemy company, they were at least able to hold their ground and fend them off. Both of them were still engaged in heavy fire, and the Army also found it difficult to fully suppress the warriors of Yue Zhong's First Company, who were hiding behind cover.

When the army launched their assault, Yue Zhong, who had been suppressing that platoon of soldiers with his superb firing skills, suddenly felt a sense of urgency and his face paled:

"Damn it! They have already commenced their attack!"

"Seems like if I don't risk it, we won't be able to win!"

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, his eyes flashing with a resolute gleam as he jumped down from the tree and charged towards the Army's camp.

That platoon of soldiers had been hiding behind cover and didn't dare to even poke their heads out. If Yue Zhong had maintained this sort of confrontation with the soldiers, by the time Ning Guang County was broken into, he still would not have settled this issue.

Having seen that Yue Zhong had appeared again, the 2 hidden snipers immediately cocked their sniper rifles, firing two bullets which flew towards Yue Zhong.

## Chapter 243: Yue Zhong Vs The Army

---

Right as the bullets were about to land on Yue Zhong, he did a side-step and easily evaded them! He took a glance at the location of the hidden snipers: ever since he had evolved, his senses heightened, which allowed him to pinpoint their location accurately. He cocked his .05 Silenced Submachine Gun and fired rapidly in their direction, immediately killing one.

The other sniper had a stronger perception of danger; after that gunfire, he immediately ducked behind other cover.

Yue Zhong did not continue harassing the other sniper-instead he rushed towards that platoon of soldiers like a tank.

After the earlier skirmish by Yue Zhong, that platoon had only 10 soldiers left. As Yue Zhong suddenly broke through to their location, he fired continuously and killed the remaining 10 soldiers.

After annihilating the line of warriors, with a flash, Yue Zhong continued towards the back of the military.

"What a freak!!"

The remaining sniper hugged his own rifle, as he looked at Yue Zhong rushing towards the military's camp. His face was white, as he had just witnessed the prowess of someone who, by his own strength, managed to decimate an entire squad of elite military soldiers.

The sniper also knew of the existence of Enhancers and Evolvers while he was at SY County. Those who could wipe out an entire squadron on their own, even amongst the 12000 survivors in SY County, numbered 10 at most.

Yue Zhong had just continued not far, before a Type 92 Infantry Fighting Vehicle appeared in front of him. There was a ZPT90 25mm Machine Cannon mounted on top of it, releasing a huge wild

burst of gunfire towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's Danger Perception Skill had already notified him of the danger; just as the ZPT90 set its sights on him, he had already dashed swiftly to the side.

The majority of the bullets from the ZPT90 hit blank air and caused the area to be filled with potholes.

The soldiers from another company were currently using Type QLZ06 .35mm Grenade Launchers and .03 Rifles to fire crazily at Yue Zhong.

(Similar to this:[https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/Type\\_87\\_grenade\\_launcher](https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/Type_87_grenade_launcher) and this is gross:<https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/QBZ-03> )

A few soldiers were also continuously firing mortars at Yue Zhong.

The resulting explosions continued to ring out and the gunfire didn't seem to cease at all. Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and his speed jumped up to a level that was 10 times that of a normal being. In that huge barrage of bullets, Yue Zhong continued to evade only the heavy firepower that posed a danger to him, while the other bullets continued to land and deflect off of his Encompassing Body Armor.

Yue Zhong didn't dare to stay at the same location for more than a second, as he had no confidence in surviving.

Just when he managed to roll towards a huge rock by the road, he felt his heart skip a beat. Without time to take a breath, he leapt again towards the other side.

With a 'Bang', the stone that Yue Zhong had dodged from was instantly smashed into smithereens by the anti-tank missile.

Yue Zhong himself had just jumped out from that rock, when he felt 2 grenades exploding about 2m to his right, and the shrapnel and shockwave propelled him to another side.

"He should be dead by now!"

Seeing how Yue Zhong was faced with attack after attack, most of the warriors in the army had that single thought in their minds. Watching Yue Zhong face the hail of bullets earlier had given them a sort of shock and feeling of crisis.

After Yue Zhong was bombarded by those projectiles, he braved the shock wave from the grenade explosion, before rolling on the ground and standing up immediately. He opened his hands. A number of hand grenades flew out from his hands towards the soldiers and exploded.

Those soldiers who were unfortunate enough to be caught in the blast radius died one by one.

Yue Zhong continued running, carrying his .05 Silenced Submachine Gun and firing continuously into the army camp.

(<https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/QCW-05> )

Although his aiming and firearms control was superb, the soldiers were spread out too far and were hiding behind cover; in the end, Yue Zhong only managed to kill 2 soldiers in his first bout of bullets.

"This battle is too tough!"

Yue Zhong continued to run away frantically, while dodging the constant attacks from the military.

Seeing that normal rifle bullets could not do a thing to Yue Zhong, the soldiers had added heavy weaponry and explosives to their attacks, giving Yue Zhong immense pressure and preventing him from advancing any further.

"I can't go in like this. Otherwise, Ning Guang County is sure to fall!"

With a flash of his intense speed, he dodged an incoming missile, before a gleam appeared in his eyes. He swapped out the .05

Silenced Submachine Gun for a PF98 Anti-Tank Missile Launcher.

In the midst of his running, he had thrown a glance towards the entire camp from afar. Swiftly, he aimed at a small mortar troop and fired a shot!

Yue Zhong's current agility was at 111 points, his actions faster than the human eye. Before the soldiers even had a chance to react, they received a huge rocket in the midst of their mortar troop.

When that rocket exploded, a fearsome shockwave and a huge amount of shrapnel immediately shot outwards in all directions, killing 5 soldiers and heavily injuring 7 others, causing them to scream in agony.

The moment he attacked, Yue Zhong was like a spectre and swiftly swapped out another rocket in the PF98, before taking careful aim and firing at a Type 92 IFV.

With another 'bang', the rocket pierced through the armor of the IFV and exploded, resulting in a huge fireball. The 9 warriors in the IFV as well as 4 others hiding beside it were instantly killed.

Yue Zhong shifted his body again and continuously fired the anti-tank missiles into the army camp.

Loud explosions occurred one after another and soon, the entire army camp was plunged into a fiery hell. Many soldiers were either killed by the explosions or trapped in the fires. Throughout the camp, chaos ensued.

Under that continuous fire from Yue Zhong, the casualties increased and a total of over 70 soldiers had been either killed or injured, diminishing their overall strength greatly.

After confirming that he had caused enough chaos to bring down the fighting capabilities of the camp, Yue Zhong continued to rush forward like a spectre, with the intention of wiping out all the soldiers.

"Commander! Please send aid!! I need aid!! If you don't send

anybody, the soldiers will be killed by that monster!!"

The 3rd Company's leader Gu Jian who was tasked to delay Yue Zong was currently pleading with a pale face and exasperated voice.

Shen Xue glared at him coldly, with her fury and killing intent billowing out:

"Gu Jian!! I told you guys to delay Yue Zhong, how are you guys this bad? You still haven't killed him and yet you dare to ask for reinforcements?

Gu Jian gritted his teeth and replied,

"That Yue Zhong is impervious to bullets and his aim is too efficient. He can still pull out PF98s to fire 120mm rounds at us. The amount of firepower he has is infinite, how do you expect us to fight against this freak?!?!"

Shen Xue replied coldly,

"I don't care! You have to use whatever men you have to delay him for another 2 hours!! After these 2 hours, we will have conquered Ning Guang County. Once we have conquered Ning Guang County, it is our victory!!"

Under the fierce attack of the army, Guo Quan's forces had already been worn down by a large extent; as long as they gave it more effort, the army could proceed to attack Ning Guang County soon.

Shen Xue knew that with a civilian army like Yue Zhong and Guo Quan, the ones who actually knew warfare and could put up a fight did not number many. As long as they could take down Guo Quan who was stubbornly holding on, there shouldn't be any other major threat to the army's advance into Ning Guang County.

Shen Xue looked coldly once more at Gu Jian and ordered,

"Obey my commands! Immediately go attack Yue Zhong with all

you have!"

Gu Jian's lips quivered. In the end, he could only bite down as he saluted Shen Xue and replied, "Understood!"

Right at this time, L?? N??ng rushed into the room with a shocked expression as she reported in a fluster,

"Commander Shen!! The 3rd Company... the 3rd Company has been wiped out by Yue Zhong!!"

Gu Jian's face promptly turned deathly white.

Shen Xue crossed her fingers together, and her face took on an unsightly green. She had a total of 4 companies with her and 1 entire company had been taken out by Yue Zhong, if this continued, it was hard to say whether they could even survive against his attacks.

Right at this time, another soldier was shouting into the radio,

"Commander!! This is the 4th Company, the enemy's firepower is too strong! Requesting for aid!! Please send reinforcements!!"

Shen Xue immediately made a decision and gave it: "2nd Company, immediately send all your troops to support 4th Company. 1st Company, stop your attack and return to camp! L?? N??ng, Gao Lina, follow me!"

When Shen Xue gave her orders, the 2nd Company that was standing by immediately poured towards the back of the army camp.

When the soldiers of the 2nd Company arrived for help, the pressure on Yue Zhong rose exponentially, and the increase in firepower suppressed him till the point that he couldn't even lift his head.

"The intensity of the attack has risen! Another company must have joined in!"

Yue Zhong did not stop running as he didn't dare stay in the same



spot for too long. He kept running and seeking cover, while constantly assessing the enemies' strength. The greater the pressure grew for him, the less pressure on Ning Guang County.

When Shen Xue arrived at the front lines and saw the countless injured soldiers and dismembered bodies lying around, her face turned ashen.

All of a sudden, 2 grenades flew high and landed on the battlefield, resulting in huge explosions, killing 3 soldiers, while another 2 immediately fainted upon receiving broken bones.

After a few seconds, another rocket was fired, and the heavy machine gunners, as well as the light machine gunners were all decimated. Even 3 normal soldiers were injured by the resulting shrapnel, as they fell to ground and screamed in agony. The entire battlefield was filled with blood, gore, and the countless sounds of agony and pain. All the while, the military soldiers' morale was steadily dropping.

# Chapter 244: Revolt and Chaos

---

Half of an entire company, which was equipped with modern weaponry and had undergone strict military training, was actually suppressed by a single person, all the while facing the deaths of their comrades as well as explosions. The desolate scene caused the fighting morale amongst the soldiers to plummet.

Shen Xue almost wore down her teeth with her grinding; if this continued on, the 2nd Company and 4th Company would most likely face the same outcome facing Yue Zhong. Even if she brought her troops to attack Ning Guang County, she might not even have enough troops left afterwards to deal with Yue Zhong, and would likely face death as well.

"Yue Zhong!! I am Commander Shen Xue, I have told my men to stop all advance and attacks on Ning Guang County. Please stay your hands immediately, and let's discuss terms!"

Shen Xue had gone to the broadcast machine and used that crispy clear voice of hers to speak to Yue Zhong.

Initially of course, Shen Xue was filled with confidence that her trained troops would be able to overcome this motley crew of bandits. However, now that she was facing the fact that an entire company of hers had been wiped out by a single Yue Zhong, she had no chance but to lower her head to ask for mercy and negotiations.

Only those with equal strength had the justification to negotiate. If one of them didn't possess the necessary strength, then asking for negotiations was a joke.

Yue Zhong was currently hiding behind a huge rock as he coldly called out,

"Leave behind a company's worth of equipment as compensation, then you can leave! Otherwise, I will kill your guys off slowly!"

After becoming an Evolver, Yue Zhong's strength had gained an immense boost. As long as he didn't face a direct explosion head on, the shockwaves and shrapnel actually did not cause him any permanent harm. This was a great boon for his survival on the battlefield. In addition to his Encompassing Body Armor and the inexhaustible amount of firepower in his storage ring, he was truly a fearsome killing machine. Wiping out the battalion of soldiers under Shen Xue entirely was only a matter of time.

"What guts!!"

"....."

"We'll fight to the death! Even if I, your father, were to die, I would still go down taking a bite out of you!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's arrogant words, the soldiers on Shen Xue's side were all infuriated and decided to fight it out with him!

Shen Xue was also riled up by his words and her chest heaved, while her eyes flashed with a murderously cold light.

Right at this time, L?? N??ng walked up to the broadcast radio and spoke placidly,

"Yue Zhong, I am Staff Officer L?? N??ng from the 3rd Battalion of the XX Regiment. The 3 battalions are just a small part of SY County's army, if you decide to continue fighting us, regardless of the outcome today, SY County will not sit back and rest. Your power may be strong, but likewise, SY County has a number of experts-adding on to the strength of the Army, it's enough to thrash the Ning Guang County that you have established countless times. This time, it was a misunderstanding on our part. Can we negotiate properly to address this and not resort to damaging our relationship any further?"

L?? N??ng's words had struck Yue Zhong's weak point. Yue Zhong had obtained information from different survivors on the fighting capabilities of SY County, which far surpassed that of

Qing Yuan County. Although those survivors did not know everything, they could confirm that SY County's military possessed helicopters, Type 69 tanks and all sorts of other types of modern weaponry. Their total strength was much more superior!

Yue Zhong could suppress a platoon by himself, whilst he could destroy a company with some difficulty. Engaging an entire battalion in combat was enough to make him evade with all his might, while he could only continually pick off the soldiers one by one. If he were to face an entire regiment, even by the time they had finished attacking Ning Guang County, Yue Zhong could not finish off the entire battalion.

In Ning Guang County, Yue Zhong had 4 battalions of warriors, but facing against the well-trained troops of the military, even just 1 battalion was enough to thrash his troops.

Yue Zhong contemplated for a while, before he responded coolly, "Alright! Leave and I will not pursue this matter!!"

As he still hadn't bridged the gap between him and Qing Yuan County, Yue Zhong did not possess the strength to face SY County's military yet. If he waited for the distance to be bridged, reestablished connections with his base at QingYuan County, and armed his people there with the weaponry he had retrieved from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, he would then possess the confidence and strength to face SY County.

Shen Xue intercepted coldly,

"3000 tonnes of rations!! Give us 3000 tonnes of rations to compensate our losses!"

After the apocalypse, food rations had become the currency and in SY County, the strongest currency was precisely food. 3000 tonnes of food was not a small amount. However, compared to Shen Xue's loss of the 2 Howitzers as well as the 100+ soldiers, it wasn't worth comparing.

"Then you can all go and die! SY County may be strong and I know that. If they want to force an entry, I am naturally unable to hold them back! After killing you all, I will immediately head over to SY County and assassinate all the officials. I will kill more than 10 a day-after a month, I see how many officials your SY County will have left!"

"Even in the worst case scenario where I cannot assassinate them, I would have no issues killing all the small fries. Each day I will kill over a 100-after a month, an entire regiment would be wiped out by me! By that time, the entire SY County will be mine! Why should I even waste my time talking with you here!"

Yue Zhong's fury and killing intent billowed out, resounding across the entire field. He would definitely not soften in front of Shen Xue: whoever gave in during this time and period, other people would then follow suit to take advantage of that weakling.

Tao Zhengyi had chosen to attack Yue Zhong's Clear Wind Camp because they had run out of ammunition at that time, making them tantamount to a fat piece of meat waiting to be gobbled up, and he had wanted to be the one who ate that meat. Due to that, Yue Zhong had retaliated and saw that Ning Guang County's fighting capabilities were subpar. In this world, no one dared to showcase their weakness.

Hearing those words filled with killing intent, the entire battalion shuddered in their hearts. Yue Zhong possessed supernatural shooting skills, plus he had that armor on him which deflected almost every single bullet. Furthermore, he seemed to possess unlimited firepower; with his abilities, it would be easy for him to assassinate all the officials, needless to say the killing of the normal soldiers. If Yue Zhong really went ahead, it would spell disaster for all the common soldiers in SY County.

"Damn rebel!"

Shen Xue's entire body was trembling with fury from Yue

Zhong's threat, as no one had dared utter such words in her presence before.

L◆◆ N◆◆ng grabbed Shen Xue's hands, while shaking her head, before using the broadcast radio to speak to Yue Zhong again,

"Yue Zhong, you don't have to be like this. We just want 3000 tonnes of rations. However, let's make it an exchange, we will give you 150kg of gold."

(UBPC: 330.69 pounds)

As the saying goes, hoard antiques in times of wealth, buy gold in times of trouble. Gold was the common currency in the world, which could affect people's greed. Even when the world was in turmoil from the changes, gold represented a source of currency as well. Initially, in Qing Yuan County, other than food rations, gold was the next source of currency that could be used.

Yue Zhong pondered for a while more before replying,

"Alright! I promise you. Now please bring your army and retreat beyond 5 km, we'll carry out the exchange tonight."

L◆◆ N◆◆ng keenly captured the change in attitude amongst Yue Zhong's words, as she smiled and said,

"Yue Zhong. I think you must have run into some problems, do you need us to help you? As long as you are willing to give the right amount, we are willing to assist you."

Yue Zhong replied blandly,

"No need! Indeed, I have some issues that cropped up, but it doesn't concern you guys."

Yue Zhong had indeed met some problems.

"The government has sent the army to deal with Yue Zhong!! Kill!! Kill his men!! As long as we kill his men, when the army enters the city, all of you will be rewarded!"

Within Ning Guang County, Tao Zhengyi, who was flanked by Zhang Bao on his left and Niu Sheng on his right, was hollering at the top of his voice.

When he got wind of the news that the Army was attacking, Tao Zhengyi made use of the opportunity to kill the warriors who were keeping watch on him with Zhang Bao and Niu Sheng. After he left his compound, he then made use of his past influence to gather a small troop. He was currently killing and pillaging in Ning Guang County, creating chaos.

Tao Zhengyi was vicious in his methods as well. He knew that Yue Zhong's warriors were strong, yet compared to the actual military, they did not amount to much. He wanted to plunge Ning Guang County in chaos and control the army from within. When the city was successfully breached, he would be the person who had contributed the most. Not only could he make use of that to get on the SY County's army good side, he could exact revenge on Yue Zhong for taking over Ning Guang County.

Tao Zhengyi was currently leading a force of over 40 people and wreaking chaos in Ning Guang County, killing, raping and setting fire, creating a commotion.

Within the unrest, many of the survivors were also affected by the chaos and madness. They began killing, raping and setting fire as well, and the entire Ning Guang County was in a mess.

"Everybody return to your living quarters!! All those who are still on streets will be shot on the spot for treason!"

As the head policeman, Wang Jian had immediately brought his well-trained police officers and they were diligently putting down the unease and troublemakers.

Wang Jian started executing those survivors who were swept along with the madness one by one. A large number of the survivors had now returned to their own accommodations to wait out the uncertainty. Whoever became the new overseer of Ning

Guang County, they could only accept it helplessly.

"Kill him!"

Tao Zhengyi noticed Wang Jian and his team of policemen who were suppressing the chaos, and gave an order to Zhang Bao and Niu Sheng to take him down.

Zhang Bao roared in anger and activated his Werewolf Transformation Skill. His entire body started sprouting fur and the muscles on his body became larger and taut, while his hands turned monstrous with huge claws. With his entire body elongating, he soon became a terrifying werewolf over 2m tall.

On the other side, Niu Sheng's eyes gleamed as he held up a huge shield weighing over 200kg and charged at Wang Jian. He was a Strength-based Evolver and the 200kg shield in his arms was considered light to him. Under the protection of that shield, none of the bullets could not penetrate or hurt him.

Zhang Bao and Niu Sheng had both activated their skills, and were charging towards Wang Jian with frenzy.

Wang Jian looked at the two oncoming enemies as he frowned and shouted out,

"Open fire!"

The 20+ policemen beside Wang Jian immediately cocked their weapons and opened fire at Zhang Bao and Niu Sheng. In that hail of bullets, Zhang Bao and Niu Sheng could not dodge them entirely. Some of the bullets penetrated Zhang Bao's body, leaving behind numerous wounds, although they did not pose any danger to his life. As for Niu Sheng, the bullets only hit the shield with sounds of metal hitting and could not penetrate through at all.

"Swap to the grenade launchers!"

Wang Jian saw that their attacks were useless, so he gave this order.



The 20 policemen immediately switched to QLBo6 35mm Grenade Launchers and aimed them at the 2 Evolvers before pressing the trigger.

Bang! Bang!

Following the sounds of explosions, the shield-bearing Niu Sheng was immediately caught in the blast and the shield in his hands was knocked away by the explosion, while his body was blasted into pieces, fresh blood dyeing the ground.

Zhang Bao saw Niu Sheng's manner of death and a chill arose in his heart. He leapt up high and immediately jumped into one of the surrounding houses belonging to a survivor. Facing the assault of 20 QLBo6 35mm Grenade Launchers head-on would mean certain death, even for an Evolver like him.

"Take them out!!"

Wang Jian eyed the rebels with Tao Zhengyi in the distance, his face turning grim, and he shouted out the order.

The 20 policemen swapped out their .03 Rifles again and started firing at Tao Zhengyi's troop.

The rebels under Tao Zhengyi immediately abandoned him and tried to escape in all directions.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!! I surrender!! I am willing to give up all my property and women to exchange for my lowly life. Please!! Don't kill me!!"

Tao Zhengyi looked at the policemen running towards him, as he knelt down on the floor and begged miserably. He wanted to live!

Wang Jian eyed the disgusting pig in front of him with a look of disgust, before ordering,

"Tie him up and bring him back to the station."

If it was Yue Zhong, he would have immediately crippled Tao Zhengyi by shooting his limbs. Wang Jian, however, was a

policeman, and regardless of how much he hated and despised Tao Zhengyi, since he had now surrendered, he would not kill him.

3 of the policemen stepped forward to cuff Tao Zhengyi.

Right at this time, from the survivor's house, Zhang Bao suddenly jumped out while still in his werewolf form. He broke past the group of policemen, before slashing his claws in 3 successive motions. The 3 policemen beside Tao Zhengyi had their throats ripped out and Tao Zhengyi regained his freedom.

Before the other policemen could react, Zhang Bao had grabbed onto another policeman as a hostage. He placed his sharp claws at the policeman's throat and threatened Wang Jian,

"No sudden movements! Otherwise he's dead! Let us go, as long as we can leave here safely, I'll release him."

[Dedition: How did you not see that coming?]

## Chapter 245: Suppress the Insurgency!

---

The policemen were currently aiming their grenade launchers at Zhang Bao, their eyes filled with hatred. 3 of their brothers had just died miserably at his hands, and if it wasn't for their other comrade being held hostage currently, they would have fired at him long ago.

The Werewolf Transformation could allow Zhang Bao's 6 attributes to receive a boost, and he could even block most bullets. However, if he was hit by the grenades, they could also blow him to smithereens.

Wang Jian was in deep thought as he looked at his subordinate who was helpless in Zhang Bao's grasp:

"Let him go! I'll let you leave!"

To Wang Jian, every single member he had trained was like a child to him, and he was unwilling to give any of them up.

"I don't trust you, back off!!"

Zhang Bao hollered.

Right at this moment, on the rooftop of a building not far away, Zhuo Yatong was lying prone on the ground cocking a Barlett Sniper Rifle; with the crosshair on Zhang Bao, she pulled the trigger.

'Bang!' The sound echoed across the compound and an armor-piercing round directly penetrated Zhang Bao's head, causing it to explode like a watermelon. Fresh blood and brain matter splattered on the ground.

Tao Zhengyi was still trembling on the floor, shouting,

"I surrender!! Don't kill me! He took the initiative to kill, I wasn't involved!!"

With Zhang Bao's death, Tao Zhengyi no longer had any backing,

support, or any threatening strength.

"Take him away!!"

Wang Jian ordered coldly.

Another 4 policemen rushed up and handled Tao Zhengyi roughly, as they tossed him in the back seat of a car and drove towards the jailhouse.

Once they had settled Tao Zhengyi, Wang Jian brought his men and continued their rounds around Ning Guang County to contain the unease.

Zhuo Yatong was currently looking for another target from her position.

Those who went through evolution naturally were chosen geniuses. They could swiftly adapt and learn all sorts of knowledge and abilities. Although Zhuo Yatong was a Strength-based Evolver, under Yue Zhong's training and guidance, she picked up marksmanship and sniping very quickly.

Of course, her sniping skills could not compare to those who possessed the Sniping Specialization, but it was enough to deal with most situations. Therefore, Yue Zhong had chosen to put her behind the fighting lines for the first time, to act as a support sniper covering Ning Guang County from within.

When Tao Zhengyi's insurgency was quelled, the rest of Ning Guang County also regained its composure.

Shen Xue's troops had retreated to a distance of 5km away under Yue Zhong's coercion, whilst at the same time, Yue Zhong returned to Ning Guang County.

Guo Quan had fought back his sorrow to report to Yue Zhong,

"Captain, our First Company did not let you down, we have completed our mission."

Guo Quan had led the First Company to defend against Shen

Xue's relentless assault. Yet they had paid a huge price: after the fight had ended, out of the 90 warriors in the First Company, there were 47 who lost their lives, 26 who sustained heavy injuries and the 17 who had survived looked as though they could not fight anymore.

Even with the protection of the Mutant Water Snake Scale Armor, under the relentless attack of Shen Xue's soldiers and bombardment of rockets, mortars and other heavy duty weapons, several of Guo Quan's warriors had died. Without the protection of the Water Snake Armor, the entire First Company might have perished.

Yue Zhong had established 4 battalions, and those with the best fighting capabilities and spirit were gathered in one company. However, they had actually been defeated by Shen Xue's own company. The difference between the 2 types of armies could be seen.

Yue Zhong replied in a heavy tone,

"You guys really did great. This time, due to the efforts of the First Company, Ning Guang County was defended, I want to reassign the First Company into 5 squads. You guys may select the members from the rest of the 4 battalions! Those who are injured, I will do my utmost to see them healed. The brothers who have perished, we will properly collect their remains, I want to see them properly buried."

"When comparing my troops to the actual military, there really is still a huge gap."

Yue Zhong felt upset as well, this battle was the first time he lost so many soldiers that he had groomed. Even during the battle against the zombie horde in Qing Yuan County, the elite soldiers that he trained didn't suffer too much damage-in fact, it was the cannon fodder and scum battalion who made up most of the deaths.

"Yes! Regiment Commander!"

Guo Quan's emotions had calmed down a little as he saluted Yue Zhong, before bringing his people to collect the remains of his dead comrades.

"Regiment Commander!!"

"Regiment Commander!!"

"....."

The moment Yue Zhong entered the medical centre for the wounded soldiers, all the injured warriors stood up and called out emotionally.

"All of you rest well! Let the doctors treat you!"

Yue Zhong looked at all of them before ordering in a heavy voice.

Within the medical centre, there were doctors and nurses everywhere, currently treating the injured warriors. There were over 15,000 survivors in Ning Guang County, and those who were doctors by profession before the apocalypse numbered in the 30s. These doctors were all supported by Yue Zhong, as he led them to become medics, with the main focus to treat injuries and illnesses caused by warfare. It was considered one of the benefits for the warriors.

Hearing Yue Zhong's orders, the soldiers quietened down.

Yue Zhong took out a huge bag of Life Saving Grass powder from his storage ring and handed it to the staff of the medical centre, before ordering,

"Use this to treat my soldiers immediately. Apply externally, and maximum amount per person shouldn't exceed a small bag's worth."

Yue Zhong's storage ring was filled with arms, food, medicines, food, and other necessities. As for the Life Saving Grass, Yue Zhong had amassed 2 cubics' worth of this treasure, enough to save many

lives.

One of the older doctors, Wang Yinian, actually furrowed his brows as he asked impolitely,

"Commander Yue! What kind of medicine is this! Please tell me honestly, otherwise, I am unable to give this to the injured. I need to bear responsibility for my patients."

Wang Yinian was a surgeon and had many years of experience in the operating theatre. His temperament was stubborn and straight, and even after the events of the apocalypse, he didn't change much.

Seeing Wang Yinian actually talking back to Yue Zhong, the other doctors and nurses all turned pale as they looked towards him in fear. After the apocalypse, human lives were cheap; under Tao Zhengyi's rule, a doctor had actually been executed for checking his woman out. These medical professionals had seen the cruelty of the post-apocalyptic world. They were afraid that Yue Zhong might execute them as well, due to Wang Yinian infuriating him.

Although Wang Yinian was a stubborn and direct person, he did have the ability, and his medical expertise was valuable. All the doctors and nurses needed him.

Yue Zhong glanced at Wang Yinian, as he cocked his eyebrows, but he didn't make a scene. He immediately took out his Dark Magic Blade and sliced his hand, opening a long wound, before applying the Life Saving Grass on himself.

Under the effect of the Life Saving Grass, coupled with Yue Zhong's own strong vitality, the wound started recovering at an astonishing pace, healing within a matter of seconds.

Yue Zhong asked Wang Yinian,

"Is this enough for you?"

"Do as Commander Yue has ordered and go apply medicine to the

warriors!"

Having witnessed the miraculous efficacy of the Life-saving Grass, Wang Yinian immediately ordered the other doctors and nurses.

Those warriors who had the Life-saving Grass applied to them immediately felt their bodies become much better, as their wounds also began to stop bleeding.

As Wang Yinian watched the warriors' wounds quickly stop bleeding, his eyes straightened and he couldn't help but ask,

"Commander Yue, what is this miraculous medicine? Can you tell me?"

Wang Yinian had practised medicine for many years, yet this was his first time seeing medicine as miraculous as this.

Yue Zhong replied faintly,

"The collective term for this type of medicine is 'Life-saving Grass' and it is composed of several precious medicaments that have been mixed together. It is my exclusive secret recipe and so it cannot be randomly told to others."

A treasure like the Life-saving Grass that could quickly heal injuries could be considered as one of the trump cards in Yue Zhong's hand.

As his position in Ning Guang County was not concrete enough, he did not want to reveal the truth about the Life-Saving Grass to outsiders.

Wang Yinian looked disappointed, but he still left and continued treating the injured.

After confirming that the condition of the First Company's warriors had stabilised, he left the medical centre.

Chen Ming came to Yue Zhong's side holding a report and said,

"Master, there were a total of 193 people involved in the



insurgency this time. How will you deal with them?"

Yue Zhong gave an unprecedentedly cruel series of orders,

"Throw the leader Tao Zhengyi into the zombie horde to feed them! Those directly under him are to be executed in public to warn the others! Same goes for those indirectly involved who have committed murder. For those who didn't, throw them to the scum battalion to become cannon fodder against the zombies in the future."

Chen Ming nodded his head as he asked another important question,

"What about the family members of those rebels?"

Yue Zhong coldly declared,

"Those men above 16 who have a relationship with the insurgents will be thrown into the scum battalion. The females will be sent into the women's camp and await future assignments. For the children who have yet to mature, they are to be sent to the Dark Camp, to be disciplined and taught proper morals and values."

Regardless of the period, era or governing bodies, the punishment towards rebels would always be the most cruel one possible. If those who revolted succeeded, then it was a done deal, but if they were to be suppressed and captured, they would definitely not have a good ending.

Following Yue Zhong's orders, 46 men who had followed Tao Zhengyi's call were decapitated in front of the entire county. 32 other belligerents who committed murder were also executed. The excessive bloodshed thoroughly shocked the survivors in Ning Guang County, giving them an insight into Yue Zhong's decisive and ruthless measures.

Tao Zhengyi looked at his subordinates who were being executed one by one and pissed himself in terror, his eyes filled with fear and despair.

The other people involved in the rebellion were thrown into the scum battalion and kept in jails, while their women were sent to the women's camp to await allocation in the future. Those who indirectly supported the rebels' actions were also thrown into the scum battalion, and in just a short while, the jail was filled with prisoners.

## Chapter 246: Tao Zhengyi's Fate!

---

"No!! Don't throw me out here!! Please!! I'm begging you!! I'm begging you!!"

On the highway linking Ning Guang County to Qing Yuan County, Tao Zhengyi was trussed up like a pig, miserably begging Xiong Zheng.

At a distance of 10m away, over a hundred zombies were currently shambling towards him.

Xiong Zheng laughed coldly as he kicked out at Tao Zhengyi, causing him to fly 2m away. He guffawed, "Damn pig! You dare to betray us at a critical time! You can go and die for all I care!"

"NO!!! AHHHH!!! I CURSE YOU ALL!! AHHHH! SAVE ME!!!"

A zombie grabbed onto Tao Zhengyi and opened its mouth. It bit down viciously, biting off a huge chunk of meat from Tao Zhengyi's face. The rest of the zombies had reached him as well and began ravaging his body, gorging on his flesh and blood.

"Sister Yatong! Isn't this too cruel?!"

Tong Xiaoyun could not help but cry out as she watched Tao Zhengyi being eaten alive.

Xiong Zheng glanced at Tong Xiaoyun as he laughed and shook his head, "Heh! Cruel? Miss Xiaoyun, you're too kind-hearted! Based on this dogsh\*t's crimes alone, even dying 10 times over would not be enough to atone for his sins. Do you know what we discovered when we ransacked his place? He had kept a private room in his villa where he tied up many girls who were not that much younger than you! 10 of them! 6 had already turned into corpses. He's this kind of scum and yet you're still pitying him? It's too laughable!"

At first, Tong Xiaoyun did not believe Xiong Zheng's words. However, she was reminded of the scene at Clear Wind Camp,

where she had seen the gory insides of the factory. She shuddered involuntarily and held onto Zhuo Yatong's hand tightly.

Zhuo Yatong's beautiful eyes flashed with a complicated gleam, as she patted Tong Xiaoyun's hand and said, "Xiaoyun, if these people were successful and gained control, our plight might be much worse. The current situation is vastly different from the world we lived in before, you will have to adapt to it."

"Mm!"

Tong Xiaoyun grabbed Zhuo Yatong's hands tightly as she nodded and replied.

"Let's go!"

After Tao Zhengyi's anguished screams had died off, Zhuo Yatong brought Tong Xiaoyun and the warriors of the First Company to charge at the zombies.

All the warriors of the First Company were fitted with Tang Replica Swords (Tao Zhengyi had amassed a number in his storage over time), and all of them wore the Mutant Water Snake Scale Armor. They rushed into the horde like tigers attacking a herd of sheep, easily killing off the zombies and gaining enhancements.

The warriors of the Second Company were holding .03 Rifles and were firing at the zombies. The zombies were picked off row by row like squishy moving targets. Yue Zhong was currently standing behind observing the horde's movement, and standing beside him were Shen Xue, L?? N??ng and Gao Lina.

L?? N??ng looked towards Yue Zhong and smiled sweetly,

"Yue Zhong, how is it? Have you considered? As long as you bear the ammunition cost and pay us 5000 tonnes of rations, we will help you to clear these zombies."

In the military, there were many trained shooters. Helping Yue Zhong to clear the zombies was not only a good training for her soldiers, but also a way to obtain precious rations. L?? N??ng

thought that it was a good deal to engage in. However, Yue Zhong brushed it off and said, "No need!"

The zombies on this road that connected Ning Guang County to Qing Yuan County did not seem to be under the command of a Z-Type, and hence they were much less dangerous. It was the perfect place to cultivate his Enhancers as well as to train his troops. Yue Zhong would naturally not give a free meal to the Army.

3000 tonnes of food was not a small sum, and as Yue Zhong did not promise to help transport the rations, the army could only rely on their own vehicles to transport the 3000 tonnes of ration towards SY County. However, the distance to cover required a few days, and so Shen Xue and her 2 friends stayed by Yue Zhong to observe his actions.

Shen Xue was currently eyeing the shooters of the Second Company as she laughed coldly, "Based on your subordinates' skill, without our help, even a week is not enough to clear the road to Qing Yuan County."

The shooters of the Second Company were indeed not up to standard, as even within a range of 100m, they could not deal lethal blows. Many bullets were wasted on the non-fatal parts of the zombies, which did nothing to slow them down. Compared to the elite army, Yue Zhong's Second Company was like a militia.

Yue Zhong stared at Shen Xue coldly and said,

"This is our business and it doesn't concern you!"

It was precisely because of Shen Xue that Yue Zhong had lost a large number of his elite soldiers from the First Company, making him not even have a single shred of goodwill towards this ice-cold beauty. If it wasn't for the huge and powerful army backing her, he would have already executed this woman.

Shen Xue looked at him and smiled coldly, not uttering a word more. She did not harbor any good feelings towards Yue Zhong

either. She knew that she wasn't his match, otherwise she would have executed him as soon as the opportunity arose.

Yue Zhong suddenly spoke,

"Is SY County facing a ration shortage?"

Shen Xue and the other 2 ladies were shocked in their hearts.

L◆◆ N◆◆ng glanced at Shen Xue. She wanted to smile and say something but Yue Zhong cut her short.

"You can keep mum! However, I have my means of finding out. Within 3 days, I will know the truth of the matter." Yue Zhong called out coldly.

[Dedition: Keeping 'mum' is another way of saying to keep silent or a secret.] [Such as keeping "mum" about that plate of chicken n chips yesterday...-UBPM]

L◆◆ N◆◆ng hesitated for a while before replying softly,

"Yes! We are indeed facing some issues in SY County.

Yue Zhong frowned and asked,

"How? I remember that there was a huge granary near SY County that you guys obtained. There should be more than enough to last for awhile."

L◆◆ N◆◆ng laughed bitterly and proceeded to explain the situation to Yue Zhong.

Indeed, there was a granary containing 150,000 tonnes of rations near SY County. The first thing SY County could manage was to gain control of it. Although there were various issues like corrupt sale for personal gain, some bad food mixed in with the edible food, the total amount gained was still a whopping 100,000 tonnes.

Under the efforts of the government and the army, they managed to take in over 100,000 survivors; with sparing distribution, the amount was enough to last for another 2 or 3 years, hence it wasn't an issue at first.

Not long ago, the son of one government official had abducted a pretty housewife and raped her at his home: under the influence of drugs, he had accidentally caused her death. In the current world, such deaths were common and the official's son did not give it much thought. Unfortunately, the husband of that woman was a powerful Evolver. His own wife had been violated to death, causing the Evolver who was very much in love with his wife to be furious.

He brought the case to the government's attention, hoping to seek redress and to punish that official's son. However, due to the fact that he was dealing with a high-ranking official, he was instead captured and thrown into jail. In a bout of rage, the Evolver killed the jailers and made use of the dark of the night to kill the soldiers guarding the granary. He then proceeded to set fire to the granary, destroying about 80,000 tonnes worth of rations, before escaping in the midst of that chaos, plunging SY County into a serious situation.

The remaining 10,000+ tonnes of food was only enough to feed the survivors for about a few months, and this naturally caused the government and army to panic. Due to the situation, Shen Xue was dispatched to attack Ning Guang County and wrestle back control over it, using their food to tide over SY County's own problem. This had led SY County to witness and fear the rampage of infuriated Evolvers.

Yue Zhong asked blandly,

"After such a mess, is the son dead yet? "

L◆◆ N◆◆ng hesitated for a while before laughing bitterly,

"He's grounded for 2 months!"

"2 months?!"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly before he looked at Shen Xue and said, "And you expect me to throw in with SY County. If it were me who

was played by this bastard, how long would he be grounded for? 3 days? Or 1?"

"You aren't anything better!"

Shen Xue retorted with a cold gaze,

"The women and children were innocent! What did those rebels' actions have to do with their kids and wives? You had to deal with them with such ruthless methods? How are you different from those bastards! Privileges and special treatment, these exist in all countries and powers. Even if you forced yourself on the women in Ning Guang County, who would be able to stop you? Who is capable of punishing you? You fight so much, isn't it also about protecting your own interests, not to mention your own benefits!"

Yue Zhong replied icily,

"Since you've made it so clear, I can't be bothered to argue with you. Commander Shen, do you require anything else? If not, please leave. I don't have time to engage in pointless banter."

Shen Xue glared at him coldly before leaving him with,

"You think I want to waste my breath on you? You're just a warlord causing divides amongst the country!" Gao Lina followed behind Shen Xue.

L?? N??ng looked towards Yue Zhong apologetically as she said, "I apologize for them, Commander Yue! Commander Shen's temperament is a little obtuse! Please don't take offence."

L?? N??ng's role in Shen Xue's team was mainly responsible for foreign affairs and public relations. Based on Shen Xue's temperament, it was not suitable for her to handle such matters.

Yue Zhong eyed L?? N??ng and said detachedly,

"Whatever you have on your mind, say it!"

Since L?? N??ng had not left yet, it was evident she had something to discuss with Yue Zhong.



L?? N??ng looked at Yue Zhong and smiled,

"I hope to use 500 jin of gold to exchange for 5000 tonnes of ration!"

Yue Zhong stared at L?? N??ng icily and replied,

"Impossible! The 3000 tonnes of rations were the limit of my goodwill. I will not give way for a second time."

L?? N??ng replied somewhat regretfully,

"What would you want then? I hope that we can establish a stable relationship for trade. Be it steel, tools, clothes, shoes... all these commodities, as long as you need them, we can ship them over. Of course, you will have to pay the equivalent amount in rations and the usage of fuel."

[UBPC: Experienced soldier teachers wanted!]

## Chapter 247: Joint Forces

---

Yue Zhong glanced at L?? N??ng and said indifferently,

"Military training! I want you to assign an instructor to train my men on the operations of tanks and mortars. I will give you 3000 tonnes of rations in exchange for a battalion of artillery soldiers to be fully trained by your military instructors.

Yue Zhong had obtained a large amount of advanced weaponry and ammunition from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, so the only thing he was lacking now was soldiers with the technical know-how on operating them.

"That's impossible! Please state another condition!"

L?? N??ng immediately rejected the proposal. The army could not create another strong potential threat to themselves.

"Then I'll take the time to reconsider!"

Yue Zhong then left L?? N??ng behind as he proceeded to charge into the zombie horde slashing this way and that, his Dark Magic Blade slinging blood as he slaughtered the evolved zombies.

Over the next 5 days, Yue Zhong led the 4 battalions in a relentless assault on the zombies between Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County. With YueYu Zhong blazing a path, his troops left behind swathes of devastated zombie corpses. This was only possible because he was swapping members out whenever they grew short of Stamina.

On Qing Yuan County's side, Chi Yang had mobilized all 3 of his battalions and attacked the zombies head on as well. His tactics also included rotating the forces when necessary. After 5 whole days, they had cleared almost 100,000 zombies on the main road between the two counties.

As a result every single warrior in Ning Guang County's 4 battalions had become a low level Enhancer. Zhuo Yatong and

Tong Xiaoyun both possessed decent equipment and through the nonstop battles, Zhuo Yatong had levelled up to become a Level 24 Evolver. Accordingly, Tong Xiaoyun had become level 21. One must remember that Evolvers possessed stronger potential for growth and better base fighting capabilities. As long as there were enough high-level enemies to kill, the speed of their growth could very well be astonishing.

In a stroke of genius, the countless corpses of the zombies were also piled into trucks and brought to the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station. The genius bit was that they were to be used as zombie fertilizer at the bottom of the Snake Birth Fruit Tree. Of course, some were also used as fertilizer for the Life-Saving Grass on Qing Yuan County's side.

After Yue Zhong had gained control over the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station, it had become an exceedingly top-secret project. Other than Yue Zhong, no one else was allowed to enter. Standing orders stated that those who disobeyed were to be instantly executed.

Once the channel was cleared between the 2 counties, Chi Yang brought along the main powerhouses of the First and Second Battalions as well as the main governing officers, and rushed to swear fealty to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's disappearance from Qing Yuan County had been for a long period, and when most governing bodies lost their core power, it would affect the morale of the officials. Chi Yang's motive for bringing them was to show Yue Zhong that he had been confident in him all along. After all, he was Yue Zhong's closest buddy and he knew that this was a crucial detail.

Yue Zhong looked at Chi Yang in front of him and a strong sense of warmth surged in his heart. "Chi Yang, it has been really hard on you all this time!" Chi Yang wasn't as capable as Yue Zhong in battles and fights, nor was he as shrewd and calculative. Unlike Yue Zhong who often jumped to take over other powers at the first

opportunity, he was more of the calm and assuring type. Enough to maintain the sense of peace and trust the survivors had in Yue Zhong simply by his presence. Just based on this, it was a very important trait of his that Yue Zhong admired greatly. If it wasn't for Chi Yang stabilizing Qing Yuan County after Yue Zhong's disappearance, who knows what would've happened. The entire Qing Yuan County might have even imploded on its own during this time.

Chi Yang nodded to Yue Zhong with discipline and directly replied,

"I'll be heading back to Qing Yuan County first! I'm afraid that if I'm gone too long, there might be problems!"

Chi Yang had only rushed over to swear fealty once again and to see his friend. After that, as a man of action, he wanted to rush back so he could and return to his important duties in Qing Yuan County.

Yue Zhong took out one of the pink Snake Birth Fruits and gave it to Chi Yang.

"This is for you, brother Chi Yang. After you consume it, you should run a fever and pass out for about a day. If there's nothing that goes awry, once you recover, you will have become an Evolver."

Upon receiving the Snake Birth Fruit, Chi Yang didn't say a word more as he just nodded his head and disembarked on his vehicle, heading back to Qing Yuan County in a rush.

"Deputy Commander Xu, all of these items here, can the Armored Company use them?"

Yue Zhong had brought some of the modern weaponry back from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station and was pointing them out to Xu Zhenggang, hoping for clarification on their usage.

Wu Guang took a look at all the captured advanced weaponry.

His eyes opened wide as though he had just caught a glimpse of the world's most beautiful lady. He gulped as he immediately started salivating,

"Tank!! Type 69 Tank!! 122mm Self-propelled Howitzer!! Red Arrow-9 Rocket Launcher Vehicle!! 40-round round 122mm Rocket Vehicles! Commander Yue, where did you get all these amazing things?"

When the rest of the team saw these modern weapons of war, their eyes lit up, sparkling with delight and excitement. If they could utilize these to equip their forces, then their entire fighting capability would increase by more than tenfold!

Kong Tianyu, Liu Yan, Chen Shitou and the rest of the higher ranking officers were staring slack-jawed at Wu Guang, Xu Zhenggang and the rest of the military officers. The administrative officers didn't know the full prowess of these weapons of war, and they could only look at Wu Guang, Xu Zhenggang, Lang Zi and the rest who had a military background, hoping for some explanation.

"The Infantry Fighting Vehicles can be directly used. These Howitzers can be operated by 3 of our warriors in the Armored Company. The Type 69 Tanks I have tried twice before. So if you give me 3 months' time, I should be able to train up a Type 69 Tank Operator..."

As Xu Zhenggang stared at the equipment, a feverish look could be seen on his face.

Xu Zhenggang was an extremely outstanding soldier previously, and had come across many different types of equipment throughout his career. Furthermore, amongst those soldiers whom Yue Zhong had convinced to come under his wing, there were many talents. There were a few who knew how to operate mortars, some could drive Infantry Fighting Vehicles, and thankfully there, there were even a few who knew how to use a Red Arrow-9 Rocket Launcher. With the addition of all this equipment, Yue Zhong's

Armored Company would now truly possess the might of an armored force.

Kong Tianyu looked at the Type 69 Tank inside the armory and shouted with fervor as well, "Commander Yue!! Let us have a Type 69 Tank also!!"

Seeing this, Zhao Xing could not help but blurt out,

"Commander Yue! Please give us two Infantry Fighting Vehicles!!"

"....."

At some point, the rest of the captains and deputy commanders had also started hollering. They all wanted access to a piece of the modern weaponry. Even just a company would be much stronger with a single addition of an Infantry Fighting Vehicle. Other than those Type 2 Mutant Beasts, there weren't many enemies that could withstand the might of the ZPT90 25mm Auto-cannon mounted on these road demons.

Yue Zhong frowned as he coldly snapped,

"Everyone, shut the hell up!"

With just that one sentence, all the leaders who were excited and acting beyond themselves finally calmed down. These were all people who Yue Zhong had selected and trusted, and similarly, these people had high hopes and showed reverence for Yue Zhong. This meant that they didn't dare act out of line. After all, Yue Zhong was not the Mr. Nice Guy he was prior to the apocalypse. Instead, he had matured into a decisive and vicious leader who protected them all.

Yue Zhong continued,

"After Deputy Commander Xu has finished training a suitable squad, I will distribute the weaponry. For now, go back and rest. That means all of you. After 2 days, we'll go open that huge Armory."

[TN: Location promised by Xia Yue, Chapter 198]

Now that Yue Zhong had cleared the transport channel connecting Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County, he could now use a huge portion of the advanced weaponry from Ning Guang County to equip the elite warriors of Qing Yuan County. This would raise the attack strength of his troops by a huge margin. As for the amount of ammunition that he had obtained? Even if he equipped every warrior in Qing Yuan County and Ning Guang County, there would still be leftovers.

However, as ammunition was precious in the current age, Yue Zhong would still allocate and use it sparingly rather than just assume he had enough. That was why he still wanted to check out the armory that Xia Yue had so kindly pointed out.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Kong Tianyu and the other leaders dismissed themselves. They all gladly took the chance to relax and rest up. After fighting continuously for 5 days, all the warriors were fatigued-they desperately needed rest and recuperation.

Yue Zhong called Ji Qingwu over. Likewise, he passed her a pink Snake Birth Fruit, saying,

"Qingwu, this is a Snake Birth Fruit. After eating this, there's a huge chance you will become an Evolver. However, you must take note that after consuming it, you will run a fever for a day and will be almost completely unable to move."

The Special Forces Battalion was filled with experts. The reason Ji Qingwu could become its commander was somewhat due to her own strength, and also somewhat due to Yue Zhong's bias. That was the primary reason she could possess this post.

After Ji Qingwu received the Snake Birth Fruit, she looked at Yue Zhong with a piercing gaze, before decisively popping it into her mouth.

Not long after, her entire face flushed red and she felt faint,

seeing stars and falling face first to the floor, breathing in ragged breaths.

Yue Zhong immediately shot forward and swept her into his embrace. A faint fragrance from her body spread out, setting his heart on fire.

Ji Qingwu was breathing erratically and she looked at Yue Zhong, before closing her eyes in a reassured manner.

Yue Zhong carried Ji Qingwu back to his villa in Ning Guang County, as he personally took care of her and wiped her clean as she sweated her way through the fever. During the entire period, he never left her side.

Tong Xiaoyun saw Yue Zhong's meticulous care of Ji Qingwu and asked with a trace of envy, "Who's that lady? Brother Yue seems to like her very much."

Zhuo Yatong was also looking at Yue Zhong carefully watching over Ji Qing Wu. This made her heart also feel a little sour and jealous.

"Brother Yue has mentioned before that he had established a survivor base in Qing Yuan County right? That girl must be his woman there. From the looks of it, he appears to care for her very much."

Zhuo Yatong thought she had prepared herself for the fact that there was going to be a harem. She really had. The truth though was that upon witnessing it, she still could not fight back the feelings of jealousy. After all, which lady would be so broad-minded that she could gladly share her man with other women? What made Zhuo Yatong especially jealous was that she could see Yue Zhong truly liked Ji Qingwu, not just for her body or looks.

Early the next morning, Ji Qingwu's fever had subsided and she regained her consciousness. Upon opening her eyes, she saw Yue Zhong by her side. It seemed Yue Zhong had been watching over



her for an entire day.

When Yue Zhong saw that Ji Qingwu had awakened, he smiled lightly and asked,

"Are you feeling better?"

"Mm!!" She nodded. "I have become a Spirit-based Evolver and have gained a Sword Qi skill!"

Ji Qingwu looked at Yue Zhong with a grateful expression in her eyes.

All of a sudden, Ji Qingwu threw out a question,

"Yue Zuong.... you like me, don't you?"

Facing such a question out of the blue, Yue Zhong was obviously unsettled. In response, he became silent for a moment. Looking deep inside of himself he ultimately found the answer. It seemed that he had long fallen for this graceful and courageous fighter, probably when they had been facing death together on multiple occasions, to the point that his feelings for her were more than those towards Lu Wen.

It was just that Ji Qingwu wasn't simply a girl he liked. She was a comrade who he had fought shoulder to shoulder with, and faced multiple obstacles together with. He also knew he wasn't willing to force her into being his woman with his strength. Furthermore, he was afraid that if he confessed and was rejected, he might do some frightening things. This was why he would rather everything remain with the status quo, while quietly watching her grow.

Right now Yue Zhong felt that the situation was much more complicated than facing the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake. He pondered and struggled for a long while, before gritting his teeth and replying with an affirmative,

"Yes!"

Ji Qingwu's mesmerizing pair of eyes was fixed on Yue Zhong. A

complicated look flashed within as she spoke,

"If I were to follow you, would you be willing to forsake the other women just for me?"

Yue Zhong looked back at the pair of eyes that were as enchanting as the stars in the night sky and replied honestly,

"I can't do that! They chose to follow me, and that makes them my women. Even though I like you, I cannot throw them aside just for you. It's a matter of honor."

Ji Qingwu closed her eyes and she softly spoke,

"I understand...I want to rest now, please step out."

Yue Zhong stood up with a heavy heart, as he knew that it was very likely that his romantic fate with this valiant and beautiful lady had come to an end.

"If you had promised to forsake them because of me, I would have despised you!"

Just as Yue Zhong was walking out of the room, the sound of her words travelled to his ears.

Yue Zhong paused and furrowed his brows in thought, yet he couldn't make head or tails of her meaning or even her attitude! With regards to girls, he never even had an inkling of what to expect.

After the entire camp had rested for 2 days, Yue Zhong brought along 2 battalions of soldiers, 4 Infantry Fighting Vehicles and 2 Armed Personnel Carriers that were mounted with two 14.5mm machine guns. There was also a large number of armor-plated vehicles that made their way towards the targeted armory.

When they arrived at the forest that was filled with Mutant Beasts, Yue Zhong stationed the majority of the vehicles outside the forest. He brought Ji Qingwu, Zhuo Yatong & Tong Xiaoyun to go in with him, all 3 of whom had evolved. They sat in a Hummer

as they travelled into the depths of the forest. Their main responsibility was to wipe out any small Mutant Beasts while checking if there were any more ferocious, larger Mutant Beasts.

If by some rotten luck the armory had a few Type 2 Mutant Ferocious Black-Scaled Boars roaming about, not checking carefully and leading everybody blindly to the armory was tantamount to causing their unnecessary deaths.

Of course, the sound of the Hummer travelling resounded throughout the forest, capturing the attention of a few nearby Mutant Beasts.

All of a sudden, with the sounds of rustling grass, four 2m tall Mutant Vicious Apes jumped out of the underbrush! Screeching at the vehicle, one of the Mutant Vicious Apes directly leapt onto the Hummer, before using its entire weight of a few hundred kilograms to slam down violently onto the vehicle, causing it to vigorously shake.

Zhuo Yatong forcefully applied the brakes in response, using the huge resulting inertia to fling the Mutant Vicious Ape off of the Hummer, before it tumbled headfirst onto the ground and rolled several times in succession.

# Chapter 248: The Ravenous Devil Flame Sword!

---

Yue Zhong glanced at the four Mutant Vicious Apes that had appeared and said lightly to the three girls,

"I'll leave these four monsters to you!"

Mutant Beasts like these Mutant Vicious Apes were only at Level 33. For Yue Zhong to rise up by one level, he would have to kill at least a few dozen of them. Currently, Ji Qingwu was only a Level 27 Evolver, so killing just one of them would let her directly rise in level.

Upon hearing Yue Zhong's words, Ji Qingwu activated her Cutting Edge Enhancement Skill and a faint cyan radiance enveloped the Replica Tang Sword in her hands. Under the effects of the Cutting Edge Enhancement Skill, the Replica Tang Sword in her hands would be even sharper than Yue Zhong's Dark Magic Sword.

Her figure flashed and she directly rushed towards a Mutant Vicious Ape like a storm of bladed wind.

The targeted Mutant Vicious Ape's eyes flashed with an ominous glint as one of its fists swung out and bombarded Ji Qingwu with with power enough to create a piercing wind sound. This particular Mutant Beast had extraordinary strength and considerable agility. Assuming this punch hit its target, then even a boxing champion from the previous world would have their head directly blown into bloody off-sized bits!

Using exquisite footwork, Ji Qingwu's response was to turn her delicate body slightly to the side allowing her to dodge the Mutant Vicious Ape's attack by a hair's breadth. In doing so, she also slashed at the beast's head, easily beheading it and causing fresh blood to splatter into the air, covering her entire body.

Seeing Ji Qingwu finish off this Mutant Vicious Ape so easily, a competitive spirit arose in Zhuo Yatong, who was standing at the side. She activated her Explosive Strength Skill and together with her innate talent, her strength surmounted that of twelve people combined.

She picked up a God and Devil System Level 3 Treasure 'Wolf Tooth Staff', which was 2m in length and weighed 300kg, using it brutally to smash at the Mutant Vicious Ape.

That Mutant Vicious Ape was directly smashed into several largish chunks of flesh and blood by Zhuo Yatong's terrifying strength, as well as the immense inertia from her 300kg heavy Wolf Tooth Staff. It fell onto the ground, dead, and a huge orb of experience let Zhuo Yatong directly rise up in level.

Facing the Mutant Vicious Ape that was rushing towards her on the other side, Tong Xiaoyun activated her Telekinesis Ability. A stone suddenly rolled up to the ape's feet, causing it to trip and fall face-first onto the ground.

With just a thought from Tong Xiaoyun, three Replica Tang Swords rapidly shot towards the Mutant Vicious Ape like arrows. With Tong Xiaoyun controlling them, two of the swords directly pierced through the ape's eyes as if they both had intelligence, destroying the ape's vision, while the other sword penetrated through the ape's body, tearing out a shallow wound.

Tong Xiaoyun could control six Replica Tang Swords at most using her Telekinesis Ability, but the greater the number of swords she had to control, the less the amount of power each sword had in them. She normally liked to control three Replica Tang Swords at once when confronting enemies, which let her easily slaughter zombies.

With both of its eyes blinded, the Mutant Vicious Ape struggled painfully on the ground. The three Replica Tang Swords controlled by Tong Xiaoyun constantly flew towards the ape, piercing

through its head and creating countless small wounds, causing the ape to constantly bleed. After 3 minutes of this 'grinding' tactic, Tong Xiaoyun was finally able to kill the Mutant Vicious Ape.

By the time Tong Xiaoyun had killed the beast, the other Mutant Vicious Ape had already been slashed to death by Ji Qingwu in one move. As Ji Qingwu constantly rose in level and gained enhancements, the advantages of her arduously-trained swordplay were finally revealed. With her swordplay as a foundation, she was able to dodge enemy attacks with just the slightest movement. In addition to the fact that she possessed the Cutting Edge Enhancement Skill, very few people would be able to avoid her blade in close-combat. When facing swordplay experts like Ji Qingwu, the best way was to directly use a rocket launcher to bombard her to pieces before she drew close enough.

Out of the four Mutant Vicious Apes, only a Level 2 Skillbook [High Speed Movement] was dropped. Yue Zhong also took out the blood essences and gave them to the three girls to absorb. Currently, the blood essences of low-levelled Mutant Beasts as such were already useless to Yue Zhong.

[TN: not sure what happened to the nucleus thing, maybe lower-levelled mutant beasts only have blood essence?]

After finishing off the four Mutant Vicious Apes, Yue Zhong and his party continued to drive in the direction of the large-scale weapons arsenal.

When they came to a place littered with the wreckages of all sorts of military vehicles, the earth shook slightly and 3m tall Black-scaled Ferocious Boars came charging towards them from the distance like small-size tanks. They stared ravenously at Yue Zhong and his party.

"16 of them!! It's a bit less than last time! I will go to kill them! You guys be careful!"

As Yue Zhong watched the 16 Black-scaled Ferocious Boars, a

scorching heat flashed past his eyes and he spoke towards the three girls. He immediately activated his Encompassing Body Armor and charged towards the 16 Black-scaled Ferocious Boars, taking a Type 05 Light Submachine Gun with him.

As Ji Qingwu and the two other girls watched Yue Zhong rush towards the 16 beasts, a hint of shock flashed past their eyes. Those behemoths were Level 43 Mutant Beasts and every one of them possessed boundless strength. As soon as something was charged into by the Black-scaled Ferocious Boars, even a Hummer would be knocked flying and smashed to pieces.

"Too reckless!! This bastard!"

Seeing Yue Zhong's impulsive actions, even Ji Qingwu, a calm person who had a pure upbringing and had never sworn in her entire life, couldn't help but let out a curse. Holding her Replica Tang Sword, she rushed towards Yue Zhong's side.

Seeing Ji Qingwu rushing forward, Tong Xiaoyun also felt a rush of battle lust, but a hand pressed down on her body, firmly keeping her in place.

Zhuo Yatong held Tong Xiaoyun back while looking towards Yue Zhong with a complicated expression and said,

"Don't go over, with your current strength, even if you rush forward now, you will become a burden to him. Since he said he wanted to deal with those Black-Scaled Boars, he must have the confidence to do so. If you go up, you might not be able to do anything."

In comparison with the hot-blooded Ji Qingwu and Tong Xiaoyun, the older Zhuo Yatong was much calmer.

Yue Zhong rushed towards the 16 Mutant Black Scaled Boars, hoisting his gun and releasing a burst of rapid fire. A concentrated line of bullets landed on the bodies of those 16 Mutant Boars, and although it did nothing to pierce that thick armor of theirs, it

caused them enough pain to shriek, before concentrating their wrath on Yue Zhong.

The 16 Mutant Boars immediately charged towards Yue Zhong in fury.

Facing the onslaught of those tank-like beasts, Yue Zhong kept his .05 back inside his storage ring before activating his Devil Flame Skill. A dense fiery energy ball blossomed in his hands, compressing itself tightly into the shape of a 2m long sword of flames.

In the span of a few breaths, Yue Zhong had arrived in front of one of the Mutant Black Scaled Boars and he shot out 2 Bone Spears from his back to propel himself up into the air. As he aimed his Devil Flame Sword downwards, the Mutant Black Scaled Boar had just rushed towards the blade.

The Devil Flame Sword was the result of an expenditure of 50 Spirit and 20 Stamina to form, and to maintain its appearance, Yue Zhong had to expend 10 points of Spirit and 3 Stamina. It was a huge drain, but at the same time, it possessed immense power; even the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake's armor could easily be split open by this Devil Flame Sword.

The Mutant Black-Scaled Boar had charged recklessly towards the Devil Flame Sword, and under the force of its own power, it was immediately sliced in two. Its wounds were instantly cauterized, sizzling with a burnt smell.

TN: Ahh fresh meat.

After disposing of one of the Mutant Black-Scaled Boars in one strike, the Bone Spear behind Yue Zhong extended, sending him onto the head of another Black Scaled Boar, where he immediately stuck the sword into its head, penetrating its skull and incinerating its brain instantly.

After becoming an Evolver, Yue Zhong's strength underwent an



earthshaking change. If he was taking on these Mutant Black-Scaled Boars as he was before the Evolution, he would have never been able to condense the Devil Flame Sword with his power and exhibit such fearsome strength.

Right after he killed that Mutant Black-Scaled Boar, Yue Zhong jumped down from its body and activated his Shadow Steps. He stepped to the right like a spectre, evading an attack from yet another Black Scaled Boar by a hair's breadth, whilst at the same time swinging the Devil Flame Sword in front of the Boar.

The Mutant Black Scaled Boar could not stop due to the energy from its own frenzied charge and it sent itself into Yue Zhong's Devil Flame Sword, instantly being sliced in 2, while its innards and blood sprayed out, splattering onto Yue Zhong.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 41! You have gained 2 enhancement points."

Just as the 3rd Mutant Black Scaled Boar fell lifelessly, the sweet sound of notification resounded in his ears.

Yue Zhong was, after all, a Spirit and Endurance Dual Attribute Evolver. Each time he leveled up, he would gain a fixed enhancement point in Spirit as well as Endurance, and on top of that, he had another 2 enhancement points to be distributed according to his own wishes.

Yue Zhong swiftly allocated those points to his Agility, as it was extremely crucial on the battlefield. He had not learnt any blade or spear techniques before, and if he were to meet an opponent well-versed in martial arts, he could only rely on his extremely high Agility and all sorts of other skills to suppress the enemy. Other than that, the benefits of having high Agility was the ability to perceive danger and act faster; if he had low Agility, even if he could sense the danger but was not able to react in time, it would still be all for naught.

After Yue Zhong had allocated his enhancement points, his body

slightly shifted as he swung down onto another Mutant Black Scaled Boar, immediately opening a large wound in its head, frying the brain matter instantly.

When he disposed of this Black-Scaled Boar, he started weaving in and out amongst the Mutant Black-Scaled Boars, the Devil Flame Sword in his hands constantly dancing and flashing as the Mutant Boars fell one by one.

"So formidable!!"

Ji Qingwu's steps came to a halt as she watched Yue Zhong dance with his Devil Flame Sword amongst the herd of Mutant Black Scaled Boars. Her eyes flashed with shock. Even dealing with a single one of these beasts would take a toll on her-never did she imagine that Yue Zhong could actually take care of them as though he was slaughtering chickens, with the same ease as that of killing normal zombies.

After killing another 7 of the Black-Scaled Boars, the remaining behemoths finally felt a little fear amidst their fury, as they turned tail and escaped.

# Chapter 249: Successive Attacks!

---

Congratulations on reaching Level 42! You have gained 2 enhancement points."

After Yue Zhong had rushed up to dispose of another Mutant Black-Scaled Boar, he finally gained a level, and his Agility was finally enhanced to hit 80 points. A single regular burst of speed from him could reach 8 times that of a normal person sprinting.

"This will not do! We need to find another convenient weapon! This type of fighting is too taxing on one's Spirit and Stamina."

After Yue Zhong had killed those Black-Scaled Boars, the Devil Flame Sword in his hand was also about to die out, and the stamina drain caused his face to start to turn pale. The might of the Devil Flame Sword was fearsome, but its consumption was likewise huge, and in just a minute of battle, his Spirit had already been depleted by 60 points. If he were to go all out, he could at the very most last for 5 minutes.

"The drop this time is really quite bountiful!"

Yue Zhong eyed the 11 carcasses of the Black-Scaled Boars and his eyes flashed with delight. The armor of these Black Scaled Boars could be used to make the best body protection. Based on the size of the 11 dead behemoth piggies, there might even be enough armor for an entire battalion!

The scales of the Black-Scaled Boars could withstand even the might of a 12.7mm Heavy Machine Gun. So once Yue Zhong's subordinates were to don the armor made by these scales, their death rate would instantly plummet. In the previous battles, the Mutant Water Snake Leather had already proven its worth, what more was there to say about the black scales?

The 11 Black-Scaled Boars even had 2 precious skill books as well as a green treasure box that dropped from them.

"Level 3 Skill Book: Sniper Specialization. Passive Skill, upon learning, the user will possess the skills of a top-rate sniper."

"Level 3 Skill Book: Werewolf Transformation. Active Skill. User will transform into a werewolf upon activation. Consumes 10 Stamina and 10 Spirit every minute. In the werewolf state, all 6 attributes gain a boost. Strength of transformation is dependant on 6 attributes as well as enhancement level of skill."

"Level 3 Treasure: QingFeng Sword! It is an incredibly sharp sword."

Yue Zhong threw the QingFeng Sword to Ji Qingwu, swapping out the Level 1 Tang Sword in her hands. He gave the Werewolf Transformation to Zhuo Yatong and the Sniper Specialization to Tong Xiaoyun.

Although Tong Xiaoyun had Evolved, she still lacked the ability to fight against the army. While her telekinesis could be of use towards normal humans, if they were up against the army, a sniper bullet would be all that was needed to end her life. If she learnt the Sniper Specialization, she could become a top sniper and could participate in the battle against the army if needed.

Since Yue Zhong had the aid of the Level 6 Treasure Storage Ring, as long as he had enough firepower, he could decimate an entire battalion on his own. As the army had many different tricks and methods, his pressing issue now was to power up his own women, giving them a better chance of survival.

Setting to work, Yue Zhong swiftly dug out the blood essences and nuclei from the Mutant Boars' heads before continuing on his way towards the huge armory. Along the way, there were no more Mutant Beasts: after all, it was the territory of the Mutant Black-Scaled Boars, and normal Mutant Beasts didn't dare enter it casually.

Not long after, the armory came into Yue Zhong's sight. It was hidden in the hillside and a gigantic steel door was all that stood

between him and the arsenal. To open the armory, one had to deal with that enormous steel door.

Right in front of those steel doors, there was an electronic lock. However, since Yue Zhong didn't know the passcode to it, he could only gaze at the steel doors. He strode up to the doors, and reached out to place his hands on them, before activating the Devil Flame. The steel started to melt quickly around the raging flame, forming a flow of liquid steel, and soon, a hole with enough space for someone to walk through was formed.

As the armory was built into the hill, its interior was about 20m in height, and while the outside was a small funnel, the interior was an entire different story, with 4 huge storehouses built.

Yue Zhong took a glance at the 4 storehouses, before calling out to Ji Qingwu,

"Ji Qingwu! I'll leave those locked doors to you!"

Amongst the 4 storehouses, there should be one that contained medical supplies. Supposing Yue Zhong used his Devil Flame to burn a hole through, he might accidentally cause an explosion.

Ji Qingwu looked at the locks on the storehouses and a chilling glint appeared in her eyes as she activated her Blade Strengthening Skill. With a single mighty swing, she broke open the lock on one of the storehouses.

Zhuo Yatong then stepped forward to push the door open, revealing the countless weapons inside.

"It's tons of firepower!"

Yue Zhong greedily stared at the many boxes in the storehouse as his eyes lit up. The building was huge, a 50m by 100m storehouse! Inside there was box after box, all on top of even more boxes. Each one stacked neatly, they completely filled up the entire storehouse.

"Type 56 Semi-automatic Rifle?"

Upon prying open one of the chests for closer inspection, Yue Zhong couldn't help but frown, as he saw that the boxes were filled with many such obsolete weapons, giving him a bad feeling.

Yue Zhong opened up a number of boxes, only to discover that all of them contained weapons that had long ago been deemed obsolete by the Chinese Military.

Yue Zhong then proceeded to open up another storage and saw the large amounts of vintage artillery inside. He now understood the true meaning of Xia Yue's words about being able to equip an entire regiment: "I'm afraid that these are all weapons that are no longer useful."

The bad news? This entire armory could not compare to the weapons Yue Zhong found when he opened up the Mechanized Infantry Brigade. The good news though, was that the total amount of weapons and equipment here was really huge and ammunition was plentiful as well! While it might prove difficult to use effectively against a human army, this was absolutely more than enough to deal with zombies. Furthermore, the ammunition type was common and the various extra munitions for the Type 56 Semi-automatic Rifles could be used for the Type 81 Rifles as well.

Amongst the 4 storehouses, there was even a fuel facility, within which was a truly huge amount of fuel. Factoring in the amount of fuel from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade Station and Ning Guang County, Yue Zhong didn't need to worry about the fuel issue for the next 4 months or so!

After opening the armory, Yue Zhong brought the 3 ladies and left the facility. On his way out, he ordered his men waiting outside to quickly enter and start the large-scale transportation of the items contained therein.

After just a short while, Yue Zhong brought the entire vehicle fleet that was filled with various weaponry, ammunition and fuel with him as they started their journey out.

For this mission, aside from the 4 IFV's and 2 Dual-mounted 14.5mm Machine Gun vehicles, he mobilized a total of nearly 100 vehicles, allowing him to transport a huge portion of the contents in the armory all at once.

The vehicle fleet had not travelled very far before a huge flock of Mutant Birds flew towards it. The Mutant Birds were the size of hens and had grey feathers, with an average wingspan of about 20cm.

"Level 22 Mutant Beast: Steel Beak Bird! It possesses an extremely tough, sharp beak. Using its beak it can drill holes through steel, it is also extremely ferocious."

Yue Zhong saw the sudden incoming onslaught of the Steel Beak Birds and his face paled before he shouted out,

"Open fire!"

Yue Zhong swiftly leapt from his vehicle, pulling out a .05 light submachine gun and firing rapidly towards the mass of birds in the sky.

The dual-mounted 14.5mm machine guns rotated under command and started spewing deadly bullets at high speed towards the sky. The countless number of bullets ruthlessly flew forth as they penetrated and killed numerous Steel Beak Birds, causing a fresh rain of blood filled with feathers to come down everywhere.

Yue Zhong's Type 05 machine gun was firing nonstop, shooting down heaps of Steel Beak Birds. These Mutant Birds were fast and had high numbers. Even though their beaks could penetrate steel, their defence on the other hand was extremely weak-a 5.8mm bullet could penetrate clean through their weak bodies.

However, the quantity of Steel Beak Birds was really too numerous, and a number of them managed landings on a few of the vehicles. Of course, they were currently pecking viciously at

the steel armor, causing many small holes on the exterior.

Some of the smarter Steel Beak Birds opted to attack the glass windshield, fracturing the glass and entering the vehicles. Their immediate action was to then pierce holes into the frantic warriors' skulls so they could gobble up the brain tissue.

The First and Second Battalion that Yue Zhong had brought along were the elite of the elites. At the first sign of trouble, they had rushed out from their vehicles with their weapons drawn and were currently attacking the Steel Beak Birds.

Under the slew of bullets, a large number of the Steel Beak Birds fell downwards, fresh blood thickly splattering all over the ground. Faced with the relentless assault of the Steel Beak Birds, another 3 soldiers had their heads pierced and brains eaten before the entire flock of birds was finally exterminated by Yue Zhong's First and Second Battalions working together.

"Have they all grown this strong?" Yue Zhong felt a sense of pride and joy when he saw his troops had cleanly wiped out the Mutant Birds.

If it was any other troop of soldiers that had gathered together, they would have fled at the sight of the seemingly endless birds that blocked out the sun. Yet Yue Zhong's First and Second Battalion had been tempered through numerous battles and had finally formed an elite force which could engage in both close quarters combat as well as ranged attack. They even had a strong fighting instinct and morale to boot.

Once they were equipped with the advanced weaponry and equipment from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade, he had confidence that he could deal with the Army under Shen Xue's control.

After those Steel Beak Birds were slaughtered, countless other birds were suddenly startled and fled in all directions from the forest. Suddenly, 3 gargantuan yellow birds with wingspans of



over 40m flew up into the sky.

"Level 46 Mutant Beast: Yellow Jade Condor! It is a ferocious bird with unknown powers."

Upon seeing the 3 Yellow Jade Condors, Yue Zhong's face turned pale, as he remembered the scene where he was easily pierced through by the Green Eagle. He immediately lifted his .05 submachine gun and started firing in frenzied bursts at the 3 Yellow Jade Condors, attracting their attention and inciting their hatred. He had to do something immediately because he knew his subordinates would not be able to withstand even a single attack from one of those deadly birds, let alone 3!!!!

## Chapter 250: SY County Survivor Base!

---

Yue Zhong's aim was extremely accurate, and his concentrated line of fire hit the Yellow Jade Condors consistently, brass shell casings ejecting with each clack of the guns bolt. Unfortunately the body of the Yellow Jade Condor and its feathers were incredibly sturdy, and the bullets from the machine gun could only hit and ricochet off of their Evolved bodies.

The 3 Yellow Jade Condors were of course angered by the incessant attacks of Yue Zhong, and they immediately flapped their wings brewing up a dust cloud before shooting towards Yue Zhong with power reminiscent of a speeding arrow!

The dual-mounted 14.5mm machine guns had also adjusted aim and were currently spitting a line of fire at the Mutant Birds. Countless bullets which could cause even the armor of a tank to be pierced landed on 2 of the Yellow Jade Condors' bodies violently. The repeated bullets caused small puffs of blood and feather matter to expel from the numerous impact zones. Feathers scattered, and blood sprayed from their wounds enraging the Yellow Jade Condors further.

Of course, one mustn't forget that these Yellow Jade Condors were not Level 46 Mutant Beasts for nothing! The bullets that could easily cause an average person's body to have 2 large and rather leaky holes only caused a superficial wound and dribbles of blood without actually penetrating their skin layer.

Nonetheless, it was enough to attract the wrath of the Yellow Jade Condors! One of the birds swung out its wing in front and steadily advanced while blocking the bullets of the dual mounted 14.5mm machine guns, causing a large amount of fresh blood to spurt out, before it used its incredibly sharp talons to grab the vehicle and near instantly pulverize it. With its wicked sharp hook-like talons, it pierced the machine gun-mounted vehicle, a "Screeeeench!" sound echoing out before spreading its wings to fly.

These Mutant Birds possessed immense strength, and usually hunted Mutant Water Snakes, as well as Black Scaled Boars while flying. One could imagine the necessary strength needed to haul away such huge beasts for food. Grabbing up such a vehicle was decidedly not a tough feat for them.

Just as the Yellow Jade Condor flapped mightily in an attempt to soar up into the sky, Yue Zhong who had already activated his Bone Encompassing Armor shot out a Bone Spear from his back and propelled himself up 8 or so feet becoming even with its head. Reaching the target zone, he pulled out his Stinger and quick fired 6 shots point blank at its head.

The 6 oscillating Stinger Bullets flew forth and penetrated the skull of the Yellow Jade Condor as expected. Unexpected was the spectacular explosion of the back of its skull, pulpy brain and Shiny bone bits flashing in the sun as warm meaty chunks sprayed forth upon destroying it. The Condor immediately fell from the sky, and landed with a heavy "Whump!" atop the gun-mounted vehicle.

Although the Yellow Jade Condor had a wingspan of over 40m, its body weight was only about 600jin and wasn't even a ton, therefore it did not cause that much stress on impact with the armored exterior of the vehicle.

The warriors inside the vehicle also managed to escape safely due to quick movement upon seeing Yue Zhong leap high.

Yue Zhong had just disposed of the first Yellow Jade Condor when one of its comrades immediately shot towards him like a gale of wind, its exceedingly sharp talons opened and ready to grab him.

The speed of the attack from the Yellow Jade Bird was truly quite swift! It was to the point where Yue Zhong could not evade in time, and had no choice but to chop down with his Dark Magic Blade at the talons.

In the next instant Yue Zhong was sent flying by the immeasurable strength from the attack, like a discus that was thrown violently a few metres. These airborne Mutant Beasts may not be able to compare with the land Beasts in terms of defence, but their speed and strength was commonly found to be many times than that of their land counterparts.

It was precisely because the air Mutant Beasts attack speed was so fast, that Yue Zhong had been captured by the Green Eagle before he could even react, let alone resist. Speed was the advantage that these airborne Mutant Beasts had, and was coincidentally one of the perfect counters to Yue Zhong, who prioritized the enhancement of his Agility attribute.

Yue Zhong was sent flying back a few tens of metres once more, a gust of wind blowing him as one of the other Condors targeted him and immediately flicked its wings. The end result was an attack attempt towards Yue Zhong with its claws viciously spread!

Just as the Condor was about to slash Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong finished hoisting a PF98 120mm Anti Tank Missile Launcher, aimed at the Condor and pulled the trigger! A rocket shot out and exploded on the body of the Yellow Jade Condor with huge effect! With a 'hong!' the 40m Mutant Bird immediately burst into myriad different sized pieces under that explosion, the chunks flying every which way!

While the defences of the Yellow Jade Condor was shockingly high it could not compare to a Type 2 Mutant Beast, and naturally would not be able to resist the firepower from an anti-tank missile.

As these high level Mutant Beasts possessed some sort of intelligence, and seeing that its 2 comrades had been killed by Yue Zhong's forces, the remaining Yellow Jade Condor let out an anguished shriek, before flying off swiftly into the horizon.

The Yellow Jade Condor that had its head exploded by Yue Zhong's Stinger dropped another Level 3 Skill Book for Sniper

Specialization, and 300 survival credits; this time Yue Zhong did not stand on ceremony and proceeded to learn the Sniper Specialization skill.

The Sniper Specialization Skill obviously complemented Yue Zhong's Night Enhancement ability. It allowed him to become a hunter in the night, not just seeing in the dark but with superior aiming skills allowing him to provide more pressure for his future enemies with his varied methods.

The 2 Yellow Jade Condor corpses also gave 2 blood essences and 2 nuclei, adding up to a pretty bountiful drop.

After the episode with the 3 Yellow Jade Condors, there were no further provocations or attacks from the Mutant Beasts for the rest of their journey.

Upon returning to Ning Guang County, Yue Zhong immediately proceeded to consume the blood essences obtained from the Black Scaled Boars and Yellow Jade Condors.

"Congratulations on gaining 4 points of enhancement in Vitality!"

"Congratulations on gaining 2 points of enhancement in Vitality!"

"Congratulations on gaining 1 point of enhancement in Vitality!"

After swallowing the 3rd blood nuclei of the Black Scaled Boars, there were no further benefits.

"Congratulations on gaining 1 point of enhancement in Vitality!"

After consuming the Yellow Jade Condor's blood essence, it was the same result. He had consumed too many blood essences from the Mutant Beasts, and low levels or ranks of Mutant Beasts could not help his enhancement, only a Type 2 and above rank Mutant Beast might be of use.

The remaining blood essences were kept aside by Yue Zhong, as he intended to distribute them to Ji Qing Wu, Zhuo Yatong, Tong

Xiaoyun, Lu Wen, and Guo Yu, letting them gain more enhancements to their Vitality.

Vitality was essential in the defence against possible infections and poison as well as their regeneration capability. It allowed the person to be more resilient to sickness and injuries, and provided faster recovery, hence it was an important attribute. However, in the current world where danger was omnipresent, most people opted to enhance their Strength, Agility, Stamina and Spirit, the 4 main combat attributes, few people would choose to spend their precious enhancement points on Vitality.

Yue Zhong mobilized his troops for a few more trips back and forth to the armory, bringing everything back, and while they faced the occasional ambush from low level Mutant Beasts, there were no further attacks from any strong ones. This gave the troops a sense of security and there was even a detail that was sent to specially collect the Mutant Beasts meat back to Ning Guang County.

The total amount of meat from the 11 Black Scaled Boars amounted to a few hundred tonnes, combined with the Mutant Water Snakes and Type 2 Mutant Water Snake that Yue Zhong had killed earlier which was also a few hundred tonnes, Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County had no food shortages in the short future. Yue Zhong also readjusted his policies. The meat from the Black Scaled Boar went to the frontline troops. The meat from the Mutant Water Snakes went to factory works. And the Type 2 Mutant Water Snake and Mutant Black Scaled Boar meat went to the higher ranking officials from Yue Zhong's government.

At the same time, Yue Zhong started a military academy and prep school in Ning Guang County. He took the principal posts of the military academy, while the lecturers were those officers under him, and when they were not on active duty, they could give lectures on their battle experience and impart knowledge of modern weaponry.

The school on the other hand, was established and took in all the children, thus allowing them to continue with their interrupted education. Without the constant imparting of fundamental knowledge and communication skills, The Establishment would have no future. However, the difference of the school with the schools prior to the apocalypse was that, in addition to their culture studies and learning, they had to undergo basic military education as well as some physical training. Due to the fact that the school promised the attending students enough good food and even meat, most survivors opted to send their kids to school. Inside the school, regardless of background, be it a farmer's kid, children of former white collared workers, even the precious children of government officials, they all played and learnt together, without any form of segregation.

Within Ning Guang County, the majority of the survivors took up tailoring as a profession, making use of the Mutant Beasts' hide to sew armor for the soldiers. Although the hide was tough, human machinery had ways of punching holes into them and chainsaws could be used to cut the Evolved skin. While experienced designers came up with armor ideas, and the pieces were sewn together by the workers tirelessly, making enough armor for a huge number of soldiers was only a matter of time.

Another group of survivors were rounded up, and dug up trenches all around Ning Guang County. As well as building up some fortifications, mainly to defend against zombies and mutant beasts, they also provided a means of attack against human enemies. The workers who did their work diligently could also enjoy meat from Mutant Beasts, therefore most of the survivors who chose to do the manual labor, did so quite willingly.

Yue Zhong even brought along Chen Jianfeng, the previous mayor of Long Hai Survivor Base over to Ning Guang County to be in charge of establishing a functioning government. During the extended period of Yue Zhong's absence, Chen Jianfeng had not

done anything unusual, and instead he had wholeheartedly worked side by side with Chi Yang providing loads of valuable insight into the county's successful operation. Therefore, after conquering Ning Guang County, Yue Zhong decided to switch him over, and let him handle the affairs here. While Chen Jianfeng did bring along with him his bad habits and behaviour from when he was a politician, he did possess the ability and if it wasn't for his help, Qing Yuan County would have been engulfed in pandemonium by Lei Cheng.

TN: Chen Jianfeng - Chen Yao's uncle, ex-leader of Long Hai who gave command to Lei Cheng (bad guy deserter of Long Hai)

Not long after Chen Jianfeng's arrival in Ning Guang County, he managed to establish a form of law system, working together with different department heads to ensure the smooth governance of Ning Guang County. The entire County also slowly regained its previous security and day-to-day bustle.

On top of all this, the warriors under Yue Zhong also started expanding out and began Mop Up work in the villages of the near surroundings. Those zombie-filled villages were slowly cleared out by Yue Zhong's troops, turning up huge resources as well as a large number of survivors who were then sent to join Yue Zhong's establishments. Under the constant training and battle, the other battalions consistently forged themselves, gaining morale and fighting spirit.

Little Greenie had also finished its prior Evolution, as it returned to Yue Zhong's side, it immediately gobbled up the nuclei from the Type 2 Mutant Black Scaled Boar, Type 2 Mutant Water Snake and the rest of the Mutant Black Scaled Boars, before it once again entered into a hibernative state, entering the upgrade phase towards its next evolution.

TN: What a glutton. The author also conveniently kept Greenie in the sidelines.



"Commander Yue, I need to purchase 3000 tonnes of rations! Whatever you need, please state your demands!"

During Ning Guang County's frequent meetings, L?? n??ng had tried to find and negotiate with Yue Zhong, and it was her fourth attempt currently.

In this entire month, Yue Zhong had kept L?? n??ng waiting by the wayside, while engaging in various activities for the establishment ignoring all 3 previous attempts from L?? n??ng.

This time, Yue Zhong looked at L?? n??ng and said warmly: "I want to take a look at SY County's survivor base, why don't you come with me?"

Now that Qing Yuan and Ning Guang County were both slowly chugging along on the right track and were developing well, Yue Zhong wanted to take the initiative to observe SY County's Survivor Base.

With regards to the SY County Survivor Base, Yue Zhong only had an inkling of its in's and out's based on his subordinates. After the apocalypse, the ones with the strongest survival rates were those who had received military training, and SY County was a place that had over 7,000,000 people in the past! It even once commanded a regiment.

During the initial stages of the onset of the apocalypse, the army was conducting an exercise between two of its elite regiments. While they lost over half of their warriors who became zombies, as well as numerous ranked officers who turned and as a result, the loss of command, the remaining soldiers managed to rally under the command of the next highest ranked officer. In response they managed to fend off their ex-comrades-turned-zombies. As they continually fought them off over time they grew in strength and became a recognizable power in the region.

When the government of SY County had requested aid, this huge power launched their assault on SY County, killing a large number

of zombies inside, and in an entire month's worth of fighting, they managed to clear 700,000 zombies and regained control over SY County. With SY County as the base, the army then went around clearing the villages and absorbing survivors.

It was precisely due to the participation of this strong army, that allowed SY County to protect its survivors all this time, providing a form of haven for over 150,000 people.

While the granary within SY County should have had more than sufficient rations, prior to the apocalypse the overseer of the granary had engaged in black market dealings and sold off a large amount of rations. He had hoped to buy back the rations at a lower price when the opportunity was right, which resulted in a large space of the granary being empty. The remaining small store in the granary was broken into by large herds of Mutant Rats which ate almost any available grain, thereby throwing SY County into a food shortage issue.

If the overseer had not sold such a huge amount of food, SY County would not be facing such a difficult situation, after all SY County used to be a huge import and export powerhouse. If it was known that such a reputable food county was facing its own food problems, it would truly be ironic.

Facing Yue Zhong's words, L?? N??ng could not reject his proposal, and the next morning, surrounded by his escorts, Yue Zhong made his way towards SY County together with L?? N??ng.

Under L?? N??ng's guidance, Yue Zhong's entourage managed to enter SY County without that many problems.

SY County openly prided itself as the successful conqueror of Shaoyang County. Truthfully, it had only begun to clear the Downtown area, and some minor clearing of some of the nearby zombie-filled villages.

A huge number of survivors were gathered under SY County's

banner, and within a few areas inside the city there was a natural water channel that acted as a barrier. The survivors within SY County Base only had to ask for the support of a few soldiers to guard the channels, and it could cause the zombies from the north to have difficulty advancing. As the zombies were mainly advancing southwards, with the defence of SY County, Tao Zhengyi had led a carefree life as a tyrant for a while. If it wasn't for the fact that they were starting to lack rations, they wouldn't have sent Shen Xue and her troops to attack.

# Chapter 251: Fight

---

As Yue Zhong was at loggerheads with the powers of SY County, Yue Zhong's side had always been at a disadvantage. He brought along a few people and the Survivor Camp was able to still accept it. Of course if he were to bring an entire battalion along, it would not sit well with the Survivor Camp.

As Yue Zhong and his team were clearing the checkpoint, a bespectacled man with a scholarly aura stepped up to greet them: "Hello, I am Fan Ming the appointed secretary of Mayor Wen! You must be Commander Yue Zhong. You're really a hero you know. With your age and ability, you managed to save 30,000 survivors which is very commendable."

L?? N??ng looked at Fan Ming's behaviour and frowned, as a foreboding feeling rose up in her heart.

Yue Zhong glanced at Fan Ming, before replying blandly: "How do you do, Secretary Fan. I am Yue Zhong, is there something you need?"

Fan Ming smiled lightly: "Commander Yue, Mayor Wen would like to have a meeting with you! Please come with me."

Right at this time a young man with a slightly skinnier build, darker skin, aged about 27-28 and sporting a calm air walked over with a kind expression before he spoke. "Hello Yue Zhong. I am Secretary General Peng's assistant, Wei Jueguang! Secretary General Peng has extended his invitation to you! Please come along with me, I have already prepared a car for you."

A luxurious Rolls Royce drove up to Yue Zhong's side, purring quietly at an idle. From within the car an extremely attractive woman stepped out. She was clothed in proper office wear; attractive black stockings that seemed to accentuate her long slim legs, hair that fluttered lightly in the wind and vibrant, purple lipstick. It was nearly enough that one could not take ones eyes off

of her.

The beauty that stepped out of the Rolls Royce smiled sweetly at Yue Zhong. Such a scene with a pretty lady and luxurious car, it was quite eye-catching as surely intended.

Fan Ming was displeased and spoke out: "Wei JueGuang, what's the meaning of this? I was the one to invite Commander Yue first. Once his meeting with Mayor Wen is done, it wouldn't be late for you to extend your invitation to Commander Yue."

Wei JueGuang eyed Fan Ming icily and said, "Secretary General Peng is SY County's party representative, and the honourable leader of our SY County. After his meeting with Commander Yue has concluded, it wouldn't be too late for Mayor Wen to talk to him."

The mayor of SY County was called Wen Baoguo, while the Secretary General was Peng Mingde. These 2 were long-time rivals, and each were in control of a huge portion of SY County. Peng Mingde had single-handedly gained strength and support, forcing Wen Baoguo to a corner. However, he had failed in disciplining his child well; it was precisely his son Peng Ji who had caused the problem with the Evolver, leading to such a huge loss of food.

After the incident with the arson, Peng Mingde had expended all his power to protect his only son Peng Ji. However, his influence and power in SY County suffered as a result, many people threw their votes in with the mayor Wen Baoguo, which led to him rising in power again. Now that Wen Baoguo had a say amongst the people of SY County, his words often held a hint of suppressing Peng Mingde.

Although extending an invitation to Yue Zhong was a small matter, both sides were unwilling to give in this time. In these current days, as long as one side revealed a moment of weakness the other hungry wolves would pounce on the opportunity and rip their throats out. Mostly figuratively speaking of course. Mostly.

If initially, Yue Zhong had bowed towards Shen Xue's threats and pressure, the whole of Ning Guang County might very well have ended up in her palms.

Fan Ming eyed Wei Jueguang coldly as he laughed towards Yue Zhong: "Commander Yue, Mayor Wen has already prepared a feast to welcome you, there's even the celebrity Zhou Yanxue performing for you. Mayor Wen is absolutely sincere about making your acquaintance, do consider coming with me!"

The celebrity Zhou Yanxue was a person of huge influence and following prior to the apocalypse. Every time she held a concert, be it in Mainland China, Hong Kong, Macau or even Taiwan, tickets would be swept up almost immediately. There were fans who were obsessed enough to queue for 2 days straight just to purchase a single ticket. To be able to watch the performance of such a huge star before the apocalypse was something incredible.

Upon hearing Zhou Yanxue's name, Tong Xiaoyun's eyes lit up, as she pulled on Yue Zhong's arms and pleaded: "Brother Yue! Let's go to greet Mayor Wen! I want to see Zhou Yanxue, I'm a huge fan!"

Although Tong Xiaoyun had like everyone witnessed many horrid and cruel things, when she's within safety she could still be her innocent self. Now that she had a chance to catch her favourite idol, she was practically jumping up and down with excitement.

Hearing Tong Xiaoyun's words, Fan Ming's eyes gleamed with smugness. While the live performance of a huge star like Zhou Yanxue might not hold much priority for people who struggled with food, to those without such problems, it was a luxury that was attractive.

Wei Jueguang just lightly chuckled before saying: "Commander Yue, as long as you will come with me now to Secretary General Peng then this Xiao Shishi, a graduate from XX University of the Arts will belong to you. The girl is considered to be her schools #1 Flower and of course the Rolls Royce is included in the package

deal."

TN: School flower - a term in Chinese popular in Taiwan, China and even Singapore to describe the prettiest girl that most guys adore.

Wei Jueguang had instantly proposed an incredibly practical and attractive offer. Xiao Shishi was a beauty with looks and demeanor not losing out to Gu Manzi. The Rolls Royce was also a powerful sports car. Just to step on the pride of Wen Baoguo, Peng Mingde was willing to invest much.

After the apocalypse, without the supervision and scrutiny of the media, people with power or authority started to grow more daring and impudent with the exchange of girls and items as bribes or conditions, all without batting an eyelid.

Seeing Fan Ming and Wei Jueguang openly engaging in a power struggle, L?? N??ng frowned in displeasure, her expression cold as she spoke out, "Fan Ming, Wei Jueguang, what is the meaning of this? Yue Zhong is a guest of my invitation, he is naturally coming with me."

Fan Ming smiled at L?? N??ng and said: "Wherever Commander Yue would like to go is his freedom to choose. Miss L??, dare I ask who are you to Commander Yue? In what capacity are you making his decisions for him?"

Following the flow of time and being unable to accept orders from the central government, the officials and military had initially worked together in SY County. However, due to the difference in power distribution there was a rift between both parties. After all, power was a huge attraction to many regardless of gender and anyone who possessed it found it hard to let go.

Peng Mingde could protect that degenerate son of his who had committed such an atrocious act, was because he had the power. If he didn't, Peng Ji would have been shot dead countless times for his various misdeeds.

L?? N??ng turned to Yue Zhong and asked: "Yue Zhong, where do you want to go?"

Yue Zhong lightly laughed and said: "Let's head to Mayor Wen's place, I'm also interested in the idol Zhou Yanxue."

Hearing Yue Zhong's choice, L?? N??ng and Wei Jueguang's expressions turned cold.

After recovering himself, Wei Jueguang continued smiling and said: "Since that's the case, would Commander Yue have the time to meet with Secretary General Peng tomorrow?"

If there were normal people who dared to turn down Secretary General Peng's invitation Wei Jueguang would have laughed coldly, before dealing with the person harshly. Thus making his or her life difficult in SY County. After the apocalypse, if a normal person had dared to anger or slight Secretary General Peng Wei Jueguang could absolutely make sure the person would not live for another day.

However, Yue Zhong wasn't someone normal. He had established his own base(s) of operations, and commanded a troop of over 2000 warriors, while keeping 30,000 people surviving with his various abilities. He was also a strong Evolver all on his own. This figure of existence could not be offended, and Peng Mingde was unwilling to make an enemy out of him.

Yue Zhong replied with courtesy: "Of course I have the time, I also have high regards for Secretary General Peng."

"Then, I'll come pick you up at 9am tomorrow! I hope you have a great night." Wei Jueguang looked towards Yue Zhong and smiled, before getting back into the Rolls Royce and leaving.

"Have an enjoyable evening! I shall return to the camp first!" L?? N??ng glanced at Yue Zhong before she boarded her vehicle and left as well.

Fan Ming looked at the defeated Wei Jueguang and L?? N??ng



leaving as he laughed and said to Yue Zhong: "Please, this way!"

Under Fan Ming's guidance, Yue Zhong's team came to a villa compound that was decorated lavishly.

How amazing!! Brother Yuan, your strength is really great. Based on your ability, I think even Ning Guang County's Yue Zhong is not your match." A clear female voice had just resounded across the villa's garden, and was heard by Yue Zhong's team.

Yue Zhong looked towards the source of the voice, only to see a young lady of about 17 or 18 with extremely good looks dressed entirely in red. Her skin was a perfect snow-white colour, both smooth and pure. She seemed to be staring with an adoring gaze at a man of about 26, 27 with dark skin, tall stature, and eyes that seemed to shine with a heroic aura.

There were a total of 13 other young men and women surrounding the 2 of them, and right in front of the huge young male there was a sandbag that was lying on the ground in a battered state.

Fan Ming immediately turned ashen as he pointed out her background: "That is Mayor Wen's precious daughter Wen Peishan. She's still young and doesn't know what she's talking about, if her words had offended you, please don't take it to heart!"

Yue Zhong's deeds in Ning Guang County had naturally reached the ears of those higher-ups in SY County. They were starting to pay attention to him and in their eyes, he was a vicious and cruel warlord with no emotions who lusted after women. Fan Ming was worried that Yue Zhong would go against Wen Baoguo just because of the words uttered by Wen Peishan.

Yue Zhong glanced at the girl in red and the huge man before replying blandly, "Relax, I won't take offense."

Yue Zhong had after all, gone through many battles. With a good look he could tell the young man did possess some abilities as well,

but lacked the aura and temperament of a warrior that had been through life and death battles. Any of the warriors in Yue Zhong's elite force could wipe the floor with him.

Wen Peishan had just seen Yue Zhong's entourage, and she brought along the group of young men and women as she walked over. "Uncle Fan! Who are these people?"

When the group of people came over, their gazes were drawn to the lady whose hair was tied in a ponytail and dressed in warriors clothing. She had an extremely sexy figure, her skin blindingly white, her appearance peerless, and her aura extremely valiant. She was Ji Qingwu.

TN: The raws spelt sexy figure wrongly, as 'gan'-surnamed figure, which was pretty funny. 甘甘 and 甘甘 are pronounced the same way, but one refers to surname, one refers to sex.

## Chapter 252: [The Elite Battalion's Prowess!]

---

Amongst the elite battalion warriors that Yue Zhong brought everyone had eyes on Ji Qingwu. Be it her features, figure or demeanor. All of it was extremely eye-catching. When compared to Yue Zhong, he didn't even seem worthy of a second look.

The few other girls who could match Ji Qingwu in terms of her looks and figure were Guo Yu and Chen Yao, who were staying behind at Qing Yuan County handling governance and other matters. Zhuo Yatong was also in charge of the warriors hunting zombies and Mutant Beasts. She wanted to quickly shorten the gap in terms of enhancement between herself and Ji Qingwu, becoming even stronger and more worthy of Yue Zhong.

Fan Ming hurriedly introduced them to Wen Peishan: "Peishan, let me introduce these people to you, this is Ning Guang County's Yue Zhong, also known as Commander Yue."

Wen Peishan looked at Yue Zhong and frowned, as she spoke with an undisguised arrogant tone: "So you are Yue Zhong? You don't look like much though! I heard you used some brutish methods to execute some people in Ning Guang County after your takeover. Is this true?"

The group of people behind Wen Peishan also stared coldly at Yue Zhong, wanting to see how he answered.

Yue Zhong replied blandly, "Yes, it's true."

Wen Peishan became furious immediately and said: "How could you be so cruel? What right did you have to do that? Even if those people were in the wrong, you could have taken care of them by law. What you did was despicable!"

Wen Peishan had always been under her father's protection and had not tasted the bitterness or harshness of life. She naturally did

not know the blackness and cruelty of people's hearts in the outside world. Her naive thinking was still stuck in the pre-apocalyptic days, and she naturally felt Yue Zhong's actions were damnable, and he should be thrown in jail.

The rest of the group however, knew far better than Wen Peishan, and they did not dare step up to point at him. After all, this man in front of them was rumored to be a killing machine that did not bat his eyelids at slaughter.

Yue Zhong glanced at the naive Wen Peishan before shaking his head at Fan Ming: "Mayor Wen's ability at guiding his daughter is really subpar!"

In the current world, based on Wen Peishan's temperament, if she lost the protection of Wen Baoguo... who knows? All that awaits her might be a pack of hungry wolves who wouldn't leave a single bit of her behind.

Fan Ming couldn't help but blurt out: "Teaching the young is one of the hardest things in the world. Compared to the Pengs, Peishan is considered very good already."

Even prior to the apocalypse, there were such cases aplenty. Those with power and affluence usually kept low-key but their own sons and daughters were, on the other hand, arrogant and despotic, doing what they liked, an idiotic bunch in fact.

[TN: seems like the author really dislikes people of power. He used a strong chinese term for idiots.]

Wen Baoguo had brought his own daughter up to be caring and kind, which was a good thing before the apocalypse. But after such a drastic change of the world, this was dangerous. The moment Wen Baoguo fell, his naive daughter wouldn't stand a chance of surviving at all.

Wen Peishan saw that Yue Zhong had actually slighted her, and her face flushed red with anger: "Yue Zhong, I know you take pride

in your own abilities and strength, that's why you're so arrogant about it. But as the saying goes, there are mountains beyond mountains, people above people, there are definitely people who are at least 10 times stronger than you. Do you dare take on Jiang Tao my brother Jiang? If you lose, you surrender yourself to the authorities, who knows, your punishment might be smaller."

After those words from Wen Peishan, the big and burly man Jiang Tao beside her immediately took a step out, his eyes full of animosity as he looked at Yue Zhong.

Jiang Tao was a naturally awakened Strength-based Evolver, and could be considered a true genius. Other than the status of an Evolver, before the apocalypse, he was also an expert in judo, being proficient in various judo wrestling skills, and was extremely good in melee combat. That was why he dared step forward to test Yue Zhong.

"Let me!" Right at this time, amongst Yue Zhong's troops, the loli Yao Yao jumped out, her huge eyes staring at the burly man like a small cheetah eyeing its prey.

Yao Yao was after all a naturally awakened Agility-based Evolver, a genius amongst genii. She didn't like to study culture and normal knowledge, instead, she spent her time frequently polishing her knife skills, learning about combat, weapons, shooting, driving and various other wartime information. Although she had not yet joined the special forces, she wasn't behind them in terms of various combat abilities. She even joined in on the efforts to clear the passage between Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County, and her own kill count of zombies were numerous, while at the same time, she had already reached Level 28 as an Enhancer, her strength could be comparable to Ji Qingwu.

Jiang Tao looked at Yao Yao, as he frowned and spoke in a deep voice to Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong, you dare to hide behind a girl's back? That's really shameless of you!"

To Jiang Tao, even if he beat Yao Yao this loli, it wasn't something to be proud of, instead, it would feel like he was bullying the weak.

Yao Yao was immediately enraged by Jiang Tao's words, and she activated her Shadow Steps Skill, her Agility instantly soaring to around 140 which was much faster than a normal person. Even faster in fact than Yue Zhong's own Agility.

"You're dead!!" Before Jiang Tao even knew what was going on, Yao Yao had appeared behind his back. She already had a sharp Tang Replica Sword held at his neck, prickling a small wound, blood sluggishly trickling down it.

Everyone present was instantly shocked by Yao Yao's spectre-like speed, it was the first time they saw an Enhancer with such a sickeningly fast speed. Jiang Tao simply had no way of reacting to that and was controlled instantly. If it was a real battle, he would have already died without knowing what hit him.

After Jiang Tao was held in place by Yao Yao's Tang Replica Sword, his entire back broke out in cold sweat his knees shaking, and he didn't dare make a move. He could feel the cold steel and its sharpness, as long as Yao Yao lightly slashed, his limitless future potential as an Evolver would come to an end here.

Yue Zhong frowned, as he stepped forward and raised his hands to catch Yao Yao.

Yao Yao's strength had increased by a scary amount, and wasn't the little Level 1 Evolver that relied on Yue Zhong. When she activated her speed, her Agility was truly beyond that of Yue Zhong. Seeing that Yue Zhong was about to grab her, she immediately retreated swiftly, shooting towards one side like a cheetah.

Yue Zhong glared at Yao Yao, before activating his Art of Fear Skill and a huge baleful and oppressive aura locked on to Yao Yao giving her a shock. She quickly fell weakly like a little kitten into

Yue Zhong's arms.

Yue Zhong looked at the rebellious little loli saying, "Who gave you permission to act?"

Yao Yao just pouted, as she twisted her head to the side, showing an expression of a stubborn pig that wasn't afraid of boiling water, and ignored Yue Zhong.

"I'll deal with you later!" Yue Zhong was absolutely driven up the wall by this little lady Yao Yao. Within his establishment, few people dared to be disrespectful to him, and only this wilful Yao Yao could get on his nerves.

Yao Yao was extremely cute, and also she was capable. Within the base, she got on well with everybody and most people liked her. Furthermore, she was backed by Ji Qingwu. As long as she didn't do something that was too infuriating, Yue Zhong also couldn't bear to discipline her too harshly.

Seeing the little loli Yao Yao who had defeated Jiang Tao so easily simply being captured by Yue Zhong without breaking a sweat.... Other than those on Yue Zhong's side, everyone's eyes went wide.

At this time, another elite warrior with a slightly slimmer build walked out from Yue Zhong's side. While taking an indifferent look at Jiang Tao he spoke. "Jiang Tao! I'm Song Wen. I am considered the weakest amongst the Elite Battalion, allow me to take you up on that challenge."

By this time, Jiang Tao had lost all confidence of challenging Yue Zhong. Ha! Even facing Song Wen of the Elite Troops caused him to be wary and assume a serious expression as he replied with a: "Yes!"

Song Wen did not say anything further. With a single step, he flew forward and his eyes flashed with an incredibly brutal gleam, as though he was a beast that caught sight of a prey, rushing towards Jiang Tao.

Jiang Tao also raised his hands and reached out to grab Song Wen's clothes. As long as he could get a grab, he could then give him a good throw.

Song Wen suddenly came to a stop, before lashing out with a kick towards Jiang Tao's abdomen without mercy, sending Jiang Tao flying somewhere between 5 - 6m.

Although Jiang Tao wasn't weak, he possessed little to no experience in actual combat, and could not compare with the troops trained by Yue Zhong. They who had been through countless battles and training vs him? He was naturally defeated easily.

Wen Peishan and the rest of the youths looked at Jiang Tao grabbing his stomach rolling on the ground groaning in pain, their eyes flashed again with shock. They had thought that Jiang Tao, being an Evolver that could disintegrate a punching bag with a punch was way beyond the over talked Yue Zhong of rumors. Who knew that Jiang Tao could not even contend against a single warrior from Yue Zhong's troop, causing them to feel devastated.

"Please, come in!" Fan Ming's eyes flashed with admiration, as he led Yue Zhong and his team into the inner area of the villa. It wasn't time for the feast yet, hence he wanted to show them to their arranged resting quarters.

Yue Zhong also didn't give any further attention towards Wen Peishan and the rest of the youths as he entered the villa.

Ji Qingwu and the rest were quickly assigned their resting areas, while Yue Zhong was led by Fan Ming towards a meeting room.

In the meeting room, a dignified and handsome man, with an aura of prestige sat on the sofa, there were even documents placed on the glass table in front of him. This middle-aged man must be one of the 2 heads of SY County, Mayor Wen Baoguo.

"Please sit!" Upon seeing Yue Zhong enter, Wen Baoguo did not



engage in any nonsense and immediately gestured for Yue Zhong to take a seat.

After taking a look at Yue Zhong, Wen Baoguo immediately started the conversation: "How do you do? I am SY County's mayor Wen Baoguo. Yue Zhong, would you be interested in coming over to SY County to help me? As long as you're willing, I am willing to let you hold a post of a special forces battalion commander. All the people under you will be through your own selection, assigning tasks and jobs are also your own responsibility, as long as you report what they do after each mission it'll be enough for me."

Wen Baoguo had immediately proposed an attractive offer. This allowed him to retain his own forces, act on his own, and in short, gave him a position of power within SY County without giving up his trained troops.

Yue Zhong just smiled lightly, and immediately rejected the offer. "Mayor Wen! I have no interest in expanding to SY County. Let's forget about this matter!"

Yue Zhong was enjoying his life as the leader of his own establishments, he was supporting 30,000 survivors, and wasn't a single survivor on his own anymore. He wasn't willing to throw in with anyone and submit to their wishes and regulations.

# Chapter 253: Discussion

---

The Chinese were by nature people of orthodox means. Even in history, characters like Song Jiang and Zheng Zhilong who were outlaws of their times had made use of the opportunity to receive political amnesty. Wen Baoguo had extended this means and absorbed a number of small powers around him, and this was the reason why he successfully rose in strength enough to be able to contend with Peng Mingde.

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Song\\_Jiang](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Song_Jiang)

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zheng\\_Zhilong](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zheng_Zhilong)

Seeing that Yue Zhong had turned him down, Wen Baoguo did not have too big a reaction. He simply smiled and said: "Since you're uninterested, it's fine. Yue Zhong, I would like to purchase 5000 tonnes of rations from you and I want to use 5000 tonnes of steel to exchange with you."

After the apocalypse, steel was an extremely useful resource as well, it could be used to manufacture blades, spears, arrows, steel barbed wires, steel lines, etc that were helpful in the fight against zombies.

5000 tonnes of steel was after all, not a small sum, Yue Zhong' Big Stone Town had a small steel factory as well, however the small steel factory was limited by resources, its maximum output was about 6000 tonnes before it had to stop production. It wasn't like the days of before, where one could purchase raw materials easily.

However, humankind could triumph over every other species and become dominant was because humans were resourceful and intelligent. Those vehicles that could not be operated due to fuel issues were stripped down on orders from Guo Yu. The important parts were kept well, while the rest of the steel were sent back to be melted down. That was why Yue Zhong wasn't in sore need of steel at the moment.

Without batting an eye, Yue Zhong replied: "I can sell 5000 tonnes of food to you, but I will require the Survivor Coins, System Equipment, ammunition, mechanical lathe, cotton, sulphuric acid, and some other resources.

The God and Devil System was the source of all enhancements so with its equipment, Yue Zhong could quickly raise an entire army of Enhancers. While the Enhancer army might not be invincible, they were at least of a better physique compared to normal people and could tolerate/undergo tougher training. This would in turn lead to being better and stronger soldiers.

Wen Baoguo looked at Yue Zhong, his eyes narrowed. He could tell that this young man in front of him was formidable in many aspects other than war indeed.

When the county's Enhancers killed the zombies and Mutant Beasts with the System Equipment, they of course managed to gain some Survivor Currency. It was just that there were no Newbie Villages. So obviously the Survivor Currency was considered useless. Wen Baoguo possessed over 15,000 of them, yet could find absolutely no use for it.

Yue Zhong shook his head: "1 point of survivor currency for 2 kg of rations. This time I brought along 5000 tonnes of food intending to conduct a trade here in SY County. Regardless of who the person is, as long as they are able to offer a price to my liking, I will sell to that person. I will only sell 5000 tonnes though because I don't have any more."

Rations were currently the most sought-after resource. After opening 2 huge granaries, and the constant scouring he only managed to scrape together about 17,000 tonnes of food. He was willing to take out 5,000 tonnes for an exchange and this was already the largest consensus he could arrive at, he would not easily sell off his food.

Previously, because he had to quell the insurgency, he hurriedly

agreed to exchange 3,000 tonnes of rations for 300jin of gold. Coupled with the fact that his strength wasn't sufficient then he had chosen this option.

Now that he gained control of his 2 established counties and had the total strength of 7 battalions of soldiers, his strength was vastly different. Naturally his threshold had risen as well, and he could be firmer with his words.

Be it before or after the apocalypse, the world had always worked on the fact that people with power would usually be tougher to deal with. Regardless of international relations or the relationship between 2 major powers, it was the unspoken general rule that most adhered to.

The reason why Yue Zhong had only brought 5,000 tonnes to exchange was mostly due to the fact that he wasn't willing to part with his precious rations. At the same time, he harbored ill intents, and wanted to see the major powers in SY County break up in an internal struggle for the food.

Wen Baoguo looked at Yue Zhong and smiled lightly: "All these administrative matters, let's have the subordinates handle them! This time I've invited you here to see the kind of person and hero that had saved countless survivors from the mouths of the zombies and Mutant Beasts. After seeing you, you are indeed as the rumors say and a lot more. Of this 5,000 tonnes, I hope to gain at least a 1,000 tonnes of it."

Wen Baoguo wasn't a negotiator, although he did have people who were good in it under him. As long as he embarked on the first step, the actual negotiations could be left to his subordinates.

Yue Zhong also expressed an extremely warm smile but remained vehemently firm and said: "I'm willing to send you a gift of 1 tonne of food as a sign of our friendship. At the same time, as long as you are able to present items that we need... the entire 5,000 tonnes of food can be sold to you with no problems."

Wen Baoguo saw that Yue Zhong was extremely closed to his advances, and did not pursue the matter. Instead he smiled and said: "Since you have come from afar, why don't you go get some rest. We'll leave this matter for another time, hopefully you'll enjoy yourself tonight."

"Farewell!" Yue Zhong gave Wen Baoguo a smile, before rising and left.

After Yue Zhong left, Wen Baoguo closed his eyes in thought, as he picked up a stack of documents and poured r over them carefully. The documents contained information on Yue Zhong.

SY County was after all, an official governing body. They had long sent someone to enter Yue Zhong's establishment and had been receiving information on him. As the leader of such an establishment, Yue Zhong was an important character and all sorts of intelligence had been pouring in to SY County.

"What a pity! We already missed the best chance to contain him..." Wen Baoguo looked through the report and saw that Yue Zhong had brought his men to Qing Yuan County originally, only to be turned away by the Ice King. He sighed once again.

This was the crucial turning point for Yue Zhong's actions. Prior to this, if Chen Jianfeng had sincerely made use of his position to welcome Yue Zhong.... Who knows, Yue Zhong might have long ago become a powerhouse for Qing Yuan County. However he had been forced out, and established his own base. Thereafter, there would definitely be no chance to offer him political amnesty. Of course he wouldn't want it anyway.

Soon night fell, and a number of well-dressed aristocrats came trickling into the villa.

At the location of the banquet, countless crystal lamps illuminated the huge hall. While the dignified-looking men and women proceeded to mingle around with red wine in their hands as they discussed the news in the city, a number of suave waiters

and beautiful waitresses were walking around serving people.

On the sides of the banquet hall there were 2 long tables of food from all sorts of places, plates of seafood, mutated vegetables, and even meat from Mutant Beasts all laid out in full view. It gave the distinct impression that there was no apocalypse to worry about.

Right at this time, a group of people wearing a variety of military uniforms, evening dresses, suits, white shirts and even jeans walked into the hall with big strides.

"What a bunch of ignorant country bumpkins!" These shoddily-dressed people aroused the attention of the countless nobles hanging around, whose eyes all flashed with disdain.

This group of people receiving the cold stares was precisely Yue Zhong and his people.

Amongst Yue Zhong's special forces, their backgrounds were all complicated, there was even someone like Ji Qingwu who received a refined upbringing, yet she still did things her way. There was also Tong Xiaoyun from a common family background. There was the loli Yao Yao who seemed to prefer nothing else but military wear and jeans. There were even 2 people who were farmers prior to the apocalypse, and were upstarts themselves. This motley crew of mavericks had actually come together into Yue Zhong's special forces.

The Special Operations Battalion only wore proper uniforms during times of mission and objectives, otherwise, they would dress in whatever they liked. As they were the strongest of Yue Zhong's troops, they had a certain pride and character.

"What a feast!!" A number of the Special Operations warriors took one look at the various delicacies laid out and their eyes lit up, before rushing forward like hungry wolves.

Although the Special Operation Battalion received one of the best treatments amongst Yue Zhong's troops, chances to eat their fill at

such events were rare. During times of the apocalypse, there was hardly a time when a soldier could just set his mind to eat such delicious foods without worrying about anything else.

When those warriors made their moves, the rest of the Special Operation warriors did not linger beside Yue Zhong. They individually headed towards their favourite food and grabbed it before stuffing their faces, looking like a bunch of hungry ghosts.

Yao Yao had activated her Agility and within the blink of an eye, she actually collected 3 plates of cakes, 4 fishes, and 2 fat crabs within her arms, just as quickly she started swallowing the cakes nearly whole. The whole while she was maintaining a vigilant stare at the rest of the Special Operations warriors as though she was a cheetah protecting her own meal.

Other than Gu Zhixing, Ji Qingwu, Bai He and a few other special forces members, the majority of them had already rushed up and were snatching the good stuff while shovelling food into their faces.

"This time, I've lost all face!" Yue Zhong looked at his men who were acting like hungry ghosts, as he sighed. Shaking his head he walked over and directly grabbed a plate of cake and started relishing it.

With regards to his Special Forces, as long as their leashes stayed on during important times, Yue Zhong didn't want to control them too much.

The countless nobles looked on as the warriors Yue Zhong brought started to clear the food like hungry wolves. Their eyes were turning red as the amount of food dwindled at the speed of a tornado.

This was after all, a time of trouble. The people who were able to host such a lavish banquet were only Wen Baoguo, Peng Mingde, and maybe the Army itself. Even Wen Baoguo who was the 2nd strongest power in SY County could only host such a party at most

once or twice a month, and it was already impressive. Most other parties had no means of organizing such a party nor could they afford to be so extravagant with their food.

The difference was, that even all these distinguished guests had attended the banquet with the intention of having a great feast as well. However, because they valued their face and pride, they all put on a refined and well-mannered front. They were even only taking bits and pieces at times to show their culture.

"How could you guys be like this? Isn't this too uncouth!" Wen Peishan arrived in front of Yue Zhong. She was bedecked in a red dress with a plunging neckline, various jewelry, and even wearing a pink headband. She looked extremely gorgeous, yet was annoyed at Yue Zhong and his troops' behaviour.

"Open your mouth!" Yue Zhong had just cut out a slice of cake, and was using a fork to feed it to Tong Xiaoyun, as he smiled.

Tong Xiaoyun's face was currently flushed and she wolfed it down in a single bite, the flavor exploded and her tastebuds were overpowered by the sweetness.

"How are we unbecoming? Miss Wen?" Yue Zhong was in a good mood, and just turned his head to question Wen Peishan.

He turned Only to find that there were 6 people by her side. Of these 6, 4 looked pretty ordinary while the 2 others were extreme beauties. One of them had a doll face a petite figure, and her skin was extremely fair. These gave her a cute vibe overall, coupled with a stunning clear gaze. The other beauty had a voluptuous figure her skin also fair, yet her expression seemed as though she wanted to rebel.

Wen Peishan replied angrily, "With the way you guys are eating, all the food will be eaten and there will be none for the guests."

Yue Zhong glanced at Wen Peishan before saying indifferently: "This is a banquet after all! Everyone should help themselves.



What are we doing wrong by eating our fill? If they want to eat, just go ahead and take it. If the food is not enough, and they didn't eat their fill, then it's the host's fault for not preparing enough."

"You're shameless!" Wen Peishan was furious and her face flushed red. She had never come across such a shameless person before. A guest who went into someone else's banquet and dared to eat without restraint, while criticizing the host for not having ample preparations.

Right at this time, a suave gentleman in a suit and holding a glass of wine walked over looking at Yue Zhong with an extremely haughty expression and saying coldly: "Where are you from, you country bumpkin? This is not a place for people like you without etiquette. Get out!"

Wen Peishan took a look at the handsome gentleman whose background was influential, and she frowned. This young man was called Lu Chenguang, and he was the 2nd Young Master of the Lu Family in SY County. He was also well known for being arrogant and despotic. He was currently chasing her without restraints, and had obviously come over to make a scene and to show himself.

Behind Lu Chenguang were a few other young men who were respective young masters of their own household. They looked at Yue Zhong, their faces filled with ridicule. They wanted to join up and humiliate Yue Zhong thoroughly, just because he had a few beauties by his side and was currently infuriating the princess of SY County.

The 2 beauties next to Wen Peishan also locked their gazes on Yue Zhong, wanting to see how he was going to handle the situation.

Yue Zhong coldly gazed at Lu Chenguang and spoke, "Kneel!"

Lu Chenguang heard those words, and his eyes flashed with an icy gleam, as he reached out to slap Yue Zhong: "Kneel?? Your words are sure big!! You dare to make me kneel! Seems like if I don't teach you a lesson, you won't know the difference between I,

your master and you."

## Chapter 254: I am Yue Zhong!

---

Lu Chenguang had just raised his hands, when Cheng Yu, who was standing beside Yue Zhong shot forward like an arrow, raising his own hand and grabbed Lu Chenguang's hands, before forcefully applying strength and twisting Lu Chenguang's arms behind his back. His next move was kicking out twice at his knee, forcing Lu Chenguang to kneel down in a humiliating manner.

Lu Chenguang found that he had been forced to kneel in such a manner, and he gritted his teeth saying, "Do you know who I am? I am Lu Family's 2nd Young Master Lu Chenguang. SY County's top expert Lu Tianzong is my brother. You dare to touch me, my brother will definitely not let you off!!"

"Let go of Young Master Lu!!"

I'm going to get Master Lu Tianzong!

"If you don't want to live in SY County any longer, you can kill him anyways?"

"....."

"....."

All the young masters behind Lu Chenguang immediately stepped forward and issued threats.

One of the elite soldiers called Kong Wei suddenly exploded forwards, and with a single kick, he sent one of the young masters flying through the air hitting a table and causing screams.

Song Wen's gaze also flashed with a murderous intent as he shot forward like an arrow, grabbing one of the young master's head, before harshly kneeling him in the face causing his nose to spontaneously erupt blood.

Another 3 of the warriors stepped out and with just a move, they forced the remaining 3 young masters to sprawl on the floor,

grabbing on to their heads and presenting them like dogs to Yue Zhong.

Song Wen smacked his lips, with his eyes radiated an intense battle lust, as he laughed coldly and said, "Commander Yue! Do you want them dead?"

Song Wen was a murderer prior to the apocalypse. After joining Yue Zhong's troops, he had always fought valiantly and was extremely used to killing enemies without hesitation. Killing these soft rich men's sons wasn't an issue to him.

The special forces not only had to deal with zombies, they also were in charge of special missions to clear some troublesome characters, every single warrior had blood on their hands. Human lives were not important to them!!

"Don't kill me!!"

"I'm sorry!! Don't kill me!!"

"....."

"....."

Feeling the intense murderous intent from Song Wen, the 5 young masters who were originally extremely arrogant were frightened out of their wits, and started pleading for mercy.

"My brother is Lu Tianzong, you won't be able to kill me!! If you kill me, you will not be able to escape from SY County's government." Lu Chenguang was honestly terrified by the ruthless measures of Song Wen and the rest, and his face was white while he trembled as he tried to threaten Yue Zhong again. SY County was protective of these important characters and Lu Chenguang was banking on the fact that SY County would not forgive Yue Zhong if he committed murder.

Yue Zhong stared at Lu Chenguang and laughed coldly: "I am Yue Zhong! Ning Guang County's Yue Zhong! If your brother Lu Tianzong or your entire Lu Family wants to challenge me, I will

welcome them with open arms!"

"Yue Zhong!!" Upon hearing this name, Lu Chenguang involuntarily shuddered and his heart went cold. This person was someone his dad had specifically warned him not to provoke under any circumstance. The monster from Ning Guang County in front of him had casually executed over a hundred people, and laughed while tossing a person to be eaten alive by zombies. If this madman was to kill him, his Lu Family might even have to apologize for his behaviour. Yue Zhong was a scary existence that even the Army did not want to offend.

Lu Chenguang immediately bowed his head, as he apologized profusely without regards for his image and pride: "I'm sorry, it was my fault!! I didn't recognize you and had offended you!! Please have mercy on us and let us off!!"

Lu Chenguang was usually arrogant and despotic, towards people he deemed weaker than himself. However, if he met someone who was stronger, his attitude would take a 180 degree turn. If he had offended them, he would immediately apologize and lower his head, as he knew he could not afford to make an enemy out of Yue Zhong for his family.

"This time, I'll overlook it! Release them!" Yue Zhong waved his hand, Song Wen and the rest released their grip on the 6 young males.

Amongst the 5 other young masters, not all of them had heard of Yue Zhong's fame. However, they knew that since Lu Chenguang, one of the biggest young masters in SY County had actually bowed down to this person, he naturally could not be offended. 4 of them immediately excused themselves abashedly, leaving behind Lu Chenguang and the other member of the group, who stood to the side.

"What a brute!" Seeing how Yue Zhong had overcome Lu Chenguang and his lackeys by overwhelming force, the doll-like

girl Zheng Peipei had a look of disgust in her eyes. She detested those who forced others into submission like Yue Zhong.

"Brute? This person is heroic and valiant. In such chaotic times, only these type of characters can get the important things done." The other beauty with the attractive figure, Tai Yiyan, was currently licking her sexy lips. Her eyes stared fixedly at Yue Zhong without blinking.

After Lu Chenguang received his just rewards he did not slink away with embarrassment. Instead, he actually worked up the courage and nerve to ask Yue Zhong, albeit with respect this time: "Brother Yue Zhong! My Father had always been in awe of you, and hopes to invite you to our mansion as a guest. I'm not sure when will be a good time?"

While Lu Chenguang might be arrogant and trample over others, he wasn't a good for nothing as well. He switched his attitude at the first sign, and took the initiative to lower himself while extending a gesture of goodwill to Yue Zhong.

SY County was after all in a midst of a power struggle, since Yue Zhong was here to engage in a large trade of rations, the Lu Family naturally wanted a part of it.

Yue Zhong glanced at Lu Chenguang before saying indifferently: "Let's talk about this another time!"

Yue Zhong wasn't familiar with SY County, and he needed to find some allies in here. Although he was reluctant to engage in clash with the Army that possessed proper troops, he was envious of the abundant resource SY County had: trained people.

During the times of apocalypse, trained people were the most precious resource, with enough capable people, an establishment could quickly grow and develop. This time, Yue Zhong wanted to see if he could use a peaceful method to pull some specialized people over from SY County. Under this kind of scenario, the more allies he had in SY County, the better it would be.

At the same time, Yue Zhong had to maintain a strong and unshakeable front, he absolutely could not reveal any signs of weakness. The stronger he is, the more parties that will be willing to work with him. Vice versa, if he is perceived to be weaker then there will be more people who might make use of the chances to stab him in the back.

Wen Peishan looking at Lu Chenguang's behaviour was repulsed, and she didn't hide it as she immediately berated him: "Lu Chenguang, you're no man!"

Lu Chenguang looked at Wen Peishan with a complicated gaze, but as he tore his eyes away, he did not give another look towards the girl that he used to like very much. Compared to the importance of his Lu Family, Wen Peishan was just a girl, and the priorities were clear to him.

Even if he did not succeed in wooing Wen Peishan, Lu Chenguang could still go for other girls. Right now in SY County, whoever had food, had the power to mess with a few girls and it wouldn't be a problem at all. Without the Lu Family, Lu Chenguang might have been a beggar for all he knew.

"Not a man!" Tai Yiyan looked at Lu Chenguang's performance, and laughed coldly as well.

Zheng Peipei frowned and came to Lu Chenguang's defence: "That wasn't Chenguang's fault! If you want to blame, blame Yue Zhong. If he wasn't so adamant about going against him, Chenguang wouldn't have become like this."

Just as men liked beauties, ladies were drawn to suave and charming guys. Lu Chenguang was in fact good-looking, and knew how to maintain his complexion, even a number of young idols could not compare to him. He was considered an eligible bachelor, and the women who liked him were numerous, Zheng Peipei included.

"Zhou Yanxue!!"

"The huge star Zhou Yanxue is here!!"

"....."

"....."

Right at this moment, the banquet guests started to buzz with excitement, as an incredibly beautiful and attractive woman walked into the hall. Dressed in a purple dress with a plunging neckline, her figure extremely sexy, her age about 23. She had a head of black long hair, abundant curves in front and behind, and was walking with elegance. This was precisely Zhou Yanxue.

Right beside her, was a fair-skinned, tall and well-built man, with an air of dignity and confidence. The handsome gentleman walking beside the beauty painted the picture of a golden couple, as they became the centre of attention.

Song Wen looked at the absolute beauty Zhou Yanxue, as a look of lust appeared on his face, while licking his lips and said: "That must be the celebrity Zhou Yanxue! She's really exquisite. If I could just sleep with her for one night, my whole life is worth it!"

Lu Chenguang was after all SY County's native, as he pointed out the identities of Zhou Yanxue and her partner: "That is precisely Zhou Yanxue. Beside her, is the well-known flower boy Su Tianyang! He is the son of Su Dongming, who happens to be one of the 5 big heads within SY County's Army. With him around, no one dares to approach Zhou Yanxue. If you dare to touch her, it's equivalent to going against the Army."

The might of the SY County army was indeed terrifying, Yue Zhong also did not want to provoke them for no reason. He carefully observed Zhou Yanxue and could not help but admit she was extremely attractive. Even within his circle, the only comparable person in terms of looks and aura was Zhuo Yatong.

Guo Yu, Chen Yao and Ji Qingwu were beauties in their own right, but their overall package could not compare to the women



who had reached perfection in their prime, like Zhuo Yatong and Zhou Yanxue.

One by one, members of the party stepped up to engage in conversation with Su Tianyang and Zhou Yanxue. While it was an honour to engage in small talk with a celebrity such as Zhou Yanxue, most of the people were actually more interested in forging good relationships with Su Tianyang, after all, he was backed by one of the 5 heads in the army, each and every move of his could affect plenty of lives.

Tong Xiaoyun rushed up in front of Zhou Yanxue excitedly and called out: "Miss Zhou Yanxue! I am a huge fan, can I get an autograph?"

"Of course! Little sister!" Zhou Yanxue was used to the adoring gazes of her fans, and had seen her fair share of fangirls, she revealed an extremely charming smile, as she received the paper from Tong Xiaoyun, and proceeded to sign her autograph.

# Chapter 255: Ambush by the Dark Crows!

---

Lu Chenguang had come forward to introduce Su Tianyang and Yue Zhong: "Tianyang, let me introduce this person to you! This is Ning Guang County's Yue Zhong!! Yue Zhong, this is Su Tianyang Second Young Master Su."

"Yue Zhong?" Su Tianyang frowned, as he looked at Yue Zhong, before coldly saying: "Yue Zhong, you have come to plead for amnesty right? If you are willing to surrender to the SY County army, I can help put in some words for you, and let you become a squad commander. If you still want to hesitate and drag this matter longer, once the army reaches your Ning Guang County, it will only result in your death!"

SY County had many different characters hanging out together, each of them with unique temperaments. Different powerhouses treated Yue Zhong differently.

Yue Zhong glanced at Su Tianyang coldly and replied with: "I'm waiting for your army to come! If you have the guts, you best lead the army yourself. At that time, I'll let you experience who will be buried."

Even though Yue Zhong was reluctant to clash against the army, if the army took the initiative to launch an assault, he would definitely not back down, and thoroughly wipe out the enemy troops. The 7 battalions under Yue Zhong have all went through some sort of warfare, 3 of them could be considered having enough battle prowess that surpasses the army's soldiers. The remaining 4 also did not consist of cowards that ran at the first sign of trouble. These battalions were Yue Zhong's trump cards, and even if SY County were to come on strong, he would reply back with a lot more ferocity.

At this point, the conversation between Su Tianyang and Yue Zhong had come to an icy halt.

A few of the Special Forces warriors came beside Yue Zhong and stared at Su Tianyang coldly.

After expansion, the 36-man Special Forces Battalion possessed Enhancers that were all above level 26, each of them experts at utilizing different skills. If it came down to using them, with just their battalion, they could set in motion a wave of carnage nobody would forget.

Su Tianyang's words had just come out and he was immediately rebuked by Yue Zhong, followed by the cold stares of Yue Zhong's warriors. This led him to be in a difficult situation, he did not want to continue but he could not back down for fear of his face. He had always been direct and overbearing, but because the Army's influence and power was huge, no one dared say anything back. This was the first time he had actually faced a retort. It must be made clear that the Army was SY County's strongest force currently, and most of the smaller powers would rather throw their weight in with the army. Just being the commander of a small squad was an incredible position, and it was more attractive than being part of the government.

Zhou Yanxue walked right towards them at this moment, with a hint of fragrance about her, as she spoke in a charming voice: "Master Su, Master Yue. It is time for me to perform, can I trouble the 2 of you to give me face, and shelve your disputes while listening to my songs?"

"On account of Zhou Yanxue, I won't pursue this matter." With the chance to step down, Su Tianyang hurriedly told Yue Zhong off, with a cold look.

The Army was still unprepared to wage war on Yue Zhong, Su Tianyang had just used some words to probe Yue Zhong. If Yue Zhong had shown some weakness, he would have bank on that to increase the pressure on Yue Zhong. He didn't expect Yue Zhong to retaliate so strongly, making things difficult for him.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently: "On account of Miss Zhou, this matter shall be overlooked."

Since the army possessed huge strength, Yue Zhong did not want to go against them so fast. Even if he used all his means, it would only result in a tragic win, and if he lost, then everything will be for naught.

Watching the 2 headstrong men backed down with their pride intact, Zhou Yanxue lightly smiled, before she walked towards the stage.

The moment she stepped on the stage, the guests quietened down.

Under the shine of the stage lights, Zhou Yanxue looked stunning and beautiful beyond compare.

Su Tianyang, whose mood was low after the verbal exchange with Yue Zhong, upon seeing Zhou Yanxue, his eyes lit up with passion. He had seen many women, and played around with countless beauties, but someone like Zhou Yanxue, he had never been with. He also truly fell in love with Zhou Yanxue, that was why he did not make use of his background, to force himself on her.

Prior to the apocalypse, Su Tianyang did not even have the qualifications to woo Zhou Yanxue, but after the apocalypse, if he was willing to provoke and offend some of the SY County's powerhouse, he could still have his way with Zhou Yanxue.

On that stage, Zhou Yanxue broke into her song with an extremely captivating voice. Her voice was like the flow of water from a clear spring, trickling into the audience's hearts, washing and cleansing their state of minds.

Every single member of the audience was thoroughly enamored by Zhou Yanxue's voice, their expressions drunk.

Tong Xiaoyun was currently moved beyond words, as teardrops

flowed from her eyes. Ji Qingwu had closed her eyes, and was quietly appreciating the beautiful music. As she was brought up and learned in culture, she could not help but admit that Zhou Yanxue's voice was truly beautiful. Even Yue Zhong who did not know a single thing about music, felt that her voice was amazing.

TN: Check this out for the song that came to my mind as I translated this. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GdJVvyN3Do4>

The moment the song came to an end, the applause was like thunder, every member of the audience could not help but praise Zhou Yanxue.

As Zhou Yanxue stood on the stage, she looked at the men and women below with a hint of fatigue. Before the apocalypse, as she had a family background that was not simple, even if people coveted her, they would not dare show it. But after the apocalypse, since there were no news of her family, all those people who had designs on her started to show up. If it wasn't for the fact that she mingled with the top brass of society, who checked each other, she might have become a canary in captivity.

"Yanxue, great work!" Su Tianyang saw Zhou Yanxue coming down from the stage and he walked towards her with a charming smile.

"I should just choose him! At least he's young, and he has a good family background. And he should be true to me." Zhou Yanxue looked at the good-looking Su Tianyang walking towards her, and her heart skipped a beat.

Although Su Tianyang wasn't the best man out there, compared to the smelly old men, she was at least more receptive towards this young man who had a promising future and some strength.

Right at this time, all of a sudden, a piercing alarm sounded out across the entire SY County.

In the next moment, within the compound, countless glass shattered, and numerous mutant birds with black feathers, beaks 20cm long, huge claws with 5 cm talons rushed in.

"Level 16 Mutant Beast: Dark Crow! It likes to attack during the dark of the night. It is ferocious and extremely hostile!"

As soon as Yue Zhong saw the Dark Crows, his eyes filled up with the information from the system.

The moment the Dark Crows broke through the windows, they started an attacking frenzy on the various guests.

One Dark Crow flapped its wings and became a ray of black light that shot towards a man in a suit, before clawing viciously, and pecked a huge bloody hole in his head with ferocity. It then proceeded to feast on the blood and brain matter with gusto.

One by one, the Dark Crows chased the various guests in the villa, plunging the people into chaos. These people were the elites of society, and had never faced a Mutant Beast in combat before. Facing the sudden assault of these Level 16 Mutant Beasts, they naturally lost all composure and fighting spirit.

Amidst the chaos, Zhou Yanxue and Su Tianyang were currently trying to escape together, when suddenly, a Dark Crow flew towards Zhou Yanxue's direction.

Zhou Yanxue let out a desperate cry towards Su Tianyang: "Help me!! Tianyang, help me!!"

Su Tianyang shuddered, before a resolute glint appeared in his eyes, as he pushed Zhou Yanxue forward, directly into the path of the Dark Crow. Once the Dark Crow had its fill, it naturally would leave Su Tianyang alone. Although he liked Zhou Yanxue a lot, he valued his own little life a lot more.

When Zhou Yanxue was pushed in this manner by Su Tianyang, a hint of disbelief and desolation could be seen in her eyes. Not long ago, he had sworn to love her and protect her, wanting to marry

her and only death till they part. Who knew at this time of crisis, he didn't save her, instead pushing her further to the impending grasp of death, turning her heart into dead ash.

The speed of the Dark Crow was extremely fast, in a few seconds it had appeared in front of Zhou Yanxue, with its claws outstretched and aiming at her shoulders. As long as it grabbed her shoulders, with a single peck, one of the world's greatest beauty would die just like any other human being.

Right when Zhou Yanxue had lost all hope, with a flash of a blade, the Dark Crow was instantly sliced in two, fresh blood splattering on Zhou Yanxue.

Having escaped certain death, Zhou Yanxue looked towards the owner of the blade with glistening eyes, and saw the back of Yue Zhong as he waved his Dark Magic Blade around, killing the Dark Crows left right centre.

As she looked at Yue Zhong, her eyes had a strange gleam, as her heart grew complicated: "So it is you!! During this time, only he could be relied on."

"Help!! Help!!" Wen Peishan watched her friends getting pecked to death by the Dark Crows, as she cried out while crouching on the floor.

It was just that everyone was frantically escaping for their lives, therefore no one could care less about Wen Peishan this princess.

Amongst the Dark Crows circling in the air, one of them suddenly dove down towards Wen Peishan (TN: no shit, your making alot of noise there), and she was so terrified that her body trembled uncontrollably, as a yellow liquid ran down her fair legs. This pretty flower had actually been frightened to the point she lost control of herself.

As the Dark Crow came in front of her eyes, with a flash of a blade, that Dark Crow was cut in two.

Wen Peishan lifted her head, and discovered the killer of the Dark Crow was precisely the Yue Zhong that she hated.

"Don't leave me!! Please, don't leave me behind!!" Just as Yue Zhong turned to leave and kill another Dark Crow, Wen Peishan grabbed onto his shirt, and was sobbing her heart out, pleading profusely.

/>



# Chapter 256: Zhou Yanxue's Confession!

---

Wen Peishan had always been in the protection of her father. Even before the apocalypse set in and zombies walked the face of the earth, she had never witnessed the deaths of other people personally. This time she was truly scared out of her wits and she grabbed Yue Zhong's shirt tightly and didn't let go.

Yue Zhong only glanced at Wen Peishan before saying, "Follow me closely or I can't guarantee your survival!"

After all, a person's background might play an important role at any time. If Wen Peishan was just a normal girl, Yue Zhong wouldn't mind her too much. At least not enough to risk his own hide to save her. However, she was Wen Baoguo's daughter, if Yue Zhong wanted to do anything in SY County, he needed to work together with some major powers and forge good, lasting relationships.

Wen Peishan grabbed Yue Zhong's clothes tightly, as she suppressed her shame and embarrassment at remembering all her prior words, following closely behind him.

Wen Peishan's close friend Tai Yiyan was also trying to escape amidst the chaos. As she ran she saw just ahead someone she knew was pecked to death right in front of her eyes, the bird beak easily slamming through the person's forehead. In response her body numbed and her bowels clenched, her heart thumping heavily, icy fear slithering through her veins. Fleeing even faster she caught sight of Yue Zhong and at that moment, her eyes were filled with a strange relief as she hurried over frantically shouting: "Help!!! Help!!!"

2 dive bombing Dark Crows shot towards Tai Yiyan like arrows, forcing Yue Zhong to wave his sword in successive swings, instantly killing the 2 Dark Crows, fresh blood and fluffy gore splattering on the ground.

Tai Yiyan took the chance to immediately throw herself into Yue Zhong's arms, a heavy scent of perfume wafting into his nose, and squirmed seductively, crying out somewhat fearfully: "I'm so afraid!!"

Wen Peishan looked at Tai Yiyan currently in Yue Zhong's embrace, and her heart felt a little sour. It was strangely as though something precious of hers was stolen by someone else.

"Follow me closely!" Yue Zhong did not have the time or heart to console Tai Yiyan this little vixen, as he pushed her away and strode forward once more.

After Tai Yiyan was pushed out of Yue Zhong's embrace, she followed behind him tightly. It seemed that right now amidst the chaos, the safest place to be was by Yue Zhong's side.

The celebrity Zhou Yanxue had also silently come along and was following behind. She was not a fool and was clear that following Yue Zhong was the safest choice.

"Save me!! Save me!!" Zheng Peipei was trapped in the chaos, and she unconsciously made her way towards Lu Chenguang while pleading loudly. However, Lu Chenguang's speed of escaping was fast, even with the loud shouting of Zheng Peipei, he pretended not to hear her.

Amidst the chaos, a man from behind ran forward and knocked Zheng Peipei to the ground. The people behind didn't notice the living person beneath their feet as they just proceeded to violently stamp and smash their way over her in a mad dash to escape.

Just as she was about to be stomped to her death, the people dispersed and escaped towards other directions. The print riddled half-corpse of Zheng Peipei could hardly be in a worse condition. A number of the Dark Crows were currently flying over, and like arrows, shot down on top of their shoulders leading with their sharp beaks to peck holes in the runners heads.

One of the Dark Crows also turned into a streak of black lightning that shot towards Zheng Peipei, who could only helplessly cough up blood from her pitiful place on the floor. There was a look of fear written in her eyes as she watched her own death soar nearer on silent wings.

Just at this moment, there was a flash of bladelight and the Dark Crow was savagely chopped into two halves, saving Zheng Peipei's life.

Zheng Peipei glanced at whomever might be her saviour only to discover that it was precisely the 'barbarian' whom she had greatly despised not all that long ago.

Right at this time, Tai Yiyan, who was standing beside Yue Zhong, saw the heavily-injured Zheng Peipei who had been trampled over a dozen times. She immediately walked over and helped Zheng Peipei up, supporting her as she asked anxiously,

"Peipei, are you alright?"

Although Tai Yiyan and Zheng Peipei had different personalities, they shared close family backgrounds and had been best friends ever since they were young. Both of them were very close with each other. Upon seeing that Zheng Peipei had received heavy injuries, Tai Yiyan truly felt anxious in her heart.

As she coughed up blood, Zheng Peipei, whose baby face had fear written all over, held tightly onto Tai Yiyan's small hand and cried as she said,

"Yiyan, I'm almost dead!! I don't want to die!!"

After her delicate body had been trampled over by a dozen people, Zheng Peipei had already received heavy injuries; if she didn't receive emergency medical treatment the only remaining road for her would be the unknown trail of death.

Tai Yiyan held back the tears in her beautiful eyes as she said,

"Peipei, hold on, you will be alright!! I will call a doctor for you

very soon! I will definitely find someone to nurse you back to health!"

A gruff voice ruined the painful of somewhat nauseatingly emotional moment: "Apply one bag externally and also take one bag orally! Let her consume one bag first. Then support her as you come along with me!

Right when Tai Yiyan and Zheng Peipei were both starting to tear up, Yue Zhong tossed two medicine bags containing the Life-Saving Grass powder into Tai Yiyan's hands.

Upon receiving the medicine bags, Tai Yiyan only glanced at Yue Zhong before tearing open one of the bags without any hesitation and pouring the medicinal contents into Zheng Peipei's mouth.

The Life-Saving Grass Powder possessed miraculous curing effects: once Zheng Peipei had swallowed it, her incredibly pale face finally regained some of its color and soon after, she also stopped coughing up blood.

"What a miraculous medicine! Exactly how many secrets are still hidden on him?"

As she watched Zheng Peipei's rapid recovery, Tai Yiyan felt a slight shock in her heart. Gritting her teeth, she carried Zheng Peipei as she followed behind Yue Zhong.

Right at this moment, Zhou Yanxue walked up to Tai Yiyan's side and revealed a beautiful smile as she said,

"I'll help you!"

"Thank you Sister Yanxue!"

Tai Yiyan instantly gained a favorable impression of Zhou Yanxue. It was truly too exhausting for her to carry Zheng Peipei by herself, so having an extra person to help out was the best right now.

Wen Peishan continued following Yue Zhong tightly. Earlier, she

was truly frightened, and even though Tai Yiyan and Zheng Peipei were supposed to be her good friends, their relationship with her was just that: good friends. During such a time of crisis, she was willing to only stay by Yue Zhong's side, it made her feel more safe.

The entire banquet had been thrown into chaos, yet Yue Zhong's Special Combat Battalion had not lost their composure. They gathered in small units of 4, supporting one another, as they each utilized their skills and abilities to take out the Dark Crows.

While half of them acted, there was another group of them that stayed still, calmly observed and reported the surroundings. There were currently more enemies than allies in SY County, they naturally would preserve their strengths so as to be ready to retreat anytime.

Although only half of the warriors from the Special Combat Battalion deployed, the Dark Crows were still unable to resist the warriors' attacks as they were killed off one by one.

When the other guests of the banquet saw that the Special Combat Battalion had made their move, they started to move towards them, hiding behind this group of warriors whom they had just despised as barbarians.

Yue Zhong was like a Wedgestone that stood at the front of the group. As any frenzied Dark Crow flew over, they would only see a flash of a blade, and if flying particularly fast after they were split down the middle they would fly apart into large pieces with a light spattering of blood across his chest with each kill.

Although Yue Zhong had not received any pointers on swordplay from any great masters, after being tempered through many difficult battles, his swordplay had now become extremely tyrannical in nature. The specialty of his swordplay was that it was both fast and accurate; with his agility that was around 80 at its base, he could casually send out 3 slashes in just one second. At his fastest, he could even send out five attacks. The Dark Crows had

just flown up to him when they were engulfed in bladelight and chopped into two halves.

Meanwhile, Ji Qingwu stood in support beside Yue Zhong. Her swordplay was greatly superior to Yue Zhong's; every one of her attacks displayed both elegance and power and she did not waste any strength in her movements whatsoever. Any Dark Crow that flew within her range would immediately see only her sword, before falling from the sky lifelessly.

Little Yao Yao also made use of her Agility-based advantage by constantly flitting in and out of the action, killing the Dark Crows at the same time.

Under the consistent killing of the Special Combat Battalion, within the entire hall there were no more casualties. However, Yue Zhong's group had a few people, while there seemed to be no end to the number of Dark Crows which kept flying into the hall through the broken windows. The continuously surrounded Yue Zhong, his team, and the group of helpless guests. If this continued on, Yue Zhong would also not be able to hold on.

The guests who formed a huge part of the upper echelons of the remaining society, were currently watching the scene with pale faces and hearts filled with fear. They knew that this group of warriors under Yue Zhong could not possibly maintain their intensity, and the moment they fell everyone would die under the assault of these Dark Crows.

After the battle went on for another 5 minutes, sounds of concentrated fire rang from the outside areas.

"Reinforcements!! We're saved!!"

"It's the reinforcements, oh thank God!!"

"....."

"....."

Hearing the constant bra-tatatatat of gunfire, the distinguished

guests immediately let out whoops of delight. As long as reinforcements arrived, their lives were surely saved.

This particular villa was after all the property of Wen Baoguo who was the number 2 in SY County. Its defence was naturally thick; not only were there experts who were personally commanded by Wen Baoguo, there was even a force of 200 soldiers who were fully equipped with modern weaponry.

This time, the reason that the reinforcements had arrived a little slower than expected was because the experts had all went to protect Wen Baoguo first, while the special group of 200 soldiers had also come under attack from the Dark Crows at the same time. That was why they arrived late.

This group of soldiers under Wen Baoguo could also be considered strong, coupled with the fact they were of course amply equipped. Every soldier had the latest .05 submachine gun and the moment they entered the fray, under the concentrated barrage of bullets, numerous Dark Crows fell from the sky like rain, pouring down to the earth in various degrees of solidity with a sickening series of Splat! noises.

These Mutant Birds Dark Crows also possessed a fast speed plus their attack power was high, yet they had typically weak defences. The moment they were hit by a bullet, they would lose their combat ability and had no way of defending against the attacks from the special forces.

After losing nearly 2,000 of their comrades, the flock of Dark Crows finally could not withstand the attacks and retreated swiftly.

"Shanshan, are you alright!!" The moment the Dark Crows retreated, Wen Baoguo arrived, under the protection of 7 experts, and the first thing he did was to find his own precious daughter as he asked around worriedly.

Wen Peishan replied with an expression of fear: "Dad! I'm fine!

This time, I was saved by Yue Zhong!! Without him, I would really have died already!"

Wen Baoguo looked towards Yue Zhong, before nodding slightly: "Yue Zhong! I must Thank You for saving my daughter this time."

Yue Zhong knew he had gained the trust of one of the stronger powers in SY County. Although it wouldn't matter much when it came to the bigger matters, he would still be able to move around SY County without too many problems.

Yue Zhong lightly smiled and replied courteously: "It wasn't much, it's what anybody would have done."

Yue Zhong could offend Wen Peishan without a care, but he wouldn't just go out of his way to provoke other people and reject their kind intentions without a reason.

"I'll be leaving first! Yue Zhong, thanks for saving me, I will find you tomorrow and let's hang out, I know SY County very well." Wen Peishan came in front of Yue Zhong and broke into a an extremely lovable smile towards this man whom she had despised not too long ago, before immediately turning and walking away. Although she wanted to stay behind, she could still feel the dampness which reminded her of her embarrassing accident earlier.

Tai Yiyan came to Yue Zhong's side with her perfume trailing behind her, and kissed him furiously on both cheeks as she smiled sweetly and said, "Yue Zhong!! I am Tai Yiyan, the 1st kiss was for saving me!! The 2nd kiss was for saving Peipei!! From today onwards, we're good friends! I'll find you soon for some fun!"

After that, she also turned around and left with 2 people carrying Zheng Peipei.

Su Tianyang brought 2 bear-like experts from the military and walked towards Zhou Yanxue, as he spoke tenderly, "Yanxue, are you alright? Earlier, when I saw you in danger, I was really



worried!! Come, let us go back!"

Su Tianyang knew that his actions earlier must have hurt Zhou Yanxue deeply, and it would be extremely difficult to win her heart again, therefore he decided to possess her body. With her beauty and demeanor, keeping her by his side as his companion was more for face than anything else. The 2 experts were Su Tianyang's subordinates who killed at his orders, and he decided that even if it came to force he would have Zhou Yanxue today.

Zhou Yanxue took a look at the handsome Su Tianyang, and realised that her past good feelings about him had disappeared only to be replaced by vehemence and disgust. She felt the man in front of her was extremely fake, vicious and cold, even worse than the smelly old men that she hated.

Zhou Yanxue took big strides and walked towards Yue Zhong before saying seriously: "Yue Zhong, I like you, and I hope to be your girlfriend!"

"Zhou Yanxue, that Zhou Yanxue actually asked out a guy of her own accord!!"

"That Yue Zhong is such a lucky bastard!!"

"What courage! She actually confessed in front of so many people, she really has guts!!"

"It's so romantic, too romantic!!"

"....."

"....."

Seeing Zhou Yanxue confessing to Yue Zhong of her own accord, the entire hall was in an uproar. Prior to the apocalypse, she was a huge celebrity, and even after the world was plunged into chaos, she retained her star status and fans, and was the goddess of many guys. This perfect woman had actually taken the initiative to confess to Yue Zhong, it was too shocking for everyone present.

Ji Qingwu saw the dauntless actions and the confession from Zhou Yanxue, and she trembled outwardly while a complicated gleam appeared in her eyes.

# Chapter 257: Intel

---

Tong Xiaoyun looked towards the absolutely beautiful Zhou Yanxue, noticing her eyes had a strange gleam. "Don't tell me I'll have to share my husband with an idol?"

In the banquet hall, countless envious and jealous gazes from the many men were piercing Yue Zhong like knives. If looks could kill, Yue Zhong would have died countless times over.

Under the envious gazes, the main character of the confession Yue Zhong actually frowned. He did not believe he had the charm to incite Zhou Yanxue to confess in front of so many people.

Su Tianyang saw the girl of his long-time affection actually confessing to another guy in public, and felt like someone had gave him a tight slap! His expression turned extremely steely.

Su Tianyang stepped forward with a frozen expression as he coldly ordered: "Yanxue, you must have been frightened badly! Follow me back to recuperate okay? Go bring Miss Yanxue back, she's tired!" He said as gave the orders to his men.

Hearing those orders, the 2 bulky military experts immediately stepped forward towards Zhou Yanxue. Su Tianyang was determined to use force.

Zhou Yanxue's face turned pale as she stepped forward and lowered her head towards Yue Zhong's ear. Her subtle flowery fragrance softly wisped sound him as she said softly: "I know all about the powers of SY Couny like the back of my hand. As long as you protect me, I'm willing to tell you everything and be your woman."

During these turbulent times, other than some exceptional women who relied on their own strengths, the rest who did not have any background could only rely on strong people. Zhou Yanxue's influential family had disappeared with no news. She still

remained free of captivity because she was a celebrity, and the few powers that lusted after her were keeping each other in check. Now it was evident that Su Tianyang was about to offend some of them with his intention to forcefully take her, hence she could only rely on Yue Zhong.

As Yue Zhong smelled the fragrance from Zhou Yanxue's body and heard her words, his heart was moved. Waving his hands, he signalled 2 of his Special Combat warriors to step out and block the 2 military experts.

The 2 military experts had just rushed forward only to come face to face with the 2 Special Combat soldiers, causing their eyes flashed with a complicated gleam. The Military men could feel an extremely oppressive aura from their bodies. It was just as apparent that they had definitely seen blood, and many must have lost their lives at their hands.

Su Tianyang looked at the 2 warriors under Yue Zhong who were blocking his own, and his face turned an even uglier colour. Calming down outwardly, he spoke out sensibly: "Zhang Lai, Niu Jin! Stand down!"

Although Su Tianyang had utmost confidence in his own experts, Yue Zhong had too many experts on his side. If they really made a move, his side would be at a disadvantage.

Su Tianyang steeled himself impressively and then spewed out words threateningly: "Yue Zhong, Zhou Yanxue is my girlfriend. You actually want to split us apart and steal her? If you return her to me we can still be friends. In SY County, whoever is my friend, can get to enjoy tons of benefits. As for my enemies, they have been wiped off the face of the earth!"

Yue Zhong cocked his eyebrows at Su Tianyang and reached out to wrap his arms around Zhou Yanxue's extremely flexible waist, as he coldly laughed: "Yanxue, is he your boyfriend?"

"No! He has always been pursuing me. However, I don't see

anything in him it seems it's just his wishful thinking!" Zhou Yanxue laughed seductively at Yue Zhong, her words cutting deeply at Su Tianyang's heart.

Zhou Yanxue had always been someone amicable to everybody, but now she was extremely clear that she had to dissolve all relations with Su Tianyang and gave all her attention to Yue Zhong. Only then could she be valued on the level she desired. As for offending the powerful Su Family in SY County, she could care less.

"Good! Good! Good! Yue Zhong, today's humiliation... I will return it in the future!" Su Tianyang's expression had turned extremely ugly and his gaze was like that of a venomous snake staring at Yue Zhong and Zhou Yanxue. Abruptly he turned around and left with his 2 henchmen in tow.

Wen Baoguo came to Yue Zhong's side and reminded him: "Yue Zhong, Su Tianyang is a really vengeful person. Thus you must be careful."

Su Tianyang had intended to take away Zhou Yanxue in front of Wen Baoguo and it infuriated him. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong's presence, he would have lashed out on the spot. Zhou Yanxue was a celebrity and if Su Tianyang had brought her away quietly, Wen Baoguo could turn a blind eye. However, intending to abduct her in front of so many people like a bandit was tantamount to not giving Wen Baoguo face. So of course even if Yue Zhong had not acted, Wen Baoguo would have immediately clashed with Su Tianyang.

Yue Zhong lightly smiled and said, "I know, Mayor Wen."

Within the villa, there were human and Dark Crow corpses everywhere, as the remaining guests left in a scattered manner, the banquet had somehow ended.

In Yue Zhong's living quarters, he was sitting on his huge bed, while the huge celebrity Zhou Yanxue was currently seated beside

him, carefully massaging his legs for him!

Yue Zhong looked at the stunning beauty in front of him as he waved his hands to stop what she was doing. "Speak! Tell me all that you know. If the value of the intel is sufficient, i can give you your freedom!! I can also assure that you'll never be bullied ever again!"

Intel was extremely important. All those years throughout history, countless successful battles have been due to the amount of effort put into gathering information. A crucial piece of information at the right time can help turn the tide in any situation.

Yue Zhong had little to absolutely no information on SY County's happenings and with someone who thoroughly understood the network of power and information giving it to him, he would definitely shelter that person. Furthermore, once Su Tianyang had expressed enmity against him, he did not mind giving him a few stinging slaps.

Zhou Yanxue gave Yue Zhong an enchanting smile. "I don't want freedom, I just want to be your woman! As long as you don't leave me behind, I will be your most loyal concubine!"

Zhou Yanxue was not like Wen Peishan who had the protection from a father with power. Her looks were a double edged sword, she could only rely on someone strong because without someone she would be enslaved. It happened that the person she had decided to rely on was Yue Zhong.

Zhou Yanxue gave Yue Zhong a light laugh and proceeded to tell him everything she knew.

As Zhou Yanxue was experienced at mingling and often took part in various gatherings and events, she often got closer with her fans and friends. Couple this with the fact that many guys wanted to impress her with their knowledge, and she often reaped a lot in information.

Through Zhou Yanxue's vivid explanation, Yue Zhong started to understand the situation within SY County and why Su Tianyang would hate him so much.

SY County's governance was run by 2 powers: Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde. Both were incredibly influential people, and the control they had over the government was large. Within the entire county government, there was no 3rd party's influence.

As for SY County's military, it was filled with many different people, with different ambitions and traditions. It had a regiment with 6000 people. This regiment was formed from the remaining soldiers during the onset of the apocalypse.

When the world was changing, the 2 Infantry Divisions that were going through an exercise had suffered huge losses. The total number of soldiers who survived numbered a little over 2 regiments, and the highest commanding officers had faced unfortunate endings. The next highest commanding officers were only Lieutenant Colonels. Amongst the remaining soldiers there were 5 Lieutenant Colonels, and these 5 each commanded a small division. After forging through countless battles, the 5 divisions expanded continuously. In the end they formed the current military power of Long Hai County.

The 5 major powers of the military were Su Dongming, Shen Hongyang, Luo Tianyi, Qian Weimin and Liu Huifeng. These 5 all held some form of power over the soldiers of the military. Of course, amongst them there were some who held more power and some less. With Su Dongming holding the largest faction of soldiers, he resultingly became the nominal commander of the Long Hai County military. Unless it was a joint effort though, he could only command his faction. Wanting to move the other factions required the approval of the other powers.

The Long Hai County's military had differing views and opinions and they naturally disagreed on their views of Yue Zhong, a thorn in their side. Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi who were the 2 major

powers, voted to wipe Yue Zhong out quickly and planned on taking over everything in his current existing system. Shen Hongyang and Qian Weimin voted for pacifying Yue Zhong and forging a relationship. Assuming it didn't work then they could form a temporary alliance and take care of Yue Zhong, by then they naturally wouldn't suffer much loss for waiting. Liu Huifeng was neutral and did not have any stance.

TN: Author wrote Liu Huifeng's name twice. Also, Long Hai army is same as SY Army.

It was precisely because of Su Dongming's attitude that Su Tianyang had disliked Yue Zhong from the get go. This led to him trying to be domineering and not put Yue Zhong in his sights at all.

These matters that concerned the internal affairs of SY County, L?? N??ng naturally wouldn't tell Yue Zhong. As for the ordinary survivors, they simply could not fathom the ongoings amongst the top brass. It was only someone like Zhou Yanxue who often turned up at such events and gatherings amongst the elites, that she could get such detailed insights.

"So that was the case!!" After hearing Zhou Yanxue's explanation, Yue Zhong finally understood why Shen Xue had given in.

SY County's military had only over 2000 people just at the beginning of the apocalypse, and after regaining SY County, they had lost another 200 people. However they now had over 6000 that formed an entire infantry division, but the bulk of them were new recruits. The ones that could really match up against Yue Zhong were only a few battalions. The moment they full-scale clashed with Yue Zhong, they would suffer huge losses.

That day when Shen Xue attacked Yue Zhong, she had actually brought Shen Hongyang's most capable battalion. If that battalion had been annihilated by Yue Zhong, Shen Hongyang's power would have diminished by half. It was because of that, that Shen Xue had chosen to compromise and not attack Ning Guang County.



After hearing Zhou Yanxue's extensive intelligence report, Yue Zhong finally felt that he had some knowledge of the current affairs in SY County and wasn't as ignorant about it as when he first arrived.

"Damn it!! Damn it!! Damn you Yue Zhong!!" Su Tianyang's current face was contorted, as he picked up the nearby antique chair and smashed it down violently on the ground.

A few pretty ladies were kneeling in front of Su Tianyang, their bodies trembling as they tried to brave Su Tianyang's tantrum.

"Su Chen! Within 3 days, I want to see Yue Zhong's head!!" Su Tianyang had just smashed the once priceless antique to the floor to vent his frustrations, but it didn't really work. He turned around and ordered the silent and dark-skinned yet robust young man with calloused hands.

"Yes! Young Master!" Su Chen had a look of indifference as he replied. He was the butler of the Su Family, and had been saved by Su Dongming once before the apocalypse. Of course he had since sold his life to the Su Family.

## Chapter 258: Peng Mengde

---

Su Chen glanced icily at the 4 ladies kneeling in front of Su Tianyang as he asked coldly: "Young Master, what about these 4?"

Su Tianyang glanced at the 4 extremely beautiful ladies, as he frowned slightly. He had given the order to kill Yue Zhong in his blind rage, and forgot that they were there, if this matter was to leak out, it wouldn't bode well. However, these 4 ladies were the cream of the crop amongst beauties, and were extremely meticulous in their service to him, and he couldn't bear to kill them at the moment.

One of the taller, slender ladies immediately begged: "Young Master Su!! Don't kill me!! I have not heard anything! I'm willing to do anything!!"

"Don't kill me!!"

The other 3 beauties also had expressions of fear as they started grabbing Su Tianyang's legs with their voluptuous bodies, begging pitifully.

Their pleading did the opposite, however, as Su Tianyang steeled his heart and gave the extremely merciless order: "Kill them all! Don't dirty the place!"

These women had to pay with their lives for a mistake that he Su Tianyang made.

Su Chen acknowledged with a nod of his head, and shot forward like an arrow, grabbing one of the women by the throat and breaking her windpipe. He followed up by grabbing another woman's head, twisting it lightly into an angle that defied nature. After killing 2, he took big strides forward and viciously chop down on the remaining ladies' heads, leaving 2 deep dents in their heads, killing them instantly.

In just a few short breaths after killing the 4 service ladies, Su

chen had already dragged their bodies out silently and left Su Tianyang's room.

"Yue Zhong! It's all your fault!! I want you dead!!" Su Tianyang's face was once again twisted with fury as he smashed another 5 pieces of antique furniture. In his mind he wasn't to blame, so he pushed the blame of the deaths of the 4 ladies, as well as his fury and hatred unto Yue Zhong.

Early next morning after breakfast, Wei Jueguang drove the Rolls Royce with the beauty Xiao Shishi and fetched Yue Zhong to Peng Mingde's residence.

Peng Mingde was of 46 - 47 years, with defining facial features. His brows had a hint of a stern expression, yet not a single strand of white hair was seen even though he was middle-aged. In fact he remained looking extremely youthful.

The moment they met, Peng Mingde immediately spoke with shock: "Yue Zhong, did you know you've invited huge trouble this time!"

Yue Zhong's expression did not change as he quickly responded: "What type of trouble?"

Peng Mingde replied: "The army had decided to dispatch 3 regiments to deal with you. Tell me if this is huge trouble or not?"

3 regiments meant over 3000 soldiers, it could even be a 4000-strong army. If this type of huge army were the military-trained soldiers from before the apocalypse, all of Yue Zhong's efforts in establishing himself could come to a halt.

However, since Yue Zhong had received vital information about the actual flaws and strengths of the army from Zhou Yanxue, Yue Zhong wasn't flustered at all. Their current core was only the 2 regiments of a thousand over people, after expanding into a 6000-strong army, the might still needed time to be trained up.

Yue Zhong himself had 7 battalions' worth of soldiers that

numbered in 2000s, if it came down to a clash, unless the army really went all out with all they had, Yue Zhong still had some of hope of success.

Yue Zhong spoke out with a strong killing intent: "If the soldiers come, the general defends. If the water comes, the soil will block it. If the army really wants to fight, then I shall give them the fight of their lives! I have 3 regiments worth of soldiers. I want to test for myself if the army's 3 regiments are stronger, or my army is stronger!"

Peng Mingde narrowed his eyes, as he carefully assessed Yue Zhong. He smiled and spoke. "You really are a hero! I have already rejected the proposal of the army. After all, as humans, we should not fighting amongst ourselves. Our current greatest enemies are the zombies! As long as we wipe them out, our humankind can once again repopulate the earth."

"Yue Zhong, my dream is to build a new world without zombies, everyone is equal, all is fair, upright, transparent. Everyone is free, everyone prospers, and equality for all with no exploitation. Are you willing to help me with this?" Peng Mingde had a passionate expression as he spoke to Yue Zhong.

Most university students were hot-blooded and passionate about the world, and were easy to influence and manipulate. Peng Mingde wanted to use the idea of rebuilding the world to hook Yue Zhong in.

This was after all under the banner of righteousness. Throughout history, countless young people have given their all for the cause of a just, fair and equal new world for all.

"I have brought 5000 tonnes of meat to sell, I wonder what items you might want to offer in exchange? If you are not interested in my rations, then I'll leave." Yue Zhong gazed at Peng Mingde indifferently. He had no interest in the new world order that Peng Mingde was raving about.

While Peng Mingde was capable, he was lacking in his guidance of his kid. His son had actually caused so much trouble that he should have been executed, but this type of degenerate was still allowed to live under Peng Mingde's protection, furthermore, it was a good lifestyle. If Yue Zhong really sold his life to Peng Mingde just based on the ideals he was talking about, his brain must have been knocked silly.

Yue Zhong did not have lofty dreams. Currently he was living life to the fullest, and was the leader of 30,000 people. With just an order, he could immediately execute over a 100 people. To throw all that away and be someone else's dog just because of some illusionary ideal? He wasn't willing.

"This young man is not a simple character." Peng Mingde was thrown off by Yue Zhong's practicality, as his brows furrowed he continued carefully sizing him up.

Peng Mingde decided to throw all talks about ideals and righteousness to the side, before he replied pragmatically: "The terms of the negotiations will be handled by my people later on! However, I hope to at least fulfill the quota of a 1000 tonnes!"

Ideals and righteousness are used as tools by Peng Mingde to win people over. Those who succumb to the idealistic thinking were perfect for being passionate cannon fodder. In fact, this was not a bad tactic. Under the pretext of ideals and righteousness, Peng Mingde had actually gathered over 200 youthful people as his Young Guards. The results made it so they were all crazy supporters, to the extent that they were willing to give their lives up for him.

Yue Zhong lightly smiled before giving the same terms he gave Wen Baoguo: "I can gift you 1 ton of rations as a sign of our friendship. However, the remainder will have to be matched by items that are suitable and to my liking, otherwise, no deal."

Peng Mingde immediately laughed and responded graciously:

"Since this is the case, then let me gift to you the Rolls Royce and the beauty Xiao Shishi as a sign of our friendship as well. I hope we can always be friends."

Yue Zhong looked at Peng Mingde and laughed lightly: "Mm! I hope we'll always be friends!"

Peng Mingde was indeed extremely capable. Yue Zhong could not help but have a good impression of him. However even if the father was a hero, the son was a bastard. Just based on the aspect of his upbringing of his kid, it cost him some points with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong brought the Rolls Royce and Xiao Shishi that Peng Mingde presented him and headed towards Wen Baoguo's villa, before leaving with his entire party.

At a nearby river, there was a group of survivors gathered together, looking towards the river with a look of greed. Right beside the river, the water was full of nutrients. There were countless thick Mutated Vegetables growing, even abundant aquatic life was showing in the waters.

Although the river seemed to be flourishing with food, few people were willing to go there and gather food. Only when they were starved beyond belief and had no options, would some pale and weak women brave the danger to pluck some of the vegetation at the outskirts. There were some who were under the control of SY County, and if they didn't go look for food, those who were waiting for them would definitely be killed.

TN: These 2 paragraphs don't seem to make sense.

Deduction: He's trying to say that the river looks beautiful and bountiful (1st paragraph), but it is in fact misleading and dangerous and that some of the people there are, in reality, forced to be there (2nd paragraph).

Zhang He carefully climbed out from the water, in his hands, he

had a few river prawns that were the size of his fingers, as well as a heap of shellfish and mussels. He knew there was a shoal nearby, and the Mutant Beasts inside the water seldom appeared there. However, nothing was for certain, he had witnessed his partner being torn apart by a Mutant Beast just 3 days ago, and fresh blood had dyed the shoal. He could vividly recall the despair and fear of his friend when he was torn in two. His friend was only 11, Zhang He himself, 12.

Zhang He looked at the few river prawns and heaved a sigh of relief, these river prawns could be exchanged for one or 2 jin of cornmeal, which could feed him, his brother and sister for one or two full meals.

Zhang He looked towards his left and right, before keeping the river prawns inside a plastic bag, and hid it in his clothes. He took the mussels and shellfish and placed them in another plastic bag, before digging up some wild vegetation that could be eaten, before walking towards the exit.

"You, come over here and pay your taxes!!" A middle aged man in uniform saw Zhang He approaching from the riverside and called out to him with a wooden expression.

Right beside the man in uniform, there were 7 burly men. All those who tried to make a living from the riverside had to pay them taxes, otherwise they would receive a beating, and if they were beaten to death, they would be thrown into the river to be fed to those monsters.

6 extremely frail looking women helplessly presented their spoils to these tax officials. Even after being skimmed by them once, they would still be skimmed another time by the other underground societies as protection fees.

Zhang He walked towards them frigidly, as he handed them the plastic bag filled with the mussels, shellfish and wild vegetation.

"These are yours! You can go!" After taking over half of the items

in the plastic bag and throwing them into a basket, he threw the plastic bag with the remaining items back to Zhang He.

Zhang He received the bag that was reduced one, and wanted to turn around to leave.

"Wait a minute!!" The tax officer seemed to have suddenly thought of something, as he grabbed onto Zhang He, and ordered the 7 burly men: "Hold him down!"

Deduction: You need 7 big guys to hold down a 12 year old?



# Chapter 259: Zhang He

---

As Zhang He struggled, the tax officer opened up his shirt and patted his tiny body, before finding the bag of prawns with a satisfied expression as he said, "Stinky brat! You want to pull a fast one over me, you're still lacking. Because you tried to evade tax, these prawns will be confiscated."

"Return them to me! Please just return them to me!! I caught those myself!!" Zhang He shouted out struggling, as his eyes turned red. Those prawns meant that his family could last for a few more days, without them, his family would go hungry.

"Damn it! You better know what's good for you!" The tax officer's face turned darker, as he waved his hands, which led the 7 burly brutes to start kicking and punching Zhang He.

Zhang He was after all just a kid, after that round of beating, he was quickly covered in bruises, before being thrown in a corner.

"Whoever dares to evade tax will face the same consequences!" The tax official glared coldly at all the other frail ladies present. He had to use the cold, harsh reality to shock these people, that way his job would go on smoothly.

The survivors who had come forward to pay tax, had seen such scenes countless of times, and were numb to it.

"How can you do this to a kid!!" Right at this time, a furious voice resounded out.

The tax officer turned his head towards the voice. He was just in time to see a few young men and women dressed neatly, and could tell with one look these survivors were not the common survivors.

The person who had verbally reprimanded the tax officer was Wen Peishan, who was dressed in red, making her look incredibly innocent yet sexy at the same time.

The tax officer glanced greedily at Wen Peishan. After all, most

women had gone frail and lost their looks and health during the apocalypse, while someone young with such fair-skin and a healthy glow like Wen Peishan was rare.

The tax officer looked at Wen Peishan and responded neither hastily nor slowly: "I am doing my job according to the rules! Miss, if you have any grievances or complaints, please take it up with my superiors!"

While the tax officer had some sort of background, he wasn't willing to come to loggerheads with Wen Peishan, who anybody can tell is not from a simple background as well.

"You're an asshole!!" Wen Peishan scolded a little agitatedly. However she was brought up well, and was usually more reserved. She didn't know how to deal with bullies, and could only resort to scolding.

Yue Zhong looked on at the scene, and slightly frowned. While what the tax officer did was indeed overboard, they were in a chaotic time, if the tax officer did not show some form of harshness, he might not even be able to collect a single tax.

"Yue Zhong, help me teach this asshole a lesson!!" Wen Peishan could not think of anyway to discipline the tax officer and decided to turn to Yue Zhong for help.

Yue Zhong took big strides forward. He decided he could not stand the overboard actions of the tax officer as well.

The tax officer looked at Yue Zhong approaching with alarm: "What do you think you're doing? I'm just doing my job!!"

The 7 burly men also stepped forward to surround Yue Zhong, staring at him with vicious gazes.

Yue Zhong stared coldly at the tax officer and said: "Your takings are obviously over 50%. I don't believe the top brass had actually set such a ridiculous amount! Do you want to cough up the excess, or do you not want to see the sun ever again?"

The top brass of SY County would definitely not be so stupid to engage in a 50% tax. However, it was that as the line went further down, the requirements became more absurd. In truth, SY County only expressed that those who went out to forage for wild vegetables and fishing would only have to pay 20% tax, and as for these outrageous tax officials who took more than 50%, the remaining 30+% went to their own pockets.

The tax officer saw that his tricks were exposed, as he stared at Yue Zhong and said: "I am Zhang Xueming, My cousin is the Deputy Commissioner of the Inland Revenue, Wei Tong! Who are you?!"

The tax bureau, regardless of the apocalypse, was a department with a lot of power. Especially after the end of the world, those who were in power had huge influence, Wei Tong could become the Deputy Commissioner must have been due to his wide network of contacts. Zhang Xueming had hoped to use his cousin's name to cause Yue Zhong to back off, so that everyone can continue peacefully.

Yue Zhong directly pointed out Wen Peishan's identity: "Slap yourself! Otherwise you won't see the sun anymore. She is Mayor Wen's daughter Wen Peishan."

Zhang Xueming instantly turned pale, Mayor Wen was one of the 2 major powers in SY County, with just a flick of his hand, he could call for the deaths of measly people like Wei Tong and Zhang Xueming. This was a world where human lives were almost worthless, he himself was just a small fish, even if he disappeared tomorrow, no one would care, instead there would be many people who would celebrate his departure.

"It's my fault!! I was despicable! It's all my fault!! Miss Wen, I won't dare do this again!! I'm sorry!! I'm sorry!! Please let me off just this once, I was also doing things according to orders!!" Zhang Xueming had kneeled in front of Wen Peishan, and was smacking himself profusely, while crying out pitifully.

Zhang Xueming had forcefully slapped his own mouth, to the point where blood started to flow from the corners of his mouth.

Wen Peishan's heart softened and said: "Forget it! I'll let you off this time. Give the confiscated items back to the kid!"

"Yes!" Zhang Xueming then stood up, before walking personally to Zhang He and returned his items: "Little brat, this are all items gifted by Miss Wen, hurry go and thank her!"

Zhang He held on to his prawns tightly like a wounded wolf, as he looked at the well-dressed good-looking Wen Peishan. Looking down he mumbled extremely reluctantly: "Thank you!"

After that, he immediately turned around and limped towards the distance.

Zhang Xueming looked at Zhang He who had looked extremely defiant as he frowned and asked Wen Peishan: "Damn it! That little brat doesn't know his manners! Miss Wen, shall I go catch him back and teach him a lesson?"

"No need!" Although Wen Peishan was ticked off by Zhang He's unruly behaviour, she was after all extremely kind-hearted, and did not want to make things difficult for Zhang He.

Yue Zhong looked at the few frail female survivors plucking the wild vegetation, before looking at those survivors staring into the horizon blankly, as he frowned, and seemed to ponder, before walking towards Zhang He.

"Wait!! Yue Zhong wait for me!!" Wen Peishan saw that Yue Zhong was moving, as she hastily chased after him.

Zhang He had just moved a distance, and saw Yue Zhong chasing after him from behind, as he gripped his plastic bag of prawns even tighter and asked warily: "What are you following me for?"

Yue Zhong immediately took out a huge bag of bread and held it out to Zhang He asking: "Do you want to eat your fill?"

Zhang He looked at the plastic bag in Yue Zhong's hands, as he swallowed his drool, while a look of greed shone in his eyes. He clenched his fists tightly and shouted out: "I won't hand my sister over to you people!! Even if you give us more food, I will not sell my younger sister away!!!"

Yue Zhong frowned as he knew Zhang He had misunderstood: "Younger sister?"

Yue Zhong immediately offered his conditions: "I want you to work for me! Help me do things! In exchange I will let you eat your fill everyday, and give you half a jin of cornmeal. If you do your tasks well, I will even give you cans of meat and dried pork!"

This Zhang He in front of him was only 12, just a kid

Yet he had courage and principles that was lacking in some adults. While the river was bountiful, and many survivors gathered, few dared to venture in, to actually fish. Since Yue Zhong wanted to gain a foothold in SY County, he naturally required someone who knew the workings on the ground.

He had already made friends with the upper echelon of society like Wen Peishan, Lu Chenguang and Tai Yiyan these people, he also needed someone on the ground.

Zhang He had courage, and his own resolve. Yue Zhong admired that and did not mind helping him out.

Zhang He's eyes grew bright, with an expression of hope and asked: "You can really let me eat my fill?"

Truthfully, with regards to a large number of the survivors in SY County, as long as there was food, they would be willing to do things. Zhang He had wanted to even join gangs, but those gangs did not want scrawny brats without attacking strength or combat power.

Tong Xiaoyun walked to Yue Zhong's side and eyed the little beggar-like boy and spoke on Yue Zhong's behalf: "How would

Brother Yue lie to you? Our rations are really beyond comparison."

Zhang He looked at the pretty Tong Xiaoyun and the group of special soldiers behind Yue Zhong, and immediately kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and swore: "Benefactor, I don't ask for much, just for my younger brother and sister to eat their fill. I'm willing to give my life for you!! Whatever you ask of me, I would do it!"

Zhang He was young, but mature. Those who could pull out such a troop was definitely not a small power in SY County, and he would only benefit from relying on him. His conditions were not outrageous as well, as long as his younger siblings could eat, he would be willing to slave for Yue Zhong.

In times like this where human lives weren't worth much, for the price of a meal, countless survivors were willing to sell themselves. It was just that in this cruel world, even if you are willing, you may not find a buyer.

Yue Zhong curiously asked: "Get up! I want to know, near this river, why won't those people go and fish?"

The river that surrounded SY County's borders, was a huge treasure in Yue Zhong's eyes, and the water was extremely beneficial in the growth of the plants and even aquatic life. If the river was made use of well, providing a constant source of food for a few ten thousands of people would not be an issue.

Since the upper brass of SY County were not idiots, there must be a problem for them to not make use of the river.

Zhang He hesitated: "How do I address you, benefactor?"

"I am Yue Zhong!" Yue Zhong replied in a deep voice.

Zhang He swiftly continued: "Boss Yue, the fact that this river has many aquatic life is not false, but similarly, there are all sorts of fearsome beasts in there. There are snakes that grow over tens of metres, there's a big black fish that can swallow a person whole, and there are some huge crabs that can cut a person in two with

just a claw! At first, there were many people fishing, but very quickly, they were all preyed on by these wild beasts! After the death count hit over hundreds, very few people are willing to fish anymore!"

A few hundred people had died in the river, the rest of them had been frightened off. Naturally no one was willing to fish anymore in those waters. Therefore, even though there was a river surrounding the county, the people of SY County were still lacking.

Yue Zhong continued: "Didn't the government or army make any moves to deal with those Mutant Beasts?"

The Mutant Beasts might be extremely terrifying, but they were not invincible. Since SY County had so many survivors, there would definitely be experts within the government and military, dealing with those Mutant Beasts should not be an issue.

Zhang He thought for a while, before replying: "There were indeed some experts who stepped forward to deal with those Mutant Beasts, and they did manage to kill a few, but after that, the Mutant Beasts got even fiercer. Even those experts were eaten, now there are few experts willing to come and hunt these monsters."

Experts were after all a rare resource, with every death meant one less expert. There were simply too many Mutant Beasts hiding within the river, and after the government and military lost over 20 powerful Enhancers, they halted all assaults on the river Mutant Beasts. The price was too heavy to bear.

As Zhang He and Yue Zhong continued talking, more details of the life of the lower members of society began to emerge. The people in the worst situations were the lower members of society in SY County. Although the upper brass had given the order for some emergency rations to be handed out to preserve these survivors' lives, as there was greed, countless rations were

siphoned by greedy officials, and many of these survivors did not obtain their rightful ration. There were countless women selling their bodies for just a bun. There were even people willing to sell their children at various survivor camps.

Under Zhang He's guidance, Yue Zhong's party came to an alley near a sewer, where the buildings were dilapidated, and stinking human waste everywhere.

On the street, there were various survivors sitting down numbly by the road, their bodies giving off an odor, while a large number of mosquitoes and flies were currently circling them.

There was a woman with tattered clothes, dark eyebags, sunken face, and emitting a sour smell from her body grabbing a little girl's hands kneeling on the floor in front of Yue Zhong pleading profusely: "This master!! Please, buy my daughter!! Just a box of instant noodles, as long as you pay a box of instant noodles, I'll sell her to you!! She knows how to do everything, bring her with you, and she can help you do anything!!"

The little girl of roughly 11-12 years, whose hair was in a ponytail, and had starved to the point where she looked like a little beansprout, was also kneeling and begging: "Master, please buy me. I'm willing to do anything!"

Tong Xiaoyun saw this and she could not help but ask, "Auntie! Isn't she your own daughter? How can you bear to sell her away??"

Wen Peishan saw the scene in front of her and could not believe her eyes. It was her first time coming to this sort of place, and in her thinking, selling one's son or daughter was something that happened only in books or the societies of old. The SY County that her father was governing over definitely would not have something like that.



## Chapter 260: The Truest Scum!

---

The woman who had dark circles around her eyes, she spoke in a grieved manner. "We haven't had anything to eat for 2 days! 2 days ago, we managed to eat some buns because I let someone have his way with me for 1 night. These 2 days, no one is willing to use food to buy my services! If this goes on, Qiqi and I will starve to death. If I sell her to you, she can at least live on!"

Wen Peishan looked at the mother-daughter pair, and her heart was full of sympathy: "Yue Zhong! They're so pitiful!! Help them please!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at them before giving 2 pieces of chocolates, "I'm buying both of you! But let me say this first, since I've bought you. You are my people. If in the future, you disregard my orders, I will be merciless! If you agree, eat the chocolates!"

Yue Zhong did not lack food, but he did lack people. Accepting these people under his wing weren't an issue.

"Thank you master! Thank you master!!" The moment the mother-daughter pair received the chocolates, their eyes flashed with delight, and thanked Yue Zhong profusely.

Especially the mother, Zhang Qiong, who thought that the best scenario would be Yue Zhong buying her daughter, never did she imagine that she would also be accepted by Yue Zhong. Even if Yue Zhong wanted her to strip in front of everybody now, she would do so without hesitation, to show her gratitude towards him.

During the initial stages of the apocalypse, as their bodies were more robust, men had a slight advantage over women. However, with the flow of time the strong men mostly died in the fight against zombies. Others perished as a result of power struggles with other strong people, even against some Mutant Beasts as well. Currently, SY County's ratio of women to men was huge.

Zhang Qiong and her daughter were not beauties, and naturally would not catch the eye of any groups around them. These groups were not willing to squander precious rations to care for the 2 of them, hence they had no one to rely on. Now that Yue Zhong was willing to keep them, their hearts were filled with gratitude.

Wen Peishan saw that Yue Zhong had accepted the mother-daughter pair, and she was surprised as she sighed in her heart: "He is actually a good man!!"

"Please! Take me in! I can do anything!"

"Master, please take me in, no matter how you want to play me, I will definitely make you satisfied."

"Master, please take in us mother and daughter!! We are willing to wait on you!!"

After Yue Zhong took in Zhang Qiong and her daughter, the entire alley went into an uproar, and a few dozens of women surrounded Yue Zhong, pleading with him profusely. They wanted to live as well.

Yue Zhong frowned, and called out in a heavy voice, "All of you, keep quiet, whoever makes any more noise will have to scram!"

The women instantly became silent and looked at Yue Zhong with a little fear while awaiting the next words that would decide their future.

Yue Zhong called Zhang Qiong over and asked, "Zhang Qiong! I want to buy a street to accommodate all of you, how much rations would that cost?"

"Master! You would require 50 tonnes of rations to buy this street!" Zhang Qiong carefully calculated before replying.

\*TN: 回复王 roughly translates to "Replying Master!" which doesn't make sense in the english context, but in chinese, it was quite common in the past for subjects of the king to always refer to themselves as replying the king before continuing their

sentences.

In the age, houses were not valuable anymore. In SY County, as it could accommodate over a 100,000 survivors, 1 normal alley for survivors to stay in would not cost much, 50 tonnes of food was sufficient to buy it with some balance.

Yue Zhong immediately called out 2 of his Special Combat warriors: "Song Wen, Kong Wei, you guys make a trip with Zhang Qiong, go buy the entire street."

As long as they did not meet someone too overly powered, Song Wen and Kong Wei could easily deal with 20 delinquents or troublemakers. It was enough to ensure that Zhang Qiong would not be taken advantage of.

Yue Zhong looked at the women around him and he said coldly, "As for you all, stay here and await my orders!"

Those women, including their children, numbered a few dozens, and Yue Zhong could not bring them and move around.

The group heard his orders and stayed there obediently, not daring to wander about.

"He really does have the capital!!" Zhang He looked at Yue Zhong easily taking in all the women and kids around, and his mind was set, and decided to follow Yue Zhong wholeheartedly.

"Si Xian, Xiao Lan, I'm back!!" Zhang He excitedly ran into a dilapidated garden and hollered loudly. He had followed a capable person, and from today onwards, the trio wouldn't have to worry about hunger anymore.

However, the moment Zhang He stepped into the garden, he saw his younger brother Zhang Si Xian beaten up till his entire face was swollen, and was lying on the ground motionless. His precious younger sister was nowhere to be seen, and a foreboding feeling arose in his heart.

Zhang Si Xian, who had just recently turned 12, spat out a

mouthful of fresh blood, as he looked to his brother with a stricken expression and said, "Big Brother!!! Meimei had been captured by Shi Ergou that bastard! Go save her quickly!! Otherwise it will be too late!!"

Dedition: The real question is...what did the brothers expect their youngest brother to do to save her?

Zhang He's face turned pale, as he immediately kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and begged: "Boss Yue, please help me save my sister!! As long as you save her I'm willing to do anything to repay you!! Even if you want my life, I'd give it to you willingly!"

Yue Zhong furrowed his brows and asked: "What sort of person is Shi Ergou?"

"He's scum!" Zhang He spat out as he was kneeling.

Shi Ergou was a scum. Prior to the apocalypse he was a watchdog for a gambling den and a loan shark. He was a resident of SY County. Then, after the change of the world he made use of his various connections to engage in many dealings, and became a huge figure in the underground scene. All the while obtaining numerous benefits.

Currently, Shi Ergou had a small force of 50 fighters. Thus he was someone people didn't dare offend in this part of the county. Those who antagonized him had their families broken, mostly because he was supported by various backers, all of whom were strong.

"How is it? Boss! How are the goods this time? She is that little dog Zhang He's younger sister Zhang Yulan!" A huge burly man, with decent features and an aura of self-righteousness pointed towards a little girl of about 11 years old. She had snow-white, delicate and pretty looking skin.

"Not bad!! She's decent!!" Shi Ergou's eyes flashed as he broke into a smile. Leisurely he reached his hand out to grab Zhang

Yulan's face.

"Pei!" Zhang Yulan looked at Shi Ergou's disgusting expression, and directly spat at him.

As Shi Ergou did not have enough time to block and he received the spit on his face. He reached to wipe his face with his hand and he proceeded to lick his hand of the saliva, and said in an extremely perverted manner, "How fragrant!!"

TN: I was truly disturbed by this. And I don't think there's anybody's saliva in the world that actually smells good.

Dedition: \*Spits on hand and shows it for inspection\* I beg to differ...

Ulamog: I distinctly smell chicken and chips. I'm sure of it. As for the Scum.... Torture is not enough....

Zhang Yulan broke out in cold sweat and felt the hair rise on the back of her neck, as she used her voice that had yet to mature and shouted, "Damn pervert!!"

"Little bitch, you dare to curse me!!" Shi Ergou's eyes flashed icily. His palm immediately slapped Zhang Yulan's face, causing her pretty face to swell, as he laughed coldly: "Don't worry, I like you very much. I will train you properly, to become the most shameless bitch! The esteemed buyer likes shameless bitches like you the most. Once you are delivered to him, he will definitely guide you well! However before then, let me taste you first!"

Ulamog: OK. Maybe slightly less torture time for this guy. So that I can spend more time on the buyer. sharpens Hatchet

After that, Shi Ergou reached out towards Zhang Yulan's clothes.

Zhang Yulan's heart started to beat faster in fear, and tears started to stream down her pale face.

"Boss!! There's someone killing their way in!!" Right at this time, one of Shi Ergou's subordinate rushed in and shouted out loudly.

"How many are there?" Shi Ergou furrowed his brows as he stopped his intention to violate Zhang Yulan, and questioned his subordinates.

"4 of them, there are only 4 of them!" The subordinate cried out in alarm.

Shi Ergou immediately lashed out in fury: "You have 50 people, there are only 4 of them, and you can't take them down, do you guys eat shit or something?"

The subordinate quivered in fear and exclaimed, "They are experts! They are all high level Enhancers!!!"

Shi Ergou's face instantly fell. Enhancers had strength that vastly surpassed normal people, and one Enhancer could take on 10 people with no issues. He had 3 or 4 Enhancers amongst his underlings, but they were at most Level 3 or 4, and were not much stronger than normal people. Against higher level Enhancers, they were basically useless.

Right at this time, following a huge explosive bang, one of Shi Ergou's subordinate was kicked in, and violently smashed into a table, knocking the table away.

Yue Zhong strided in.

Shi Ergou looked at Yue Zhong, as he immediately bowed in a respectful manner and said: "May I ask who you are? Dare I ask what business might this esteemed guest have with us?"

Zhang Yulan looked towards the previously arrogant and despotic Shi Ergou treating Yue Zhong with respect, before looking at Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing with a strange gaze.

"Hand her to me!" Yue Zhong pointed to Zhang Yulan.

Shi Ergou put on an extremely complicated expression as he tried to find a way out of the situation: "Honoured guest! This is a person that Director Yuan Yueshan from the Tax Bureau wants. Doing things like this is a little overboard, isn't it? In my

courtyard, there are a few more little bitches like her, although they may not compare to her, but they are definitely more obedient than her!!"

The tax bureau held a great deal of resources after all. The director of the tax bureau was also an important person, such that even Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde had to keep an eye on him.

"If it's like that, then scum like you do have some use after all!!" Yue Zhong immediately stepped up and lashed out with a kick, causing Shi Ergou to fly and hit a table, fainting immediately.

With the flash of a blade, the ropes on Zhang Yulan's body were immediately cut loose!

"Your elder brothers have already followed me! From now on, you're also under me! I will protect you guys to the best of my capabilities." Yue Zhong eyed Zhang Yulan as he spoke in a heavy voice.

Zhang Yulan blinked twice, as her eyes had a strange gleam. She walked over to Yue Zhong's side and hugged his arm tightly, as though it was the one place she could feel the safest.

# Chapter 261: Go Die! Scum!

---

"Scum! He really deserves death!!" Yue Zhong eyed the scene in front of him, as he gritted his teeth and spat out the foul taste in his mouth.

"What a bastard!!"

"He needs to die!!"

Zhang Yulan and Tong Xiaoyun could not help but curse loudly. Especially Zhang Yulan who thought that just earlier, she almost became part of this group in front of her and her heart felt cold.

4 young girls of roughly 11 or 12 were enclosed inside a cage, with collars around their necks. The height of the cage made it so that the girls could only squat inside the cage, and their bodies had scars all over, their faces numb and frozen, causing those who saw their plight to feel immense pity.

Yue Zhong released the 4 of them upon which they crawled out on all fours. They immediately headed towards Yue Zhong and lowered their heads to lick his shoes.

Yue Zhong immediately pulled them up, and lectured them sternly: "All of you stand up!! From now on, you will learn how to protect yourself! Only you can save yourself!!"

The 4 girls only cried out in alarm, as their bodies shuddered and pleaded, "I will listen! Don't hit me! I will listen! Please don't hit me!"

Yue Zhong lightly sighed, but his eyes flashed with incomparable fury.

He wanted to kill someone.

Yue Zhong told Tong Xiaoyun: "Xiaoyun, they will be under your care!"

Tong Xiaoyun looked towards those pitiful girls and nodded her



head: "Brother Yue, you can be at ease! I will take good care of them!!"

"Where is Yuan Yeshan?!" Yue Zhong grabbed Shi Ergou and asked icily.

"The Fragrant Hill Villa! He should be at Fragrant Hill Villa conducting his business!!" Shi Ergou had no backbone and immediately sold his backer out. He valued his life and didn't want to throw it away with a way out in front of him!

In Fragrant Hill Villa, Yuan Yeshan was living an extremely luxurious lifestyle, he had 2 girls licking his smelly feet, and another servicing him at his crotch. He was indeed enjoying himself.

As the director of the Tax Bureau, he controlled a huge amount of the resources. Even the big powers in SY County like Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde had to give him face. Though, he knew that he could not come out on top of Wen Baoguo nor Peng Mingde, so he quietly stayed in his job, and continued to siphon resources, as he led his high life.

Yuan Yeshan suddenly shivered as he ejaculated, and let out a light breath of relief, before looking at the young girl's face in front of him. He felt young and full of vigor. In the current world, he could do as he like in broad daylight, if it was before, he wouldn't have the guts to do so. He could do it precisely because he possessed power and authority!!

Those who had power were above authority and remand! Even the useless son of Peng Mingde had caused so much troubles, yet he remained free. If he, Yuan Yeshan wanted to play with a few women whose business was it?

Of course, he did all these knowing that it was shameless and was afraid of retribution. Therefore he used his resources and authority to gather a few experts under him. After all, expert fighters also needed to eat. They also had relatives and friends,

family members, women and children. To survive and live better, they had no choice but to work for a government official like Yuan Yeshan.

Yuan Yeshan had 4 Level 15 Enhancers working under him. As long as they did not meet a powerful expert, the 4 of them could take down an Enhancer that was below Level 20. Even an Enhancer that had a higher level than that had to be careful, otherwise he or she might fall at their hands as well.

Furthermore, near the villa there was a special forces squad. If anything were to happen, within a few minutes the squad would immediately rush to provide reinforcements.

Just as Yuan Yeshan was having his way with those few girls, one of his subordinates suddenly barged in and spoke anxiously.

"Director!! There's an enemy attack!!"

Yuan Yeshan was alarmed and exclaimed: "Who??"

The subordinate continued hastily.

"I'm not sure! He's only one person! All our brothers have been defeated by him!! He is definitely an expert!!"

Right at this time, with a peng, the subordinate that had reported to Yuan Yeshan was kicked viciously to one side, as he flew to the wall and smashed into it forcefully, before he spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and fainted.

TN: Hmmm, seems familiar...

Yue Zhong strode in power on full display, as he stared at Yuan Yeshan and spoke coldly: "You are Yuan Yeshan?"

TN: HMMM, DEFINITELY FAMILIAR

Yuan Yeshan frowned as he spoke sternly in a self-righteous tone: "Who are you? This is government grounds. Do you want to go against the government and people?"

From a small house on the side, 4 men swiftly arrived by Yuan

Yeshan's side and stared at Yue Zhong coldly. They were the 4 experts that Yuan Yeshan had hired.

One of them was wielding a Tang Replica Sword, and looked to be about 46 - 47, while dressed in farmer's garbs as he called out.

"Quickly surrender! This is Director Yuan, if you want to go against him, it's tantamount to rebelling! You will be regarded as treacherous to your comrades, the government and the people!!"

Yue Zhong glanced at the 3 girls who were lying naked on the floor, with collars around their necks, as he spoke out in an incredibly icy tone.

"Yuan Yeshan, how is a scum like you able to represent the citizens?"

Yuan Yeshan replied without batting an eyelid.

"Before I'm replaced, I represent the people of this country, and the citizens. Young man, you may be capable, but in front of the government and the people, your power counts for nuts! You better turn yourself in while you still have the chance. You must believe in the law, the law will definitely treat you justly! If you don't wake up, you will only face death."

Yue Zhong eyed the 4 experts as he pointed to the girls and questioned them.

"Do the 4 of you insist on helping this scum? Have your eyes been blinded? Don't tell me you can't see this?"

The 4 of them maintained their indifference, they were not good men after all, after protecting Yuan Yeshan for so long, how were they not sure of the type of animal Yuan Yeshan is? However, he had the power to ensure that they would not go hungry. Almost more importantly they could have the women they wanted, hence they threw their moral conscience away.

"Damn brat! If you don't surrender now, don't blame I your father, for being merciless!" The farmer-like middle aged man

activated his Shadow Steps with a cold look in his eyes, as his entire being seemed to soar, as he shot towards Yue Zhong.

Another man who looked decent and cultured also activated his skill Airlock, and an invisible airlock shot towards Yue Zhong.

Another beefy yellow-skinned man activated his skill Super Strength Enhancement, as his Strength soared to 55 points. With the mace he wielded that was heavier than 100 jin, he rushed towards Yue Zhong ferociously. While he liked to use the Tang Replica Sword to deal with the zombies, against humans he preferred to use the mace, because it allowed him to exhibit his full strength.

The last guy just stared at Yue Zhong coldly, while he activated his Level 3 Skill: Spirit Shock, and a huge amount of Spirit energy rushed towards Yue Zhong. The power of such an attack was overwhelming, and if a normal person was to receive it, he would immediately lose his mental faculties, or die on the spot. Even someone who possessed a similar Spirit level as the man would lose concentration for a while.

These 4 men each possessed a different skill, and when the 4 of them acted together, even a Level 20+ Enhancer might be defeated under their joint attacks.

The Spirit attack reached Yue Zhong first. Turns out it was just that Yue Zhong's Spirit was much stronger than the man's and the attack had no effect on him at all. This was the Spirit Shock's weakness, it could not do anything to a person with higher Spirit.

Yue Zhong brought out 2 guns with a wave of his hands, and he casually fired a shot at the farmer-like man.

With a 'bang', a bullet wound appeared in between the man's eyes, fresh blood flowing out, and he fell limply to the ground, with an expression of disbelief that someone could draw and fire a gun that fast.

The next moment, the invisible airlock had locked Yue Zhong's shoulder.

Yue Zhong frowned, and used all his strength to shake it off, but found that even with his Strength, he could not undo the airlock, his right shoulder was sealed by the airlock, and couldn't move.

The mace-holding expert saw his chance and he laughed craftily, before swinging the mace towards Yue Zhong's head. It was as though he could see Yue Zhong's head being smashed to a pasty pulp already.

Yue Zhong eyed the mace-holding expert, before his left hand rose and aimed while simultaneously firing 3 times. The 3 cold forged leaden slugs immediately found their targets in the heads of the mace-holding expert, the Airlock-using Enhancer, as well as the Enhancer with the Spirit Shock skill.

With the appearance of the bullet holes, these 3 Enhancers were defeated by Yue Zhong just like that.

While Enhancers were definitely stronger than normal humans in most aspects, they were not invincible. A bullet could easily take their lives, unless it was Yue Zhong, Lie Tianyang or even Ice King Zhang Yun, those Enhancers who knew how to use imbalanced skills to protect themselves against bullets.

"You can't kill me!! I am the Director of the Tax Bureau!! If you kill me, the government will not let you off!! As long as you let me go, rations, gold, women, anything you want, I can give it to you." Seeing his 4 experts falling under Yue Zhong's hands, Yuan Yeshan's complexion turned, as he trembled uncontrollably and started begging. He did not want to die at all.

At this moment, sounds of siren resounded from the outside, it was the special forces squad making their way over.

The Fragrant Hill Villa was the residence of many government officials, the moment some trouble brewed, the special forces

squad would immediately rush over.

Hearing those loud sounds of siren, Yuan Yeshan felt relieved and knew he had bargaining power, as he spoke to Yue Zhong.

"Those experts outside are the elite of elites, you will definitely not be able to escape from here. Release me!! As long as you release me, I can guarantee that your life will be intact!!"

"Scum, go and die!" Yue Zhong lightly laughed and shot forward like an arrow, swinging down his blade towards Yuan Yeshan's neck.

In his moment of death, Yuan Yeshan's head rolling to the floor, his eyes were filled with shock and disbelief.

## Chapter 262: Exceptional Trades

---

The special combat forces were quick to react and had swiftly surrounded the entire villa.

"To the people inside! Listen up! You have already been surrounded! Your only option is to put down your weapons, and surrender immediately. Only by doing that, can we guarantee a way out for you." The captain of the special combat forces Xiao Panshan hollered out.

The few girls in the villa looked at Yue Zhong with fear, uncertain if this killing machine was going to kill them casually like he done the others.

"Don't worry, I am here to save you guys!" Yue Zhong said indifferently as he glanced at those girls who were scared witless.

With that, Yue Zhong strode up to the window of the villa and spoke out clearly. "I am Ning Guang County's Yue Zhong. Today, I was under orders to clean up the degenerates of the government. You can affirm this with Secretary General Peng and Mayor Wen!"

Xiao Panshan heard Yue Zhong's words and was thrown off for a moment. After some hesitation, he still didn't give the order to attack. Secretary General Peng and Mayor Wen were the 2 major powers in SY County after all. If it was an order by either of these 2 people, he didn't dare to question nor go against it. Therefore he decided to report it to the higher-ups first.

The murder of a director of the tax bureau wasn't a small matter, both Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde had rushed over the moment they received the news.

Wen Baoguo's face had turned green as he looked towards Yue Zhong and spoke heavily: "Yue Zhong, this time you have crossed the line! If you can't give me a suitable explanation, then I can't help but to announce that you're not a welcome guest of SY

County, and would have to order your arrest!"

Yuan Yeshan wasn't Wen Baoguo's subordinate, but he was a government official after all. Yue Zhong had actually killed him in front of other people, without the use of a disguise and had seemed extremely tyrannical.

Yue Zhong pointed to the girls who were trembling uncontrollably as they kneeled on the ground and hugged his leg tightly, sternly speaking to Wen Baoguo, "Mayor Wen!! Yuan Yeshan that scum did this kind of disgusting and perverse things, don't tell me he doesn't deserve death?"

Wen Baoguo stared at Yue Zhong, spitting one word out at a time: "Yes! He is scum! He deserves to die! But he's a government official after all! If you want to take him down, you need to go by the lawful route! Nobody has the right to carry out judgement on a government official!! If you want his life, you have to go by the lawful way!"

Those who sat in the government positions were very concerned about their lives and stability. If everyone acted out in vengeance like Yue Zhong, then all the officials in the government would not sit easy. This had reached Wen Baoguo's threshold. Regardless of how overwhelmingly strong an expert was, they had to adhere to the rules SY County was running on, this was on the insistence by both Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde.

Peng Mingde sighed, while his eyes lit up inwardly with delight. He maintained a steely look as he spoke softly, "Yue Zhong! Yuan Yeshan was indeed scum!"

Yue Zhong laughed lightly as he blatantly distorted the facts: "What are you guys talking about? I did not touch a single hair on Yuan Yeshan. When I came in here, I saw his 4 bodyguards fighting amongst themselves and killing each other. He simply was not careful and was caught in the fray. The rest then died under each other's merciless attacks!"



Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde frowned. They were also experts at twisting the truth, but facing Yue Zhong's shameless lie, they didn't know how to react.

The few girls kneeling by Yue Zhong's feet were even more confused, they had clearly seen Yue Zhong beheading Yuan Yeshan with their own eyes.

Yue Zhong smiled before he gave an offer. "This time, I have invited the 2 of you to discuss a potential deal! I want to use 100 tonnes of rations to buy 400,000 sets of quilts between the both of you."

Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde were smart people, and naturally knew of Yue Zhong's intentions to wipe the slate clean with these 100 tonnes of food. Right now in SY County, a quilt was not even worth a jin of rations. Hearing those words from Yue Zhong, the 2 of them finally started to relax.

After the end of the world, 50 tonnes of rations was not a small amount. In SY County 5 jin of rations could cause a huge fight to break out and a slaughter amongst the survivors. One person after another would bite, kick privates, gouge eyes, punch and fight as dirty as they could. 50 tonnes of food could support 100 people for almost 200 days.

Yue Zhong was after all a strong expert, and had a huge force under him. As long as it didn't reach a point of no return, Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde weren't willing to butt heads with Yue Zhong. Furthermore, Yue Zhong had provided them a subtle way out. As long as they put in a little more effort to convince the other officials, this matter would not be too huge of an issue.

Wen Baoguo pondered a while before exchanging a cold look with Peng Mingde. He then stepped forward and said: "Yue Zhong, this time I'll overlook this! I hope there won't be a second time. If it happens again, I can only give the order for your arrest."

Yue Zhong lightly smiled and indifferently said "I got it."

Seeing the obstinate Yue Zhong giving way, Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde let out a breath of relief. Dealing with this stubborn and prideful Yue Zhong who could easily go on a rampage was a headache to them.

"I have a proposition for the 2 of you!" Yue Zhong suddenly spoke out.

"What is it?" Wen Baoguo spoke somewhat coldly. After Yue Zhong had killed Yuan Yeshan without regards for the law, Wen Baoguo had somewhat less of a favourable impression of Yue Zhong.

"I want to impose tax near the river!" Yue Zhong smiled, as he threw out this unexpected bomb.

"No way!! Definitely not!!" At almost the same time, Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde immediately rejected the proposal.

Taxation was of utmost importance to a power. While there were few people who dared to fish at the river, and the tax gained per day could not even hit a tonne of fresh seafood, it was still a form of rations. Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde would definitely not give this up.

"Let me finish speaking!! I want to clear the Mutant Beasts in the river. As long as the Mutant Beasts are exterminated, then we can ensure a fresh and unending supply of seafood for SY County!"

"I'm going to be delegating my power and resources to clear the river, I naturally can't do it for free. Once the river is freed up, anyone can just enter the waters that I cleared to fish, or pluck vegetation, but I will take 30% as tax!" Yue Zhong spoke out heavily.

The river was a treasure trove in Yue Zhong's eyes, and it had a huge amount of potential in terms of food. If it could be made use of, the people of SY County could all have decent meals.

"Of the 30% tax, I will use 5% to pay SY County, and it's up to you

guys to split it your own way! Once the river is cleared of the Mutant Beasts, the 5% of freshwater products as well as wild vegetation will surpass the current amount by 10 times, or even 100 times."

Yue Zhong's words shook the hearts of Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde, and they knew Yue Zhong was not exaggerating. The river was indeed a precious resource pool, it wasn't for the fact that there were so many Mutant Beasts, they would not even be worrying about rations.

Wen Baoguo considered a while, before speaking, "50-50. After you clear the river, we split the tax 50-50!"

Yue Zhong replied readily, "Sure!!"

Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde's eyes lit up in delight. While they might be at loggerheads, they wanted to join hands to fleece Yue Zhong like a fat little lamb. However, Yue Zhong's following words caused them both to frown deeply once more.

Yue Zhong continued speaking seeming indifferent to their machinations. "If you can dispatch 30 Level 20 and above Enhancers to help me, then once the river is cleared the tax can be split 50-50! If you guys aren't willing to send help, then I can only give you 5%! I will also need to leave some for the people from the military!"

If one hoards everything, it would not bode well. Should Yue Zhong monopolize the tax percentage, even if he used all his strength to clear the river, other people will get jealous. He had to give a little as a sign of goodwill. The government and military were both powerful heads of state in SY County, and Yue Zhong's foothold in this county was still too small.

Peng Mingde's eyes narrowed, as he thought carefully before replying softly, "Then we'll stick with 5%. Recently, our manpower is a little tight, we can't leisurely afford to send out so many experts."

Countless strong Mutant Beasts currently resided within the river, and the SY County's government and military had sent out many forces to try and clear the place many times before. As of now, the government, military and even some civilian experts had joined hands to kill many Mutant Beasts, yet they always came out on the losing side. In fact, the total experts that had died in these clearing expeditions numbered in the 100s, and a few precious Evolvers had already died at the hands of those Mutant Beasts. Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde naturally did not have much faith in Yue Zhong's proposition. Furthermore, even without doing a single thing, they stood to gain 5% of tax, they will naturally delighted to watch Yue Zhong exhaust his strength, if he was defeated, it was not their problem, and if he won, they stood to benefit from it.

"My manpower in SY County is not enough, to battle against those Mutant Beasts, I need to gather a few more people as well as some form of accommodation. How about selling me Xinglong Street and Nanshan Street? I'm willing to buy them for 100 tonnes of rations!" Yue Zhong continued asking without even batting an eyelid.

Wen Baoguo replied without much care: "Add another 50 tonnes, you can have Xingye Street as well!"

Xinglong Street, Nanshan Street as well as Xingye Street were all near the river, and there were currently many survivors living there now. Most of them were prostitutes, thieves, robbers, kids, old people, hoodlums and even gang members. Furthermore, the 3 streets were dilapidated. Dirty water ran in the ditches and it was smelly beyond words. By throwing the 3 streets to Yue Zhong, Wen Baoguo could stop worrying about the situation there and save on rations as well.

"Thanks Mayor Wen!" Yue Zhong laughed lightly.

The 3 streets had plenty of apartments, if squeezed a little bit, he could fit two to three thousand people there. With these 3 streets,

Yue Zhong could also be considered to gain a foothold in SY County, or a stronghold. And all he paid was 150 tonnes of food.

After the business transaction, Yue Zhong came to Xinglong Street.

Yue Zhong walked the entire street, and called for Zhang He, "Zhang He! I need to gather some people! Go and disseminate the info. Say I'm looking for people who are willing to fight and work hard! Those who work for me, whatever I require of them, they have to do it! Everyday I will ensure that they get to eat their fill! In addition, if they do well, I will not scrimp on rewards! I will only accept 200 people, not any more! Cheng Yu, follow him!"

Although Zhang He was young, he was mature, and he was a local resident after all, thus he was extremely familiar with the area. Therefore he was the most suitable person for this role.

"Yes! Boss Yue!" Zhang He replied in a respectful manner, before he dismissed himself.

Cheng Yu followed Zhang He silently.

"Little kid!! What's the catch for today? I can use my cornmeal to change with you, 1 jin of fresh fish for 2 jin cornmeal! If you let me play with your sister for a night, I can give you 2 jin rice." At one of the streets, a decently-dressed middle-aged man eyed Zhang He and spoke out while wearing a steely smile.

Zhang He looked at the man with undisguised contempt as he coldly replied. "Boss Niu, I'm not here to exchange food with you!"

The man in front was called Niu Dahui, and was a businessman. He used cornmeal and rice to exchange for various items with the survivors, and was well known amongst the people here as a vicious and callous man.

Niu Dahui immediately turned grim and chuckled, "Then pay your debts!! 4 days ago, you borrowed 4 jin of cornmeal from me. You owe me 6 jin of cornmeal! If you can't pay up, I will take your

sister as guarantee."

Niu Dahui had long set his sights on Zhang He's sister. The pretty little flower could be used to bargain and be sold for at least a 100 jin worth of food. Because of this, Niu Dahui had 'generously' loaned Zhang He 3 jin of cornmeal.

Zhang He's face turned black, as he gritted his teeth and said, "I only borrowed 3 jin of cornmeal for 10 days, how is it that only after 4 days you demand a payment of 6 jin of cornmeal?"

Niu Dahui's expression did not waver as he looked at Zhang He coldly and said, "Now that rations are so precious, don't tell me my loan to you doesn't require interest? My rates have always been 9 out,13 return. Everyday's interest is 20%! Requiring your payment of 6 jin is already cheaper than what is required , damn brat!! You're still not paying up?! If you don't take out the rations, I will take your sister as a guarantee!!"

Niu Dahui had given the 3 jin of food with the grace of a magnanimous man, and had seemed decent, but the moment he required payment, he would be extremely callous.

Nearby, the survivors came around and looked on numbly.

"Too bad! The small kid was hoodwinked by that dog."

"What a pity!!"

Those survivors saw the scene and broke into discussion. However, that Niu Dahui had 4 extremely burly thugs protecting him, thus no one dared to provoke him.

Zhang He's face was full of fury as he looked at Niu Dahui, and he didn't expect that this scum had actually thought of such an idea.

Niu Dahui stared at the infuriated but helpless Zhang He, and his face broke out into an extremely proud expression.

## Chapter 263: Kneel or Die!

---

"This should be enough!" Cheng Yu stepped forward, and threw a bag in front of Niu Dahui.

Niu Dahui pulled open the bag, only to discover that the bag was filled with white rice, and even had about 10 jin worth! His eyes revealed a hint of greed, he had just lent out 3 jin of cornmeal and managed to obtain 10 jin of superior white rice. This time he had really struck it rich! It must be made clear that white rice was much more valuable than cornmeal.

The survivors looked at the white rice inside the bag, and their eyes all lit up. 10 jin of white rice, was enough for these starved survivors to kill for.

Niu Dahui's eyes shook, as he spoke out fiercely, "No way! I lent you cornmeal! I want back cornmeal! If you don't take out 6 jin of cornmeal right now, hand me your sister!!"

The 4 burly men behind Niu Dahui stood up to pressurize Zhang He.

If it was any other situation, with the 400% of interest, Niu Dahui would have stopped there. It's just this time, if he could obtain Zhang Yulan, he would gain more than 10 times the interest. This was why he couldn't care less, and wanted to get his hands on Zhang Yulan so he could earn a whole lot more.

Zhang He shook with fury as he shouted out loudly, "It's obvious that white rice is much more valuable. I only borrowed 3 jin of cornmeal from you, and returned you 10 jin of white rice, what more do you want?"

Niu Dahui harshly criticized: "You say white rice is more valuable than cornmeal? In my eyes, a jin of cornmeal is worth 10 jin of white rice!! You can either pay me 6 jin of cornmeal or 60 jin of white rice, then we can call it even! Otherwise, bring your sister

here!"

The 4 burly bodyguards encircled Zhang He and Cheng Yu to try and oppress them.

Zhang He was thoroughly infuriated by Niu Dahui's shamelessness, and he shook uncontrollably while looking at Cheng Yu.

"A bunch of trash!" Cheng Yu's eyes flashed coldly, as his body seemed to disappear. In one move he kicked out, viciously sweeping his leg in a circle and caused the 4 burly men to fly back and hit the shop wall.

With another kick aimed at Niu Dahui's stomach, he kicked again. Cheng Yu's attack caused him to double over and his knees gave out, causing him to faceplant the ground into a rather fresh pile of green dog shit.

Dedition: Wouldn't the dogs have been eaten? This is a poor area, there wouldn't be no dogs for dog shit? Unless somehow....

Ulamog: Martian dogs equipped with personal teleportation matrixes... It's 100% then truth.

"This white rice is for you! From today on, the debt between you and Zhang He is cancelled. If you still want to find trouble, you will lose your dog life!" Cheng Yu pulled Niu Dahui by his hair viciously, as he spoke with enormous killing intent, while pouring the white rice on top of his head.

Niu Dahui had a look of horror as he pleaded loudly, "No more! Master! I dare not! Please take mercy and spare my lowly life!!"

Someone who was capable of dealing with 4 strong men was obviously a powerful Enhancer. He was an existence that Niu Dahui could not afford to offend.

Zhang He looked at Cheng Yu enviously and imagined himself possessing the same strength one day, as to let others fear him. "How powerful and domineering!! I must be as capable as him in



the future!!"

"My fellow elder brothers and uncles, I am Zhang He! I am now under Boss Yue! Yue Zhong ordered me to gather workers! As long as you work for Boss Yue, everyone gets to eat their fill!" Zhang He stepped onto Niu Dahui's stall, and called out to the surrounding survivors.

"Take me!! Zhang He!!"

"I can do anything! Will I really get to eat my fill?"

The moment Zhang He finished talking, all the survivors surrounded Zhang He and Cheng Yu, then started pleading profusely. To be able to eat one's fill was an incredibly tempting offer. In SY County, there were nobody who didn't want to join the various powers, there were only powers who weren't willing to accept survivors. It was mainly because these powers did not have any more rations, the moment they exceeded their capacity, they would run out of food as well.

Yue Zhong currently did not bring too much weight in rations, so gathering 200 subordinates was the maximum that he could allow. When the ration trucks arrived, he could then engage in a wide scale employment.

And then of course, Yue Zhong couldn't just take in too many. Otherwise, the government of SY County would not be able to relax.

Zhang He had gotten along in this part of town for a long time, and somewhat knew the various survivors pretty well. Under his selection, a few of the honest and hardworking ones who were not afraid to slog were chosen. Those hoodlums, thieves and liars, or those who liked to slack or fool around were immediately rejected.

Niu Dahui at this time had already crawled up, his eyes filled with a venomous look as he stared at Zhang He and said through gritted teeth, "Zhang He! Just you wait, I won't let you off this

easily!!"

After that, Niu Dahui hastily left the place.

Zhang He brought the 200 people he gathered in front of Yue Zhong and said: "Boss Yue, as per your instructions, 200 people have been assembled!!"

Yue Zhong sat in the middle of the courtyard. On his left stood Wen Peishan who had a look of curiosity. Located on his right, Tong Xiaoyun and Zhang Yulan stood together. The rest of the Special Combat soldiers were on different duties and missions, infiltrating SY County, and observing any strange movements from the different power factions.

Right at this time, a group of knife and axe-wielding men rushed in, while an arrogant young man with blond hair and ear piercings sauntered over and glanced at Yue Zhong. His eyes quickly landed on Wen Peishan, Tong Xiaoyun and Zhang Yulan, and he couldn't betray the look of lust in his expression.

A tanned man wearing a shirt with no buttons, revealing his tattoos, immediately walked forward towards Yue Zhong, fiercely swinging a huge knife, before cursing, "Fuck your mother! Yue Zhong you bastard, you come to our Black Tiger Gang's territory to gather people? Have you asked for our permission?! Damn it! You didn't go through us and dare to take people in? You must have a death wish right!?!"

Seeing the Black Tiger Gang members appearing out of the blue, the 200 people who had been gathered immediately hid to one side, their faces full of fear as they watched on. The Black Tiger Gang was, after all, the tyrant around these areas, and operated gambling dens and brothels. They loaned out resources at huge interest rates and engaged in various other shady business. At the same time, they possessed a decent fighting force, and had over a 100 members in their gang who could fight, therefore no one dared to provoke them.

The blond young man with pierced ears, and an incredibly arrogant face was the son of the gang leader Yun Qiang, Yun Fei! Yun Fei was also a ruthless youth, and had caused the deaths of a few people. The tanned burly man wielding the knife was called Cheng Yunshu, and was one of the top 5 fighters in Black Tiger Gang. Even prior to the apocalypse, he was a fighter for a gang, and his knife skills were brutal and ruthless. Of course he had taken numerous lives as well.

"Go and die!" Yue Zhong frowned, and immediately fired a shot at that Cheng Yunshu.

Bang! A bullet hole appeared in Cheng Yunshu's head, and his entire person slumped lifelessly backwards. His eyes were filled with disbelief and shock. He didn't expect that Yue Zhong had not spoken more than a sentence, and instead had just decided to kill him instantly.

Those members of the Black Tiger Gang who had walked in with strong killing intent watched Cheng Yunshu slump to the floor in disbelief as well. That was one of the prized top fighters in their gang. In the battles for territory and control, he was someone who could take on 6 different people, and such a bull had actually died at Yue Zhong's hands.

"The whole lot of you kneel or die!" Yue Zhong coldly eyed those 20 gang members who had rushed over and spoke. He didn't even stand, and had still remained sitting on the chair.

4 Special Combat soldiers walked out with their .05 submachine guns aimed at the gang members.

Outside of the courtyard's gates, Cheng Yu wordlessly aimed a .05 submachine gun at the 20 members of the Black Tiger Gang.

As long as Yue Zhong gave the order, the 5 of them could instantly decimate the over 20 members from the Black Tiger Gang.

Yun Fei saw the scene in front of him, and his back broke out in cold sweat, and right now, he absolutely hated Niu Dahui who had goaded him into this. The man in front of him was obviously extremely decisive and vicious, he would kill without engaging in idle banter. With a single word from him, he forced people to kneel. This was the tyrant of tyrants, devil of devils!

Yun Fei had wanted to say something, but once he saw Yue Zhong's eyes which were filled with killing intent, his heart went limp. He immediately kneeled down and said loudly, "It's a misunderstanding!! It's all a misunderstanding!!"

The members of the Black Tiger Gang immediately kneeled one by one. There were, however, some who seemed to be hesitating. They had their pride, and they were actually being forced to kneel in front of a young man, and that made them indignant.

Bang bang!

(TN: all over you~~~)

The sounds of gunfire resounded from the .05 light machine gun. Those Black Tiger Gang members who had not thrown their weapons down in time, were immediately shot full of bullet holes, their entire body bleeding, as they slumped to the floor, fresh blood flowing out of their wounds.

The 11 members had just died like that without the chance to resist, and the cruel scene let Yun Fei truly feel frightened at the ruthless slaughter of this youth in front of him. He had always been tough on his enemies while treating his people well, and was afraid that Yue Zhong could just execute them all on the spot.

Those who were gathered by Zhang He on Yue Zhong's orders witnessed the cruel scene, as their hearts went cold, and they all kneeled subconsciously.

Seeing everyone kneeling down, Zhang Yulan's eyes flashed with a hint of passion, as she looked towards Yue Zhong with reverence.

Yue Zhong eyed Yun Fei kneeling on the ground icily and asked "Who are you?"

The deaths of the 12 members of the Black Tiger Group was of no importance to Yue Zhong. In SY County, as long as Yue Zhong did not publicly execute any government officials, the murder of a few gang members weren't worth shit. In fact, because of the struggle for dominance, the gangs would be engaged in fighting every few days, with a few deaths as a result. The government would not bother with them too much.

## Chapter 264: Basement!

---

"I am Yun Fei, the son of Black Tiger Gang's leader Yun Qiang! This time we were tricked by Niu Dahui, that's why we offended you! Please be magnanimous and let us off!! Our Black Tiger Gang is willing to offer 3 tonnes of white rice as compensation!!" Yun Fei kneeled on the floor, his back full of cold sweat. From young, he had never felt such tyrannical pressure before. Honestly, he knew if he wasn't careful he would easily become a corpse.

Yue Zhong called Zhang He over, "Black Tiger Gang? Zhang He, what's this Black Tiger Gang?"

Zhang He did not hesitate, and immediately replied loudly, "Boss Yue! This Black Tiger Gang is Xinglong Street's biggest triad. They are actually pretty good at this kind of stuff. They control the gambling dens, lend out money at high interest rates, force women to sell their bodies, and are basically a huge evil!"

If it was anyone else asking Zhang He he might have his reservations. But because Yue Zhong was his backer, he didn't have to fear anyone.

Yue Zhong continued asking, "Do you know where their headquarters is located?"

"I know!!" Zhang He nodded. His sister was very pretty after all, and he was constantly worried that she would be taken by bad people, hence he knew the layout of the area very well.

Yue Zhong casually gave out an order: "Cheng Yu, bring the rest and follow Zhang He, go annihilate the Black Tiger Gang! Those who don't surrender, kill them!"

The 5 fully equipped Special Combat warriors going against a hundred hoodlums without decent weapons, it was definitely going to be a victory, it was only a question of how long.

"Boss Yue! It was our mistake!! It was my fault!! Please let our

Black Tiger Gang off!!" Yun Fei knelt on the floor, and immediately kowtowed profusely, causing his forehead to bleed. He wasn't an idiot; their motley crew of hoodlums would definitely not be able to take on Yue Zhong's warriors. The moment they clashed, there was only death for the Black Tiger Gang.

Yue Zhong looked at Yun Fei coldly and said, "I'm giving you a minute's time, unless you can give me something worth mentioning, the entire Black Tiger Gang will cease to exist from tomorrow onwards."

Yun Fei immediately broke out in further cold sweat, and his brain raced to come up with a way for the Black Tiger Gang to escape this crisis.

Yun Fei immediately replied in a loud voice, "Boss Yue, our Black Tiger Gang is willing to throw in with you, and treat you as our biggest boss, whatever you ask of us, we would do!!"

If the Black Tiger Gang could rely on Yue Zhong's strength, they would be able to expand and become stronger as well. Yun Fei had thought of this, "1 stone, 2 birds".

Yue Zhong replied coldly, "You still have 30 seconds."

Yue Zhong could not be bothered with Black Tiger Gang and its resources. He only had to put out rations, and could gather a random team together. Training them for a few days plus equipping them with his items, the Black Tiger Gang would not even compare to that.

Yun Fei's back constantly perspired, as he racked his brains again, before his eyes lit up and he said, "I know a place that has a lot of rations!!!"

Yue Zhong asked in a drawly voice, "How much rations?"

If it was just 1 or 2 tonnes of rations, Yue Zhong wouldn't give a shit, he could easily pull out that amount.

Yun Fei replied: "Definitely no less than 500 tonnes!"

"Tell me the location! After we salvage it, I will let you guys leave!" Yue Zhong called out indifferently.

500 tonnes was not a small sum, it could let even the likes of Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde to go green. With this 500 tonnes of food, Yue Zhong could immediately maintain a group of 1000 people for half a year.

"Is it here?" Yue Zhong followed Yun Fei to a village within the city, as he pointed to a 7-storey high detached building on a plot of land and asked.

Yun Fei told Yue Zhong the secret he had kept for quite a while: "It is right here!! Not too long ago, I saw some people moving some items here, and where the vehicle passed by, I noticed some white rice spilled around the area! After that, the same vehicle continuously moved items to and fro this place, based on my calculations, I think there were about a 100 trips. Since the vehicle can carry about weights of up to 5 tonnes. After 100 trips, there should be 500 tonnes of food at the very least."

Yun Fei had initially wanted to strike this place, and take the items for his own. However, before he had the chance to, Yue Zhong had gained the opportunity. He could only give this place up to exchange for the survival of his Black Tiger Gang.

Yue Zhong frowned, before asking softly, "Is this place under the military's supervision?"

500 tonnes, it was not a small sum, if it was a granary that belonged to the military or government, then if Yue Zhong made any move on it, there would be trouble.

Yun Fei had also done his research: "Nope! The granaries under the government and military usually have experts guarding them. Almost always the surrounding areas of up to 1km around those granaries are usually brightly lit, and there are various checks. Even a fly would find it hard to fly in. This place however, lacks the type of security usually given to those of importance."



Stealing from the government and military was a huge offence, even the Black Tiger Gang would be easily crushed by either the government or military. Yun Fei and Yun Qiang were normal people, and did not dare go against the government or military.

Yue Zhong observed the place carefully, and discovered that the luxurious looking Western-style bungalow did in fact seem to not belong to the government or military.

Yue Zhong eyed the bungalow, then gave the order to Cheng Yu, "Go take care of them! Try to keep them all alive!"

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's orders, Cheng Yu brought 2 Special Combat soldiers with him.

Cheng Yu used to be a top-rated killer before the world changed. In the Apocalypse after, he had gained numerous benefits from the God and Devil System with Yue Zhong's help. Killing countless zombies had made him become a Level 25 Enhancer. If he gave his all in his assassination, even Level 30 Enhancers would be killed by him in just a move, needless to say anything about other normal humans.

Not long after, the 7 guards around the courtyard were taken care of.

Yue Zhong brought his new workforce of a 150 men, strode into the courtyard with a domineering air and started rummaging for the 500 tonnes of rations.

"Boss Yue!! We found it!! We found the rations!! Come over quick!" One of the survivors excitedly rushed to Yue Zhong's side and called out.

Yue Zhong immediately brightened up, and followed the survivor to a huge underground basement.

He discovered that within that huge underground basement, there were stacks and stacks of white rice, cornmeal, wheat and various other rations. All sorts of rations were stockpiled in huge

numbers, forming many small mountains.

Yue Zhong looked at the amount of rations the basement contained, and his eyes flashed with delight, and based on his experience, he estimated: "Not right, the rations here are not just 500 tonnes, it should be above 3000 tonnes!!"

"Boss Yue!! There are more good things here!! It seems there's much more!!" Song Wen was in the one of the corners as he called out excitedly.

Yue Zhong strode over with big steps and discovered that there was a huge chest in the corner. The chest had already been pried open, revealing brand new .03 rifles inside.

"Military firepower!!!! There's this much??? The amount of firepower here could equip an entire battalion of soldiers!!" Yue Zhong took a look at the guns contained within the chest, and swiftly came to a judgement on the amount.

In the basement, other than the lack of rocket launchers and other missile and explosive types of weapons, all the rifles were enough to equip an entire battalion. Assuming one coupled them with the ample ammunition, it was enough to engage in a huge battle.

"Good find! Move all these back immediately!!" Yue Zhong wore a delighted expression and gave the order to Song Wen.

Everything contained within this basement, Yue Zhong had decided to swallow all the items up. He didn't care if the original owner was someone to be provoked or not.

With the support of these rations and firepower, Yue Zhong could immediately train up a battalion of soldiers to be deployed here, instead of taking some from his Ning Guang County or Qing Yuan County.

Yue Zhong looked towards Cheng Yu and casually barked orders as was his wont. "Go spread the command to those newly recruited

guys, whoever speaks of this will be directly executed. Those 7 guards we captured? Take them to the scum battalion in Ning Guang County."

Those in the scum battalion were treated harshly as befitted a slave unit. Before they killed enough zombies to obtain their freedom, they had to remain in the camp gaols or in cages. They could not even step outside for communications with others.

Cheng Yu nodded his head and immediately went to convey Yue Zhong's orders.

Yue Zhong looked at Yun Fei indifferently and spoke. "Yun Fei! Your information was solid! You're free to go with your men! Today's matters, should you reveal even the tiniest bit of information, I will personally come after every single person in your Black Tiger Gang. I'll even slowly eviscerate the one with loose lips as an example.

As of today onwards, if your Black Tiger Gang still wants to operate your prior shady businesses on my territory, don't blame me for being merciless. If you and your guys are willing to work for me, bring your dad to meet me at 9 A.M tomorrow morning."

Yun Fei wiped his sweat rapidly as he told Yue Zhong, "Thank you Boss Yue! Thank you for your mercy and kindness!! Our Black Tiger Gang is definitely willing to work for you. I will go convince my father to meet you here tomorrow morning at 9 AM!!"

"Who was the owner of the underground basement?" Yue Zhong asked the 7 guards directly.

Before sending the 7 of them to the scum battalion, Yue Zhong wanted to gain information. Since he had obtained such a huge amount of resources, the person who owned it must have been a big figure.

"Pei! If you want to kill me, then kill me. Your father, I, will still be a good man after another 18 years!" One of the guards stared at

Yue Zhong with a hardened gaze.

"What a good man with backbone! Please die!" Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and waved his hand.

Song Wen chuckled at such staunch replies and directly swung down on that guard's neck with his blade. His powerful slash cleanly decapitated him. Fresh blood spurted violently at first then slower and less, soon enough only a sluggish drool of blood was leaking listlessly from the wet stump. The lifeless head feeling slightly bounced with a sickening squish before it rolled on the ground and stopped.

Ever so coincidentally the man's aghast final stare locked on his face, was stopped in such a way that it looked towards his colleagues, his cold and flat eyes slowly glazing over.

# Chapter 265: Cleaning Up The Gangs

---

"Who's the owner of this basement?" Yue Zhong glared icily at the 6 remaining guards.

Seeing their comrade's corpse, their eyes flashed with fear. The enemy in front of them was more vicious than they had ever imagined. Somehow under such duress they kept their silence.

The owner of the basement was too powerful, those who betrayed him would not have a good ending.

"You can die then!" Yue Zhong directly pointed to a guard coldly.

The guard's eyes flashed with horror, his entire body convulsing as he struggled to say, "I...."

Before he even got the words out, Song Wen had already chopped off his head, and the lifeless head whose face was full of hatred and reluctance fell to the floor. This very effectively further added on to the fear of the remaining 5 guards.

"You were too slow!!" Yue Zhong eyed the dead body, before his gaze moved to the other 5 guards.

"I'll speak!! I'll say anything!! Don't kill me!!"

"I'll speak!! Don't kill me!! I'll tell you everything I know!!"

The remaining 5 guards lost all sense of their composure, and bawled as they fought to let Yue Zhong know what they knew. They did not want to die at his hands.

"So it was him!! Interesting!! Really interesting!!" After hearing the words from the remaining guards, he gained some interesting information.

The owner of the 3000 tonnes of rations and a battalion's worth of firepower was the private property of Su Dongming, one of the 5 heads of the military. In the military, as Su Dongming was the overall Commander, he was under the scrutiny of the other 4

powers, and every actions of his was closely observed.

In order to expand his power, he had siphoned out parts of the military's resources, and sent it to this small unassuming bungalow. At the same time, he was building up a civil force. However, they didn't expect that their hard work would fall into the hands of Yue Zhong.

These 7 guards were also the elites of the civil force, and possess weapons on themselves. They could easily deal with a triad of 100 members. In this part of town where the number of experts could not possibly be greater or stronger than this group of 7, Su Dongming had not expected that his prized possessions would be swallowed by Yue Zhong.

These resources of Su Dongming had been obtained secretly and could not be revealed to anyone. The moment he did, he might have to deal with the joint efforts of the other 4 heads to dethrone him, and his Commander position would not be secure.

While the position of the Division Commander might be in name only and could not possibly affect the other 4 troops, Su Dongming was not willing to part with it.

Since Yue Zhong knew Su Dongming would not dare to openly send troops for revenge, Yue Zhong couldn't care less about offending him. Even if Su Dongming knew it was Yue Zhong who did it, he could only grit his teeth and accept the facts.

Early the next morning at 8, the blond haired Yun Fei and his father Yun Qiang stood at the courtyard awaiting Yue Zhong obediently.

A small triad like the Black Tiger Gang helping Yue Zhong whose power was more significant, wasn't much of an issue. A few experts could easily wipe such a small triad out, therefore Yun Fei and Yun Qiang father-son duo weren't willing to offend Yue Zhong.

Zhang He walked out and spoke indifferently to Yun Fei and Yun Qiang, "Boss Yue wants you to go in! Follow me!"

Yun Fei, Yun Qiang both followed Zhang He in quietly.

"He really is strong!!" Yun Qiang saw the various Special Combat soldiers standing around the villa with .05 rifles and he was shocked. Last night, after Yun Fei had advised him, he had his doubts about Yue Zhong. However, today, he really opened his eyes and discovered Yue Zhong's strength to be more fearsome than Yun Fei described.

Yue Zhong eyed Yun Qiang indifferently and said, "You're Yun Qiang?"

Yun Qiang looked to Yue Zhong in front of him and spoke extremely respectfully, "This small one is Yun Qiang. Boss Yue, last night my Black Tiger Gang had offended you greatly! I hope you will forgive us. Today, my useless son and I are here to make amends, and from today henceforth, we are willing to work for you."

After the apocalypse, whoever had the largest fist was the boss. Naturally someone like Yue Zhong who had so much power at his fingertips usually wasn't someone to antagonize others because of prior events. In fact, most would wish to throw in with him, to obtain such a strong backer, and in the future, create more possibilities for oneself.

Yue Zhong coolly replied, "I want you to show your face and go to Xinglong Street, Nanshan Street as well as Xingye Street, and clear up all the different gangs. Once they are cleaned up, the entire area will be handled by you. Do you have the confidence?"

Yue Zhong had bought over the 3 streets filled with all sorts of characters, and had the intent to clean things up. Otherwise, if it were allowed to continue deteriorating, it would be a hassle for him in the future, with regards to security.

Yun Qiang hesitated a while before replying, "Boss Yue, the number of men I have are not enough to clean up so many gangs!! Nanshan Street's Azure Dragon Gang, as well as Xingye Street's Vermillion Phoenix Gang have over 100 people who can fight, plus those bitches in Vermillion Phoenix Gang have guns. Our Black Tiger Gang is definitely not their match!"

The Azure Dragon Gang and Vermillion Phoenix Gang might sound intimidating, but they were only 2 small triads after all. To eliminate them, 20 fully equipped soldiers was all it needed.

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "I will send people to help you! You just have to bring my men to capture their leaders and suppress their strength, that will suffice! If they aren't willing to surrender, kill them, if they surrender, absorb them into your ranks, no unnecessary killings."

Yun Qiang's face immediately brightened up, and he replied excitedly, "Yes Boss Yue!! I promise to execute this mission well!!"

Yue Zhong swept a cold gaze at him, "Your son Yun Fei will stay here to assist me! To put it bluntly, whatever you guys did before? I don't care. From today on, if you guys still continue to do those immoral things, then don't blame me for being merciless!"

Yun Qiang's heart went cold as he replied, "Yes Boss Yue! Then I'll entrust my useless son to you! From today on, whatever I do, I will be sure to seek your approval! I promise that I won't let you down!"

Yun Qiang was very sure that Yue Zhong had kept his son behind to not only guide him properly, it was to ensure he had a hostage as well. If Yun Qiang were to betray Yue Zhong outside, his son would only face death.

However, Yun Qiang felt elated! This meant that Yue Zhong truly intended to groom and test him, otherwise there was no need for a hostage.



The leader of the Azure Dragon Triad, Ran Chengzai, was feeling restless. His backer had just informed him that a Yue Zhong had appeared in Nanshan Street, and then had warned him to be careful. He was told not to provoke or offend this huge dragon, otherwise those on top could not help him.

"Should I send him a gift?"

Ran Chengzai hesitated a while, he was after all the leader of over a hundred fighters. If he took the initiative to gift Yue Zhong something, it would cause him to lose face. Furthermore, without any rhyme or reason, who knows, Yue Zhong might look down on him.

One of the Azure Dragon triad members rushed in breathlessly reporting: "Leader!! Leader!! The Black Tiger Gang has brought people to attack us!!"

Ran Chengzai frowned and said, "What are you panicking for? It's only just that small Black Tiger Gang, what can they do? Let Liu Liu and Li Bo handle it!"

Liu Liu and Li Bo were the top 2 experts in the Azure Dragon gang. They were both above Level 10 Enhancers, and possessed the God and Devil System skills. In these kind of riff raff triads, there were really no normal people who were the match for these 2.

The lackey immediately replied fearfully, "They have already been defeated! They were defeated within one move by those experts that the Black Tiger Gang brought!"

Ran Chengzai's expression soured: "What?? How did Yun Qiang get such experts?! Only the government or military will have people of that calibre!"

Right at this time, the sounds of merciless slaughter resounded from outside. 15 members of the Azure Dragon triad ran into the meeting hall embarrassingly fleeing from the enemy.

Yun Qiang had brought a bunch of the Black Tiger Gang

members and was sauntering into the meeting hall with an extremely pleased face. He looked around as he scanned the area and saw the leader Ran Chengzai. His eyes brightened up, as he laughed coldly: "Ran Chengzai, do you want to surrender or die today?"

10 of the Black Tiger Gang members held .03 rifles pointing at Ran Chengzai. It was quite evident that as soon as Yun Qiang gave the order, they would immediately open fire and execute the Azure Dragon triad members.

With these 10 .03 rifles, Ran Chengzai knew that even if all his brothers were to rush up, they would be slaughtered immediately.

Ran Chengzai looked at those .03 rifles and looked at Liu Liu and Li Bo who were tied up tightly, as he clenched his fist, a hint of fury flashed in his eyes, before he gritted his teeth and asked, "Yun Qiang, have you been bought over by Yue Zhong?"

Ran Chengzai was, after all, also a capable person. He thought to the previous night where the Black Tiger Gang had actually offended Yue Zhong, and came to the conclusion with just a little more guesswork. He also knew the actual strength of the Black Tiger Gang, and knew it was impossible for them to possess the .03 rifles! 100% impossible. Otherwise the entire area might have already been dominated by the Black Tiger Gang long before. It must be known that the government and military controlled the guns very strictly.

Even after expending a huge amount of effort, Ran Chengzai had only obtained 2 hand guns, 3 .81 rifles, and 60 magazines of ammunition.

"That's right! I am now Boss Yue's man!" Yun Qiang did not feel ashamed as he said it. "Ran Chengzai, you only have 2 options now~ to surrender, or to die!"

Ran Chengzai hesitated a while, before replying extremely reluctantly, "I surrender!!"

"Leader!! You can't!! We will fight it out with them!!" One of the lackeys from the Azure Dragon Triad immediately shouted out, his eyes red.

With a 'bang', the lackey from the Azure Dragon tribe found a new hole in between his eyebrows, as he fell straight to the floor, not moving any more.

"Is there anyone else? Just speak!" Cheng Yu held a handgun, as he looked at the people from the Azure Dragon Triad as though they were already dead people.

Under the cold gaze of Cheng Yu, the members' hearts went cold, no one dared to speak further.

Ran Chengzai looked at his subordinate that was executed and his eyebrows twitched, not daring to voice anything else. If it was before the apocalypse, he could still holler that he would get a lawyer. However, in the post-apocalyptic world.... So called human rights were basically non-existent, and those who were not satisfied were immediately executed, so there was no need to discuss about rights.

The members of the Azure Dragon triad did not dare do anything else, under the threat of the rifles, they obediently allowed themselves to be tied up by the members of the Black Tiger Gang, before being taken away from that place.

Ran Chengzai's face was currently the colour of ash, as he looked towards the extremely complacent Yun Qiang and muttered in deep regret. "Damn it, if only I had gained Yue Zhong's backing earlier! I didn't expect that I would actually lose to this bastard!!"

The moment the leader of the Azure Dragon Triad was taken away the rest of the triad became devastated, and a number of the members left at the first notice.

Yun Qiang brought people and obtained 50 tonnes of rations from the place. Really, without these rations, the Azure Dragon

Triad could not have gathered over a 100 fighters to establish a foothold around here.

After dealing with the Azure Dragon Triad, Yun Qiang gathered his subordinates and in a good mood made their way towards the Vermillion Phoenix Triad.

The Vermillion Phoenix's territory was in Xingye Street. They were a triad that consisted of only female members. These women were mostly mistreated by men in the past, and hated them to the core of their bones. The queen bee Liu Yujiao was also an extremely ruthless and vicious person. All ruthlessness aside she possessed strong interpersonal skills, and had garnered a group of over 100 women. Under her leadership, the rest of the women in Vermillion Phoenix could fight and risk their all, and weren't much weaker than most men, in actuality, they were a lot more ruthless.

Amongst the triad members of the Vermillion Phoenix, there were 5 rifles, and their power was recognized around the area. The Black Tiger Gang and Azure Dragon Triad had refrained from antagonizing this fearsome group of women in the past.

The Vermilion Phoenix also got their news extremely fast. After obtaining info that the Azure Dragon Triad had been annihilated, they immediately sent a group towards Nanshan Street to fight for control of the territory, and came across Yun Qiang's team.

A decent-looking woman with fair skin, called Zheng Yun whom had a huge knife scar running across her face that disfigured her looks, was also the 4th Sister of the Vermillion Phoenix Triad. She looked at Yun Qiang with the huge troops behind him as she asked coolly, "Boss Yun, what is the meaning of this?"

The 23 young women behind Zheng Yun wielded their huge knives as they stared at Yun Qiang fixedly, the moment Zheng Yun gave the order, they would rush forward to hack Yun Qiang and the other men to death.

The Vermillion Phoenix Triad could survive in this cruel post-apocalyptic world was because they had the capability. The women in the triad were extremely tight and united. With one order from Zheng Yun, even if they know of the imminent death, they would rush up to battle to the death.

Yun Qiang eyed Zheng Yun, as he coldly smiled and threatened, "Zheng Yun! Our boss Yue Zhong has given the order to subdue you all. Surrender immediately, or face imminent death!"

The nice guys that did not hit nor kill women did exist in the post-apocalyptic world! However, they were few and usually not in power.

Those who could survive for so long were usually leaders that did not care so much about chivalry. If there were obstructions to their goals, they would dispose of the person, regardless of gender. Human life had little value anymore.

## Chapter 266: Queen Bee!

---

"Yue Zhong?" Zheng Yun glanced at Yun Qiang, then looked at the .03 rifles his subordinates were holding and frowned. After Yun Qiang came into the possession of these guns, his strength was definitely not to be underestimated, even if the 23 knife-wielding members of her Vermillion Phoenix Triad were to rush up, they would only become riddled with bullet holes.

Zheng Yun hesitated for a moment, before saying, "I can't make the decision! I need to confirm with Liu Jie-jie! Please wait here first!"

Cheng Yu eyed Zheng Yun in front of Yun Qiang and said coldly, "Go! I will only wait for an hour. After an hour, if you still haven't come to a decision, don't blame me for being rude!"

Women still deserve a little leeway after all. Cheng Yu saw the determination of the 23 women in front. If Zheng Yun were to give the order, these crazy women would definitely engage in an all-out battle. He was reluctant to slaughter them.

Zheng Yun heaved a sigh of relief, and immediately sent one of the her subordinates to go report back to their headquarters.

"Big Sis! What do we do?" A dark-skinned woman of huge stature and big limbs asked softly looking towards her leader, Liu Yujiao; who had extremely slender legs, bountiful curves, and exquisite looks.

Dedition: Pretty looks? Smart? Welcome to another member of the harem. Scattered applause

Johnyxn: Another concubine on the list.

Liu Yujiao was not a simple woman. She was also extremely capable and calculating. At the initial stages of the apocalypse, she had manipulated countless numbers of men to sell themselves for her. As one can imagine, this ensured her survival in this cruel

world.

After that, she came to a small power and before long, with the exploitation of her looks and strength, she managed to steal away those women who were constantly abused by the people within that small power and established her Vermillion Phoenix Triad.

Liu Yujiao was extremely intelligent. She specialized in looking out for women who had received abuse or humiliation, and by extending a little helping hand, she gained the fierce loyalty of these women.

At the same time, she trained them up to become fighters that could hold their own against men. These women who had lost their self-respect and everything in their lives, having been given a second chance, became Liu Yujiao's most loyal supporters.

Liu Yujiao frowned as she pondered quietly: "Yue Zhong! It really is him. This time, it's hard to get out of this!"

Liu Yujiao had also recently gotten wind of Yue Zhong's fame. She had insiders within SY County's government and although they weren't very high ranking, their information was still relevant. The fact that Yue Zhong had murdered the Director of the Tax Bureau Yuan Yeshan had caused waves and reached her ears.

Someone who could murder the Director of the Tax Bureau and still get away with it, if he wanted to snuff out the Vermillion Phoenix Triad, it would be beyond simple.

"I need to meet him personally!" Liu Yujiao stood up, and her eyes flashed with a resolute glint. While her personal strength might not be enough to overcome Yue Zhong, the only method she had left was to convince him.

"Big Sis! Let me go with you!" Liu Manyu, another beauty with long black hair, delicate and fair skin, and pretty features stood up and told Liu Yujiao.

A group that consisted entirely of females would find it extremely hard to survive in this post-apocalyptic world. Liu Manyu was responsible for public relations. Just with her efforts alone, she managed to source for the protection and backing of a few powerful factions. Due to that, Vermillion Phoenix Triad could stand on equal grounds with the Black Tiger Gang as well as the Azure Dragon Triad.

Without a strong backing, any small force would not be able to stand up to the government. Just a few policemen could annihilate the entire triad.

Liu Yujiao maintained her stance and said, "No, this time I have to go personally. Otherwise, our Vermillion Phoenix Triad will truly cease to exist!"

Liu Yujiao passed on some commands to her 2 sisters: "If I can't come back, you all should disband! If they get you all surrounded, just surrender!"

"Big Sis!!"

"Big Sis!! Let me go with you!"

Liu Manyu, Zhang Lili looked and shouted loudly for Liu Yujiao to change her mind. However, the Vermillion Phoenix Triad leader did not give a second look, as she left with big strides.

Yue Zhong glanced at the lady Liu Yujiao in front of him as he asked indifferently, "So you are Vermillion Phoenix Triad's leader Liu Yujiao?"

Liu Yujiao was currently standing in front of Yue Zhong clad entirely in tight black, with black leather boots and a whip hanging by her waist accentuating her explosive figure and fully exuding her commanding charm.

Liu Yujiao smiled lightly towards Yue Zhong, as she did not hold back with her appeal: "That's right! I am Liu Yujiao. Boss Yue, this time I've come to plead the same case as the Black Tiger Gang, that



is for you to let us Vermillion Phoenix Triad off! As long as you let us off, from today onwards, I will bring the triad to follow your lead!"

While Liu Yujiao could not compare to Zhuo Yatong or Zhou Yanxue in terms of absolute beauty, she knew how to use her attractiveness effectively.

So naturally every single move of hers was done with calculation to attract and move hearts. That, coupled with the strong independent character she had forged for herself, gave a strong intense desire in men to dominate her. However, these men usually became the stepping stones on her path.

Yue Zhong looked coldly at Liu Yujiao, and his eyes did not even contain a hint of excitement: "State your price! As long as you offer something worthy, I will let you continue living!"

Amongst Yue Zhong's harem, he had 3 absolute beauties, he wasn't the sort that would be fazed by more beauties. Liu Yujiao's charm was ineffective against him.

Ulamog: Hahaha ye teammates of little faith! Yue Zhong is too picky for this chick!

Liu Yujiao saw that her charms did not work on Yue Zhong, and she finally revealed her last resort: "Bullets!! I'm not sure if you will be interested in making bullets?"

"You know how to make bullets?" Hearing Liu Yujiao's words, Yue Zhong's eyes finally shone with a hint of anticipation, and the gaze he had for Liu Yujiao was also different.

"No! Not me!" Seeing that her final resort had worked, Liu Yujiao lightly smiled, before continuing. "But I know someone who does."

Yue Zhong finally revealed a smile: "Very good! As long as you hand the person to me, I will let your Vermillion Phoenix Triad off! However, as Xinglong Street Nanshan Street and Xingye Street are under my control, your triad will have to leave."

Bullets were hard to manufacture. While Yue Zhong now had men who could reinstall bullets, the amount was not much. However, Yue Zhong did not possess the skill to manufacture bullets, and reinstalling bullets had its cons, one of that was that the reused bullets had low accuracy. Bullets that were not accurate were of no threat to zombies, and having new bullets was an issue that weighed heavily on Yue Zhong's shoulders.

If Yue Zhong could manufacture his own bullets, his forces would increase their fighting capabilities. The Vermillion Phoenix Triad was nothing compared to the skill.

"Boss Yue! I have one more request!" Liu Yujiao continued to look at him with her round eyes, "I hope to follow in the Black Tiger Gang's footsteps and join your faction, to work for you."

While the fighting capabilities of our Vermillion Phoenix Triad may not be on par with your subordinates, we are extremely efficient with our information gathering. If you need, we can become your eyes and ears!"

"Fine!" Yue Zhong looked at Liu Yujiao, and lightly laughed as he promised her. This was a smart woman, and she knew how to get to where she wanted.

With Yue Zhong as a backer, the Vermillion Phoenix Triad could only expand further. In the post-apocalyptic world, it was not possible to survive without a strong support, one would only be bullied without it.

Yue Zhong gave an order to Liu Yujiao: "I have a mission for you, within 5 days, I want the entire Xinglong Street, Nanshan Street and Xingye Street to be cleansed of the riff-raff, thieves and liars; they are to be captured and brought to me. I will give you 10 .03 rifles, with 300 bullets, and send some experts to assist you guys! Those who resist are to be executed on the spot!"

"Yes! Boss Yue!! I will carry this out." Liu Yujiao replied excitedly!

On the other side, the Black Tiger's Yun Qiang also received the same mission.

In the following 5 days, the Black Tiger Gang and Vermillion Phoenix Triad joined forces and engaged on an extensive sweep of Xinglong Street, Nanshan Street as well as Xingye Street.

They ended up capturing all the hoodlums, liars and thieves and sent them to Yue Zhong. They were after all the leaders of the their groups and were extremely well-informed of the territories, so these riff-raff could not escape their attention. After the 5 days, all 3 streets had transformed into a safe and secure place.

The hoodlums, liars and thieves were all forced to become a coolie battalion (TN: Seriously what is up with the author haha) and made to clean all 3 streets, as well as to clean up the ditches of the dirty water and smelly contents.

Whoever was caught littering or anyhow doing their business was thrown into the coolie battalion and made to do corrective work order. Soon, no one dared to relieve themselves nor litter on the streets. The hygiene on the streets became a lot better.

After cleaning up the 3 streets, they were split into 8 different gangs, each gang possessing 50 to 60 fighters, and the total number was over 500.

After the 8 gangs were established, they immediately sent a request to SY County to seek permission to search for items on the outskirts. After obtaining approval, these 8 gangs brought people and left SY County, when they just disappeared, with only a few coming back.

After these 8 gangs disappeared, not long after, another 8 gangs were established, and again they gathered over a few hundred survivors. After some time, these new gangs again sent a request to be allowed to go out to search for resources. They left and disappeared in the same manner. Through this method, Yue Zhong covertly smuggled a number of the survivors in SY County out.

## Chapter 267: Assassination Attempt!

---

Yue Zhong looked to the extremely skinny and cultured-looking Gao Ming, who seemed 37 or 38, and asked, "You know how to create bullets?"

Gao Ming flinched a little before replying, "I do know how to make bullets. However, without the proper tools and materials, I can't do it!"

Creating bullets was not a simple matter, without the right tools and materials, even an expert would not be able to make them.

Yue Zhong continued, "Where can I find the items you need?"

Gao Ming immediately began to reply with a torrent of words, "Long Hai County!! I was the Technical Director of the XXX Machinery Plant in Long Hai County. In the machinery plant, there is an entire set of tools that can create bullets, as well as materials enough to create a million bullets. Furthermore, the XXX Machinery Plant has some barrel manufacturing tools...."

From Gao Ming's info Yue Zhong discovered that within Long Hai County, there were factories that specialized in manufacturing all sorts of ammunition. There were also factories that made mortars, grenades and even artillery shells. If they could subdue Long Hai County, then Yue Zhong's army would stand to benefit hugely.

"Should I make an attempt to attack Long Hai County?" Hearing Gao Ming's words, Yue Zhong was thinking quietly to himself.

Currently, whenever Yue Zhong wanted to send his forces out to clear the zombies around his strongholds, he could only send 3 out of his 7 battalions. The remaining 4 had to always be on guard in case SY County attacked.

If he sent out a huge force to Long Hai County, and SY County were to suddenly backstab him, then Yue Zhong would be in

danger. Long Hai County had over 700,000 zombies, and it wasn't a small number.

Furthermore, the zombies were continually evolving, and were not as easy to kill as before.

At that time, the reason SY County had been easily subdued by the military was due to the fact that not only was the military well-equipped, the zombies had not yet evolved to a fearsome level. Now that the zombies were continually adapting, the 700,000 zombies were stronger than a 700,000 zombie horde of the initial apocalypse by a wide margin. If Yue Zhong wanted to thoroughly eliminate the zombies, he would have to expend a huge force.

After pondering a while, Yue Zhong decided to abandon the plan to set out for Long Hai County, as the threat of SY County was still too huge to ignore.

"Go back to Qing Yuan County first! I appoint you as the Production Director in the Ammunition Production Department with a rank of Lieutenant. Once you are in Qing Yuan County, immediately train up a group of people. Even if it's in theory, it's fine.

Once I've obtained the materials and tools, we will have to start production straight away. As long as there are bullets manufactured, I will appoint you as the Deputy Minister of the department with a rank of Captain.

If you can manage to manufacture grenades, then I will appoint you as the Minister, with a rank of Major. As long as you work hard, if you want to be an official I will confer upon you the official position. If you want women, you will get women!" Yue Zhong stared at Gao Ming as he said this clearly.

Gao Ming's eyes filled with warm tears, as he replied in a loud voice. "Thank you Boss Yue! Thank you!! I will definitely work hard for you!!"

Gao Ming was a technical person, and unless he met with some fortune, he was basically useless. He could not even hope to compare with the likes of a farmer. As a farmer had more strength and energy than him, the farmer could at least fight and risk it all. In the post apocalyptic world, a farmer or villager who could fight and dared to risk, gained benefits.

Before meeting Yue Zhong, Gao Ming had been living on, meal to meal day to day. If it wasn't for Queen Bee Liu Yujiao accepting him, he might have already become a pile of bones.

Liu Yujiao had an astute foresight. She knew Gao Ming was useless to normal triads. But to stable powers with ambitions, he was a treasure that was hard to come by. Therefore, it was considered that due to her sharp foresight, she saved the Vermillion Phoenix Triad as well as gifted Yue Zhong with such an impressive technical worker.

After settling Gao Ming, Yue Zhong strode towards the outside.

"Left turn, Maaarch!!"

As Yue Zhong came close to the river, he saw Chen Shitou currently training the 400 survivors he had just gathered.

Chen Shitou had grown to become an outstanding commander after countless hours of training, and he was extremely adept at training new recruits. Therefore, Yue Zhong had specially arranged for him to be transferred over to train these survivors.

These 400 survivors were currently decked in green military clothes, and were training diligently under Chen Shitou's orders. After joining Yue Zhong's power, they could eat their fill everyday and even meat from time to time. This led them to feel extremely grateful to Yue Zhong, and they gave their all during training.

It must be clear that there were countless people who were envious of their current good fortune, and if they were to be eliminated, someone else would immediately fight to gain their

position.

When Yue Zhong appeared on the street, the initially dirty and smelly alley had been cleaned up. The numerous reeking piles and puddles of noxious human waste that appeared everywhere was nowhere to be seen, and the litter had long been cleaned up, giving the entire street a clean and fresh feel.

"The target has appeared!!" Just as Yue Zhong was walking alone in the street, Su Chen who had been lying in ambush for an entire 7 days in Xinglong street gave the order, his eyes flashing dangerously.

At that moment, Yue Zhong felt a strong sense of impending danger, and he immediately activated his Shadow Steps, before retreating backwards swiftly.

With 3 loud bangs, 3 bullets from indeterminate locations shot over towards Yue Zhong.

While Yue Zhong's reaction was extremely fast, out of the 3 snipers, 2 were top snipers of the military, and the remainder had the Sniper Specialization Skill.

Yue Zhong managed to dodge 2 of the sniper bullets, but was shot in the right shoulder by the last bullet. The force of that sniper bullet was fearsome! Upon impact even the Type 2 Mutant Black-scaled Boar hide that Yue Zhong was wearing could not cancel out the force, and Yue Zhong felt as though an expert had used his entire strength to blast him, fracturing a bone.

This was under the condition that Yue Zhong had high Endurance. Be aware that if it was any normal person, even donning the various hides as protection would still definitely have their entire shoulder blasted apart and they would be unable to move. Even Yue Zhong found that he could not utilize his right arm after that shot.

The moment the attack landed, Su Chen had already brought 8

experts and rushed over.

Furthermore, there were 2 other experts hiding in another room, and they looked at Yue Zhong as they started to chant different magical incantations. These skills were dropped from the God and Devil System, and though they required a long casting time, their might was immense. The moment they launched the attack, even Yue Zhong would be annihilated by the skill.

Yue Zhong glanced at the 2 chanting experts, and a chill appeared in his eyes. He quickly drew a .03 rifle in his left hand and fired frenzily towards the 2 chanting assassins.

A dense hail of bullets was fired at the 2 assassins, when all of a sudden a huge bear appeared in front of the 2 assassins. The enormous bear used its massive body to block the assault. This was one of the skills that the 2 experts possess, summoning a beast to block Yue Zhong's attack.

Su Chen brought the 8 experts as they all launched their attacks on Yue Zhong. The attackers used their hands to hit the ground forcefully and a huge spear shot towards Yue Zhong from underground, aiming for his waist.

Yue Zhong's face instantly changed as he moved his body in a flash, and dodged the incoming underground spike. His immediate response was to raise his gun at Su Chen and the other 8 experts and once again "Spray and Pray" wildly.

Ulamog: so this is a term kind of used to say one pulls the trigger and simply unloads the magazine hoping to hit the target(s). Usually it's in reference to a machine gun or a weapon with very high rates of fire. IE: more bullets, higher chance of hitting something.

Enhancers were still human after all, with the exception of those with overpowered defences guns still posed a threat to most enhancers.



Amongst the group of assassins, one lunged forward and waved his hands to activate a Psychic Barrier Skill. Yue Zhong's bullets floated in the air and were immediately dispersed by the Psychic Barrier.

Ulamog: how cheaty....

3 of the Agility-based assassins activated their Shadow Steps, pushing their speed to the maximum. They attacked while wielding daggers, and came from 3 different directions to lock Yue Zhong down.

An assassin with the Firearms Control Skill pulled out a .05 submachine gun and fired at Yue Zhong wildly.

Another 2 Strength-based assassins also activated their skills. The both of them were lugging a large hammer and a mace respectively, each weighing over a 100 jin, as they rushed towards Yue Zhong.

Those huge hammers and mace type of weapons were extremely effective for Strength-based Enhancers to wreak havoc among normal humans. With the swing of the 2m-long mace, regardless of one's swordplay or blade skills, it was useless.

Su Chen icily kept his eyes on Yue Zhong like his prey, preparing to activate everything at a moment's notice.

Immediate Summon!

Yue Zhong activated this skill in an instant, and White Bones appeared from goodness knows where, and stood in front of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong activated his Encompassing Bone Armor, and the bullets from the .05 rifles bounced off his body.

Yue Zhong's right shoulder was temporarily incapacitated, and his strongest weapon the anti-tank rocket launcher could not be utilised to deal with these assassins.

Plan B. He looked towards the assassin with the Firearms Control Skill and activated his Art of Fear Skill. A huge oppressive aura assaulted the mind of the assassin, and he threw up fresh blood, before he fell to floor with horror in his eyes, and died with a twisted expression.

At the same time, he extended his palm, and 3 bone spears shot towards the Agility-based assassins.

The eyes of the 3 assassins were filled with shock and dread, as they hastily retreated, trying to escape the reach of the bone spears. However, while they were fast, the speed of the bone spears was faster, and within a few blinks, the 3 assassins had been pierced in the heart, head and throat, before they fell to the ground twitching in death.

While Yue Zhong was taking care of the 4 assassins, the other 2 Strength-based Assassins took advantage of the time to rush to Yue Zhong's side. Arriving there they yelled as they swung their weapons downwards ferociously. If the attacks landed, even if Yue Zhong was covered with the Bone Armor, he would definitely suffer heavy injuries. Maybe even death...

# Chapter 268: Tragic Victory

---

Yue Zhong's feet shifted and his body flashed, dodging towards the side.

Yue Zhong had just stepped to the side, when the sniper with the Sniper Specialization Skill fired another shot.

An armor-piercing round immediately shot towards Yue Zhong's body, shooting through his waist, and smashing a piece of bone armor.

Sniping a moving target from afar was a really hard feat to accomplish. Prior to the apocalypse, the sniper was already a top sniper. Coupled with the Sniper Specialization Skill, and even allocating a skill point to it, it allowed his sniping skills to reach unprecedented heights. He could efficiently utilize an ultra-long range sniper rifle with his dynamic skills.

The other 2 snipers also fired at Yue Zhong continuously. It was fortunate that they could not achieve the type of overpowered firing that their comrade was exhibiting. As their bullets landed on Yue Zhong's sides, it gave him a sort of pressure. At the same time it also limited his movement space.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath as his Danger Perception Skill was pushed to its maximum, reminding him of the fearsome hold the snipers had over him.

Once he became careless, he would absolutely suffer some injuries from them as well. This was the most dangerous situation he had ever been in since the apocalypse.

Compared to the Mutant Beasts and zombies, humans were much more intelligent and could utilize their skills as a team. Even if their skills could not match him individually, when together? They created an extremely tough situation for Yue Zhong to handle.

Yue Zhong's body continually flashed about like a spectre as he made his way towards a small ditch. He had the confidence to be certain he could kill the 2 Strength-based assassins in 2 breaths. The problem was that while killing them, he would suffer the magic incantations of the spell casting experts.

The magic incantation skills possessed a frightening power, and the best way to deal with it was to kill them before the process was finished. If they released the skill, Yue Zhong would face a larger problem.

Yue Zhong's speed was inhumane, and only an Agility-based Evolver or those Enhancers who focused on Agility growth could surpass him. As illustrated by the fact that Su Chen and the rest were not even able to catch up to Yue Zhong's afterimage.

Right at this time, Su Chen's eyes flashed with a domineering chill as he activated his Vertical Gravity Skill on Yue Zhong.

In that instant, Yue Zhong felt his body becoming heavier, even much heavier! As a gravitational force 3 times that of usual pressed down on him, it severely constrained his speed.

"Damn it!!" Yue Zhong's eyes glinted fiercely in anger. With his speed now, wanting to escape to the other side of the ditch would only result in him becoming a target for those expert snipers. With the pursuit from the assassins behind, he would have to pay a hefty price to even think of escaping to the ditch.

The small assassin team led by Su Chen had incredible teamwork, and their methods vicious. Their exemplary teamwork managed to come up with counters to each and every ability of Yue Zhong's. Of course having made so many preparations, they were well prepared just to force him down a road of despair.

"You want my life?! You'll have to pay for it first!!" A maniacal killing intent surfaced in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he charged towards the Strength-based assassins.

Seeing that Yue Zhong was rushing over, the heavy weapons-wielding duo grinned in delight, as they waved their massive weapons towards Yue Zhong to crush him. After all, with his speed it would be impossible for him to dodge their attacks completely.

Yue Zhong did not show any hints of dodging in his actions. Instead, he activated his Art of Fear skill as he ran and the fearsome monstrous aura spread out with Yue Zhong at the centre.

Those within a certain circumference could not escape the terror. The 2 Strength-based enhancers were enveloped by that Soul-chilling aura nearly immediately. As their Spirit stat was low, they could not defend against its assault and fell to the ground, terrified and broken.

Yue Zhong's Art of Fear also reached Su Chen, it was somewhat unexpected though that while Su Chen's Spirit was not as high as Yue Zhong, it wasn't low either. All he felt was a little headache, as he swiftly retreated backwards in response.

Deduction: That crappy excuse...

Yue Zhong wanted to rush towards Su Chen but was suddenly hindered when the assassin possessing the Ground Manipulation ability struck the ground, and a sharp spike rose from the earth in front of Yue Zhong almost bifurcating him at the crotch and thoroughly blocking his advance.

Yue Zhong opened his right palm, and shot a Bone Spear towards the ground, propelling him upwards as he spread his legs to avoid the tip of the spike and angled himself perfectly in descent. The result was a beautiful looking maneuver followed by Yue Zhong shooting fiercely towards Su Chen like an arrow.

The assassin wielding the .05 submachine gun took out a hand grenade at this time and threw it at Yue Zhong.

With a bang, the grenade exploded in front of Yue Zhong. A fearsome amount of shrapnel flew out, causing Yue Zhong to be

blasted backwards.

Yue Zhong tried to dodge at the first moment, but was still heavily struck by the sudden attack from the grenade, and parts of his Encompassing Bone Armor were shattered and sent flying by that attack. Fortunately, the shrapnel and resulting explosion did not affect his body that was boosted by his high Endurance.

"Go die!!" While in mid-air, Yue Zhong looked towards that assassin with the .05 submachine gun, and activated his Art of Fear skill.

The assassin wielding the .05 submachine gun immediately went rigid with fear, as he curled up, and let out a soundless scream while struggling, before he spat out a mouthful of blood and died.

Seeing this scene, the assassins with the Psychic Barrier and Ground Manipulation Skills immediately felt fear. This was the first time they saw someone being killed off by such an ability.

Right at this time, the 2 assassins muttering their incantations finished the chanting. Their Level 2 Skills Rapid Fireballs and Great Wind Blade finally activated, as 5 bright red fireballs like a row of pearls and the Wind Blade shot towards Yue Zhong.

If there was a special characteristic of the God and Devil System spells, it was that as long as a user had used his or her Spirit to lock on to the target and finish casting the spell, the activated spell would definitely hone in on the target. Due to this, Su Chen had selected 2 of his strongest Enhancers with magic skills to deal with Yue Zhong.

"Break for me!!" Yue Zhong faced the fearsome Rapid Fireballs and the Great Wind Blade, his eyes flashed as he activated his Devil Flame skill and with a wave of his right hand he instantly expended 50 Spirit points and 20 Stamina points to produce a huge fireball that met the attacks of the spells head on; exploding upon impact.

Under the catastrophic explosion, the Rapid Fireballs and Great Wind Blade dispersed violently. However, they were after all Level 2 skills, and had undergone enhancement. They managed to break past the Devil Flame fireball, and exploded on Yue Zhong's body, knocking him back 6 -7 metres when they hit. He crashed into a nearby building violently, resulting in a huge hole amidst dust and debris.

Fire-attribute skills tend to be more offensive, while ice-attribute skills tend to favour defence. If Yue Zhong had obtained an ice-attribute skill, then as a Spirit-based Evolver, he would just have to expend the necessary amount of force to deal with the attacks. While the Devil Flame was devastating in terms of its destructive power, it did little to protect Yue Zhong, and was of not much use to block the remaining attacks.

Su Chen saw that Yue Zhong had received the full brunt of the explosion, and he immediately rushed towards Yue Zhong's position swiftly. He wanted to make sure Yue Zhong was dead, if not, he would make use of the chance to end Yue Zhong's life.

Su Chen didn't have much time left. The battle had caused a huge disturbance, and Yue Zhong's subordinates were most likely on their way. The moment they arrived, if Yue Zhong was not dead then their assassination would be a failure.

Su Chen made his way hastily towards the large hole, when a sharp bone spear suddenly shot out from the settling dust, aiming for Su Chen's head.

Seeing that the Bone Spear was almost going to penetrate Su Chen's brain, the assassin with the Psychic Barrier Skill activated his skill and a transparent wall appeared in front of Su Chen preventing the Bone Spear from piercing through!

Yue Zhong leapt out from the hole right after. By this time, the Encompassing Bone Armor on his face had already been blasted away, his hair was burnt black, and even his eyebrows were burnt

off. He had multiple wounds across his face and on his chest, there was even a deep slash piercing through the Bone Armor.

Fortunately the Type 2 Black Scaled Boar hide was sturdy, there was only a long white scar on the hide that was a result of the Great Wind Blade.

After jumping out from the debris, Yue Zhong felt his whole face burning in pain, as though someone was spraying him constantly with a high pressure hose. His high Endurance had saved him once again, if it had been less than 60 points, he might have lost his life to those spells.

"I want to see how your Psychic Barrier will block this!" With that, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a murderous glint, and the Devil Flame appeared in his right hand again. Expending yet another 20 points of Spirit to mold it into a spear, he threw it with all his might; the Devil Flame Spear shot towards the heart of the Psychic Barrier Enhancer.

The Psychic Barrier user had gotten on Yue Zhong's nerves for the last time. Without him, Yue Zhong had many chances to wipe out the rest of the assassins.

The Psychic Barrier user was taken aback, as he raised his hands and conjured another transparent wall in front of him.

The Devil Flame Spear Yue Zhong molded exploded violently on the transparent barrier, and the resulting force broke the barrier into pieces. The flying pieces struck the Enhancer's face and at the same time, the Enhancer was assaulted by the intense flame and explosion.

"Ah!!!!" The Psychic Barrier Enhancer could only let out an anguished scream, as he was enveloped by the fearsome Devil Flames and was lit ablaze. The result was that he almost instantly died a most miserable death with noxious charred smelling smoke billowing off of his crispy corpse even after the flame died out.



Su Chen's eyes flashed coldly as he directly raised his hands, and intended to throw a grenade towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his hands and a .05 submachine gun appeared in his left hand, as he raised it and fired wildly at Su Chen.

Su Chen did not dodge the small caliber fire. Instead, his body seemed to emit a strange holy light preventing the bullets of the .05 submachine gun from penetrating.

Su Chen swung his hands, and another hand grenade flew towards Yue Zhong.

With a bang, even though Yue Zhong tried to dodge, under the effect of the 3-times gravity, his movement was too slow. Of course this made him affected by the resulting explosion of the grenade, propelling him through the air for 6 metres, while the shrapnel cut into his head. The flying debris caused numerous ugly wounds again to his already painful face.

Yue Zhong pointed towards Su Chen and raised a finger, as a huge fireball and an ice pick was conjured out of thin air, viciously smashing onto the protective aura surrounding Su Chen.

The protection of Su Chen had its limits as well, after the force of the fireball and ice pick, the strange light vibrated, before it disappeared entirely.

Su Chen's face was cold by this time, and his eyes flashed with a hint of frenzy, as he knew he could not escape Yue Zhong's pursuit. He also abandoned all hopes of escaping, instead he threw out another grenade with extreme haste.

Yue Zhong jumped to the side, and he waved his hand pulling out his Stinger, firing 3 times rapidly at Su Chen.

3 Stinger bullets landed on Su Chen's skull and with a light puff of blood proceeded to bore through, directly causing it to explode into pieces! The pink pulpy brain residue splattered violently out the back and sprayed onto the ground behind Su Chen with a

sickening series of "Glop" noises.

The grenade exploded not far from Yue Zhong, and the blazing explosive force blew Yue Zhong back 7 metres as he slammed into another wall violently. With bits and pieces of shrapnel again cutting into his face and body, adding on to the amount of injuries.

Ulamog: Apocalypse Glam Magazine: Most Scarred man Poses for cover photo next issue!

"What a tough fellow to deal with!!" Yue Zhong coughed up a mouthful of fresh blood and stood up and checked Su Chen who had just been shot in the brain by him. He couldn't help but give a high evaluation of this person in front of him.

Not only was Su Chen thoroughly ruthless towards Yue Zhong, he was the same towards himself. He didn't even leave behind a path of retreat. If Yue Zhong wasn't an Evolver, the assassination attempt this time might very well have succeeded.

After eliminating Su Chen, Yue Zhong swiftly advanced, wanting to detain the rest of the assassins. However, when he rushed out, he realised they had already fled the scene.

By this time, Chen Shitou had brought a hundred guards as they rushed over and he asked worriedly: "Commander Yue, are you alright?"

Yue Zhong sullenly gave the order: "Immediately conduct an investigation, go notify Cheng Yu, get him to bring men and set off for the SY County area. Whoever attacks, they're free to retaliate. They cannot open fire first, and whoever dares to stop the investigation, let them know about the assassination attempt on me!!"

Chen Shitou saw Yue Zhong full of wounds, and his heart was filled with unbridled fury as he replied, "Understood, Commander Yue!!"

Chen Shitou quickly brought men to search every single

household of the 3 streets, not a single person resisted. They were all frightened as they watched on, not daring to hinder the investigation.

On the other side, Cheng Yu brought over a 100 soldiers that were recently undergoing training, carrying their .03 rifles as they rushed towards the downtown area of SY County.

The over-hundred soldiers carrying .03 rifles was a fearsome force, watching Cheng Yu bringing these men into SY County gave rise to a lot of shock and panic amongst the masses

## Chapter 269: Restraint

---

The entire SY City was startled by the sudden wail of sirens constantly sounding out as police squadrons hurried over one after another. As they arrived they grouped up forming many blockade lines.

The one hundred riot policemen stationed nearby were also rapidly mobilised to form a defensive line at the front. Cheng Yu brought people over, only to see that those policemen hadn't actually opened fire yet. The survivors had occupied various bunkers and were armed, beginning to face off against the police.

"Hello to the little brother over there! I am the Bureau Chief of the Police Station Niu Jinbao! I don't know what has happened to cause your side to start a riot like this...?"

A fat, middle-aged man with a massive beer belly and reeking of the sweat streaking down off him in waves, used a loudspeaker to shout loudly towards Cheng Yu's side.

Niu Jinbao was extremely hesitant to engage in a battle with Cheng Yu's side. If both sides started to fight, it would be very difficult to avoid casualties. He himself, certainly didn't wish to die. Moreover, if he were the one to fire the first shot, then things would get troublesome from then on.

Cheng Yu threatened coldly,

"You people actually dare to try assassinate our Commander Yue!?! Do you really think that we're that easy to bully? If you don't give us a confession, then we will have no choice but to fight it out! Even if the battle carries on until only one man is remaining. We will not give up on our revenge!"

Niu Jinbao replied loudly in an appeasing manner,

"Misunderstanding!! This is only a misunderstanding! You wait a moment; first, let me go to Mayor Wen to quickly make a report!

Think carefully! This matter should only be a misunderstanding!! You guys should first disperse, alright?"

Cheng Yu continued to threaten icily,

"Hmph! We will wait here! I will wait 4 hours for you. If 4 hours have passed and I still don't see Wen Baoguo or Peng Mingde, then we will launch an attack. Even if we all die in battle here, our 4000 brothers in Ning Guang County will still avenge us!!"

Cheng Yu was also very clear on the fact that Yue Zhong was rather unwilling to engage in battle with SY County. However, if it continued in this way, that loftiness would become even more difficult to dissolve.

They would only be able to obtain greater benefits by being more aggressive.

Niu Jinbao wiped off some cold sweat and called over his own assistant Wu En, speaking in a stern voice.

"Wu En! I want to go see Mayor Wen, so this place will be left to you. Remember, don't provoke the opposing side, and we also must not fire the first shot. If anything happens, you'll be the only one responsible!!"

"Got it!"

Glancing at Niu Jinbao, Wu En replied coldly.

This Niu Jinbao's ability was much lower than that of Wu En's, it was just that Niu Jinbao was good at currying favor and had various supporters behind the scenes. Those were the only reasons for why he was able to firmly step down on Wu En's head, hence Wu En naturally held Niu Jinbao in contempt.

After leaving commands for Wu En, Niu Jinbao immediately got into a car and hurried towards Wen Baoguo's office. He reported everything from the beginning to the end.

"What?! Yue Zhong was met with an assassination attempt?? Has

he died or not?"

Hearing Niu Jinbao's report, Wen Baoguo's face paled and he asked solemnly. The matter of Yue Zhong's life and death directly affected SY City's attitude towards his forces.

Niu Jinbao lowered his head and thought for a while before saying,

"I don't know!"

"You just said, Yue Zhong's subordinate brought troops over to confront you?"

Wen Baoguo's eyebrows furrowed as he continued to question.

Niu Jinbao quickly replied,

"Mm! It is like this!"

A hint of disappointment flashed past Wen Baoguo's eyes,

"Then he should still be alive! Otherwise his subordinates wouldn't have all fought their way over here and fail to keep this sort of restraint!"

If Yue Zhong did die, the huge force he had established by himself would definitely fall apart, making it just right for SY City Base to send out troops and eliminate those forces, to eventually become the true overlord of the entire region.

Yue Zhong's side and SY City had both restrained themselves from battle because both sides had similar battle strength. Even if one side forcefully annexed the other, the winning side would still suffer disastrous damages.

Wen Baoguo contemplated for a while, before standing up and striding out of his office.

"I am SY City's Mayor Wen Baoguo, here to see Yue Zhong!"

Wen Baoguo rushed up very quickly to the frontlines of the two sides' confrontation and said to Cheng Yu.

"Please enter!"

Cheng Yu glanced at Wen Baoguo and leaned sideways, allowing him to pass through.

Without showing any signs of fear, Wen Baoguo thus proceeded to stride into the streets by himself without any bodyguards.

Currently, the three old streets were very heavily guarded; warriors armed with Type 03 Rifles defending each and every road, coldly watching everything that was happening.

All the gangs, (such as the Black Tiger Gang and the Vermillion Bird Gang) began to move out while inquiring everywhere for information about the assassination or assassins.

Fifteen warriors of the Special Combat Battalion had also returned, each of them concealing themselves in the vicinity of the villa in which Yue Zhong was residing. With such tight security, it was simply impossible for anyone to make an attempt on Yue Zhong's life again.

Inside the villa, Wen Baoguo saw the nearly disfigured Yue Zhong lying on a bed with his head nestled in Tong Xiaoyun's embrace. His face was covered in swollen purple lacerations and burn marks.

A small puddle of blood had run down his body and dyed the sheets crimson from the numerous wounds everywhere on him. He almost didn't dare to believe that the near-disfigured man before him was actually Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced at Wen Baoguo and spoke tersely, his voice overflowing with killing intent.

"Mayor Wen, you've come! SY City's security really is substandard. Today I almost died in SY City.

SY City really does have skilled individuals in hiding, making me really want to go on a killing spree and use artillery to plow through this place at once! If you and Secretary Peng are unable of

giving me justice, then just let me use cannons and bayonets in exchange for justice instead!"

"Yue Zhong, you mustn't be impulsive! Today's matter, none of us wanted to see it. I will make people properly investigate this incident and bring you justice."

Wen Baoguo's eyebrows furrowed as he spoke in a low voice. He didn't actually believe that SY City's military strength was weaker than that of Yue Zhong's. If they fought though, both parties would definitely suffer huge losses. He was afraid that Yue Zhong was as rash as he was young, and might really bring all his troops to fight it out with SY County's military.

Yue Zhong stared at Wen Baoguo and spoke in a heavy tone. "Su Tianyang! The person who wanted to assassinate me is Su Tianyang!"

There were a total of 15 Enhancers above Level 10 who came to kill me today! 3 of them were expert snipers, and it's obvious that only the military or government commands such experts.

After coming to SY County, the only person I have not seen eye-to-eye with was Su Tianyang. I believe only he would have expended such forces. Therefore the only person who could have ordered the assassination is Su Tianyang."

Wen Baoguo frowned, and he replied softly, "This is just your conjecture! Do you have evidence? Without evidence, you can't just go around spouting nonsense."

Su Tianyang was after all the son of one of the 5 heads of the military. A person with such a background could not be slandered nor deemed guilty without evidence just because of Yue Zhong's words.

Yue Zhong coldly stared at Wen Baoguo: "Evidence?! Sure, I will find it for you! I'm tired. Please go back now."

"Please rest well then!" Wen Baoguo said, as he walked towards



the exit.

Yue Zhong had actually gotten a treasure from Su Chen's body and was thoroughly exploring it.

""Level 3 Treasure: Sacred Arm Guard. Upon equip, Strength +2. It gives the user the skill Sacred Protection, which allows one to activate a Barrier of Sacred Protection to protect themselves from a set amount of harm. Cooldown: 24 hours."

Su Chen had used this Sacred Protection to protect himself as a last resort. However, Yue Zhong's attacks were too ferocious, and the Sacred Protection had not lasted more than a few hits before collapsing.

Yue Zhong directly equipped the Sacred Arm Guard. Who knew if it might save his life at some critical juncture in the future.

Su Tianyang was currently hiding within the military camp, his heart in turmoil. "Why isn't he dead? Damn it! Su Chen that useless fucker couldn't even complete something as simple as this!! He actually failed in killing that bastard Yue Zhong!!"

Right at this time, Su Dongming walked in with a steely expression.

"Dad, why have you come?" Su Tianyang immediately climbed off a serving girl's body, as he asked a little embarrassedly.

"Get out!" Su Dongming looked at the absurd scene in the room, and he coldly told the few serving girls.

They immediately grabbed their clothes and exited the room swiftly without turning their heads.

"Did you do it?" Su Dongming stared at Su Tianyang as he asked.

Su Tianyang hesitated a while before saying, "No!!"

"You still dare to deny it?" Su Dongming roared, thoroughly enraged. He then slapped Su Tianyang across the face harshly, causing his face to swell.

"Su Chen is dead! Liu Jun is dead! All Because of you, you little bastard! I lost 8 experts! 8! You still don't want to admit your mistake? Do you want to push me to the grave?"

While the number of experts in the military were numerous, to groom a high level Enhancer was not easy. Su Chen's assassin team was one of the 2 elite Enhancers team that Su Dongming controlled. Since this time he lost 8 experts, Su Dongming could be considered to have lost 25% of his experts.

Su Tianyang jumped up, as he hollered loudly at Su Dongming, "How was I in the wrong!? Didn't you also want to kill that asshole Yue Zhong? I merely set out to do what you didn't dare to! I am your son!!

You hit me because of some mere outsider? Are you still my dad? After Mum left, you want to start mistreating me right? Aren't you letting mum down?"

Su Dongming was absolutely fuming as he pointed at Su Tianyang: "Unfilial!! You're an unfilial son! How did I have someone like you!! This entire month, you're not allowed to leave the villa! You will stay here obediently!!"

After which, Su Dongming left the room in anger. He only had Su Tianyang and had always pampered and spoilt him, this led to Su Tianyang having a domineering character. Each time Su Tianyang had done something wrong, he would have it intercepted on his behalf.

Yue Zhong's assassination attempt shook the entire SY County. Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde met up to discuss, and ordered for the police to conduct an investigation throughout the county. It was just that those assassins had already hidden at Su Dongming's military camp. Regardless of how meticulous the police were, there were no results.

Yue Zhong was quietly recuperating in his villa with the effect of his Level 4 Skill: Regeneration. Within a day, his bones that had

been shattered by the sniper bullets had finished mending. After just 2 days, the facial wounds from the fireball skill and countless shrapnel had closed up and recovered, to the point that one would not believe Yue Zhong had just suffered huge injuries 2 days ago.

"Is this intel for real?" Yue Hong looked at Liu Yujiao in front of him.

"Definitely!" Liu Yujiao replied confidently.

# Chapter 270: Revenge!

---

Yue Zhong gazed at Liu Yujiao and spoke, "Very good. If this intel turns out to be true, after the matter is completed, I will definitely not treat you shabby!"

"Many thanks, Commander Yue!!" Liu Yujiao broke out in a grin.

The night was dark and the winds were strong, without even the barest sliver of moonlight. Everything was shrouded in darkness, and only a few areas were lit up in the entire SY County.

The 5 heads of the Military had conflicts of interest within one another, therefore there were 5 different residences set up within the military itself. Consequently the distance between each of them stretched for a few kilometres.

Under the cover of the pitch dark, Yue Zhong brought his Special Combat forces as they snuck towards Su Dongming's residence within the military camp.

Liu Yujiao's Vermillion Phoenix had plenty of women, some good-looking ones at that. These women prostituted themselves in the military camps, at the same time, obtaining valuable intel as well as protection for the Vermillion Phoenix Triad.

Part of the recent intel gained was that the experts who tried assassinating Yue Zhong had been seeking refuge within Su Dongming's military camp.

Yue Zhong carefully manoeuvred his way to the front of the camp and saw 2 soldiers standing on guard.

Yue Zhong gave Cheng Yu a hand signal, and Cheng Yu brought out a blowpipe, shooting a poison dart at one of the soldiers' neck.

Upon impact, the soldier immediately grabbed towards his neck and struggled to keep his eyes open, before fainting to the floor.

Yue Zhong instantly activated his Art of Fear skill on the other

soldier and under the assault of the mind shattering fear, the other soldier died while foaming at the mouth. He even passed without a sound.

The Agility-based Evolver Yaoyao who had been standing by Yue Zhong's side activated her Shadow Steps, and her entire body flitted towards the camp like a dark leopard in the night, within just a few blinks, she was nowhere to be seen.

Yue Zhong had already activated his Encompassing Bone armor, and led the Special Combat forces inside the military camp, only to discover that along the road, there were many soldiers' corpses, each and everyone of them had their neck slashed.

Yaoyao was a naturally talented Agility-based Evolver, and under the constant forging through battle as well as the strict training of the elite soldiers, she had developed beyond even the strongest soldiers of the world prior to the apocalypse. The moment she was near, even Yue Zhong would feel a headache. Those normal soldiers never stood a chance against her.

While the soldiers were silenced one by one by Yaoyao, the rest of the Special Combat forces went to attach bombs on various armored tanks, and Infantry Fighting Vehicles, and even some helicopters as well.

Inside the camp, Yue Zhong came across 5 tanks, it was a pity that his storage ring could not accommodate these beasts, otherwise he would have already swiped them all.

Since he couldn't have it, no one else could have it as well, Yue Zhong decided to use his Devil Flame to open up holes inside those tanks and placed the time bombs inside.

Along the way, whenever the Special Combat forces came across soldiers doing their patrolling, they would swiftly kill them. These warriors were, after all, specially selected and trained by Yue Zhong. In all reality each and everyone of them became Enhancers above level 20. With their Combat tactics learned as well as having

undergone all sorts of special forces training, they were nearly unstoppable.

Very soon, Yue Zhong and his team arrived at the residence which the assassins were taking refuge in. Yue Zhong did not barge in directly however. Instead, they surrounded the entire estate with timed detonation explosives.

After finishing, Yue Zhong waved his hands in a predetermined signal, and the Special Forces soldiers assembled into 4 teams. As they dispersed to the various parts of the camp, placing more timed explosives as well as killing the other soldiers who were not even prepared.

After approximately 15 minutes of slaughter, the Special Combat soldiers arrived back at Yue Zhong's side.

Yue Zhong waved his hands once more, and the Special Combat warriors all left, leaving Yue Zhong alone. This time, Yue Zhong's motive wasn't to annihilate Su Dongming's forces completely, but to cause a huge ruckus. If it came to a clash to the death between his warriors and Su Dongming's forces, both sides would face heavy losses. Yue Zhong wasn't willing to lose these experts that he had painstakingly trained up.

"Time's up." Yue Zhong looked at his watch, as he whispered silently to himself.

**Boom! Boom! Boom!!**

In an instant, sounds of explosions resounded one by one within the military camp, and the various armored vehicles and military equipment exploded into pieces, becoming piles of useless metal. The military residence buildings also exploded in a huge ball of fire, instantly crushing and killing the soldiers inside.

Countless soldiers were plunged into utter chaos, as they ran amok, shouting at the top of their lungs. The entire camp was in a mess.

The residence of the assassins also collapsed under the explosive assault, as the ceiling debris fell and buried the assassins within.

Inside that particular building, were the experts that Su Dongming had gathered with his utmost efforts, if they were to face off in a battle, even Yue Zhong would be forced to retreat. However, with one fell swoop, Yue Zhong had killed over 90% of them.

With a 'hong', as some debris exploded outwards, a huge body rushed up towards the sky from the pile of rubble.

"Expert!" Yue Zhong raised his eyes, and discovered it was an Enhancer that had activated his Werewolf Transformation skill. This Enhancer had actually managed to escape from the destruction, he was obviously an expert.

In fact, Yue Zhong's guess wasn't off the mark. This Werewolf Transformation Enhancer was an Agility-based Evolver named Luo Bufan. It turned out that Su Dongming had spent an exorbitant amount on him, and was also the first expert that Su Dongming had nurtured!

As an Agility-based Evolver, when Luo Bufan activated his Werewolf Transformation, his speed had reached freakish levels, and there was nobody in the entire SY County that could face him. As well as the fact that he had enhanced his Werewolf Transformation three times, his other attributes gained tremendous boosts as well, to the point that even 12.7mm bullets could not penetrate his body, and 7.62mm bullets could not penetrate his skin. It was truly fearsome.

"Let me send you to your death!" Yue Zhong eyed Luo Bufan who had leapt out of the wreckage into mid-air, and he laughed coldly. Yue Zhong winked and hoisted a PF98 Anti-Tank Rocket Launcher up. "Click. Click. Boom." mouthed Yue Zhong under his breath as he lined up the aim and shot at him!

"No!!!" Luo Bufan saw the anti-tank missile and his eyes flashed

with wild desperation. His only thought as he shouted out loudly was to push his werewolf transformation to the maximum, as his muscles grew even larger and his fur coarser.

At the next instant, there was a flash and a moment of muteness as the rocket landed on Luo Bufan's chest. The result was the creation of a stunning roar of flame and shrapnel. Even though he tried to resist with his valiant body, it still ended up with him roaring in denial as his body swelled up on impact and exploded into just so many semi-charred, meaty pieces covered in sizzling hair.

Regardless of how fearsome the Werewolf Transformation is, he could not possibly withstand the might of a PF98 Anti-Tank missile. Even Yue Zhong was not impervious to the might of an anti-tank missile.

Enhancers might be strong, but they were not invincible! As long as the proper weapon was utilized, Enhancers could be taken down like anyone else. However, compared to most normal people, those Enhancers who were familiar with the modern weaponry were even more terrifying.

Yue Zhong had never forgone any chance to learn about modern weaponry. Facing different enemies required different tactics after all.

Yue Zhong proceeded to gather Luo Bufan's half scorched head and left the chaotic camp.

One by one, reinforcements poured out from different areas of the camp to help put out the fire and tend to the wounded. At the same time, the alarm was sounded and a search was conducted to capture any enemies. However, Yue Zhong had already long ago brought his men away, and the search turned up nothing.

Even though there were conflicts amongst themselves, the moment Su Dongming's camp came under attack, the rest of the 4 powers had dispatched a battalion of soldiers each to assist. In just



a short span of time, the entire camp was surrounded tightly.

This was one of the reasons Yue Zhong had left the place swiftly, if he had delayed for just a while longer, he might have been trapped within.

"Damn Yue Zhong!! Damn it!! Damn you!!" Su Dongming looked at the scene of carnage, and his eyes flashed with a furious gaze. This time, his losses had caused him to almost spit out blood in anger.

His tanks, helicopters, infantry fighting vehicles and even Howitzers were all rendered to little more than really expensive scrap metal. His entire force of 2000 people had been reduced by 162 soldiers, and the experts he had gathered painstakingly were all decimated. This time, his power had dropped way below the rest of the 5 heads, which led him to hate Yue Zhong with a vengeance.

"The young sure are rash!" Peng Mingde took a look at the details concerning this case, and sighed. Although there was not a single shred of evidence that pointed to Yue Zhong, everyone knew in their hearts, it was definitely a retaliation from him. No one had expected Yue Zhong's revenge to be so swift and vicious.

In just one night, Su Dongming suffered unimaginable losses. Of his weaponry, he lost two-thirds of them, and lost nearly 200 men. The casualty rate was 10%.

This led all the top brass of SY County to open their eyes and witness for themselves how ruthless Yue Zhong could be when provoked.

In the meeting amongst the 5 military powers, Su Dongming submitted a proposal with an ashen face: "I reckon that we should gather the army, and eliminate the vermin Yue Zhong! He dares attack our military, his guts have really reached the heavens.

Today he dared launch an assault on me, who's to say who he will target tomorrow? We need to work together and take care of this

problem before he escapes!"

Shen Hongyang frowned, as he gazed at Su Dongming and spoke softly, "Division Commander Su, do you have some proof that it was Yue Zhong? If not, how can we just take up arms?"

Qian Weimin looked to Su Dongming and lightly smiled: "Division Commander Su, I feel that it's better if we proceed with caution and conduct a thorough investigation. We cannot possibly let a criminal off, but likewise, we can't just blame a good person. Don't you agree?"

Su DongMing frowned as he looked towards his ally Luo Tianyi and asked, "Old Luo, what's your take?"

Luo Tianyi drew a long breath on his cigar, and spew out a smoke circle. Without looking at Su Dongming, he thought for a while.

"I think.... it's time for us to have a chat with Mister Yue Zhong!"

# Chapter 271: Assault Helicopters Incoming!

---

The surprise attack by Yue Zhong was executed extremely beautifully, not a single loss was suffered on his side. Meanwhile, he had eliminated an entire company of soldiers as well as destroyed almost 70% of Su Dongming's combat capabilities, displaying his keen sense for tactics and destruction.

If Yue Zhong had set his sights on SY County, then the 5 heads of the military would definitely come together to take Yue Zhong down. However, this was a personal grudge between Yue Zhong and Su Dongming, they were not willing to risk it all just for Su Dongming. Based on Yue Zhong's prowess, if they couldn't eliminate him thoroughly why try?

Like some kind of cockroach he would definitely come back but more overpowered than before. Undoubtedly he would make them pay many times over.

Su Dongming's expression grew steely as he asked Liu Huifeng, "What about you, Liu Huifeng!"

"I have no stance. Whatever everybody's decision is, I'll follow!" Liu Huifeng laughed lightly. He wasn't willing to entangle his forces with Yue Zhong either. There weren't many benefits to it to begin with.

This was a personal score between Su Dongming and Yue Zhong, and he couldn't bear to expend any of his precious subordinates as sacrificial pawns.

Su Dongming slammed the table and stood up, as he turned to leave: "Good! Good! GOOD! All of you may be scared of Yue Zhong, but I'm not! I'm going this instant to exterminate that bastard!"

"Division Commander Su, please wait!" Right at this time, Wen Baoguo pushed the door and came in, blocking Su Dongming.

Su Dongming shoved Wen Baoguo aside with a steely expression:

"Mayor Wen! I am going to go destroy that Yue Zhong, whatever you have to say can wait until afterwards!"

Wen Baoguo once again blocked his path as he stared at him levelly and said in a clear voice: "Division Commander Su, do you have any evidence that it was Yue Zhong?"

Su Dongming instantly bellowed back. "What bullshit evidence do we still need?! It was obviously that motherfucking Yue Zhong's doing! Over a hundred of my soldiers have died at his hands, you want I, your father, to swallow my anger?"

Wen Baoguo maintained a serene expression and spoke quietly. "Yue Zhong also claimed that your son Su Tianyang had sent assassins after him.

I remember that when I sent people to question you, you halted the investigation process demanding conclusive evidence, before you would hand Su Tianyang over to be interrogated. Now without any evidence, you want to take up arms against Yue Zhong. Isn't it inappropriate?"

Wen Baoguo had previously sent people over to the military camp, wanting to subpoena Su Tianyang. However, Su Dongming had clamped down with his domineering attitude and did not even put the people Wen Baoguo sent in his eyes, as he directly refused Wen Baoguo's summons.

Su Dongming coldly glared at Wen Baoguo, before pushing him aside and strode out of the room his voice echoing behind him. "Wen Baoguo, you best clean up your government first. If you want to touch my son, you better execute Peng Mingde's son first!"

"Niu Jinbao! Take your men and immediately evacuate the area!" Wen Baoguo sighed, before he spoke into the walkie-talkie and gave an order to Niu Jinbao.

It seems like the clash between Su Dongming and Yue Zhong was hard to avoid.

"Withdraw!! Withdraw!! Withdraw quickly!!" Niu Jinbao hollered, and brought all his policemen who were currently on standby at Yue Zhong's turf and left the frontline. He wasn't willing to be embroiled in the imminent fight.

Su Dongming gave a slew of orders, as companies of his soldiers gathered, and quickly boarded various armored vehicles. Under the command of 3 Infantry Fighting vehicles, they made their way towards Xinglong Street.

Those powers in SY County with a strong intel outreach had gathered. At the same time, they sent people to report on the situation.

A number of powers were making their preparations because the moment Yue Zhong was beaten to the ground, they would immediately join in and spit on Yue Zhong to reap some rewards.

The long procession of armored vehicles and military weaponry arrived at a station near Phoenix Street.

"They're here!!"

The Special Combat soldiers who were lying in wait at Phoenix Street saw the huge fleet, and their eyes flashed with a cold glint.

Just as half the fleet entered Phoenix Street, Yue Zhong suddenly stuck his head out from inside a room and hoisted his PF98, firing an anti-tank rocket towards the Infantry Fighting Vehicle.

With a flash, followed by a huge sound of explosion, the Infantry Fighting Vehicle became a fiery ball of flame.

This explosion was like a signal, each Special Combat warrior lying in wait simultaneously rose from prone, and each of them were carrying a PF98 as they all fired at different armored vehicles.

Hong! Hong! The sounds of chain explosions rang out continuously. Under the sudden attack, many of the various infantry fighting vehicles and armored tanks exploded into balls of fire.

There were flying soldiers ejected from blast sites, pieces and whole. The remaining ones were crying out in anguish amidst the flame while struggling to escape the hellish engagement.

The sudden attack this time had destroyed over 23 armored vehicles, and the slightly more than 200 soldiers inside were instantly decimated.

2 companies of soldiers had died meaninglessly. Out of those 200 soldiers, there were 60 or more soldiers who formed the core of the experienced soldiers. With the deaths of these soldiers, the overall combat ability of Su Dongming's forces had diminished yet again.

After firing those rockets, the Special Forces soldiers started to make use of their guns to pick off the other mostly scrambling warriors of Su Dongming. Within a short span of time, another 20 over soldiers had been killed.

Under such a sudden and relentless attack, many of the new soldiers lost their will to fight and started to throw their weapons down and desert.

The Battalion Commander Zhou Wei, that Su Dongming had trained up, executed a few of the deserters, before he called out with an utterly savage face, "No one is to desert!! Whoever retreats will be executed!!"

Vvvppt!! Zhou Wei's brain matter had exploded like tofu, red and white head chunks arcing in the sky. Very quickly, the flying pieces splattered on the ground moistly. Thpapapap!

On the rooftop of a building about 2km away, Bai He shifted his gaze coldly, looking for the next target. He had the Sniper Specialization Skill, plus he had enhanced it twice, causing his sniping to reach a perverse level.

Even from a distance of over 2km, he could do what a normal sniper might find hard to accomplish within a distance of 1km. With the existence of such a overpowered sniper, he could easily

control a part of the battlefield by his own efforts.

"Sniper! There's a sniper!! Everyone take care!!" One of the seasoned soldiers hollered.

However, in the next instant that seasoned soldier had his brains bored through by a bullet as well, Bai He had skillfully silenced him with one well placed shot.

Ulamog:Killtacular!

Under the threat of death, those soldiers who had come here with the intent to fight started to waver. A number of the new soldiers had started to look for cover, not daring to risk their necks.

Yue Zhong's sudden preemptive attack had caused a devastating blow to the soldiers of Su Dongming's First Battalion.

However, this battalion was the one which contained a lot of seasoned soldiers and after a number of their soldiers had met with mishap, the expert soldiers banded together and started to engage in an intense firefight with Yue Zhong's Special Combat warriors.

Amongst Yue Zhong's Special Combat Force, there were 6 extremely well-versed snipers. While the other 5 could not match up to Bai He, they were still extremely efficient snipers, and had hidden themselves at various elevated places.

Their shots were continually picking off Su Dongming's soldiers, as their comrades around them watched them each die helplessly.

The forces of Su Dongming were strong, and soon the unharmed soldiers of the Second Battalion joined in the fray. However, without the support of experts and under the control of the 6 elite snipers, the soldiers of the Second Battalion found it hard to advance. Instead, they watched their own comrades getting killed off as well.

The experts gathered by Su Dongming had been ambushed and killed by Yue Zhong. Thinly, whenever the snipers of the military had just stuck their heads out to line up a bead, they would be

killed instantly by the 6 snipers on the rooftops. They served to restrict any form of personnel reinforcement.

Right at this time, 2 assault helicopters appeared in the skies.

Seeing the arrival of the 2 attack helicopters, the soldiers of the Second Battalion who had lost their morale, started to feel more bolstered.

These assault helicopters were beasts of the air, and were the perfect counter to tanks. Without any anti-air weapons, these helicopters were basically invincible.

Yue Zhong's Special Combat Force saw the 2 assault helicopters, and their eyes could not help but narrow in trepidation.

The 2 assault helicopters swiftly arrived over the battlefield. With a flash, 2 rockets were fired and shot at one of the buildings. The flames engulfed it in a serious explosion, which instantly pulverised one of the Special Combat soldiers inside.

After killing that soldier, the 2 assault helicopters began to fire continuously at the other buildings, destroying them and killing some of the survivors and Special Combat soldiers hiding inside.

In just a few moments, 4 Special Combat soldiers had died under the ruthless slaughter of the 2 assault helicopters. This was the first time that they had suffered such losses on the battlefield.

Every single one of the soldiers were decked in the Black-scaled Boar hide as armor, and their heads protected by helmets made in Big Stone Village. These helmets were further covered with a layer of the Black-Scaled Boar hide.

They basically revealed very little of their bodies. Unless they were shot in a location where there was no protection from the hide, it was hard for normal bullets to kill off any soldiers of the Special Combat Force.

It was precisely due to their ample equipment that the casualty rate of the Special Combat forces were shockingly low. Of course,



they had fighting capabilities that were above most soldiers as well.

Just as the assault helicopters were about to give them too much pressure and reduce morale, Yue Zhong had already jumped onto the roof of a tall building and lifted his trusty PF98. He aimed quickly and fired a missile at one of the helicopters.

With a heaven rending flash, the rocket near instantly impacted on the helicopter's frame, and the explosion caused the helicopter to blaze valiantly before falling to the ground in a ball of smoking shrapnel and fire.

The other helicopter immediately turned and tried to leave.

Yue Zhong however, had already activated his Art of Fear skill. When he did he directed it towards the pilot of the assault helicopter, bypassing the metal shell and shocking him with it.

The pilot's face twisted, as he threw up crimson foam and slumped on to the controls.

The assault helicopter wobbled and accelerated before crashing into another bungalow, and exploded with a huge 'BahToooom!' The entire bungalow was correspondingly reduced to rubble by the explosion.

"How is this possible? He actually destroyed 2 assault helicopters!!"

"It's too scary! Is he still human??"

The soldiers under Su Dongming watched the scene from afar, and their eyes all flashed with fear and shock. Their morale instantly dipped lower than before. The assault helicopters were their strongest killing machines and trump card. Regardless whether fighting against zombies or these small factions, they were extremely efficient.

Wiping out a small power faction only needed the appearance of the assault helicopter and it could thoroughly rout them. Su

Dongming had been at the forefront of the 5 heads because of his possession of these assault helicopters. However, last night, Yue Zhong had decimated a huge part of his force, and hence he had no choice but to bring these 2 monsters to bear.

Seeing the 2 assault helicopters destroyed by Yue Zhong, the morale of the Special Forces soldiers soared. In the remainder of the firefight, they completely suppressed the soldiers of Su Dongming's Second Battalion.

Especially the snipers on the rooftops led by Bai He, they were consistently picking off the commanders and seasoned soldiers. For them, suppressing the soldiers and preventing them from even regrouping to fight as a force was the only goal.

After destroying those 2 assault helicopters, Yue Zhong swiftly made his way towards Su Dongming's direction.

After having lost their experts, the soldiers of the Second Battalion found it hard to retaliate against the suppression from the 6 snipers. However, the military still had a weapon that could deal with Yue Zhong's forces, and it was the heavy artillery!!

As long as the military did not care for the cost of the usage, which was the survivors in the Phoenix Street, as long as they fired a shot and flattened the entire street? Other than those snipers who were hidden further away, all of the Special Combat forces would instantly become ash.

Su Dongming's Second Battalion was weaker than the First Battalion, however, the moment they saw Yue Zhong passing by, they immediately fired a hail of rounds at him.

Yue Zhong's body constantly flitted to and fro, evading the rain of bullets every way he could. At the same time, he constantly threw a few grenades in the midst of the soldiers wherever he went. This obviously caused two things: Them to be blasted to their deaths, and alot of crimson blood splattered everywhere!

The commander of the Second Battalion Wu Minghe stood at the frontlines and observed it all, before giving an order through the microphone: "The 2nd Company move to the right!! 3rd Company switch to the rockets!! Use the rockets to blast him!!"

'Peng!' The sound of a lone gunshot rang out!

Wu Minghe's brain exploded, the now familiar, chunky brain matter splattering on the ground.

"Commander!! Commander!!"

The soldiers near Wu Minghe instantly cried out in despair.

After losing the command of Wu Minghe, the pressure on Yue Zhong decreased a lot. The soldiers saw that the light weaponry had no effect on Yue Zhong, and decided to switch to using the mortars.

Surely with these, the grenade launchers and hand grenades they possessed they could fill the land with a purgatory of flame and finally kill him. The soldier's all rapidly took aim, the clink of falling grenade pins and safeties being removed heralded Hell as they fired them all simultaneously at Yue Zhong.

# Chapter 272: Devil Flame Destruction

---

Yue Zhong had activated his Shadow Steps Skill at the first moment, and his speed instantly exploded out. He ran, charging straight through the soldiers of the Second Battalion like a gust of wind. The large scale heavy ammunitions could only hit his shadow.

At the same time, Yue Zhong's Danger Perception was utilized efficiently in the hail of bullets. Amongst the dense barrage, even Yue Zhong would find it hard to completely evade every single bullet. He chose to dodge the ones that posed the most threat, while allowing the weaker rifle bullets to hit his body and bounce away.

As the commander of the Second Battalion had his head blasted, Su Dongming's Second Battalion was thrown into chaos. Those heavy weapons that posed the most danger to Yue Zhong were not utilized properly. This allowed Yue Zhong to directly pass through the defence of the Second Battalion.

After breaking past their defences, Yue Zhong discovered the Third Battalion currently flanking Phoenix Street from the right. The Fourth Battalion was kept by Su Dongming as backup.

Although Su Dongming held the position of Division Commander, he only held 4 battalions worth of power, consisting of almost 2000 people. This time, in order to completely wipe out Yue Zhong, Su Dongming had brought everything, not intending to hold back.

Yue Zhong had just broken past the defences of the Second Battalion, when Su Dongming finished assigning 2 squads to start firing wildly at Yue Zhong with their rockets and grenades.

Hong! Hong!

The sounds of explosions rang out continuously, as round after

round of rockets chased Yue Zhong closely as he dodged, causing destruction everywhere.

Although Yue Zhong's speed could not compare to the rate of firing of the rockets, it was enough for him to accelerate to dodge the trajectory. Each time the rockets locked on to him, he would respond at the very last critical moment and evade it.

If he didn't have the Danger Perception skill, just based on his current enhancement, Yue Zhong would definitely not dare to weave in and out of the enemies' constant firing.

"He's really hard to deal with!!" Su Dongming was currently holed up in the operations centre. He was using unmanned reconnaissance drones to observe the fighting and he stared fixedly at Yue Zhong while gritting his teeth. Just one Yue Zhong alone, had caused such mayhem amongst a huge part of his army. Without Yue Zhong, he would have already conquered Phoenix Street a long time ago.

As Yue Zhong was dodging, he constantly threw out hand grenades, and these grenades landed on those soldiers attacking him. The constant explosions ensured that a number of soldiers would also be taken out.

The First and Fourth Battalion were Su Dongming's elite forces, as well as the battalions with the most number of seasoned veterans. They were extremely tough and resilient, and were keeping Yue Zhong at bay, preventing him from coming too close.

Soon, there appeared in the distance two mobile platform howitzers.

"Damn it!! Damn it!! What do I do?" Yue Zhong was starting to become frantic, as he ran to different cover to adjust his firing angles. Pretty soon, they would begin shooting. Their effective range was over a thousand metres, and this distance was beyond what he could do with his PF98.

Resolving the issue with the 2 companies of soldiers in front of Yue Zhong still required more time. If this dragged on, those 2 Howitzers would definitely pose a problem to his Special Combat forces.

"Let's go all out!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with chilliness, and he activated his Devil Flame. Upon activation he expended 30 Spirit and 10 Stamina to condense it into 2 huge spears.

Yue Zhong threw the Devil Flame Spears at the 2 Howitzers with all his might, and they shot towards the Howitzers like arrows.

As the Devil Flame Spears were a product of Yue Zhong's ability, their effective range was as far as Yue Zhong's vision. (TN: OVERPOWERED) However far Yue Zhong could see, the Devil Flame Spears could be thrown that far. Additionally, with Yue Zhong's robust Spirit power, its hit rate was 100%.

Under the guiding of Yue Zhong's sight, the 2 Devil Flame Spears penetrated the armor of those Howitzers, before the fiery hot flames engulfed the 2 Howitzers turning them into balls of fire.

With the sounds of explosions, the 2 Howitzers combusted, destroying them and blasting into flaming pieces. While his Devil Flame's defence capability could not compare to that of ice, its destruction capabilities vastly outstripped it. It was due to its fiery destructive nature that it could totally annihilate the Howitzers at a distance of 1km.

At the same time, the remaining Howitzer fired its shot as well!

Following the sound of explosion, a building on Phoenix Street was directly blasted apart by the artillery shell. Hot flames enveloped the building, directly burning the occupants and one Special Combat Force soldiers inside.

The heavy ammunition from the Howitzer was one of the most fearsome weapons in warfare.

Just a single shell could decimate an entire building, even

someone hiding in any part of the building would be unable to escape from the destruction.

"What a fearsome guy!!" Inside the operations command centre, Su Dongming saw the 2 Howitzers destroyed from a distance of over 1km by Yue Zhong, and his eyes flashed with shock.

After destroying the 2 Howitzers, Yue Zhong felt exhausted. He glanced at the 2 companies of soldiers in front of him, before making his way towards the Third Battalion without looking back.

He had already tested and found the First and Fourth Battalions to be the toughest to deal with, hence the Second and Third Battalions should be full of new and inexperienced soldiers.

These inexperienced soldiers had the weakest fighting morale and will. As long as one shakes them up enough, they would become desperate.

Those 2 companies that were in charge of hunting Yue Zhong saw that he was retreating and one of the companies rushed out to give chase. However Yue Zhong immediately fired wildly, killing 6 of the soldiers, before the rest hastily retreated behind cover.

Yue Zhong quickly caught up with Su Dongming's Third Battalion, they were currently engaged in an intense firefight with the survivors that Yue Zhong gathered in SY County led by Chen Shitou.

The majority of the soldiers in the Third Battalion of Su Dongming were new soldiers. Only a few seasoned veterans were among the ranks, so their fighting capability was low.

Yue Zhong on the other hand, had gathered a battalion's worth of new soldiers, and similarly had a few season warriors leading them. However, the party on defence usually had a slight advantage.

Su Dongming's Third Battalion had been trying relentlessly to break past Chen Shitou's point, but was always pushed back. In

fact they left behind many corpses and soon it was turning into a firefight with no results.

The 2 sides were constantly firing from behind cover, ammunition was expended like crazy, and yet both sides' losses did not amount to much.

Right at this time, Yue Zhong had directly charged into the command post of the Third Battalion and fired wildly for a while. This led to the deaths of all the commanders within the Third Battalion.

With a 'hong', Su Dongming's Third Battalion command post was directly destroyed by the grenade Yue Zhong threw.

"We've lost!! We've lost!! Our commanders have all perished!! Everyone let's escape!! If we still stay on, we're going to get trapped here!!"

Yue Zhong had blown apart the command post of the Third Battalion. Afterwards he used his .05 submachine gun to fire continuously and killed people, as he hollered at the top of his voice.

When the soldiers saw their own commanders blasted to smithereens, they were all shaken. Some even threw their weapons down and began fleeing wildly, while some others continued to put up a resistance.

The entire Third Battalion was thrown into chaos, with sounds of crying, shouting and calling out ringing out everywhere.

Chen Shitou took advantage of this time, and selected a company worth of soldiers to rush in. The attackers swiftly killed those soldiers who were devastated. The soldiers of Chen Shitou were also new soldiers and weren't up to standard in terms of warfare. If the enemy decided to counter and if they were successful, he would have lost control of this battalion. Therefore, he only dared to send in a company's worth of soldiers to complement Yue Zhong's



assault.

Under the two-pronged attack, the soldiers of Su Dongming's Third Battalion lost all bearings and started escaping in all directions. Yue Zhong focused on picking off those who were staunchly standing their ground, adding further to the devastation. The company that Chen Shitou ordered to attack also managed to capture over a hundred prisoners-of-war.

However, Su Dongming's reaction was fast as well, he swiftly gave the command to route 2 of the elite companies within the Fourth Battalion to assist the remnants of the Third Battalion.

After Chen Shitou sent out a company to attack, he saw the 2 companies of Su Dongming approaching from afar and immediately retreated. Without enough cover, the soldiers under him would not dare fight against the elite soldiers of Su Dongming head on.

Yue Zhong was still weaving in and out, firing his .05 submachine gun, using grenades and rockets to entangle with the 2 companies of soldiers.

Although these soldiers were the elite under Su Dongming, Yue Zhong's ease of dealing with them showed just how terrifying his abilities were. One by one, the seasoned veterans fell under Yue Zhong's hands, causing the morale to break down amongst the 2 companies, and it was only a matter of time before they were totally annihilated.

Shen Hongyang walked to Su Dongming and spoke deeply: "Cease the fighting!! Su Dongming, if this continues on, you will just squander the soldiers' lives meaninglessly!"

Su Dongming had gone beyond reason by this time, and had the look of a lost gambler as he looked towards Shen Hongyang and asked loudly: "Shen Hongyang!! Lend me 2 battalions of soldiers! As long as we work together, we can definitely bury Yue Zhong here!!"

Shen Hongyang immediately refuted: "Then what? He only had a new battalion here, even if you decimate this motley crew, it wouldn't be a huge loss to him.

He still has 7 battalions back at Ning Guang County, he could just easily activate them and send them to attack us. I can't think of a valid reason to waste my precious soldiers' lives just because of your personal feud with him! Su Dongming, cease this pointless fighting! There's still time to do so!"

If the 4 army heads really joined Su Dongming and attacked Yue Zhong now, Yue Zhong would definitely suffer a huge defeat. However, all he was utilizing now was a bunch of newly trained soldiers. The moment he deployed the elite soldiers of his, even if the rest died, it wouldn't be a huge loss to him.

# Chapter 273: Master of Negotiations!

---

After witnessing the terrifying strength of Yue Zhong and his Special Combat forces, the other 4 heads of the military were not willing to clash against him and risking their all. The only exception was if it was a case where Yue Zhong crossed their thresholds.

Su Dongming looked towards the other 4 heads. All of them did not say anything, instead just silently looking at him. They would definitely not send their troops out.

"Everyone retreat!!" Su Dongming looked towards the screen again, just in time to witness another 2 soldiers being blasted to death by Yue Zhong's grenade. He grimaced as he gritted his teeth and issued the humiliating order.

After the command had been given, all his subordinates retreated orderly. Yue Zhong stood alone and continued harassing them with shots from the sides, continually causing more deaths.

After Su Dongming's forces had gathered, Yue Zhong still didn't relent, and swiped his ring to take out a sniper rifle. Aiming the weapon skillfully he continued to snipe another 13 soldiers and by that time, Su Dongming's forces had left the area.

Yue Zhong saw Su Dongming's forces really retreating from the area, and he heaved a huge sigh of relief. This time, fortunately, the other 4 heads had stood aside and did not participate. If there was any additional major power joining in, Yue Zhong could only retreat and bring his Special Combat forces with him.

While Su Dongming's forces had retreated, Yue Zhong's own forces had no energy to give chase as well. Although the Special Forces were strong, if they left their cover and chased the enemy in the wild? It would be a disaster.

Wen Baoguo found Yue Zhong and directly said, "Yue Zhong, this

matter should end here, I hope you pull your forces back and leave from here. The remaining matters we have, I hope we can come together and discuss about this. If you continue to wreak havoc, the government will not stand idly by."

Yue Zhong's expression turned frosty as he spoke softly, "Mayor Wen! This time Su Dongming that bastard had actually moved against me. I had lost a few of my brothers, if he doesn't give me an explanation, I will not let this go."

The war this time, had cost Yue Zhong a number of people. The list included 5 of his Special Combat forces, and over 30 of the soldiers from the newly recruited survivors.

Wen Baoguo frowned lightly as he replied back. "You have lost only tens of people, Su Dongming has lost over 400 people and 100 missing people to you guys. You have already taken the advantage. Yue Zhong, please don't go overboard. Our patience has its limits."

This time, Yue Zhong had thoroughly crippled Su Dongming's force. A large number of his weapons had been destroyed by Yue Zhong as well, even the elite First Battalion was wiped out by Yue Zhong. The Third Battalion was thoroughly defeated, while over 40 veterans of the Fourth Battalion also lost their lives. The Second Battalion had suffered greatly while fighting against Yue Zhong's Special Combat forces. Su Dongming had become the weakest link amongst the 5 major heads.

Wen Peishan could not bear it and pleaded with Yue Zhong. "Yue Zhong, just fall back for now! If you continue, many more will die!"

"Fine! I will give Peishan face. I will temporarily withdraw my troops. You would do well to heed my words Mayor Wen. Su Dongming that bastard came and attacked me with no rhyme nor reason and he has to give me a suitable explanation." Yue Zhong decided to back off, not before he warned Wen Baoguo.

After all that fighting, Yue Zhong also did not wish for it to continue. If he insisted on it, the other 4 heads of the military

would definitely not sit idly. By then Yue Zhong would have made an enemy out of the entire SY County, with neither side backing down.

"Thank you!!" Wen Peishan gave a sweet smile to Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong had agreed to withdraw his troops on her behalf, and it made her extremely happy

She honestly felt that her position in Yue Zhong's heart must have risen by a number of points.

Yue Zhong brought his troops away from Phoenix Street as promised, and retreated back to Xinglong Street.

The battle between Yue Zhong and Su Dongming had shaken the entire SY County, everyone was quietly awed by Yue Zhong's strength. Even those who had wanted to take the opportunity to join in on the Yue Zhong-bashing party were sorely disappointed and slinked away.

The 2 gangs that came to be under Yue Zhong, Black Tiger Gang and the Vermillion Phoenix Triad, rose in status amongst the people in SY County, the rest of the factions all lowered their heads to curry favour with the 2 gangs, no one dared offend them anymore, adding on to their imposing manner.

\*\*\*\*\*

Two days later, in the government's council meeting room where the 5 military heads, the 2 government heads and Yue Zhong have all gathered for negotiations.

Su Dongming looked at Yue Zhong, his expression frosty as he spat out his words. "Yue Zhong, you brought your men to conduct a sneak attack on my military camp! Your attack ended up killing 162 of my soldiers, as well as destroying my equipment. I can let that go, but what guts you have, to dare ambush my army. Do you not put the people of SY County in your eyes?"

Yue Zhong cocked his brow in challenge, and likewise, pointedly

asked back, "Su Dongming! You say I attacked your camp, do you have the proof? If not, don't malign me! As for ambushing your army!! What a joke, you had sent them to attack me, I was merely protecting my own interest and retaliated! Don't tell me it's fine for you to attack me and I'm not supposed to fight back, where's the logic in that? But, coming back to that, why did you send people to assassinate me?"

Fortunately, my years are not up, otherwise I would have died at your hands. You think I'm easy to bully? If you provoke me, even if it means fighting to the death with you, I will activate all 7 of my battalions! I will call out all my 4000 good brothers to exterminate you, you piece of reeking green dog shit!"

In this type of negotiation, no one was willing to appear weaker than the others. The moment weakness was shown, the opposing faction would jump on the chance to apply pressure. Of course Yue Zhong did not plan to fight to the death with the military nor SY County, but he would never show it.

Su Dongming's expression went cold, as he spat out icily, "You say I sent men to assassinate you, do you have the proof? Without proof, don't go around smearing my name!!"

"Evidence! Of course I have! Men, bring him over!" Yue Zhong glanced at Su Dongming, laughing coldly.

In a matter of seconds, Cheng Yu brought an emaciated youth in.

"I'm guessing that you know this guy right! Su Dongming!" Yue Zhong eyed Su Dongming as he voiced out sarcastically.

Su Dongming took a look at the person, and his face turned pale because he naturally knew the person. He had personally conveyed the position of the Third Battalion Second Company's Officer to this person, Xu Guang!

"Let me introduce this person to you, this person is a commanding officer personally granted by Su Dongming." Yue

Zhong laughed lightly and pulled out a bunch of photos before he gave them to Wen Baoguo.

"Mayor Wen, these are the photos of the assassins' corpses, am I right?"

"That's right!" Wen Baoguo eyed those photos, and confirmed the authenticity of the photos.

"Xu Guang. Who is this person?" Yue Zhong pointed at the photo of an Agility-type assassin and asked Xu Guang.

Without hesitating, Xu Guang directly said: "This person's name is Wen Yu. He is a veteran who entered the army in the same year as I did, later joining Su Dongming's special forces."

"What about this person?" Yue Zhong replaced the photo of Wen Yu with another one, depicting an Enhancer who possessed the Firearms Control Skill, as he asked Xu Guang once again.

Xu Guang said: "This person is called Guo Ming! He is proficient at using all sorts of guns and is also very accurate at shooting. He also eventually became a member of the special forces established by Commander Su."

"Enough! This is all your side of the story, you forced him to say all of it!! You are framing me!" Su Dongming let out a loud shout, interrupting Xu Guang's narration as he stared at Yue Zhong and fiercely roared.

Yue Zhong glanced indifferently at Su Dongming and continued to speak lightly.

"Mayor Wen, Secretary Peng and all Commanders, I have already provided enough evidence to prove that this Su Dongming was the one who prompted people to try to assassinate me. Please, uphold justice for me. Otherwise, I will take matters into my own hands."

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, the four heads of the military and the government's two magnates all furrowed their eyebrows. Yue Zhong's meaning was clear, if they couldn't provide a satisfactory

answer to Yue Zhong? Then Yue Zhong would take the initiative to kill Su Dongming by himself.

Currently, Su Dongming still had around 1500 soldiers under his control. This meant that if his soldiers fought against Yue Zhong, there would also be a huge loss to SY City. This was not to SY City's interests.

Su Dongming glanced at Yue Zhong before coldly saying: "If you want my life, come take it by yourself if you have the skill!"

Su Dongming had correctly anticipated that the the other big bosses of the military and the government's two magnates would not remain indifferent to him.

An ominous glint flashed past both of Yue Zhong's eyes and an oppressive killing intent surged out: "You think I don't dare?"

Su Dongming's bottom lip quivered, yet he did not have any comeback to Yue Zhong's threat. It seemed he could only stare fixedly at Yue Zhong.

The tension in the meeting room became palpable, everyone felt tense.

The experts behind the military heads all kept their eyes on Yue Zhong, preparing to move in case Yue Zhong suddenly attacked.

Wen Baoguo looked at Yue Zhong and asked indifferently, "State your terms! Yue Zhong, what do you want?"

Wen Baoguo could see that Yue Zhong didn't want to be at loggerheads with the entire SY County, he was only throwing his weight around to prove that he could not be pushed.

Yue Zhong did not skip a beat as he replied: "Execute Su Tianyang! Then I will let this matter rest. I will return the 100 captives to you guys!"

Su Dongming's expression turned steely as he refused flatly: "That's impossible! As long as there's me, Su Dongming, no one can



dream of touching even a single hair on my son!"

Su Dongming only had Su Tianyang his only son, if Su Tianyang was executed, his Su line would cease to have descendants.

"2 Assault Helicopters and supporting pilots!"

The incomparable attack prowess of the assault helicopters had enticed Yue Zhong, he had discovered a few attack helicopters within the Mechanized Infantry Brigade camp, he just lacked the people with expertise to operate it.

Su Dongming seemed to spit fire from his eyes as he said, "My assault helicopters and pilots have been destroyed by you!"

Yue Zhong then went on to state a few more terms with regards to the military compensation, and they were all rejected by Su Dongming, the rest of the 6 heads also silently backed Su Dongming up, they weren't willing to see Yue Zhong obtaining even more firepower and strength.

Yue Zhong pulled out Da Gouzi beside him and said: "Since it's like this, I will allow my subordinate Da Gouzi to negotiate on my behalf."

Da Gouzi was extremely gifted at negotiating, and could be relentless, his bargaining skills were even more superb.

After Da Gouzi was pushed out by Yue Zhong, he grinned and immediately opened with his sky staggeringly high price. "We want 3000 pretty virgins. Then this matter will be considered over!"

His intention of course was less the women, but to use his superb verbal skills to put the opposition on the defensive right from the start. Then wouldn't everything they owned be available for the taking?

Ulamog: this guy reminds me of Weed. My wallet hurts just thinking about what's going to happen to these guys xD

# Chapter 274: Transaction

---

Hearing Da Gouzi's words, all the people were momentarily stunned. The entire SY County would not be able to deliver such a sum of 3,000 virgin beauties

In the post-apocalyptic world, most of the women with a little more beauty would have already been taken by people of power. If they were asked to give a few pretty ladies to Yue Zhong, it wouldn't be an issue, but 3,000 beauties, it was too hard to find.

At that moment, the 5 heads of the military, plus Peng Mingde and Wen Baoguo all looked towards Yue Zhong with a strange gaze.

Yue Zhong's face had turned dark after hearing Da Gouzi's words. He didn't expect that Da Gouzi would call for such absurd terms. However, he did nothing to stop Da Gouzi, instead, sitting there silently.

Su Dongming directly rejected: "No way!!"

Da Gouzi then proceeded to call out: "Then give us 6,000 pretty women. Yes, we want 6,000 women. Those older ones, kids younger than 16 and males? We don't want them, ugly women we also don't want!"

Yue Zhong's side was sorely lacking in manpower. So if they had called out for strong males, SY County would definitely not agree. It was because after a little training, those able-bodied males could become soldiers and workers, thus forming a stable power. Therefore Da Gouzi just tried his luck to ask for women.

Su Dongming icily replied, "6,000 women! How are we going to pull that number out for you? Since you like beauties so much, I will give you 30 beauties! But each beauty has to be exchanged with 1 tonne of rations!"

Da Gouzi looked at him strangely, before responding in a crude

manner: "1 ton of rations? Why don't you just go rob me!!

The women outside are at most prostituting themselves at 1 bun for a night. Even a beauty would not cost more than 1 jin of rice for a day. 10 jin rice could easily buy a woman. You want 1 tonne for each woman, are your beauties made of gold?"

The female survivors in SY County sold themselves cheaply, as long as there was enough food for them, most female survivors were willing to sell themselves.

However, Yue Zhong could only accept a small number. If he engaged in a large-scale purchase and brought these female survivors over into his own camp without a viable excuse, SY County's top brass would definitely be suspicious.

Da Gouzi's face hardened as he threatened coarsely: "Su Dongming, you sent people to assassinate our Commander Yue, and you are trying to shirk compensation now? You must be seeking death, no? Our 4000 brothers are just waiting for Commander Yue's orders, to fight it out with SY County! We will come and kill, and destroy you and burn your entire family to the ground!"

Su Dongming stared coldly at Da Gouzi as he replied indifferently: "Fine! Let us fight then! Let's see who's afraid of who!"

Yue Zhong stood up in a jiffy, and gave Su Dongming an icy look filled with killing intent: "Su Dongming, you're taking things too far. I'm going to go activate my troops right now! Everyone, you've heard him! It's Su Dongming who wants to fight it out! I hope that when we clash, you can maintain your neutrality."

"This is a personal grudge between us. I have no ill intentions towards anyone else here. Whatever happens in the future, it is all on Su Dongming."

Shen Hongyang frowned as he opened his mouth: "Yue Zhong,

don't be so agitated. We can understand your feelings. However, everything can be talked through, don't just go to war each time. Warfare costs lives! Sit down, let's talk things out!"

Wen Baoguo spoke out softly: "Let's do it this way! A trade of 100 beauties, 900 young ladies, 3,500 children, and 500 males. Our SY County will give you 5,000 people, you will give us 1,000 tonnes of rations. Then we'll let the matter rest!"

A child could only use up resource and not contribute to it, Wen Baoguo had been mulling over the problem of the number of children in SY County. This time he could use this as an excuse to hand over 3,500 of them. As compensation, he would give Yue Zhong 500 men.

Yue Zhong sat down, and continued to be silent, looking at Da Gouzi.

Da Gouzi continued his haggling: "There are too many kids!! They can only eat, and can't help to fight the zombies. Not to mention they can't work, so we're at a disadvantage here.

Why not do it like this: we still keep those 3,500 kids, but on top of those 100 beauties, there must be 30 additional virgins.

Furthermore, we will use 10 rounds of ammunition to buy a male, 5 rounds of ammunition to buy a female, to trade for 1,000 males and 1,000 females."

Peng Mingde's eyes flashed, before he lightly smiled: "Good! I promise you!"

Seeing Peng Mingde accepting Yue Zhong's request just like that, Wen Baoguo, who had wanted to say something, decided to stay silent.

The rest of the 5 heads of the military accepted the request as well. Although Yue Zhong gained 7,000 people, most of them were weak women and children. The number of males numbered only 1,500. Also Yue Zhong had to pay 1,000 tonnes of rations as well as

15,000 rounds of ammunition, both parties actually benefited.

After the negotiations between both parties ended, Wen Baoguo quickly notified the government, and they swiftly selected 7,000 to throw to Yue Zhong.

The sudden inclusion of 7,000 people gave Yue Zhong quite a bit of pressure. Amongst the 7,000 people, other than the 100 beauties, the rest had an emaciated look. Their meals and accommodation was going to be a problem.

Wen Baoguo had thrown 7,000 people to Yue Zhong, because they harbored ill intentions and wanted to see how he made a fool out of himself. It must be clear that 7,000 people was not a small number, handling them would be a tough job. Other than that, these people required a few tonnes of rations everyday, without ample support, one would not be able to maintain such a number.

Such a huge number of survivors had suddenly been thrown into Yue Zhong's territory, it really was a headache. Especially the 1,500 males; they were all weak, and emaciated to the point that they could die any moment. Even prior to the apocalypse, such physiques would require nourishment for over one or 2 months before they could be considered healthy. As for the women and the children, everyone of them were skinny to the point they could be blown away with a low gust of a wind.

Amongst the 7,000 people, there were some who were rotten characters. On the first day after being handed over to Yue Zhong, there were 30 men who indulged and raped a few women. These men were afraid to fight the zombies and look for treasure drops, yet used force to bully those weaker than themselves.

Those men were quickly apprehended by Yue Zhong's subordinates, then swiftly executed in front of everybody; a cold reminder of the consequences of acting out of line.

Da Gouzi was in charge of affairs when he was at Stone Village, as well as Qing Yuan County, and he quickly settled everybody down

and arranged for their accommodations and duties.

Yue Zhong had also reassigned some of the soldiers who had performed well during the clash with Su Dongming, giving them the responsibilities of managing these new survivors.

As for the issue about rations, Yue Zhong had already stolen 3,000 tonnes of rations from Su Dongming, so for the time being, there were no issues concerning food.

"It's time to start preparations!!"

After the situation was somewhat stabilized, Yue Zhong assigned Da Gouzi to buy steel in bulk, at the same time, he commenced the operations of digging trenches around the riverbank!

Regardless of gender or age, even members of the Vermillion Phoenix and Black Tiger gang were routed over, and they all started digging.

Under the combined efforts of over 8,000 people, huge trenches with depths of about a few metres were dug out, and inside those trenches, there were sharp steel beams hammered in.

The Mutant Beast meat that had been manufactured into cans were also delivered over from Ning Guang County, and those weak survivors who had gone so long without having decent meals and nutritions got to enjoy the Mutant Beasts meat, and started to recover quickly.

Whenever it was meal time, there would be massive woks [TN: Huge pans that chinese use for cooking] that were filled with piping hot rice, wild vegetables as well as plates and plates of meat from Mutant Beasts, everyone got a share, and they all wore expressions of satisfaction and delight.

Cheng Peipei was passing by, and saw the survivors working and eating heartily by the riverbank, and her eyes flashed with shock: "They actually get to eat meat? This Yue Zhong is also too formidable, no? Where did he get this much meat?"

Beside Cheng Peipei was her close friend Tai Yiyan, after the matter of the Dark Crows, their relationship got a lot closer. Both were stuck together, going everywhere together, and had specially gone to find Yue Zhong this time.

Both Cheng Peipei and Tai Yiyan had decent backgrounds, hence they could move about freely in SY County. Because of that, they could walk around and had the free time to find Yue Zhong to entertain themselves.

However, even though Cheng Peipei had a decent family background, even her household could not get to eat meat everyday. Seeing the normal survivors eating better meals than her own family, it caused her to be shocked.

Tai Yiyan looked at those survivors, and she lightly grinned: "This is Yue Zhong's ability!"

Yue Zhong's capability could be seen from the decent meals and care the survivors receive under him.

Cheng Peipei laughed and replied, "He really is something else!"

Tai Yiyan teased: "I wonder who was it that hated Yue Zhong till his bones. What, now you're fallen for him?"

"I did not!!" Cheng Peipei flushed red, and immediately retorted: "I think you're the one who's fallen for him! Otherwise why would you come looking for him?"

"I do like him. What's wrong about that?" Tai Yiyan did not seem abashed to admit that to her friend.

Cheng Peipei was startled when she heard it, as she hesitated a while before saying: "But Yiyan!! He already has so many women! Even Zhou Yanxue has become his women. Plus I heard he's extremely lustful, every night engaging in acts of pleasure with different ladies, even doing things that would have been frowned upon!"

The matter of Da Gouzi asking for 3,000 virgins from Su

Dongming had spread far and wide, and morphed into a version where Yue Zhong is the true lustful character, one who didn't turn down any women, got high on nightlife, capturing any beauty that he saw and becoming a huge sex maniac in the bedroom. However, because of his strength and authority, no one dared to offend him.

Of course, these were all rumors, in fact, Yue Zhong had been kept busy running his affairs, he didn't even have time to bed that beauty, Zhou Yanxue.

Tai Yiyan laughed, and said a little wilfully, "So what? Tang Taizong Li Shimin was also a huge pervert, and had been unabashed about it. In the end he was still the ruler of the nation. Second to none in the entire country, I like this type of men."

TN: Tang Taizong

[https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/Emperor\\_Taizong\\_of\\_Tang](https://en.m.wikipedia.org/wiki/Emperor_Taizong_of_Tang)

Cheng Peipei looked helplessly at her friend. Her friend was a gutsy lady who loved and hated freely, her free-spiritedness and decisive nature

A soldier led Tai Yiyan and Cheng Peipei towards the firing zone, as Yue Zhong was there doing target practice.

"Amazing! Brother Yue! You destroyed a 100 targets with just 10 shots!!" Wen Peishan was currently passing a bottle of mineral water to Yue Zhong with a look of idolization.

These days, whenever Wen Peishan had the free time, she would hang out with Yue Zhong, becoming a frequent guest of his.

Wen Baogui had also approved of it, as it meant that his relationship with Yue Zhong would be improved as well.

"Thanks." Yue Zhong received the mineral water and smiled at her.

Cheng Peipei glanced at Wen Peishan, and muttered under her breath, "Little vixen!"



After the attack of the Dark Crows, it had led to a rift between Cheng Peipei and Wen Peishan. Although it wasn't to a point where they were enemies, it had caused the once friendly relationship to turn a little cold.

"Brother Yue!!" Tai Yiyan broke out into a sweet smile, and walked towards Yue Zhong's side.

Yue Zhong glanced at Tai Yiyan and asked, "Miss Tai. Is there something you need?"

Tai Yiyan cocked her eyebrow, as she put on a grumpy expression: "Brother Yue, you can just call me Yiyan! If you call me Miss Tai, I will be angry."

Yue Zhong adjusted his register: "Yiyan, is there something you need me for?"

Tai Yiyan fixed her gaze on Yue Zhong and asked: "Must we only look for you when something's up? Can't we find you for fun?"

Yue Zhong gazed at Cheng Peipei and said, "Sure but...I'm pretty busy. I'm afraid I can't entertain both you and Miss Cheng."

Yue Zhong had to handle a lot of things, and he had already delegated most of the other responsibilities to his subordinates. There were some matters that required his personal attention. Especially the 7,000 new survivors he had just accepted, he needed to settle this pressing issue as well as their lives in the future. After all, they couldn't always be digging and setting up traps.

Tai Yiyan looked at Yue Zhong and laughed lightly: "I want to rely on you, and become your secretary! I am after all a graduate from Harvard University in Administration. Having someone like me as your secretary should not be a shameful thing, no?"

Yue Zhong glanced at Tai Yiyan curiously and asked: "How old are you this year? How can you be a graduate of Harvard University?"

Tai Yiyan looked to be at most younger than 20, how could she be

a graduate from Harvard University.

Cheng Peipei stood at the side and said a little proudly, "It is true! Yiyan is very smart, she skipped a few grades when she was studying. She is truly a graduate from Harvard University. Furthermore, Brother Yue, you should call me Peipei! No need to refer to me as Miss Cheng!"

Yue Zhong glanced at the self-confident Tai Yiyan and said: "Fine! I will accept you, on a probation of 1 month! If you perform well, then you may stay."

Having a capable beauty as a secretary was also somewhat seductive and cool.

Right at this time, Zhang He ran in gasping for breaths, saying: "Boss Yue!! Something's wrong! There are many people gathered outside!!"

# Chapter 275: Mutant Black Fishes

---

"Bring me there." Yue Zhong frowned, and immediately let Zhang He lead the way.

The rest of the ladies present quickly followed behind.

Soon, Yue Zhong's party came to the outskirts of Xinglong Street.

Only to discover that Xinglong Street was packed with countless survivors, over a hundred of Yue Zhong's subordinates were currently pointing their guns at the survivors, being cautious of any survivors that might incite an uproar.

"Boss Yue is here!!"

"Boss Yue!! Please, hire me!!"

"Boss Yue!! I'm begging you, hire me!!"

"I can dig as well!! I was in the civil engineering business prior to the apocalypse! Please hire me!!"

Upon seeing Yue Zhong's arrival, those survivors immediately cheered, and started to kneel and beg to be hired.

These survivors were not here to create trouble, instead, they just wanted to make a living with Yue Zhong. They were leading hard lives, and were willing to do anything just to have a decent meal.

Needless to say, those who were under Yue Zhong could eat their fill, and even have meat from time to time. This treatment led those outside to be envious, and they wanted in as well.

Yue Zhong looked at all the survivors, and frowned because he was indeed in need of help.

However, if he continued gathering so many people? It would definitely get on the nerves of the government. They would not allow him to expand his reach.

Wen Peishan looked at those survivors in tattered clothes, and her heart was filled with sympathy: "Brother Yue! Please help them. See how pitiful they are!"

[Dedition: I hate this girl. Too much glowing innocence. Or maybe I'm just a screwed person...]

Ulamog: yep. Your irreparably broken according to human standards. It's OK! We still love you Dedition! >:}

Yue Zhong maintained his silence as he tried to come up with a way to deal with the situation.

Tai Yiyan glanced at Yue Zhong and immediately asked, "Brother Yue! Do you need more help here?"

Yue Zhong replied, "Yes!"

In the post-apocalyptic world, most of the machines had issues and could no longer be utilized. Yue Zhong could only rely on manpower to help set up the traps. He really did need a lot of manpower.

Tai Yiyan looked at Yue Zhong and grinned, before suggesting a marvelous plan. "In this case, let me hire them on your behalf. That way, these people will be under the wing of my Tai family, and have nothing to do with you.

This should bypass the Government's annoyance nicely. Is that Idea ok?"

Tai Yiyan had discerned Yue Zhong's difficulties, and thus proposed this solution.

Yue Zhong's eyes immediately brightened and he laughed. "Good!! Then I'll have to trouble you! I need 5,000 more people to help with the work here. I will let you handle this. Anyone who works for me for a day, I will pay you a dozen jin of food."

If Yue Zhong personally hired these people, it will lead to a clamp down from the SY County's powers, but if it was an internal

faction that hired these people, it would not be a problem.

Tai Yiyan grinned at Yue Zhong, and strode towards the survivors as she said: "I will arrange it properly for you!!"

Tai Yiyan walked to the gathering of survivors and called out in a clear voice: "I am Tai Family's Tai Yiyan, whoever wants to work for Yue Zhong report to me now!!"

"I'm willing!!"

"Pick me!!"

The survivors jostled and fought to be first as they called out loudly. They followed Tai Yiyan and left the place.

Tai Yiyan was incredibly capable, after borrowing some subordinates from Yue Zhong, she managed to gather 10,000 survivors, and arranged for a shift system between 2 groups of 5,000 people, taking their turns to work for Yue Zhong. As long as they could eat their fill, they were incredibly satisfied, therefore, they gave it their all in helping Yue Zhong, digging up many huge trenches.

The areas of Yue Zhong's territory near the riverbank were covered with large holes, each holes filled with numerous sharp steel beams, as long as a living creature were to fall in it, they would be penetrated by countless steel spears and die.

Yue Zhong's actions of digging trenches near the riverbank, were seen by some of the people sent by the government to observe, after which no one paid any further attention. They thought that Yue Zhong was wasting his time and energy on these.

After half a month's time, SY County had sent out troops to the southeast direction, destroying a few minor power factions, and absorbing about 6,000 people. At the same time, they killed over 60,000 zombies, and obtained numerous spoils as well as over 6,000 tonnes of rations.

[Dedition: El Diablo...]

Ulamog:What about Diablo 2? Hehehe I only found it years after its heyday... But whew! What a game!

Yue Zhong' side kept themselves busy as well, activating troops towards Long Hai County, conducting minor assaults and investigations. The 7 battalions rotated their shifts, and managed to decimate 3 minor power factions as well, gaining roughly 3,000 people. They killed over 10,000 zombies, and while their rations gained might not be a lot, they benefitted in other areas.

On this day, it was about noon time, as Yue Zhong looked at his Special Combat troops who were all prepared and equipped, before he gave an order: "Commence operations!!"

Under Yue Zhong's lead, the Special Combat forces went towards the riverbank.

"Throw the bait!!" Yue Zhong commanded coldly.

"No!! Don't kill me!!!" A survivor who had raped and murdered 6 women was currently being dragged to the front, his face full of fear as he begged.

Cheng Yu stepped up and slashed a few times, with a few accurate strikes at various points on the survivor's body, causing him to bleed and shriek in pain.

Song Wen calmly activated his Explosive Strength Skill, as he grabbed the survivor, and threw him 15m away into the riverbank.

The survivor started struggling madly in the water, while his blood flowed freely in the waters.

Pretty soon, the blood attracted the attention of the various Mutant Beasts within the waters, and as the waters started to stir, a huge fish of about 2m swam out from the depths.

It swiftly lunged, open jaws full of sharp teeth and with a CHOMP! bit down voraciously on the man. His body was easily sheared in two and some of his intestinal remains and various organs floated away, while others sank as his fresh blood quickly

dyed the water red.

"Level 30 Mutant Beast: Mutant Black Fish! It is a fiercely carnivorous mutant fish with relatively powerful jaw pressure which enjoys the taste of Humans."

Yue Zhong stepped out, and aimed for the obvious weak spot of the Mutated Black Fish, as a huge fireball swiftly rushed towards the Black Fish and exploded on its eye.

With a flash, the huge Black Fish was instantly blinded by the crackling fireball.

After being blinded in one eye, the Black Fish submerged itself as it thrashed in pain. Huge ripples spread out from the spot.

"Continue to lower the bait! This time, put it closer!" Yue Zhong watched the struggling Black Fish, as he coldly called out.

Song Wen immediately pulled out another survivor that had committed grave sins. He mercilessly broke his knees and viciously slashed his Achilles tendons, before throwing the wailing man into the waters.

As the survivor struggled hopelessly, his body that was spewing blood attracted the huge fish over. Once again it opened its huge jaws and clamped down on the doomed survivor making the somewhat muffled screams increase to a fever pitch!

Song Wen pulled with every ounce of his strength, tugging the dying but somehow still screaming survivor like a broken rag doll back to shore. The Black Fish's teeth were embedded in his spine and thus it was also pulled up onto shore along with it.

Ulamog: Cabella's: Apocalypse Fishing! Pre-order now to get Special "Gnawed Corpse" Bait skin DLC!

The huge Mutant Black Fish was about 2m wide, 1.2m tall, and was covered entirely in black scales that had a layer of slimy mucus. Its muscular front fins supported its body as it swooped forward, allowing it to traverse on land at speeds that were

generally faster than a normal human.

Under those conditions, without undergoing enhancement, a normal person would not be able to escape its clutches.

Seeing the Mutant Black Fish come ashore, Yue Zhong waved his hand, and Tong Xiaoyun rushed up. Killing Mutant Beasts of this level was enough nourishment for her to enhance and level up quickly.

Tong Xiaoyun neared the Mutant Black Fish, and activated her Telekinesis. As she controlled the Dark Magic Blade, it flashed down in an majestic arc. The sharp Dark Magic Blade immediately decapitated the Mutant Black Fish, fresh blood violently spraying out.

Even after being beheaded by the Dark Magic Blade and with less than half of its head left, the Black Fish was still extremely resilient. Somehow it survived as it twisted its body and made its way towards Tong Xiaoyun in a frenzy.

Tong Xiaoyun activated her Telekinesis ability once again. Under her practiced guidance she controlled the Dark Magic Blade to shoot down viciously from the sky. The attack sliced forward penetrating what was left of its head, before twisting hard and scrambling it's brains, finally killing the Black Fish.

When the Black Fish died, a huge orb of experience entered Tong Xiaoyun's body, allowing her to advance in level.

"Release the blood!" Yue Zhong commanded in a low voice.

Tong Xiaoyun immediately used the Dark Magic Blade to cut more wounds on the carcass, causing fresh blood to flow out and dye the waters a further dark red.

Tasting the blood, those Mutant Beasts hiding deep within the river were immediately attracted over.

The once calm waters of the river was suddenly overcome with activity, as 2 huge black fishes swam out from the depths, furiously



chomping the carcass of their comrade.

These Mutant Black Fishes even consumed the flesh of their own species without hesitation.

Zhuo Yatong, who had always been fighting on the frontlines, and was also assigned here, wielded her God and Devil System equipment, a huge mace, and rushed out swinging it down ruthlessly onto the head of one of the Black Fishes.

The huge mace swiped down with immense force, and directly caused the head of the Black Fish to explode, splattering the now common sight of chunky brain matter everywhere.

On the other side, Tong Xiaoyun was calmly activating her Telekinesis Ability as she controlled the Dark Magic Blade that Yue Zhong passed to her. Her attacks caused it to flit in and out, penetrating the Dark Fish's brain, before slashing it viciously and killing it.

This time, without time for Zhuo Yatong or Tong Xiaoyun to even catch a breath, a huge spout of water shot towards the sky!

Following that, 9 Mutant Black Fishes started swimming towards the shore crazily, other than those 9 Mutant Black Fishes, there were 2 huge Elite Black Fishes that swam out, mouths bristling with even somehow bigger teeth, each of them possessing a body over 3m wide, 2m tall and a length of 20m.

TN: That's freaking big: <https://s-media-cache-ak0.pinimg.com/736x/8b/14/0c/8b140c6b7e31e4838286207c8086b0c>

"Level 40 Mutant Beast: Elite Mutant Black Fish!"

Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun looked at the 11 Mutant Black Fish, and their first reaction was to retreat. Trying to handle 11 Mutant Black Fishes on their own was too overwhelming, especially since they did not know what the huge Elite Mutant Black Fishes could do.

# Chapter 276: Fishes on Land

---

The 11 Mutant Black Fishes started towards Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun in a frenzy.

Seeing the appearance of the 11 Mutant Black Fishes, the Special Combat warriors by Yue Zhong's side all felt excited, and they rushed towards the Mutant Black Fishes.

Yao Yao's speed was the fastest. As an Agility-based Evolver who had gone through multiple level enhancements, her speed had long surpassed Ji Qingwu and Yue Zhong, and was the fastest attacker within Yue Zhong's force.

Flame King Gu conjured a flame spear and threw it at once, which shot towards one of the Mutant Black Fish like a flash of lightning. The elemental spear pierced its head before exploding, killing it instantly.

Cheng Yu held his Tang Replica Sword, as he made his way agilely towards the side of the Black Fish. He swung his sword over and over, slashing a few times before the Black Fish was truly dead.

All the Mutant Black Fish had a slimy layer of mucus, and when Cheng Yu wanted to slice apart its skin, he found it extremely difficult to do so. Therefore, he expended much more time to kill just one Mutant Black Fish.

All the Enhancers trained by Yue Zhong charged forwards and those who were slightly weaker worked together in teams of 3 to deal with a single Black Fish, while those who were stronger fought a Black Fish on their own.

Ji Qingwu had set her sights on the 2 Elite Mutant Black Fishes. They were much bigger in size compared to the other Black Fishes, and their speed outstripped the rest by more than half. They were Level 40 Mutant Beasts, and if Ji Qingwu could successfully hunt them, she would gain a huge boost in experience.

The 2 Elite Black Fishes saw Ji Qingwu coming towards them like a speck of dust, and one of them opened its huge mouth, revealing rows and rows of sharp teeth, biting down as it swam repeatedly as if in provocation.

These Elite Mutant Black Fishes had teeth that were incredibly sharp, even armored money trucks would probably be crushed between those teeth.

Facing the assault of the Elite Mutant Black Fish, Ji Qingwu activated her Shadow Steps in preparation. Then, right at the moment before she would be bitten, she moved towards her right evading the attack from the Elite Mutant Black Fish with flair. She pulled out her QingFeng Sword, activated her Blade Strengthening Skill, and directly pierced the belly of the Elite Mutant Black Fish in retaliation. Quickly she rushed to the front of the fish with her blade still stuck in its side, opening up a huge wound as copious amounts of reeking fish blood flowed forth from the wound.

That huge Mutant Black Fish started struggling in its agony, and twisted its immense body as it slapped the ground, forcing Ji Qingwu to retreat back a few steps.

Due to its size, its sheer power could not be underestimated. Just a simple slap from it could cause Ji Qingwu to be gravely injured, therefore she had no choice but to retreat while watching it bleed from its wound.

Ji Qingwu had wanted to wait for the Mutant Black Fish to die from loss of blood, but never did she imagine that its recovery rate was freakishly astonishing. Under the effect of the slimy mucus that it excreted, its wound actually closed up and stopped bleeding.

After the wound closed and it stopped bleeding, the Elite Mutant Black Fish stared at Ji Qingwu, its eyes shining with undisguised hatred, and it opened its mouth, shooting a fluorescent green jet of water at Ji Qingwu.

Ji Qingwu was wary of its actions for a while, and the moment

she saw it open its mouth, she had already dodged to one side with a flash of her body.

Only to see that the moment the green water beam landed on where Ji Qingwu was previously, the piece of land was immediately corroded away at, as strange wisps of green smoke rose up.

Ji Qingwu's heart fell, as she knew the Elite Mutant Black Fish was not easy to deal with. She shot towards the fish once again like an arrow.

The Elite Mutant Black Fish did not let up, and shot multiple green water jets at her.

Ji Qingwu's battle prowess was outstanding, thus she managed to narrowly dodge the incoming green water jets, and got near the Elite Mutant Black Fish. A long green water jet had just landed behind her, causing the ground to immediately dissolve into a sinkhole.

The Elite Mutant Black Fish saw Ji Qingwu beside its body, and it twisted itself to swipe hard at her.

Ji Qingwu flitted about and dodged the shocking blow from the Black Fish, as she swung her sword and managed to pierce its head. After utilizing the skill she gained after her evolution: Sword Qi, An invincible beam of Sword Qi emitted from the Qingfeng Sword, shooting out explosively, piercing the brain of the Black Fish, turning it into mush and killing it instantly.

The moment the brain was destroyed, the Black Fish struggled awhile more before falling lifelessly to one side, as a huge experience orb entered Ji Qingwu's body, causing her to gain 2 levels in one go.

However, the burden of Ji Qingwu had been equally high. The Sword Qi Skill that she understood was powerful and shocking, but it expended a huge amount of her Spirit, and the Sword Qi

could only extend for about a metre. Each time she activated the Sword Qi, she had to spend 40 points of Spirit, furthermore, the more Spirit she expended, the more power and threat It obtained.

After one of the Elite Mutant Black Fish had been dealt with by Ji Qingwu, the remaining Black Fishes had already been killed by the members of Yue Zhong's Special Combat forces.

There was only the other Elite Mutant Black Fish left, and it was incredibly resilient, its defences tough. The Special Combat Forces were not like it, struggling to fend off their attacks, but it was barely injured, and was not dying anytime soon.

The Elite Mutant Black Fish saw its comrades dying under the attacks of the humans led by Yue Zhong, and it let out a shrill and strange cry. After the strange cry resounded, the water in the river started being agitated, and following multiple jets of water shooting towards the skies. Following that, a huge school of Mutant Black Fish appeared from the river, the total number exceeding a hundred.

With a massive tidal wave, 4 huge Black Fishes appeared, their bodies towering above 6m and covered entirely with scales, as though they were buildings, with the intent to destroy everything in their paths.

"Level 56 Mutant Beast. Type 2 Mutant Black Fish!"

Yue Zhong saw the towering Black Fishes, and his face changed, and finally understood why the treasured river was left alone.

4 Type 2 Mutant Beasts were exceptionally terrifying existences, just being within the river, they were invincible. No one could even take on a single blow from these monsters.

Even if Yue Zhong was a dual-attribute Evolver, if he had to battle any of these Type 2 Beasts in the water, he might really be taken down easily and crushed in a single bite.

"Disperse immediately!!" Yue Zhong hollered.

The Special Combat Forces that had been surrounding the Elite Mutant Water Snake immediately retreated to the back.

These Mutant Black Fishes were unyielding, forming an army of Black Fish as they chased up onto the shore.

This army of Mutant Black Fishes numbered more than 100, and they were all above Level 30. There were even 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes, 10 Elite Mutant Black Fishes, this monstrous group was enough to annihilate Yue Zhong's Special Combat forces twice or thrice over.

Facing this situation, the warriors of the Special Combat Force were also well prepared, and made their way towards the trenches that Yue Zhong had arranged to be dug.

After all, these Black Fishes could not be craftier than humans, and many of them fell into those holes that were 3m deep and 20m wide, and were immediately pierced by the numerous sharp steel beams.

When those Black Fishes fell in those huge trenches, they started struggling wildly, but the more they struggled the faster they died. Those huge trenches swallowed up many of the Black Fishes.

However, those trenches were ineffective against those Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes that were more than 6m tall and 60m long. Their scales could block even the explosive power of 25mm missiles and would definitely cause those steel pipes to bend. Their massive bodies just cover the holes, and were not impeded in any sense.

"What fearsome creatures!!!" Yue Zhong looked towards the 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes that towered above 60m and his eyes flashed with a burning look. He had not lifted his hands to attack the Mutant Black Fishes because those low level Mutant Beasts would not be useful to him, however, these 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes were a different story, they could provide him with the best experience.

Yue Zhong activated his Bone Encompassing Armor, and shot towards one of the 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes, and within a few breaths, he had appeared in front of it. He extended a Bone Spear to propel him on top of its body.

However, getting onto the body was harder than Yue Zhong had anticipated, the layer of slimy mucus prevented him from grabbing onto the scales regardless of how he tried.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish just shook its body, and Yue Zhong was sent flying from its body.

Another Type 2 Mutant Black Fish turned its body and sucked in, as a huge vortex of air started exerting suction on Yue Zhong who was still in mid-air, causing him to fly towards the gaping mouth of the Type 2 Black Fish!

Yue Zhong flew through the air and was alarmed, as he reached out his right hand, and shot out a bone spear. The spear penetrated the ground fiercely, only then did he prevent himself from being sucked into the mouth of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

The other 2 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes seemed to not notice Yue Zhong, instead they made a beeline towards the direction of Xinglong Street. They could detect the rich source of human energy, and could not forget the taste of humans when they had camped near the bank of the river previously.

# Chapter 277: Type Two Green Eagle! Greenie Evolved!

---

Yue Zhong flew through the air and was alarmed, as he reached out his right hand, and shot out a bone spear. The spear penetrated the ground fiercely, only then did he prevent himself from being sucked into the mouth of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

The other 2 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes seemed to not notice Yue Zhong, instead they made a beeline towards the direction of Xinglong Street. They could detect the rich source of human energy, and could not forget the taste of humans when they had camped near the bank of the river previously.

The attacking Type 2 Mutant Black Fish saw that it could not suck Yue Zhong towards it, and instead twisted its body to move towards him, opening its huge jaws to bite at him.

The body of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish was really massive, meaning that with each little movement of its fore-fins it would propel itself a dozen metres or so. This speed enabled it to quickly reach its destination.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and pushed his speed to the limit as he jumped and rolled. This way he barely managed to dodge the sawtoothed maw of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

Taking advantage of the moment when the Black Fish bit into air, Yue Zhong activated his Devil Flame ability. The ability caused 2 fireballs to appear in his hands, while a bone spear shot out from his back and propelled him into the air to land again on top of the back of the Black Fish.

He thrust his blazing hands down towards the body of the Black Fish, while viciously using his landing momentum to increase his attack. Under the burning hot Devil Flames impact, his hands caused the thick slimy mucus to evaporate and he managed to grab



on tightly into a scale.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame had been enhanced to Level 2, and its power was overly terrifying.

The fish which had formidable scales that could even defend against rocket missiles, had 5 small holes burnt into it. This was followed by his burning fingers finally penetrating the scales and brain of the Black Fish.

Unfortunately, it was just that the body was too enormous, and the 5 holes were like a toothpick prick to a human.

Ulamog: How much damage is that?

The Type 2 Black Fish shook its body with all its strength, and a huge shock wave emitted from it.

Yue Zhong could only hold on tightly, and braced for the full impact of that shock wave. Fortunately his body's Endurance was over a hundred points, and although the shock wave was powerful, it could not shake him off.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish continued twisting and turning for a while, before finally quietening down in momentary tiredness

Yue Zhong took a huge breath, as the Devil Flame in his right hand flared up and he expended 50 points of Spirit and 20 points of Stamina to condense it into a 2m long Devil Flame Spear.

The moment it was fully formed, Yue Zhong stuck the Devil Flame Spear ruthlessly into the head of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

The Devil Flame Spear pierced the scales of the Type 2 Black Fish. In fact it was only stopped for a mere second, before burning a huge hole in the scale, and directly penetrating the head of the Type 2 Black Fish.

The Devil Flame Spear released its form after it was stuck into the head of the Type 2 Black Fish, and under Yue Zhong's control,

its power surged out explosively, frying everything that could be burned.

The Type 2 Black Fish immediately started thrashing about wildly. In its struggle, it caused the surrounding ground to be stirred, as huge shock waves emitted out, and anything in its path was smashed to pieces. As it flopped it even took out huge boulders and trees.

Of course, Yue Zhong had long since jumped off from the body of the Type 2 Black Fish.

Right at this time, one of the other Type 2 Black Fish that had ignored Yue Zhong earlier opened its huge mouth, and shot out a green glob of slime like a rocket towards him.

The moment the Type 2 Black Fish had opened its mouth, Yue Zhong felt a huge sense of danger. He could even feel his scalp go numb from the impending death. He immediately jumped away towards the side.

Fortunately Yue Zhong's reaction was fast, so the green glob of slime spat out by the Type 2 Black Fish only narrowly brushed past his body and exploded behind him.

Following the green wisps of smoke that rose, there was a huge hole that had appeared behind Yue Zhong and the strange green smoke continued rising from the mini crater.

The green glob of slime was a killing move of the Type 2 Black Fishes, just one of it was enough to thoroughly destroy an Infantry Fighting Vehicle. Back when SY County had assigned experts to try and hunt the Mutant Beasts in the waters, a few of the experts had perished and 5 Infantry Fighting Vehicles were destroyed by that green glob of slime.

Precisely because of the existence of these overpowered Type 2 Black Fishes, SY County stopped sending experts to come and hunt the Mutant Beasts of the river. The price to pay was too steep, and

one of the top experts of the military had died in one stroke by that green glob of slime shot out by the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

Yue Zhong's body flashed about, as he continuously dodged the sticky green globs, as each of them landed and burst behind him, creating many big holes through its corrosiveness.

"Damn it!! I have to resort to that!!" Yue Zhong was pressured to constantly evade. He continued to run as he looked towards the 2 Type 2 Black Fish crawling crazily towards Xinglong Street and gritted his teeth, before whistling towards the sky.

After that shrill whistle from Yue Zhong, a huge green shadow shot downwards from the skies, and within a few breaths it had arrived at the battlefield.

"What is that??"

"Type 2 Green Eagle!!"

"How could there be such a monster here!?!"

"....."

A number of the power factions within SY County saw the huge Green Eagle standing with a wingspan of over 70m blocking out the sun. Its massive body was covered entirely in green feathers, and their expressions changed, as they all scurried for cover.

The airborne Mutant Beasts were absolutely the most fearsome. This was because they came and went like the wind, and were usually fast. The moment they attacked, even Agility-based Evolvers would find it hard to escape their clutches.

SY County had its air defence mechanisms in place, however they were heavily concentrated at the government areas as well as important military camps. As long as the swift Type 2 Green Eagle did not approach those areas, it would not attract the fire from those defence mechanisms.

Even the smaller power factions within SY County did not dare

provoke the mighty Type 2 Mutants Beasts in the air. Just a single one of them could cause the annihilation of over a hundred people easily. They had no choice but to hide in their houses, and pray that the Type 2 Mutant Green Eagle would eat its fill and be on its way.

In front of the frightened gazes of the survivors in SY County, the Type 2 Mutant Green Eagle sped down from the sky as it broke the sound barrier, arriving at the riverbank by Xinglong Street. It shot down like a flashing blade, and used those massive claws to penetrate the tough scales of one of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish with a "CRUNCH", piercing its brain ruthlessly.

The Type 2 Mutant Green Eagle flapped its mighty wings and a huge gust of wind was created, as it lifted the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish weighing over 100 tonnes into the skies.

Ulamog:Greenie! I choose you! Gust Attack!

"Great job! Greenie!" Yue Zhong eyed the Type 2 Mutant Green Eagle, and his eyes lit up in delight. This Type 2 Mutant Green Eagle was precisely the beast he had tamed using his Tamer Skill.

After feeding it with the huge amount of Mutant Beast meat as well as nuclei from the ordinary Mutant Beasts and 2 from the Type 2 Water Snake and Type 2 Black Scaled Boar, Greenie had evolved into a Level 60 Type 2 Mutant Green Eagle.

After Greenie had successfully evolved into a Type 2 Mutant Beast, it had become one of Yue Zhong's hidden trump cards. Obviously, it was the source of his confidence in dealing with the riverbank issue.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish struggled incessantly by twisting its gargantuan body and trying to escape Greenie's clutches. But it was all to no avail. However, as it was so massive that each time it struggled, it actually caused Greenie to wobble in mid-air. The Evolved Greenie maintained its ascension stubbornly.

Greenie flew to an altitude of more than 200m, and then it released its grip.

On the other side, the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish that was pierced by Yue Zhong's Devil Flame Spear took its last breath, and laid there lifeless.

"Congratulations, you have reached Level 43 and gained 2 attribute points to be allocated!"

"Congratulations, you have reached Level 44 and gained 2 attribute points to be allocated!"

Following the sounds of notification, Yue Zhong had reached Level 44 in a stroke, and he swiftly made his decision, allocating all 4 points into Agility, raising it to 84 points.

Even without activating any skills, he was on average faster than a normal person by 8 times. So the moment he moved, he was as swift as the wind and any martial arts practitioner might not be able to land a blow on him easily.

When the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish died, a blue treasure box and skill book appeared by its body.

Yue Zhong reacted quickly, grabbing the items and immediately opened up the treasure box.

Ulamog: It's a Brick! By embarking on the Dao of the Brick, Excuses now abound to turn this into a xianxia! Sorry~ I'll shut up now

"Level 4 Treasure: Black-Tooth Blade! This is a treasure blade with an incomparable sharpness. Any Level 3 God and Devil System weapon that is struck by it will be instantly broken."

"Level 4 skill book: Type 2 Devil Flame. Rank-Up book for Devil Flame. To learn this skill, the user must have enhanced Devil Flame thrice, and 2 free Skill Points."

"What a great find!!" Yue Zhong looked at the Type 2 Devil Flame

Book, and he was overjoyed.

With this Type 2 Devil Flame Skill, once he had enough Skill Points, he could immediately learn it! The prerequisites to learning it were harsh, but likewise, its power was terrifying.

Currently, the strongest weapon Yue Zhong had against most of the Mutant Beasts was his Devil Flame. Obtaining this Type 2 Devil Flame book gave him the direction to focus on his Devil Flame instead of other skills.

Yue Zhong equipped the new Black-Tooth Blade that didn't seem too different from a Tang Replica Sword, (except that it was 2m in length) and rushed towards the remaining 2 Mutant Black Fishes.

As Yue Zhong's speed was incredibly fast and he quickly caught up to an Elite Mutant Black Fish along the way, and he waved his Black-Tooth Blade in attack.

As he attacked he swung down on its head, immediately slashing a gaping wound and neatly partitioning its brain in two crossways.

After its brain was sliced in twain, the Elite Mutant Black Fish struggled a while, before inevitably slumping lifelessly to the ground.

"So sharp!!" he gasped. Yue Zhong saw that the Elite Mutant Black Fish was taken out in just a single stroke, and his eyes flashed with excitement.

A good weapon could increase the battle prowess of a fighter by leaps and bounds. After obtaining this Level 4 Black-Tooth Blade, killing ordinary Mutant Beasts was as easy as chopping vegetables. However, dealing with the Type 2 Mutant Beasts required more than that.

Yue Zhong dashed about like lightning, with each flash of his blade, an Elite Mutant Black Fish would meet its end.

If it were in the water, Yue Zhong might not even be able to handle a single Elite Mutant Black Fish. However, since they came

on land, their speed was slower than that in water by several times. After all they were aquatic lifeforms and could take advantage of their terrain to terrorize humans. However, facing experts like Yue Zhong's Special Combat force, they were helpless.

Only the 2 Type 2 Mutant Black Fish continued to move towards Xinglong Street like unstoppable tanks. They wanted to have a feast once they broke through and kill all those who hurt their comrades.

The Special Combat forces evaded the paths of the 2 Type 2 Black Fishes, instead they dispersed to kill those Black Fishes that landed in the trenches and were not yet dead.

Many of the Black Fishes that landed in the traps that Yue Zhong had set, did not die immediately, and hence the Special Combat forces had to ensure their immediate deaths.

Yao Yao, the Agility-based Evolver, was currently wielding a Dark Magic Blade, and weaving in and out of the swarm of Mutant Black Fishes, hacking and slashing her way through. With each level up she was constantly gaining enhancements.

This type of massive invasion from the Mutant Beasts was a rare occurrence, and many of the Special Combat soldiers took the opportunity to gain experience and enhancements.

Under the frenzied killing by the Special Combat Forces as well as the effectiveness of the traps, before the 2 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes even reached Xinglong Street, over 50-60 of the other Black Fishes had already died to the traps or were killed.

From the skies, Greenie flew down swiftly once again, its huge claws ruthlessly grabbing one of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes, and flew once again towards the skies.

At this time, the other Type 2 Mutant Black Fish opened its mouth, and a huge green glob of slime shot towards Greenie.

As a Type 2 Mutant Beast itself, Greenie had an advanced

perception of danger as well. It was immediately forced to release its grip on the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish as it shot upwards, dodging the green glob of slime by a narrow breadth.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish that escaped Greenie's clutches lifted its head, and shot multiple green globs at Greenie, only to see them rising and falling back to the ground after missing Greenie.

When the green globs missed and landed, they landed in Xinglong street itself, those that landed on buildings, immediately caused huge holes to appear through corrosion.

Upon landing on a person's body, the person would dissolve and turn into a puddle! Although Yue Zhong had arranged for a large number of the survivors to leave and avoid the danger, there were some stubborn fools who refused to leave. Yue Zhong could not force them as well, hence when the green globs landed on some of these poor souls, they were immediately dissolved.



# Chapter 278: Mutant Crab Horde

---

Upon seeing this horrendous scene, the stubborn householders immediately began to escape from Xinglong Street one by one, crazily fleeing towards other places. They even left all their personal property behind!

Yue Zhong quickly caught up to the two Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes that had been impeded by Little Greenie and he immediately retrieved a Type PF98 120mm Anti-tank Rocket Launcher, pulling the trigger after aiming at one of the fishes.

With a blazing flash, a rocket bombarded the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish' head, directly blowing out a large hole with fresh blood dripping out. It immediately began to writhe about in a frenzy, struggling on the ground with all its might.

With Yue Zhong's power, dealing with a beast as such was already very strenuous-his energy consumption was huge. He could thus only make use of a slaughter weapon like the Type PF98 120mm Anti-tank Rocket Launcher to deal with the Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes.

Until now, there still hadn't been many Mutant Beasts that were able to block the Type PF98 120mm Anti-tank Rocket Launcher's attacks. The only regrettable thing about using the rocket launcher to slaughter Mutant Beasts was that there was no way of gaining God and Devil System enhancements from this.

The other Type 2 Mutant Black Fish was enraged and as it opened its huge mouth and shot green balls of slimy mucus at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's body flitted, as he dodged the incoming projectiles continuously.

Taking advantage of the scuffle between that Type 2 Mutant Black Fish and Yue Zhong, Greenie flapped its wings and shot down from the skies opening its huge talons in attack.

It grabbed the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish by its head and directly rushed back towards the skies. After ascending to an altitude of more than 200m in a moment, it released its grip.

The Type 2 Mutant Black Fish landed on the ground with such an impact, that its brain was instantly pulverised by its own weight, after thrashing about for a few moments, it slumped lifelessly to the ground.

After the 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes were dead, the battle was decided.

Near the riverbank, after expending a month's worth of time with the efforts of over 13,000 people, the trenches were filled with the numerous remaining ordinary Mutant Black Fishes. They were lured there craftily by Yue Zhong's Special Combat forces. They then proceeded to finish the monsters off.

Ji Qingwu, Yao Yao, Zhuo Yatong , Gu Zhixing and Cheng Yu wasted no time, and hunted the Mutant Black Fishes. Thoroughly wiping them out was only a matter of time.

Yue Zhong held his Black-Tooth Blade, as he observed the surroundings, and didn't join in. He had reached a high level in terms of enhancements, and killing the ordinary Mutant Beasts were not very beneficial to him. Only by hunting and killing Type 2 Mutant Beasts could he level up faster.

With the passing of time, one by one, all the Mutant Black Fishes were finally killed off and the entire place was filled with a fishy smell as well as the smell of blood.

After determining that the battle was over, Yue Zhong went over to the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish that he killed. Next he used the Black-Tooth Blade to cut open its head and began burrowing his body wholly into its massive entirety, retrieving the red blood essence and white nuclei from the brain as he always did.

When he burrowed out from the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish body,

he had a huge change in expression.

He discovered that near the riverbank, numerous huge crabs, each the size of a human face as well as a pair of huge thick claws, were crawling up from the water.

"Level 13 Mutant Beast: Mutant Crab! An extremely ferocious horde. When they're together, they are the nightmare of many creatures."

The Mutant Crabs were only Level 13 individually, but their horde numbered above tens of thousands. They were clustered together like a wave that slowly encroached upon the shore. When they crawled up the carcasses of the Mutant Black Fishes near the riverbank, they would use their huge pincers to pinch and cut up the bodies.

Yue Zhong looked at the sea of Mutant Crabs that were clustered together densely like ants and he immediately shouted into the walkie talkie: "Disperse!! All soldiers from the Special Combat Force disperse right now!! Chen Shitou, activate the 8th Battalion!!"

These Mutant Crabs had low levels, and if they numbered in the thousands, Yue Zhong would not be too worried. However, it was way over tens of thousands, even his Special Combat Forces would not be able to deal with being overrun by these critters.

Ji Qingwu glanced at the concentrated horde, and gave an order to Yao Yao and Cheng Yu: "Yao Yao!! Cheng Yu!! Both of you go to the front lines and get as many blood essences as you can! The rest of you, after you have retrieved the blood essence from the Mutant Beasts in front of you, immediately fall back to Xinglong Street."

Yao Yao, Cheng Yu and Ji Qingwu had always favoured the strengthening of their Agility through their enhancements, and had the confidence to escape from the horde of Mutant Crabs if need be.

Upon receiving Ji Qingwu's and Yue Zhong's orders, the Special Combat forces swiftly pried open the heads of the Mutant Black Fishes, and dug out many of the blood essences, before striding back towards Xinglong Street.

Every single soldier of the Special Combat Force could easily deal with 10 of these Mutant Crabs, however, the horde was way more than they could handle, thus they could only retreat. Otherwise, if they were trapped in the midst, they would only end up in a fight to the death.

At the riverbank, the Mutant Crabs were currently swarming over the dead carcasses of the Mutant Black Fishes, using their sharp claws to dismember the bodies near effortlessly.

The entire body of these Mutant Black Fishes were treasures to Yue Zhong, especially the 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes. Their blood essences and nuclei were even more precious, Yue Zhong was naturally unwilling to let the Mutant Crabs snatch his prize away. He waved his Black-Tooth Blade about and slashed at the Mutant Crabs in a frenzy, making his way to the remaining 3 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes' carcasses.

Greenie who was flying about in the sky also flew down, and gobbled up those Mutant Crabs. When they tried to crawl towards it, it would flap its wings, causing 2 huge gusts of wind to blow them away, allowing it to feed at leisure.

Yao Yao, Cheng Yu and Ji Qingwu continued slaughtering any Mutant Crabs they came across, and swiftly moved to the carcasses of the Elite Mutant Black Fishes. As soon as they did they pried open the heads, and retrieved the blood essence and nuclei.

The total number of Mutant Crabs who were climbing upshore numbered over 30,000 and out of which, 10,000 plus of them were attracted to the dead carcasses of the Mutant Black Fishes, and were dismembering and gorging on the meat in a frenzy. The remaining ones were making their way towards Xinglong Street.

Chen Shitou eyed the horde crawling towards Xinglong Street and hollered at the soldiers of the newly formed 8th Battalion: "Open fire!! Kill these Mutant Crabs! Tonight, we'll feast on steamed crabs!! Whoever kill more gets to eat more!!"

"I want to eat 3!!"

"I want to eat 2!!"

"....."

Following the excited hollers, the new soldiers of the 8th Battalion raised their guns and started firing at will.

Although the Mutant Crabs had levels beyond normal zombies, from the exterior, they did not seem as fearsome as the zombies. While they had a lot in numbers, in the eyes of the soldiers of the 8th Battalion, these Mutant Crabs were all juicy meals. They were simply not afraid of these crabs.

As the bullets rained on the Mutant Crabs, many of them would be riddled with bullets. While their horde gave off a huge pressure, since they were on land their capabilities were reduced by over 50%, and the hail of bullets left little to chance, causing many of the Mutant Crabs to be killed.

In order to deal with the possible scenario of a horde, Yue Zhong had long arranged for over 20 Type 56 light machine gun as well as 50 Type 56 heavy machine guns to be transferred from Ning Guang County.

Facing the imminent assault of the horde of Mutant Crabs, the Type 56 heavy machine guns opened fire, spraying a fearsome line of bullets. This fire caused a concentrated rain of bullets to fall on the densely clustered horde of Mutant Crabs.

The soldiers of the 8th Battalion were also currently using their .03 rifles and firing wildly at the Mutant Crabs, picking off the critters one by one.

If it were humans facing these attacks, they would definitely lose

all morale and retreat, however these less intelligent Mutant Beasts only braced the assault and continued marching on towards Xinglong Street.

At this time, the experts from the Special Combat Force as well as the close quarter combat specialists from the 8th Battalion stepped up to engage the Mutant Crabs that had breached the line of defence.

Upon engaging in battle with these Mutant Crabs, the soldiers understood why these were Level 13 creatures. Although they were not extremely fast, their defences were super tough, and those soldiers who had not undergone enhancement could not even break past their shells even when wielding the Tang Replica Swords. It took those with Strength above 20 points to be able to break their shells open. Furthermore, these Mutant Crabs had great strength of their own, their claws could dismember the scales of the Mutant Black Fishes that were Level 30, if a normal person got their own legs caught within the claws, it would immediately be clamped off.

After a short battle, Yue Zhong's 8th Battalion had already suffered 6 casualties who lost their legs. As soon as they fell, the Mutant Crabs climbed over them and clamped their heads off.

Seeing the horde of Mutant Crabs coming in like a wave, the warriors of the 8th Battalion switched to using grenades.

Ulamog:Thou shalt throw thine Holy Hand Grenade and thy Enemy shalt Bloweth Uppeth.

The which rained down amidst the horde of Mutant Crabs, caused those critters to be blasted, easing the overall pressure on Xinglong Street.

However, the numbers of the Mutant Crabs were simply too many, and those using grenades and guns could not block the onslaught of those Mutant Crabs forever. As time ticked by, the casualties on Yue Zhong side was starting to pile up.

"Time to feast on crabs!!"

Right at this time, over a hundred survivors wielding shovels, sticks, baseball bats and large hammers charged into the battlefield, using their weapons to attack the Mutant Crabs wildly.

Under the frenzied assault of the survivors, 40 of the Mutant Crabs had their shells forcefully smashed and died. After killing those 40 Mutant Crabs, the survivors dragged the bodies of the dead Mutant Crabs and left the battlefield in high spirits.

As that team of survivors left, another team of red-eyed survivors rushed forward in Guerilla Warfare, waving their crude weapons to catch those delicious Mutant Crabs.

## Chapter 279: Crabbing Team

---

When those survivors joined in the crabbing with fanaticism, the pressure on Yue Zhong's forces lessened.

"Who are these people?" Chen Shitou saw different groups of survivors joining in the fray his eyes flashing with suspicion as he asked.

Chen Shitou's second-in-command Chen Yu reported back: "I've checked! These people are the crabbing team assigned by Miss Tai Yiyan!!"

Tai Yiyan stood atop a platform as she observed the 10,000 survivors below, as her clear voice rang out: "Remember this! Each time you head out to catch the crabs, you can only go in a group, and each group consists of a hundred people maximum!"

"Each team can only catch 40 crabs, and after passing 4 to me, the rest can be shared amongst yourselves. If you dare take more, there won't be another opportunity like this for you in the future! Whoever wants to catch crabs, come and report your name to me! Form your teams! Get in position!"

"I want to eat crabs!!!"

"Me too!!"

"....."

Under the instigation and motivation from Tai Yiyan, the 10,000 survivors were swept along with hungry passion, and shouted out at the top of their voices. At the same time, many of them got into orderly groups and had sent representatives to report their names, awaiting their turns to go catch the Mutant Crabs.

Working with Yue Zhong, the survivors had learnt that Yue Zhong prioritized discipline. Those who did not behave or acted out of line were either beaten, or immediately kicked out from the team. Therefore, they learnt to act with discipline, and were



incredibly orderly.

Tai Yiyan saw the 10,000 survivors lining up in such a fashion and entering Xinglong street to capture the Mutant Crabs, and her eyes flashed with a glint of satisfaction.

If those survivors were made to kill zombies, they definitely wouldn't dare go. However, if they were sent to go crabbing, even if they had to catch crabs the sizes of washbowls, those starved survivors would still throw themselves at the crabs without any hesitation.

Tai Yiyan hadn't actually organised too many people to enter Xinglong Street at once. On the one hand, Xinglong Street couldn't hold that many people, whilst on the other hand, it was to let those survivors know that it was a very rare opportunity. It would make them long for the opportunity of crabbing, and so when it came to their turn to go crabbing, they would put in much more effort.

It wasn't long before teams of survivors began to walk out of Xinglong Street one by one. The numerous washbowl-sized crabs that they carried made the other survivors' eyes all turn red. That was quite a few kilograms' worth of meat, perhaps even a dozen. This made them long for the opportunity to catch the washbowl-sized crabs even more.

Teams of survivors began to frantically rush into Xinglong Street under Tai Yiyan's watch one after another. They crazily captured the crabs that had broken into Xinglong Street in their hungry frenzy. Swinging all manner of makeshift weapons, they killed the crabs one by one before snatching them away.

Under the fanatic energy of the survivors, the pressure on Chen Shitou and his team was reduced by a lot, and the casualty rate was decreased as well.

They only had to open fire and shoot at the Mutant Crabs, while those Mutant Crabs which broke through and entered Xinglong Street were immediately killed by the Special Combat forces, as

well as the crabbing team from Tai Yiyan, and the experts in the 8th Battalion.

Under the passionate help of the crabbing teams, the situation in Xinglong Street was stabilized. Although the firepower that Yue Zhong obtained from the huge armory could not compare with the Mechanized Infantry Brigade, it won due to its sheer amount, and was enough for the 8th Battalion to equip and utilize in just such a scenario.

On the other side, by the riverbank, Yue Zhong had finished digging out the blood essences and nuclei from the 4 Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes. He saw the densely packed Mutant Crabs around the area, and he frowned. They had devoured the many Mutant Black Fishes that he had painstakingly killed.

The number of the Mutant Crabs was truly unbelievable: even after Yue Zhong killed a few tens of them in a few moves, the total number did not seem to have shrunk. He could only defend the carcass of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish near him, not allowing the Mutant Crabs to devour it.

Little Greenie also protected the carcass of the other Type 2 Mutant Black Fish under Yue Zhong's command: after all, it was already a Type 2 Mutant Beast by now, one that was taller than Yue Zhong by a dozen times. A casual swipe from one of its wings could create a hurricane-like outburst that could blow the Mutant Crabs away. Its defence was thorough.

Right when the crowd of survivors was in a deadlock with the crab horde◆◆ the waters of the river churned again, as a whole lot of critters the size of footballs and claws of about 20mm came up ashore.

Following the Mutant Crabs, were Mutant Crayfish. There were even 60 Elite Mutant Crayfishes of 1m height and 12 to 13m in length crawling behind.

"Level 10 Mutant Beast: Mutant Crayfish!"

"Level 30 Mutant Beast: Elite Mutant Crayfish!"

"Damn it! Are you not really gonna let up?!" Yue Zhong saw the countless Mutant Crayfishes crawling up from the riverbank and he could not help but exclaim in desperation.

The Mutant Crab horde was already enough to cause a headache, now these countless Mutant Crayfishes had just joined in the fray. Unless he arranged for the artillery or armored team to come, it would be nearly impossible to deal with these 2 Mutant Beasts horde.

Just then, the moment the Mutant Crayfish came ashore, those Mutant Crabs suddenly changed direction and crawled towards the Mutant Crayfishes, and used their claws and attacked the Mutant Crayfishes viciously. The smaller Mutant Crayfishes were dismembered one by one by the Mutant Crabs.

Those Mutant Crayfish did not remain impassive either. They used their similarly large pincers to counterattack, and some of the Mutant Crabs were likewise clamped clean in two by the Mutant Crayfishes.

The 60 Elite Mutant Crayfishes were like 60 mini tanks, directly rushing headlong into the horde of Mutant Crabs, using their massive claws to snap about, each attack dismembering 2 Mutant Crabs. Their shells were even tougher than the Level 30 Mutant Blackfish scales, and those Mutant Crabs found it hard to break past their shells. This was why they could proceed forwards within the clash unharmed.

The horde of Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfishes were engaging in an all-out slaughter amongst themselves, and Yue Zhong watched on with delight. He hoped that they would kill each other off.

After the two sides were killing each other for a while, the waters again churned and frothed. Shortly, 50 Elite Mutant Crabs that towered above 3m tall crawled out from the water.

"Level 35 Mutant Beast: Elite Mutant Crab!"

The moment the 50 Elite Mutant Crabs appeared, they instantly clashed furiously with the 60 Elite Mutant Crayfishes. Amidst the slaughter, the victors would gobble up the blood essence from the losers and proceeded to level and enhance themselves.

Those Level 40 and under Mutant Beasts had no nuclei, their bodies, flesh and blood essence were the only things that provided enhancement. Mutant Beasts above Level 40 as well as variations like the Elites and Type 2s would generate a nuclei. Swallowing the nuclei was the most beneficial form of enhancement and evolution. This was precisely why the beasts were so bloodthirsty, the appeal of evolution was too attractive.

The battles between the 2 hordes near the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish's carcass were the most brutal. Every few seconds, there would be one or 2 Elite Mutant Beasts being clamped in two by the opposing horde, their limbs dismembered and bodily fluids spraying everywhere.

Yue Zhong hid at a side and observed the all-out slaughter between the 2 hordes. It must be said that he was enjoying the spectacle. Any Mutant Crab or Mutant Crayfish that got too close to him would be immediately killed.

These low-level critters could not pose a threat to the heavily armed Yue Zhong.

The Encompassing Bone Armor skill reached its limit, and after detaching, White Bones stood by Yue Zhong's side and waved its huge axe about, chopping any Mutant Crab or Crayfish that got too close.

White Bone's continuous slaughter for just a few moments already resulted in the deaths of a few dozens of the Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong was seated atop the head of the Mutant Black Fish, drinking his Divine Spring Tea. It could add a little Spirit upon

drinking it for the first time, and if the user had expended a huge amount of Spirit prior to drinking it, it could replenish Spirit quickly.

The only downside to it was that the Divine Spring Tea could cause people to become dizzy, and Yue Zhong was actually drinking in right smack in the middle of danger! It was almost like he was courting death!

However, Yue Zhong's Vitality was indeed high, the incapacitating effects of the tea was rather short lived for him. That was why he dared to drink the Divine Spring Tea to replenish his Spirit even in the midst of danger.

Just as Yue Zhong was looking on expectantly at the slaughter between the 2 hordes, the waters of the river churned again and this time, a huge Mutant Crayfish towering over 3m, and a length of over 40m came out.

[TN: HOW BIG IS THIS DAMNED RIVER?!] Ulamog: it's big like the Mississippi obvo....

50m away from the appearance of that huge Mutant Crayfish, a huge Mutant Crab of over 6m and pincers of more than 5m also broke through the water surface.

"Level 50 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant Crayfish!"

"Level 53 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant Crab!"

The moment the 2 monstrous beasts appeared, those critters of the hordes that were clashing seemed to have receive some order, and immediately ceased all entanglement.

At the same time, a huge wave rippled out from the middle of the river, a huge crocodile-like head emerged, it's body covered entirely with scales, its tail serrated, its height exceeding 8m, as if a huge tower had emerged out from the lake.

"Level 66 Mutant Beast: Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle! A huge turtle that is extremely ferocious."

Ulamog: The Patriarch Has arrived!

The moment the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle arrived, the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish and Type 2 Mutant Crab went over to their smaller comrades and they all stood obediently to the side. A huge oppressive aura was overflowing from the body of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle.

The Type 2 Mutant Beasts were after all strong and fearsome beasts. This Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle was a peak existence amongst the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, and could easily kill the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish and Type 2 Mutant Crab.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle had an extremely cold gaze as it emitted a huge sound.

The Type 2 Mutant Crayfish, and Type 2 Mutant Crab responded with their own calls.

After the sound rang out, the hordes of Mutant Crayfish and Mutant Crabs ceased all fighting and started making their way towards Xing long Street.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle brought its two smaller brothers as they walked towards the direction of Xinglong Street.

"Not good!! If I don't take care these 3 huge fellows, I'm afraid we can't hold out anymore!!" Yue Zhong looked at the horde of Mutant Sea Creatures, and his eyes flashed with extreme worry.

# Chapter 280: Taming The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle!

---

The total number of Mutant Crayfishes and Mutant Crabs combined together exceeded over 70,000, while Yue Zhong's forces standing guard at Xinglong Street were only about 500 people.

If those 2 hordes joined forces and attacked Yue Zhong's subordinates, it would almost be impossible to resist. The only consolation was that after obtaining the huge armory of weapons, Yue Zhong's forces had gained a huge amount of ammo and it could be utilized freely here.

When the 3 Type 2 Mutant Beasts had come upshore about 60m from the waters, Yue Zhong who had buried himself inside the body of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish jumped out, and swiftly took out his PF98 anti-tank rocket and fired a shot at the weakest-looking Type 2 Mutant Crayfish.

With a flash of flame, the rocket shot towards the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish and exploded on its body.

The explosion rang out loudly, and bits of shell and flesh were blasted everywhere, causing a huge wound on the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish's body as it was almost blasted to smithereens.

However, the Crayfish was after all known for its extremely hard shell. Even after the rocket had successfully destroyed its shell, it was not enough to destroy its body.

Receiving such a grievous wound, the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish immediately struggled in agony, and twisted its body about. Its writhing about caused the surrounding dust to be kicked up, as it accidentally fell into one of the trenches and was pierced in its wound by the numerous sharp steel spikes within, adding on to its misery and pain.

Yue Zhong's attack had revealed his position, and the Type 2

Mutant Snapping Turtle and Type 2 Crab turned their heads towards him.

Yue Zhong didn't dare delay too much, as he switched out another PF98 and fired a shot at the Type 2 Mutant Crab.

With a flash, the anti-tank missile shot towards and exploded violently on the Type 2 Mutant Crab's shell, causing a huge hole to be blasted in the Type 2 Mutant Crab's shell and body as well, and green fluid started flowing out from the Type 2 Mutant Crab.

The Mutant Crab started struggling in its incomparable pain, and it violently moved about, before also falling into another huge trench Yue Zhong had ordered dug. It flipped and continued scurrying.

Just as Yue Zhong wanted to swap out for another PF98, a huge sense of danger welled up in his heart, and he immediately activated his Shadow Steps Skill, dodging to the side in a frenzy.

An extremely sharp ice spear pierced through the space and penetrated Yue Zhong above his left abdomen, across his shoulder. Breaking a hole in his Bone Encompassing Armor, the ice spear brushed past, almost penetrating his body.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly, only to see the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle summoning a huge layer of ice around it, causing its entire body to be submerged in a layer of thick ice, as though it had become a mountain of ice.

With just a thought, long spears would be conjured out of thin air, and shot towards Yue Zhong like missiles. Ice control was the special ability belonging to its species, and after seeing Yue Zhong ruthlessly attacking the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish and Type 2 Mutant Crab, it brought out its own abilities as well.

Right at this time, Greenie shot down from the sky like a lightning bolt, its talons outstretched, and it grabbed the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish, and carried it as it rushed towards the skies.



The weight of the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish could not compare to the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish, and Greenie easily reached a high altitude, before flinging the beast downwards.

When the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish fell from the sky and landed viciously on the ground, it was killed by the impact.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle continued its advance towards Yue Zhong like an ice mountain, continuously firing the ice spears at him.

Facing the barrage of attacks from the Mutant Beast, Yue Zhong flitted about, evading the attacks. Fortunately his Agility was high enough, and he somehow managed to dodge most of the attacks. If he was hit by even one of them, he would most likely be penetrated instantly by 10 ice spears and be made into a corpse.

All of a sudden, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle activated its ability, and 30 ice spears shot out from the ice mountain, aiming for Yue Zhong. The many spears locked down any space that he could possibly escape to. It had cunningly forced Yue Zhong to a location with no cover, before activating its killing move.

Yue Zhong's expression changed, and he immediately rolled towards a huge trench. The sharp steel beams in the trench pierced him, but fortunately for the Bone Encompassing Armor, the sharp steel beams could not do any damage to him.

The 30 ice spears lost their target, passing through the air and striking the ground, before the ground became a patch of ice, causing the surround temperature to drop by 1 or 2 degrees.

Yue Zhong climbed up swiftly from the trench, and hoisting the PF98 he fired another shot at the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle.

With a flash, the rocket shot towards the Mutant Beast explosively.

Just after Yue Zhong pulled the trigger, a thick wall of ice appeared out of thin air in front of the Mutant Beast.

With a 'bang!', the rocket exploded, causing a large hole to appear in the wall of ice. Yet it did not do a single thing to the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle.

"What an overpowered Mutant Beast!!" Yue Zhong exclaimed as he took a look at the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, not believing his eyes. He had used the PF98 Anti-Tank missiles on so many Type 2 Mutant Beasts, but this was the first time one had actually managed to defend against it.

After blocking the impact and explosion from the PF98 120mm round, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle fired its ice spears at Yue Zhong. While it attacked it continued moving towards him with big steps, it wanted to thoroughly squash this small enemy. It surprisingly felt a sense of danger from this little bug.

Yue Zhong dodged into one of the trenches, and evaded the assault of the various ice spears, before swiftly swapping in another rocket with his PF98. He jumped out in a flash, and rolled right in front of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle and fired the anti-tank rocket at point black range.

With a flash, the anti-tank missile immediately exploded in the face of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, causing the protective layer of ice to be shattered, revealing its shell. However, in just a blink of an eye, the ice layer was immediately reformed.

The ice control ability of this Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle was truly overpowered, even stronger than the natural defence of most Type 3 Mutant Beasts. Its only weakness was that the movement on land was reduced, and the attacking speed was affected as well. However, it allowed this Type 2 Mutant Beast to be a true tyrant amongst its peers.

"I don't believe that there is no end to your ice ability!!" Yue Zhong stared at the Mutant Beast, while he gritted his teeth and fired another shot towards the head of the Mutant Snapping Turtle.

The Mutant Snapping Turtle saw the incoming rocket aimed at its head, it seemed to cease all other movement, and expended its ice control ability to form an ice wall in front of it.

With another explosion, the ice wall faced a similar fate as the previous one, and Yue Zhong's attack was contained easily.

It was just that Yue Zhong did not show any signs of stopping, instead, he continued to fire his PF98 at the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle.

Under the pressure of the rockets, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle had no choice but to continue conjuring the ice wall to stop the attacks.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle could withstand the anti-tank rockets of Yue Zhong, at the cost of a huge expenditure of its Spirit and natural ability to control ice after it had evolved to a Type 2 Beast. Its ultimate defence would not be able to withstand Yue Zhong's attacks for long.

Yue Zhong swiftly swapped out the rockets of the PF98 continuously and did not let up, firing multiple rockets at the Mutant Beast and slowly wearing down its ice ability.

On the other side, after dealing with the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish, Greenie flapped its wings and shot towards the Type 2 Mutant Crab, grabbing it and flying to the skies before flinging it the same way it did with the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish.

Upon forcefully crashing onto the ground, it was killed by the impact, even its incredibly hard shell could not withstand the force and protect its life.

The moment the Type 2 Mutant Crayfish and Mutant Crab met their end, the smaller Mutant Crayfishes and Crabs had no way of maintaining the peace and went back slaughtering amongst themselves.

Near Xinglong Street, the horde of Mutant Crayfish, Mutant

Crabs and humans were engaged in a killing frenzy. However, when the 2 hordes attacked each other, the pressure on Yue Zhong's side was lessened by a great deal.

This made it so that they only had to deal with those Mutant Beasts that breached the defence and were intending to attack the humans. After which, they just had to watch the show and observe the 2 hordes killing each other.

Yue Zhong had fired a total of 22 rockets, almost exhausting his entire supply of anti-tank ammunition.

In Yue Zhong's storage ring, he had kept 30 loaded PF98 anti-tank rocket launchers, after firing the 30 of them, he had to reload them individually.

The PF98 was extremely tyrannical, useful and efficient when dealing with higher level zombies. Yue Zhong could not possibly keep all the PF98s with himself and without leaving for any of his troops. That way even if he was extremely well-prepared, his subordinates might meet an undeserving end without ample firepower.

Under Yue Zhong's constant onslaught, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle was forced to expend a lot of its ice control ability, and there was a dispirited look in its eyes. After blocking the latest rocket from Yue Zhong, it actually turned around and made its way back towards the river.

This type of high level Mutant Beasts possessed some intelligence, and knew that if it could not win, it would definitely retreat, instead of maintaining a futile resistance stupidly.

"Good chance!!" Yue Zhong saw the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle trying to escape towards the river, and his eyes flashed with delight, and let out a victorious roar.

From the sky, Greenie flew downwards like an arrow, its hook-like talons viciously aiming for the Type 2 Mutant Snapping

Turtle.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle could only stop in its tracks, and lifted its head, before controlling the ice layer around its head to form an ice spear to shoot at Greenie.

Greenie flapped its wings, and changed directions in mid-air, dodging the ice spear extremely easily. However, it was forced to stay at a distance because of the ice spear, and did not dare approach the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle. Instead, it circled in the air, exerting a pressure on the behemoth.

Yue Zhong's body flashed forward, in a short span of less than 10 seconds, he caught up with the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, shooting out a bone spear from his back, propelling him on to the turtle's back.

The moment he jumped on the back, he activated his Devil Flame, and a huge fiery ball of flame blossomed in his hands, exploding towards the head of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle.

Under the intense burning of the Devil Flame, the ice layer covering the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle started to melt.

The burning capabilities of fire was the best counter to ice. Of course, the prerequisite was that both must be of similar levels in terms of power. The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle had expended a lot of energy to defend against Yue Zhong's attacks earlier, now it's ice control ability was running out of power to stand against his Devil Flames.

When the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle noticed its ice layer melting, it immediately withdrew its head and limbs into its shell, controlling the remaining ice to seal up the holes in the shell.

Yue Zhong exerted all his strength to force the Devil Flame through the holes, melting the ice quickly.

The ice walls were constantly melted down and refrozen, but each time, the layer got thinner.

After about 10 secs of exposure, Yue Zhong's Devil Flame finally burned through the wall and made contact with the head of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle.

When it was touched by the scorching hot Devil Flame, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle immediately stuck out its limbs, and pushed with all its strength, rolling rapidly on the floor.

Yue Zhong landed on the ground after leaping off its back, while controlling the Devil Flame to continue assaulting the head of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle. In a flash of inspiration he activated his Tamer Technique and guided it towards the Mutant Beast.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle had its Ice Control ability worn down entirely by Yue Zhong, and was tormented by the Devil Flame that he used, the moment the Tamer Technique landed on its body, it barely reacted . A strange rune appeared on the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle's forehead, and gently entered its brain.

That rune entered in between the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle's brows, and Yue Zhong felt a strange sense of connection between himself and the beast form.

# Chapter 281: Huge Victory

---

Yue Zhong felt excited, he was initially worried that it would require more energy to try and tame the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, at the very least, he might have needed to try three times. He did not expect that he would be successful upon the first try.

Yue Zhong immediately stopped the burning of the Devil Flame. After all, it was a Mutant Beast under his control now, and he did not want to injure his pet.

The moment Yue Zhong ceased his Devil Flame, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle immediately crawled towards him.

It came to Yue Zhong and lowered its head, expressing subservience.

Yue Zhong took a look at the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, only to discover that its eyes were showing signs of exhaustion, as it had expended a huge part of its energy, to the point of injury.

The Black Fish's green slime projectile, as well as the ice mountain and ice wall skills of this Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle were the last resorts of such Mutant Beasts. However, activating them came at a huge price, after expending huge amounts of energy, they would become weak, therefore, unless they came across a powerful opponent, they would usually not resort to these moves.

As Yue Zhong had incapacitated the other Type 2 Mutant Beasts with his PF98, the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle had spared no effort to try and deal with him.

"Let's call you Turtle!!" Yue Zhong looked at his new pet that was the size of a bungalow, and proclaimed its name in an extremely satisfied manner. Yue Zhong had no talent in coining names. He liked it simple, so as long as he could say it easily, it would suffice.

The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle nodded its head, seemingly

accepting the name. After all, it possessed some intelligence, after being connected with Yue Zhong, it could understand a bit of his speech.

Yue Zhong looked at his new pet Turtle and his eyes flashed with excitement and joy, it was a Type 2 Mutant Beast, and extremely powerful. It could even block the power of PF98 anti-tank rounds. With this new Type 2 Mutant Beast, the river would become Yue Zhong's inexhaustible resource.

With Turtle's help, as long as Yue Zhong gave the command, the entire river channel would become Yue Zhong's fishing grounds. Similarly, with just an order, the entire channel could only allow fishing and no boats.

Yue Zhong looked at the exhaustion in Turtle's eyes, and immediately retrieved the 2 nuclei that he picked from the Type 2 Black Fishes.

When Turtle saw the 2 nuclei, its eyes brightened up, and stuck its tongue out, swallowing the 2 nuclei from the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish.

Yue Zhong had not discovered any use for the nuclei, it did not seem to have any effect on humans. However, it was different for Mutant Beasts. Greenie could evolve so quickly into a Type 2 Beast was precisely because Yue Zhong gave it plenty of nuclei to swallow, of which there were nuclei from the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Boar and Mutant Water Snake. That had hastened the evolution process.

After Turtle swallowed the 2 nuclei, its eyes seemed to shine with vigor, and its health started to regenerate quickly.

Yue Zhong saw that Turtle was recovering well, and jumped on top of Turtle and commanded: "Turtle, let's charge!! Take care of those guys!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's command, Turtle started to take huge steps



towards the battlefield of the Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfishes.

Turtle's speed was not extremely fast, but that was when compared to Mutant Beasts of the same level on land. It was after all a Type 2 Mutant Beast, its body massive, every step it took was like tens of steps taken by a human. Its ordinary movement could already match up to an Enhancer with 6 times the speed of a normal human. If it exerted its strength, it could reach up to speeds 9 times that of humans.

Turtle charged and crushed everything in its path, all the Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfish unfortunate enough to be in its path would become meat paste.

When those ordinary Mutant Crayfishes and Mutant Crabs lost their Type 2 leaders, they launched an assault on Turtle. However, while their claws were sharp, they could not do anything to Turtle's defence, since it was a Type 2 Mutant Beast.

"What monster is that!!"

"Heavens! There's such a monster!!"

The soldiers of the 8th Battalion who were guarding Xinglong Street noticed the building-like Turtle and their eyes were filled with shock. The size of the Mutant Beast was too shocking.

"Boss Yue!! It's Boss Yue!!"

"Commander Yue!! Goodness, it really is Commander Yue on top that Mutant beast!!"

"What?! He even managed to subdue such a beast??"

The soldiers of 8th Battalion and the Special Combat Force saw Yue Zhong on top of the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle, and their morale shot through the roof.

Countless shots were fired and bullets rained on the horde of Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfishes, riddling them with holes.

The Special Combat forces also rushed out to engage the Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfishes in battle, although the experience gained would not be too much, accumulating it all would still be beneficial.

Yue Zhong urged Turtle towards the Elite Mutant Crayfishes and Elite Mutant Crabs engaged in slaughter amongst themselves.

Turtle quickly reached their location, as it opened its huge mouth, and bit off the heads of the Elite Mutant Beasts, gobbling them up.

When the Elite Mutant Crayfishes and Elite Mutant Crabs saw that the tyrannical Turtle attacking them, they dispersed and scattered, each trying to make a run for it. These Elite Mutant Beasts possessed intelligence, and could sense the overbearing danger from the Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle. Without the adequate strength, they could not even muster the courage to face it.

When the Elite Mutant Beasts of both hordes started to scatter, it created confusion and chaos amongst the hordes. A huge number of the Mutant Beasts also made their way towards the river, escaping into the water.

"We won!!!"

"We won!!!"

Seeing the Elite Mutant Beasts retreating and escaping like a receding tidal wave, the entire Xinglong Street erupted in celebration.

Many of the soldiers of the 8th Battalion were elated, earlier when the 2 hordes had moved against them together, they were sure that they were going to die. Never did they imagine that the Mutant Beasts would suddenly fall apart, and escaped towards the river.

"Go back to the river!!" Yue Zhong patted Turtle's head, and gave

it an order.

Turtle nodded towards Yue Zhong, and lifted its massive body as it entered the waters.

After the huge victory, the entire stretch of land from Xinglong Street to the river was filled with corpses of Mutant Crayfishes, Mutant Crabs and Mutant Black Fishes.

Yue Zhong immediately ordered some troops to keep watch and sealed the place, not allowing any outsiders in.

This time, the huge number of Mutant Beasts that had launched an assault on them, resulted in the deaths of 9 soldiers from the 8th Battalion, and another 8 with injuries. However, Yue Zhong had gained a lot more.

Over ten thousand Mutant Crayfishes and Mutant Crabs had been beaten to death on the ground, on top of that, there were over a 100 Mutant Black Fishes as well as the bodies of 6 Type 2 Mutant Beasts.

The corpses were enough to provide a 1000 tonnes of food for Yue Zhong, furthermore, this was not normal meat. Instead, it was Mutant Beast meat, which was an incredible gift that helped nourish the bodies of normal people who ate it, especially those who had been tormented by hunger over an extended period of time, it was the best supplement for those people to recover.

The survivors that Yue Zhong had arranged to be sent out of Xinglong Street were brought back.

All the women and ladies were put to work, deshelling the Mutant Beasts and collecting their meat. After all, such a huge load of meat could not be eaten in a day, a huge portion of it would be converted to dried food, or canned food, otherwise most of it would start to decompose in a few days.

"Commander Yue!! I'm afraid we don't have enough manpower!" Da Gouzi observed the ongoing work, and reported to Yue Zhong.

Although Yue Zhong had deployed all available hands, for 8,000 people to handle 1000 tonne of Mutant Beast meat, everyone had to handle over a 100 jin of meat. Out of the 8,000 survivors, 3,000 were kids, and the responsibilities were too much for them to handle.

Yue Zhong directly commanded, "Go notify Tai Yiyan. Get her to bring 10,000 survivors to help deal with the meat. Get those who handle the 6 Type 2 Mutant Beasts to send the meat directly to the processing plant."

Yue Zhong had spent 50 tonnes of food to buy a processing plant from Wen Baoguo, as well as another 50 tonnes to purchase generators and fuel, to support the manufacturing of processed meat.

The meat of the Type 2 Mutant Beasts were exceptional treats that were hard to come by, as long as the weak survivors were to eat a few jins, they could recover their health quickly. If the soldiers who fought at the front lines continuously managed to eat the processed meat, it would help their recovery in battle.

The moment Tai Yiyan received Yue Zhong's orders, she delegated and deployed 10,000 survivors to join in the handling. Everyone near the riverbank was working hard, they were in high spirits, as they received news that there would be a feast that night. The anticipation of the tasty seafood in their hands fueled their drive in handling the meat.

# Chapter 282: Intel on the Horde of 1,000,000 Zombies!

---

Even Ji Qingwu and Zhuo Yatong, who were considered experts, were assigned to help cut up the hard shells of the Mutant Beasts. Yue Zhong even lent his Black-tooth Blade to Ji Qingwu to use.

The Level 4 Treasure Black-tooth Blade was incredibly sharp under the Blade Strengthening Skill of Ji Qingwu. Even the tough scales of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish that had withstood Yue Zhong's PF98 anti-tank rounds, were cleanly cut apart by Ji Qingwu, revealing the fresh fish flesh underneath.

Ulamog: say that 5 times fast. Fresh Fish Flesh...

The Type 2 Mutant Crayfish and Type 2 Mutant Crab had shells that were slightly tougher though. Even Ji Qingwu found it hard to cut apart their scales regardless of the combination of her skill and the Black-tooth Blade.

Zhuo Yatong however, had an idea. she wielded her mace that was over a hundred jin, lifting and swinging it downwards to shatter the shell into pieces. Doing this, she slowly broke them apart.

Under the joint efforts of over 18,000 people and by the time evening fell, the countless Mutant Beasts' carcasses near the river had been cleaned up. Only a huge mountain of bones from the Type 2 Mutant Black Fishes were left.

If it was just Yue Zhong alone, he would definitely have no way of settling the issue with the meat of the dead Mutant Beasts. However, what he could not accomplish on his own, 18,000 could easily accomplish it.

In the evening, the survivors under Yue Zhong's banner started cooking the seafood, every survivor of age received a jin of Mutant Black Fish meat, while the kids received half a jin of Mutant Black

Fish meat.

The Black Fish meat was absolutely fresh, and even tastier than the meat of the Black Fish prior to the apocalypse. The survivors sat together and enjoyed the fish soup while eating the fish meat, and everyone had satiated expressions on their faces.

They were extremely satisfied with their lives currently. As long as they did their work honestly, not only were they able to eat their fill, they could enjoy meat as well. At the same time, the territory under Yue Zhong was the best governed amongst the rest of the county.

If there was something they had to say they were unhappy about, it would be that there were too many rules. The slightest infringement of a law could result in whipping, but the main point was that after being whipped, the person would be chased out of the camp. Seeing those survivors who fell back into hard times the moment they were forced out, all the survivors under Yue Zhong's care were secretly alert, and constantly reminded themselves never to flout any rule.

White Bones walked to the huge pile of bones, and activated its Bone Manipulation Ability to absorb the bones into its body.

"Your Special Summon: White Bones, has gained an enhancement of 15 points to Endurance."

Yue Zhong was sitting in his own quarters and when he heard the sweet sound of a system notification, he was not distracted in the slightest. Instead he popped the 6 blood essences from the Type 2 Mutant Beasts into his mouth and swallowed.

The moment the 6 blood essences entered Yue Zhong's abdomen, they transformed into a warmth that surged throughout him, nourishing and enhancing his body continuously.

With the help of blood essences, every pore of Yue Zhong's body started oozing out black dirty blood, and soon he was covered

entirely in dark grime.

Ulamog: XianXia elements anyone?

After some time has passed, the effects of the 6 blood essences wore off, and Yue Zhong heard the familiar notification of his own enhancement: "Congratulations on gaining 40 Points in Vitality, and 10 Points in Endurance."

Due to his increased immunity to the essences, even after swallowing 6 blood essences he only gained 40 points in Vitality and 10 points in Endurance. The effects could not compare to the first time he consumed the first blood essence from the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Boar.

Additionally, Yue Zhong had been consuming so many blood essence that even the Type 2 Blood Essences were starting to lose their potency.

Yue Zhong opened his eyes and could feel the tremendous vitality surging within himself. He knew he had grown stronger yet again.

"What a stench!" Yue Zhong sniffed the pungent grime on him and frowned in disgust. He immediately got up and went to take a cold shower, cleaning himself up.

After his bath, Yue Zhong came to the dining hall. Right now, the dining hall was filled with many beautiful ladies.

Along the long dinner table, on the left, sat Wen Peishan, Tai Yiyan, Cheng Peipei, Zhou Yanxue, while Ji Qingwu, Zhuo Yatong, Yao Yao and Tong Xiaoyun sat on the right.

"What absolute beauties!!" Both parties were evaluating the other, and their eyes could not help but widened in shock. The women on both sides were thoroughly awed by each other.

[TN: I laughed out loud at this.]

Only Yao Yao that loli was still dressed in her military garb, and was glancing around with impatience. She sat restlessly in her seat

like a little monkey. No one dared to look at her.

In today's battle, the numerous Mutant Black Fishes that were felled by Yao Yao were above her in Enhancement Levels. Most importantly was that she was the top Agility expert within Yue Zhong's forces. In just terms of Agility, even Yue Zhong could not match Yao Yao. After all, he was a Spirit and Endurance Dual-attribute Evolver.

When Yue Zhong came to the main seat, he smiled at the ladies: "There's no need to wait for me. Go ahead and eat, don't stand on ceremony."

"I want to eat the claws of the crayfish!!!" Yao Yao immediately reached for the claws of one of the crayfish without reserve, and used her strength to crush the external shell, CRUNCH before digging into the sumptuous meat ravenously.

Yao Yao's somewhat child-like behaviour broke the awkward atmosphere and the ladies all started to help themselves to the food.

The dining table was truly laden with delicacies. There was Mutant Crayfish and Mutant Crab as well as huge slices of Type 2 Mutant Black Fish meat. Also there was Type 2 Mutant Crayfish claw meat as well as Type 2 Mutant Crab claw meat. It was incredibly tasty and luxurious in this age. The women could not stop once they started, and enjoyed the food tremendously.

"Congratulations on gaining 1 point in Strength!"

Tai Yiyan was enjoying a few mouthfuls of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish meat, when the notification sound rang out in her mind, and her expression was full of joy, and she immediately disregarded her etiquettes and continued to consume her meal in huge bites. She was after all a normal person and not an Enhancer. Therefore the meat of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish was extremely beneficial to her, allowing her to gain a point in Strength.



"Boss Yue!! Someone is requesting an audience!"

Right as the people in the dining hall were enjoying themselves, Zhang He walked in and reported to Yue Zhong. He had already become a member of Yue Zhong's Youth Corps, and was extremely loyal to Yue Zhong. Loyal even to the point of idolization. He was in charge of relaying messages to and from Yue Zhong, including his orders.

"Who?" Yue Zhong frowned, and asked in a low voice.

Zhang He replied: "She said she's called Shen Xue!!"

Yue Zhong immediately recalled the extremely beautiful and elegant, yet cold to the point of indifferent lady.

"Let her in!" Yue Zhong thought for awhile, before replying softly. He did not have a favourable impression towards Shen Xue and it was likely the same for her. However, he guessed that she must have something to discuss with him.

Under Zhang He's guidance, Shen Xue walked in with a proud gait.

Shen Xue eyed the 8 absolute beauties in the dining hall, and her gaze towards Yue Zhong increased in contempt and disgust: "I have something important to discuss with you, here's not the place."

Yue Zhong brought Shen Xue into a meeting room and immediately said, "What do you need! Just say it!"

Shen Xue directly replied: "I heard that you have taken care of a few Type 2 Mutant Beasts. I want to use 1 tonne of gold to purchase 30 tonnes of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat."

In SY County, they had also hunted down a Type 2 Mutant Beast before, but it was at the expense of 2 Infantry Fighting Vehicles, a tank, 3 Evolvers, 13 Enhancers. The top expert of SY County had also perished after being eaten by the Type 2 Mutant Beast.

However, the nourishing and beneficial properties of the meat

from a Type 2 Mutant Beast were discovered by the top brass of SY County and it became their privilege alone. Only a few top officials could enjoy it.

This time, upon hearing that Yue Zhong had killed a few of these Type 2 Mutant Beasts, Shen Xue had rushed over at the first minute.

Yue Zhong coldly gazed at Shen Xue: "No way! On account of Commander Shen, I can gift you with 20 jin of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat. As for the gold, keep it for your own use!"

Gold could move people's heart, even in SY County, gold was still used as a form of currency, to exchange for food. However, to Yue Zhong, gold was basically trash, it could not be eaten, nor used, and is useless, unless it was given free to him, otherwise he would not even want it. Initially he had agreed to exchange the food for gold was a form of expediency and convenience, now that he had the sufficient power, he naturally would not lower himself.

Shen Xue glared at him coldly: "I knew you wouldn't be willing! Why not we do it like this, I have an important piece of intel to exchange. A top-secret one."

Yue Zhong continued without batting an eyelid: "What intel?"

Shen Xue responded in an extremely serious manner:

"There is a horde of zombies that number around 1,000,000 that seems to be aiming for SY County and are currently moving here. Based on their sustained movement speed, within 20 days they would be here to attack!"

"Is this for real?!" Yue Zhong had a huge change in expression, as he bolted up and asked.

Initially at Qing Yuan County, the horde of 100,000 had already given Yue Zhong a headache, and he had suffered major losses.

Now that he was well prepared and had an army as well as the firepower to boot, he was not as apprehensive. He really wasn't,

but the figure this time was actually a million! That was a different story. It was 10 times larger than the previous time, if they really charged, it would be like an unstoppable ocean wave.

Shen Xue replied indifferently, "Definitely true, this was the result of drones that were sent out to collect info. Furthermore, we lost a total of 10 drones because of this."

Amongst the skies, while there were no zombies, there were Mutant Birds, and the drones that were sent out by the SY County's Army would definitely come across some Mutant Birds, and a number of them were destroyed.

Shen Xue looked at Yue Zhong and asked, "Is this piece of information worth 30 tonnes of Mutant Beast Meat?"

Yue Zhong replied heavily, "Yes!"

With this, Yue Zhong could go about preparing and preempting disaster. This way he didn't have to wait till the last moment and panic.

Ulamog:Dum Dum Dum....

# Chapter 283: Conditions for Deployment

---

Yue Zhong asked somewhat curiously, "What are the military's plans?"

A horde of over a million zombies, this was on a different scale compared to 100,000. The sheer number made Yue Zhong's scalp go numb.

The zombies had an advantage over Mutant Beasts, and that was that they did not know death. Add in the disease and infection they carried with them, this could cause resisting humans to feel desolate.

Many of the survivors dared to take up arms against the Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfishes, yet they would not have the same courage to face the zombies.

Shen Xue spoke with extreme confidence: "We will initiate a frontal assault, annihilating them completely."

At the initial phase of the onset of the apocalypse, the army had defeated the 700,000 zombies in SY County easily. To them, the million-zombie horde was just an issue that required a matter of time.

Offence was the best defence, and since the army had a huge amount of modern weaponry. These included the Infantry Fighting Vehicles, Assault Helicopters and even tanks. They naturally would not fear the million-strong horde.

Yue Zhong pondered awhile, before asking the crucial question: "Do you have enough ammunition?"

A modern army that was adequately equipped with logistics and supply would naturally not be afraid of a million-strong horde. However, the logistics issue was currently pressing on SY County. After the SY army had regained control over SY County, and killed off the 700,000 strong horde, its ammunition usage was pretty

high.

Normally speaking, for an expert like Yue Zhong, it would take a bullet to kill a zombie. However, not everyone were sharpshooters like him.

For the inexperienced soldiers, even a few rounds might not be enough to kill a zombie. As for the veterans, they would require a few shots to take out zombies at a distance as well.

After wiping out the zombies in SY County, Yue Zhong estimated that the ammunition left should number around 2 million rounds.

In fact, when the SY Military were clearing SY County, they had expended over 2 million rounds, at the same time, they even used heavy rounds on the horde then, which allowed them to regain control over SY County.

However, this led to the huge expenditure of ammunition, and was precisely the reason why Shen Hongyang and the other military heads were not in favour of fighting against Yue Zhong.

If the 2 sides really fought it out, the ammunition would really be depleted quickly. Without ammunition, in a world where danger was everywhere, they would lose their stronghold.

Shen Xue gazed at Yue Zhong icily: "Our ammunition is sufficient, there's no need for your concern."

"That's good to hear then!" Yue Zhong smiled lightly, and did not press further.

After a few minutes of silence, Shen Xue stared at Yue Zhong and said, "Yue Zhong, this battle is extremely important to us. My father Shen Hongyang hopes that you can lead your troops and join us in battle, killing the horde as they come."

Yue Zhong coldly asked: "If I provide reinforcement, what good is in it for me?"

Bringing his own troops to assist SY County in facing the

zombies? Not only will it consume a huge amount of ammunition, there would be casualties on Yue Zhong's side. If there were no benefits, he would definitely not lend a hand.

Yue Zhong's aim was the huge military plants in Long Hai County. Even if he brought people to wipe out the horde of million zombies, he wouldn't gain any territory, it would just be a waste of his military strength.

Shen Xue frowned, and coldly lectured: "Yue Zhong, how can you always only think about your self-interest? Can't you just see the bigger picture? This is an issue concerning the lives and deaths of over a few hundred thousand people here in SY County, you should forsake any personal interest, and send your troops as reinforcement, only then can you be considered a hero. If you are willing to send people to help save the county, over a few hundred thousand people would be thankful."

Yue Zhong eyed the slightly agitated Shen Xue and icily replied: "I'm sorry! I'm not some hero, nor am I looking to become one that your county is looking for. I am just a normal commander. I need to think for my people and subordinates. Without enough benefits, I would definitely not send my troops to their certain death."

Yue Zhong continued on with a hint of contempt towards Shen Xue: "Furthermore! Miss Shen Xue, if your father was such a big hero, why isn't he doing anything about Su Tianyang or Peng Ji those criminals of SY County?"

Su Tianyang and Peng Ji were not good things. However, due to the fact they had powerful fathers, even after all the mistakes and catastrophes they caused, they were only grounded. Yue Zhong was not willing to stick his neck out for this type of SY County.

Shen Xue grew red in the face upon hearing Yue Zhong's tone and retorted in a loud voice: "What do you understand?! My dad has to think of the bigger picture, that was why he chose not to fall out with them. He himself does not condone the actions of Su

Tianyang nor Peng Ji."

Yue Zhong looked at Shen Xue's flushed face as a result of his provocation and laughed: "Forget it! There's no point in arguing with you! I just want to know, if I send my troops out, what is in it for me! Otherwise, please head back! Otherwise, I am not interested in partaking in this war alongside you guys."

Shen Xue gritted her teeth, as she glared at this man in front of her who had managed to become the most hated person in her life. He made her feel that she just wanted to tear him apart. However, she calmed herself down and asked, "Don't you like beautiful women? We will gift to you 20 beautiful women. This should be enough no?"

Yue Zhong was speechless for a moment, because of that judgement from Da Gouzi, his own reputation had become like this. He quickly shook his head and said: "No! It's not enough!"

Shen Xue's tone became incredibly cold as she replied: "We'll add the 10,000 people you have hired under Tai Yiyan, they will be free to leave SY County. This should be enough."

The workers that Tai Yiyan had recruited were all working for Yue Zhong, and their hearts had long since favoured him, SY County thus decided to let them join him to get him to deploy his troops. This way, Yue Zhong had in fact gained over 20,000 people from SY County.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he pushed his luck: "Add on another 5,000 men, I will deploy my soldiers!!"

Shen Xue immediately rejected flatly: "Impossible! Letting you take those 10,000 survivors from Tai Yiyan is our bottom line. If you still aren't willing to, then forget it."

Yue Zhong pondered for a while longer, before he replied: "Fine!! I promise you! When the time comes, I will send 3 battalions to take part in the action. However, let me make this clear, my troops

will only listen to my commands, our co-operation will not have any mutual interference."

Shen Xue did not press for the issue of command and immediately answered, "Good!"

After concluding her negotiations with Yue Zhong, Shen Xue immediately left the place, she wasn't willing to stay a moment longer by his side.

Shen Xue had just left, when Yue Zhong also set off towards his villa, and beckoned Greenie over. He then proceed to get on top of its back and they flew off towards SY County. He wanted to confirm the intel that Shen Xue had brought.

Flying through the skies was not that romantic as people thought, after Greenie had evolved into a Type 2 Beasts, its flight speed was as fast as the wind speed during a hurricane. Yue Zhong was sitting on its back, and could feel the piercing winds, as they brushed past him, causing all sorts of discomfort. If it was any other normal person, they would definitely not be able to take the journey.

In mid-air, there were a number of Mutant Birds that were circling the skies, but they could feel the oppressive aura from the Type 2 Mutant Bird Greenie, and they all avoided it, not daring to be within a 100m radius of Greenie.

Under Greenie's lead, Yue Zhong came to the skies above SY County. As his eyesight was better in the night than the day, he could clearly see the surrounding horde of zombies surrounding SY County, like a sea that had no end. Every direction he looked, there were zombies.

Yue Zhong continued his exploration atop Greenie, and discovered that the horde stretched for 10 miles, furthermore, there were large groups of zombies that came from elsewhere and we're joining the horde!



Yue Zhong observed the sea of zombies, and he furrowed his eyebrows while thinking nervously: "This time, SY County will be hard to defend!!"

Based on a rough estimation, Yue Zhong found that the situation was more serious than Shen Xue had estimated, the number was actually way above 1,200,000.

The entire population of SY county prior to the apocalypse numbered 7,000,000, and within the downtown area, the 700,000 that had turned into zombies were decimated by the military. Throughout the region, there were still a total of over 6million zombies roaming. The current 1.2 million encroaching the surroundings of the downtown was but only one-fifth of the entire number.

[TN: Yes it's a little confusing. Basically think of SY County like a continent, with over 7 million people. The army had cleared the downtown area and claimed it for their own after defeating 700,000 zombies, 10% of the entire population. They started calling themselves SY County, even though it's a small part. There are still over 6m zombies around the entire County not yet explored, and currently 1.2m of them has gathered near the downtown area.]

However, to deal with just these 1.2 million zombies would be tricky. It must be clear that within SY County, there was only a regiment of 6,000 soldiers, and that regiment's firepower had been greatly reduced, while the new recruits were aplenty. Under these conditions, wanting to face off an enemy with over a 100 times their numbers, it was going to be incredibly difficult.

After he finished his investigations and confirmed the seriousness of the situation, Yue Zhong swiftly made his way back to his villa and called for a meeting to delegate duties amongst his commanders.

The next day, Yue Zhong arranged for the 8,000 survivors under

him to be moved to Ning Guang County.

Post-apocalypse, fuel was extremely valuable. The journey for the 8,000 survivors was not aided by any vehicles, therefore every single one of them had to make the journey on their own feet to Ning Guang County over a 100 li (50km) away. Only the warriors of the 8th Battalion and the Special Forces were escorting them on armored vehicles, within the survivor group, they were mostly women and children. Originally, without the nourishment of the Mutant Beast meat, just relying on their weak constitution and health, the journey would definitely take toll on at least over a hundred people. However, with the supplementary properties of the Mutant Beast meat, their health and vitality were recovered, and no one showed signs of dropping out of the journey.

Almost all the survivors harbored high hopes, and looked forward to a new life in a new place. Yue Zhong had given them a life that had steady meals, a decent living and these led them to anticipate a better future.

As for the 10,000 survivors that had been transferred from Tai Yiyan to his hands, he arranged for them to all work in the canned meat processing factory, pushing for the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat to be packed. At the same time, those meats from the Mutant Black Fish, Crayfish and Crabs were all processed into dry meat.

To bolster the strength of these 10,000 survivors for the migration journey to come, Yue Zhong specially distributed Type 2 Mutant Beast meat through Tai Yiyan to these survivors. Only the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat could quickly replenish and nourish their health, while the ordinary Mutant Beast meat might be delicacies hard to come by, compared to the more precious Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, the effects were not as beneficial.

When those 10,000 survivors ate the distributed Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, every single one of them regained their vitality swiftly, and became extremely energized, and their work became even faster.

Out of the 10,000 survivors, Yue Zhong then selected another 2,000 robust males, and formed a new preliminary group.

Chen Shitou was transferred to act as the chief instructor over this preliminary group, and started to train and instruct them. They were preparations made by Yue Zhong to replenish the ranks of the various teams as new recruits.

The preliminary team got to eat meat and rice everyday, and the food consisted of the meat from Mutant Black Fish as well as the Type 2 variant, causing the rest who were not selected to be envious. They wished to be selected as well, but Yue Zhong had closed off the selection after 2,000.

Furthermore, the back end factories all required manpower, to manufacture all sorts of weapons against the zombies, turning the hide and skin from the Mutant Beasts into protective garments, as well as repacking ammo. All these support jobs required manpower. Without sufficient people, the fighting forces would not have the equipment and supplies.

On the other side, as per Yue Zhong's commands, Liu Erhei, Xiong Zheng, Zhang Niujiang and Guo Quan brought 4 battalions to SY County. Guo Quan had become the first in command in Ning Guang County's First Battalion after Yue Zhong, and was in charge of Ning Guang County's First Battalion when Yue Zhong was not around.

These 4 battalions consisted of numerous elite veterans from Qing Yuan County that served as the backbone, and after countless battles against zombies, they had all grown together. They were no longer some motley crew that would fall apart at the first sign of trouble.

Yue Zhong's elite soldiers from Qing Yuan County within the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Battalion remained at Qing Yuan County, maintaining their defence and constant assault towards Long Hai County, wiping out the zombies towards the direction of Long Hai County.

They searched for resources, and rescued any survivors, expanding their power slowly.

The moment all 4 battalions of Yue Zhong arrived, the entire SY County was shocked. This time when Yue Zhong entered the city with grandeur, everyone could see the amount of preparation and equipment on each and every soldier of the battalions. On top of that, there were various advanced weaponry and machinery escorting the troops, including the 14.5mm Double Mounted machine guns, Red Arrows, Type 95 Anti-Air Missile vehicles, 40 self-propelled rocket launchers. They were not lacking in any sense. SY County's own army could not even compare with it.

When SY County had re-established themselves after the onset of the apocalypse, they only had 2 regiments left. These were the 2nd line of attack, and weren't the elite soldiers, they didn't even have tanks prior. The tanks and assault helicopters they obtained were borrowed for the purpose of the exercise. As for Yue Zhong, he had opened up a real Mechanized Infantry Brigade, and thus his equipment and weaponry was much more advanced.

# Chapter 284: Deployment

---

Upon seeing the equipment and strength of Yue Zhong's troops, everyone in SY County celebrated the fact that they had not gone head to head with Yue Zhong. Based on his weapons and machinery, if it had really come to a clash? Even if they won against Yue Zhong, they would have suffered greatly.

While equipment was not the deciding factor of the success of a battle, it was one of the strongest factors. If 2 armies of similar size were to clash and one side was using rifles against the other with tanks, it was next to impossible.

"Commander Yue, according to our agreement, please send your troops to assist with the clearing of zombies." When Yue Zhong arrived, the army had sent out an envoy to remind Yue Zhong.

"I know! Go tell Commander Shen that I'm about to set off!!" Yue Zhong directly replied.

After the fierce battle between Su Dongming and Yue Zhong, the tanks and assault helicopters that were destroyed by Yue Zhong, as well as the numerous elite soldiers that were annihilated, Su Dongming's once tyrannical military strength was greatly diminished. It had fell to the lowest position of the 5 major heads, and was now only the Vice Division Commander. The Division Commander post went to the strongest now which was Shen Hongyang.

Of course, the other 3 powers only had their smaller corps, but were conferred the vice Division Commander Posts as well.

After sending the envoy on his way, Yue Zhong went to find Guo Quan: "Guo Quan!! This place here is our path of retreat. If this place comes under attack, the brothers of the 4 battalions will all be in peril. This time, I'm bringing the troops to clean up the horde, you have to protect this place! Are there any questions?"

[TN: Guo Quan is the leader of the small recon group that had been on watch when Ning Guang County tried to attack Yue Zhong previously. He also gained a lot of merit for holding the fort when Shen Xue attacked.]

This time, Yue Zhong only intended to bring 4 battalions to fight at the front line, the best of Ning Guang County was kept at SY County, to prevent any potential trouble.

After all, in this post-apocalyptic world, anything could happen. Yue Zhong did not wish to see while he was fighting in the frontline, his path of retreat would be suddenly cut off by his "allies".

Guo Quan stared at Yue Zhong, and his face displayed a resolute expression as he replied: "No problem!! Commander Yue, even if I have to risk my life, I will definitely defend this place!"

Guo Quan had went through countless battles, and grown from a normal survivor to become the Vice-Commander of the First Battalion of Ning Guang County. He was an exceptional military personnel. War was the best form of tempering, and it had caused Guo Quan to grow into a good commander in just the short span of 2 months.

Yue Zhong left Guo Quan, while bringing Ning Guang County's 2nd, 3rd and 4th Battalion, SY's 8th Battalion, and his Special Forces. He left with a total of 5 battalions and joined the military as they made their way towards the zombie horde that was coming.

SY County's military had also mobilized a total of 5,000 people, marching towards the direction of SY County.

Due to the preciousness of fuel, other than the self-propelled rocket launchers, and the infantry fighting vehicles, as well as the various armored vehicles, the rest of the fighters had to use their feet to march on.

SY's army had been attacking their way towards SY County, and

a large number of the zombies along the way had been killed by them. Yue Zhong's forces thus had a relatively relaxed time.

After 2 days, Yue Zhong's forces had come to a clearing that was about 10 kilometres away from SY County.

The entire 8,000-strong army was segregated into 6 parts, the mutual trust between each party was not strong. Especially since the relationship between Yue Zhong and Su Dongming was like water and fire. The 8,000 strong army split into 6 different paths as they went on to clash with the zombies.

While both Yue Zhong and the military of SY were on guard against one another, they were also using one another. The zombies were the enemies of humanity, not only were they SY's problem, they were Yue Zhong's problem as well. The moment SY County fell to these zombies, they would target Yue Zhong next.

Yue Zhong led his troops and they came to a stop at Tiger's Mouth Gorge.

Tiger's Mouth Gorge was a channel that led to SY County, it had 2 hills that were a few tens of metres high on either side. The space of the valley in between only allowed for a maximum of 2 huge tracks to pass through. It was easy to defend and tough to attack, and was the perfect place to set up defence.

The moment they arrived at Tiger's Mouth Gorge, Yue Zhong commanded the 1st and 2nd Battalion to commence work on some construction. A few steel barbed wires were laid out, while some steel strips, wooden fences, barricades and a huge pit soon appeared in the gorge itself.

The 2 small hills on either side were then occupied by some of Yue Zhong's troops, in case the zombies made use of them to break past this line of defence.

After bringing the troops to Tiger's Mouth Den, he handed over command to Xu Zhengang. Xu Zhengang was an outstanding

officer, and had experienced many battles against both zombies and Mutant Beasts. Commanding a battle of defence was not an issue.

Yue Zhong himself went to the command centre, the 5 heads of the military were currently within giving commands as well.

There were many drones activated in the skies, with positions as the commanders of the military, the heads only had to give out orders from within the safe confinements of the command centre, while the battle would be fought by the subordinates.

Yue Zhong also obtained a few command vehicles and drones, however, he did not have the technical know-how to train up UAV(Unmanned Aerial Vehicles) personnel, therefore, he could only watch as the equipment collected dust within the armory.

Su Dongming saw Yue Zhong walking over, as he coldly snorted, before turning his head and not looking in his direction.

Yue Zhong possessed a military might that was way stronger than Su Dongming, and thus he could only resort to such petty means to display his unhappiness. As for picking a fight with Yue Zhong, Su Dongming was not that stupid.

Shen Hongyang saw Yue Zhong entering and laughed: "Yue Zhong, you're here! Are your preparations done?"

This time, Yue Zhong had deployed more men than Shen Hongyang had expected, and thus he had a more favourable impression of him.

Yue Zhong laughed, "My side's done! I can deploy them anytime!"

Shen Hongyang casted a meaningful look to Yue Zhong, "Let's set off then!"

"Begin the assault!"

The 6 heads gave the command within the command centre, and their subordinates set off and began their ferocious assault on the



zombie horde.

Various self-propelled rocket launchers spat out fire in a frenzy, as the rockets landed in the densely packed horde of zombies, blasting several patches of zombies into smithereens.

Regardless of the strong L1, or L2 which had high defence, or even the speedy S2s, any zombie that got caught in the blast zone of the rocket, would immediately be rendered into pieces.

After a round of fearsome blasting, the soldiers of the military proceeded forward with the armored vehicles as cover, and started their assault. With the barrage of the bullets covering the battlefield, huge patches of zombies would fall like wheat that was reaped.

The zombies that had been caught by surprised seemed to awaken from their stupor, as they quickly reacted, and under the command of the Z-Type, the zombies made for the soldiers like a huge wave.

The moment the horde moved, it was unstoppable, and the soldiers from the military experienced for themselves firsthand the true fear of being charged by zombies. Initially when they had launched their assault, the zombies were not organized, and were easily disposed of, but this time, it was very different. One can imagine how the waves of assault that came from an organized charge of over a million zombies was unstoppable.

Behind the army, the numerous self-propelled rocket launchers and Type 40 rocket launchers fired their missiles in a frenzy into the horde, blasting more patches of zombies to oblivion.

Under the barrage of heavy fire, the densely packed zombie horde had lost over 30,000 of their numbers. If it was a human army that had lost 30,000 of their comrades, the morale would have been lost. However, these zombies knew no fear nor death, and continued their relentless assault towards the soldiers and the weaponry.

The pockets of dead flattened zombies were quickly filled up by other zombies.

The soldiers continued their relentless firing, and the fearsome attack rained down on the zombies, killing many of them.

Those zombies which were rushing towards them in a frenzy would find themselves dead before they even managed to get too close.

However, the waves making up a million zombies were more terrifying than facing a thousand or even ten thousand zombies. It was as though there was no end to the nightmare.

[Dedication: No shit...]

The relentless barrage of bullets did not seem to stop, and under those firing conditions, many of the heavy and light machine guns, as well as rifles had heated up by the continuous firing.

The military soldiers immediately swapped out their guns and barrels, and during the switch, the firepower was reduced by a lot.

Just as the soldiers from the army paused in their attacks, the horde suddenly split open, and over a hundred H1s suddenly appear, as they opened their mouths and shot numerous fireballs at the armored vehicles.

Many of the vehicles were instantly destroyed at the first moment of that fireball attack, as they exploded, it engulfed and killed the nearby soldiers.

The moment the first attack was successful, the countless S2s hiding within the horde immediately shot outwards with speeds like howling winds towards the soldiers.

The speed of the S2s were incredibly fast, crossing a distance of over a 100m in only 7 seconds. Although many of the soldiers had finished reloading, quite a number of S2s had already reached the soldiers, and used their claws to slash at the soldiers, killing lots of them.

Facing the sudden attack of the S2s, the soldiers of the military immediately lost their fighting spirit, and started to escape towards the back.

"Covering fire!! Covering fire!!"

Under the orders of the command centre, the self-propelled rocket launchers, mortars, multi-barreled missiles all fired at will into the horde of zombies. Large patches of the horde were instantly pulverized and swallowed in flames, burnt into crisps.

Those huge H1s numbering in the hundreds were also turned into ash.

The various Enhancers within the army also made their moves and started slaughtering the S2s. Everyone must fight if they want to survive.

# Chapter 285: Beginning of The Battle!

---

When the various Enhancers of the army made their move, those soldiers under attack were saved. However, while the 5 battalions of the Army had crushed over 60,000 zombies (the bulk of it through the rockets), it had cost them over 300 people who were clawed, leaving them either dead or severely injured. Those who were slashed by the S2s were definitely dead. Adding the 20 armored vehicles that had been destroyed by the H1s, their losses were already huge.

Yue Zhong's side was extremely cautious, he had commanded his men to make use of the mortars and blast the zombies from afar, making use of the opportunity to train up the mortar team.

The mortar team was a specialized unit in some sense, and Yue Zhong's troops were considered professionals, while those from the army were considered to be semi-proficient. This time, Yue Zhong had brought his troops with the aim to shape them up as well. Regardless of how well-trained and well-equipped a unit might be, they could not be considered experienced or elite, until they were forged through war.

Other than the mortar team, Yue Zhong assigned his elite snipers to engage in picking off the zombies from afar. None of the other units were deployed, as he knew without tanks, facing the zombies in an open area was tantamount to suicide.

The army having suffered such heavy losses from the get go was due to their separate command of the 5 battalions. There was no organization, furthermore they had underestimated the threat of the horde.

The horde continued their pursuit of the soldiers, chasing towards their posts.

The artillery of the army was constantly firing without stopping, each time their attacks landed, it would pulverize a huge number

of zombies. The soldiers on the battlefield also took turns to fire, and they finally managed to stop the advance of the horde.

After maintaining 15 minutes of constant firing, the artillery all started to overheat and turn red, they could only wait it out and let them cool down. The non-stop firing of the artillery was terrifying, and it had destroyed over a hundred thousand zombies. However, the sea of zombies still seemed endless, as though there was no reduction in their numbers, and it gave birth to a sense of helplessness within the soldiers' heart.

Right at this time, the zombies stepped over the corpses of their comrades, and continued their advance towards the soldiers. Seeing the zombies that were seemingly endless, even many of the veterans of the military had fear in their eyes.

It was simply too terrifying, the sea of zombies was too terrifying. Within a short span of 2 hours, the military had used loads of heavy artillery, and countless ammo to kill over 180,000 zombies. However, right in front of their eyes, the sea of zombies seemed endless. Furthermore, as they had to fire the artillery continuously, the weapons would heat up easily and during the downtimes, they could not support the soldiers. This battle had become hard to fight.

The military soldiers maintained their stand at their various stations, making use of their rifles, guns, grenade launchers and any other weapons they could get their hands on to strike out savagely. The moment their weapons overheated, their comrades would provide assistance to swap out the guns. At the same time, grenades rained from the skies onto the zombies, blasting numerous zombies into pieces.

The battle was increasingly intense, but without the support of the heavy artillery, the zombies were surging forward, with the deaths of their comrades not fazing them in the slightest. They continued to charge forward, engaging in an all out slaughter with the soldiers.

Under the rush of the sea of zombies, the various sites that were not reinforced or aided by any form of construction were instantly swallowed by the horde. Other than the few experts that managed to extract themselves from the danger, most of the soldiers died, or became part of the ranks of the zombie horde.

A few of the experts were entangled with a few of the S2s, and one of them died after killing a few S2s, before being pounced on immediately and devoured.

Seeing the different positions facing crisis and being decimated one by one, the 5 heads within the command centre had ugly expressions.

"Send out the tanks!!"

Following Shen Hongyang's orders, 10 tanks immediately set off and joined the fray. On top of that, they were joined by 20 IFVs and 1 battalion of soldiers.

The moment the tanks entered the battlefield, they were like tigers amongst sheep, directly obliterating everything in their paths. They flattened the zombies into meat paste, and used their cannons to unleash fearsome balls of fury unto the zombies, incinerating them. At the same time, their mounted machine guns fired heavy round after round into the horde, killing off numerous zombies.

The 20 IFVs following behind were also utilizing their ZPT90 and firing wildly, lobbing grenades into the groups of zombies, blasting them out of the way and turning any zombies who blocked their paths into spraying waves of meat paste.

The battalion of soldiers followed the fleet of armored vehicles, picking off those zombies that did not die or slipped the net.

All of a sudden, the horde parted, and 300 L2s with their immense strength appeared, as they rushed towards the 10 tanks in a frenzy.

One of the L2s managed to crash into a tank viciously, causing the entire tank to shudder. By the next moment, the tank had knocked the L2 down, and was crushed mercilessly into meat paste.

The remaining L2s that had charged over faced the same fate, a single fist of theirs could punch a huge hole in those small armored jeeps, but against these thick armored tanks they did not possess too much of a threat.

The 300 L2s that had charged forwards were either knocked down and crushed beneath the tanks, or were directly blasted by the heavy rounds of the Type 69 Tanks. These fearsome L2s that had evolved and become stronger, were absolutely nothing in front of the kings of the battlefield.

The 300 L2s had just been annihilated by the fleet of tanks, when 400 S2s emerged from the group of zombies, after paying a painful price, they managed to jump onto the Type 69 Tanks, and were currently using their sharp claws to assault the weaponry. One of the mounted machine guns was immediately destroyed by the S2s, however they could not break past the tortoise-like armor surround the tanks.

The battalion of soldiers using the tanks as cover were currently firing wildly at those S2s, killing those zombies as they were crawling on top of the tanks.

The 20 IFVs behind the tanks were also making use of their Type 25 ZPT90 to fire crazily, killing off many S2s.

In the midst of the horde, some patches started squirming before 200 H1s appeared at about 200m away from the tanks.

The moment those 200 H1s appeared, the 20 IFVs started firing at them, causing tens of them to directly explode.

The remaining H1s opened their huge mouths, as fireballs landed on the 10 tanks. It was obvious that the Z-Types within the horde

has determined the tanks to be the most dangerous weapons.

Fireballs landed on the 10 tanks one after another, before exploding into huge gouts of flame.

The flames had not yet scattered, when the 10 tanks burst out from the fiery inferno, and charged towards the direction of the 200 H1s, firing their weapons, and a huge explosion occurred, directly blasting most of them into pieces. The battalion of foot soldiers were also firing their guns, riddling the remaining H1s full of holes.

Yue Zhong looked on as the tanks exhibited their prowess and advanced forward without a care for its surroundings nor being hindered by anything, and he could not help but sigh in his heart: "As expected, the tank is the king of the battlefield. If I had 100 tanks, even a million zombies would not be able to amount to much."

The 5 military heads looked on as the 10 tanks proceeded to crush everything in their path, seemingly invincible, and their eyes lit up in delight.

However, their joy was cut short. While the tanks were indeed effective against the zombies, the number of zombies was simply overwhelming.

After the tanks had rolled over and crushed god knows how many zombies, causing them to become meat chunks. After so much killing the total number seemed to decrease only by a little, and their positions were soon filled by others.

Furthermore, the zombies were still advancing in their assault on the soldiers of the military, the 10 tanks and 20 IFVs could only become a fleet that helped save some of the soldiers, travelling everywhere and crushing any zombies that came in their path.

With the assistance of the 10 tanks and 20 IFVs, the soldiers of the army managed to catch a moment of breath, and got rid of



those zombies who were filling in the empty spaces.

After another 10 minutes, the artillery of the army had finally cooled down, and the 10 tanks and 20 IFVs made their way back to rest the equipment as well. Earlier, under the attacks of the H1s, one of the tanks suffered a damaged launcher, and had to change the barrel.

Similarly, a few of the mounted machine guns had been damaged by S2s, and required some swapping out there as well. The ammunition and fuel that were expended had to be refilled too.

The artillery of the military started their relentless firing again, shooting rockets into the horde, directly exploding huge patches of zombies into ash and cinders. With the support of the heavy artillery, the soldiers were in a better shape.

On the other side, Xu Zhengang had gotten his snipers to lure the zombies over. The moment they were in range, the soldiers immediately retreated back to the traps and constructions set up in Tiger's Mouth Gorge.

The densely pack horde soon advanced towards the Tiger's Mouth Gorge.

The light machine guns that Xu Zhengang had ordered to be mounted on both sides of the small hills started firing, as the barrage of bullets cause the nearby zombies to be shot full of holes.

At the same time, Xu Zhengang activated the command to fire the artillery, as round after round of rockets landed in the midst of the zombies, blasting them into pieces. Under those conditions, Yue Zhong's artillery team also grew quickly.

As the valley of Tiger's Mouth Gorge was extremely narrow, combined with the support of Yue Zhong's artillery team, the defence was relatively easy. A huge number of the zombies that went through the gorge would be immediately killed off, or blasted into ashes.

Xu Zhengang observed the battle for a while, before ceasing fire immediately, and deployed Ning Guang County's 3rd Battalion forward with their Tang Replica Swords, as they began their close combat fight against the zombies at Tiger's Mouth Gorge.

## Chapter 286: Uphill Struggle!

---

The soldiers of Ning Guang County's 3rd Battalion were all wearing the hide of the Mutant Black-scaled Boar as armor, gloves, and other bits of body armor. Just like the Black-scaled Boar, these protective coverings were thick and resilient. The strong scales could block the attacks of any ordinary zombies.

With the protection of the Mutant Black Boar hide, the soldiers of Ning Guang County's 3rd Battalion were like winged tigers when facing the ordinary zombies. Every swing of their Tang Replica Swords cut through the zombies like they were chopping vegetables. With such non stop slaughter the soldiers continuously received enhancement.

The experts of the Special Combat Forces were still relying on sniper rifles as well as their abilities to pick off the evolved zombies. The sound of a clacking semi-automatic bolt was inevitably followed by Zombie heads exploding.

Under the cover of the heavy artillery, the soldiers of Ning Guang County's 3rd Battalion courageously charged forward, massacring the zombies with wild chops of their Tang blades as blood flew everywhere.

Yue Zhong's forces were extremely proficient in melee combat, this was a requisite bit of training. When being whipped into shape, every single battalion had gone through close quarter combat with zombies.

Of course, equipment was important to morale. The protection of the Mutant Black Scaled Boar's hide greatly reduced the chances of being infected, therefore they were fearless as they charged into the horde. The slow reaction speeds of the ordinary zombies were simply no match for these soldiers.

As there was a limit to the cover and support of the artillery, and after firing continuously for some time, Xu Zhengang had to let the

artillery cool down or risk damaging it. In response to this unavoidable fact, he ordered for the soldiers to fall back.

The sea of zombies continued advancing towards Tiger's Mouth Gorge regardless of the bullets and shelling, they knew no fear. At this time, the earlier preparations at the gorge were set in motion. Right in front of the gorge, there were numerous sharp steel spikes aimed outwards like a barbed fence.

When the zombies knocked onto the spikes, they would be pierced through by them. Add on to the mindless advance from the other zombies behind, and the zombies in the front found themselves properly impaled by those spikes. Very soon, there were numerous spikes full of mostly squirming zombies.

The zombies continued squeezing forward, causing the steel spikes to be continuously stuck with zombies, blocking off the route for the zombies behind.

After losing more than a few hundred basic zombies, the hundreds of remaining L2 charged out with the horde in attack! As these huge freaks were obvious within the crowd due to their size, the 12.7mm heavy machine guns started firing.

Due to the well planned sweeping fire from the heavy machine gun, those armored L2s were also incapacitated giving more breathing room. Tong Xiaoyun had been hiding behind cover and at the right moment took the opportunity to thrust the Dark Magic Blade and pierce one of the L2 in its head, before twisting it like a blender and killing it.

Tong Xiaoyun's telekinesis ability could exhibit its prowess under these conditions like a fish in water! Those L2s that tried to get back up from the machine-gun fire knocking them down? They were systematically picked off by her and the Dark Magic Blade.

Flame King Gu was also an old hand at these situations one should know. His attacks were multiple conjured fireballs and he exploded them on those L2s' heads, causing skull shrapnel and

flaming, fleshy pulp to fly as they were blasted into pieces.

After he had joined Yue Zhong back in Qing Yuan County, he had taken part in many other battles against zombies and had reached to an enhancement level of 35. His Flame Control Skill had been enhanced three times, and the fireballs he conjured were no longer small or faded ones but instead were voluminous blazing spheres!

Bai He had an extremely icy gaze as he held his sniper rifle, and picked off the L2s one by one. The L2s kept dying, as their heads exploded gloriously under his attacks.

The valley was too narrow, and the result was the horde could not force their way through. Xu Zhengang ordered the soldiers of the 4th Battalion to lock the place down. With the assistance of the Special Combat Forces they slaughtered a large number of zombies, while their own casualties were almost zero.

The intense battle continued all the way until evening, and no one had the luxury of time to rest. The zombies were constantly rushing to their deaths, and the soldiers from the army had to maintain their staunch defences.

Due to the overall lack of rest and constant firing, many soldiers' shoulders were starting to swell from the repeated recoil of their guns. The majority of the guns barrels had to be changed a few times as well. The intensity of the battle was way out of the 5 heads' expectations.

Even Yue Zhong's force who were guarding Tiger's Mouth Gorge, were feeling the fatigue. Xu Zhengang had rotated in the 8th Battalion to take over the 2nd Battalion, which had been fighting nonstop for the entire day.

Out of the 10 tanks and 20 IFVs which formed the steel fleet that was constantly dispatched into the battlefield, 4 of the IFVs had been destroyed by H1s which were hiddenly firing amongst the horde.

On this first day of intense fighting, with the assistance of the heavy artillery, the military and Yue Zhong had jointly massacred over 400,000 zombies. However, the cost was the gruesome death of 482 of their soldiers. Furthermore, the important and highly effective artillery had fired over half of their available ammunition.

Without the artillery, the military and Yue Zhong would definitely not be able to obtain such a promising result. Even if it were 400,000 pigs given to be slaughtered, the 6,000 people had chopped and slashed to the point of exhaustion.

The self-propelled rocket launchers could fire rockets into the midst of the horde, causing an area of effect within a radius of 18m, violently exploding and incinerating all zombies caught in its blast zone. Additionally, the shrapnel was incredibly effective at taking down any remaining zombies as well.

Each rocket could decimate a few hundred zombies. With the support of the rockets, Yue Zhong and the military had the means to wipe out over 400,000 zombies and had tenaciously defended their positions.

However, even after killing almost half a million zombies, the sea of zombies seemed as dense as ever, and one still could not see the end.

\*\*\*\*

Inside the command centre, the 5 military heads and Yue Zhong were having a review.

Su Dongming suggested in a loud voice: "Retreat!! We should quickly retreat, before deploying small teams to snipe them at various places they advance to. The majority of the army should head back, regroup and prepare defences, before engaging them!"

Qian Weimin frowned and spoke softly, "No. The moment we retreat, how will we deal with those S1s? Our soldiers cannot

outrun the S-Types!"

Amongst the million-strong horde, the ordinary zombies numbered the most, but the L1s and S1 type also numbered in the 10s of thousands. While the soldiers' speed outstripped the L1s, they could not compare to the S1s.

If they were to retreat, and the S1s formed a unit to chase up, those soldiers who could only rely on their legs would definitely die miserable, bloody deaths.

Luo Tianyi took a deep puff of his cigar, as here released a smoke circle and frowned. After some thought he spoke. "But if we were to continue fighting, who knows when the battle will end. Our troops may die first!"

The 5 heads of the military and Yue Zhong had seen the terror of a million-strong horde today. Even with the support of the artillery and the assault of the tanks, it was an incredibly tough battle. There was the constant danger of the frontline collapsing, morale was incredibly low, and it was only under the condition of the military sending their 7 assault helicopters to join the fray that they managed to hold the fort.

Although they had killed over 400,000 zombies, every single soldier was exhausted. If this continued on, they would not be able to hold for more than 2 days. The crux of the matter was that the battle was too intense, anyone who had to fight continuously for more than 8 hours without rest, was definitely going to feel exhausted.

When fighting against other humans, the war could take a pause and both sides would retreat to rest. Against these inhumane zombies, which only knew how to charge forward without fear of death, the soldiers did not even have the time to catch a breath, and had to maintain the defence like a robot. Under that high intensity, a lot of gun barrels were used to the point of waste, and many soldiers had swollen shoulders.

Of course, it was not without merit, after killing the 400,000-over zombies, there were some individual zombies straggling about that retreated, converging with those in SY County, this led the soldiers to breathe a little.

Su Dongming laughed coldly: "That's right! We should retreat immediately! As for the assault from the zombies, we can let one of the teams stay behind, and cover our retreat! Since Yue Zhong's forces are the strongest, and they had suffered the least losses, I suggest to let Yue Zhong and his men stay behind, to cover our retreat!"

After Su Dongming's words, the rest of the 4 heads all shifted their gaze towards Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong's crafty yet brilliant move in defending Tiger Mouth's Gorge, in addition to the preparation and construction they had done, had indeed wore down the zombies' fighting capabilities, and thus they had suffered almost no casualties.

Luo Tianyi looked towards Yue Zhong apologetically and said: "I too feel that Vice-Division Commander Su's words are right. Yue Zhong's forces are indeed the strongest. Letting him stay behind and cover our retreat, is the best option available. Yue Zhong, as long as you are willing to do so, you will become a huge hero in SY County's eyes. All the citizens will definitely remember this."

Yue Zhong flatly refused: "I disagree!! Covering the retreat is definitely a good idea, which I feel that the responsibility should fall on Su Dongming Commander Su and Luo Tianyi Commander Luo. The chance to be a hero, I'll leave it to you guys."

Su Dongming let out a cold laugh, and raised up his right hand: "Let's vote! Then it'll be fair. Those who are in favour of letting Yue Zhong stay behind please raise your hand!"

Luo Tianyi also raised his right hand.

Qian Weimin and Liu Huifeng seemed to hesitate a while, and raised their hands as well. Yue Zhong was an outsider after all,



letting him stay behind, even if there was loss, it would be borne by Yue Zhong. It was not their problem.

Shen Hongyang pondered a while before offering some conditions: "Yue Zhong, as long as you stay behind and cover our retreat, once you're back at SY, as long as you have the power, how many survivors you want to take you may take. Since you like women, we'll try and find 300 pretty virgins for you as well!!"

Yue Zhong had an icy expression as he directly refused: "Not interested!! If you insist on my staying back, I'll pull my troops back immediately!"

If Yue Zhong covered their retreat and suffered losses, without power, the military would pounce on him the first chance they got.

Luo Tianyi frowned and spoke loudly, "Yue Zhong! Why are you like that, can't you see the big picture!! Our army is now facing a crisis, only you have your fighting power intact. Just to protect your own power, you're not willing to stay behind. Do you really want to force all of us to our deaths?"

Yue Zhong gazed at Luo Tianyi contemptuously, and said coolly, "Since Commander Luo can see the bigger picture, why can't you stay behind and cover the retreat?"

Luo Tianyi was naturally unwilling to stay behind, it was job that was tantamount to suicide. If one was not careful, he might lose everything. Without troops nor the equipment, Luo Tianyi would not be worth much. He was not willing to bring his troops to their deaths.

Liu Huifeng thought quietly for awhile, before suggesting an offer that made Yue Zhong's heart itchy: "Yue Zhong, if you're willing to stay behind! We can give you 3 assault helicopters and their pilots, as well as their maintenance crew!"

3 assault helicopters were potent weapons, with just 3, Yue Zhong could be considered to possess an aerial unit, facing any

small powers would just require a single assault helicopter. It could easily cause the enemy to lose the will to fight and surrender immediately. Furthermore, he could use the assault helicopter to directly fly over any places that were surrounded by zombies.

Hearing Liu Huifeng's offers, Yue Zhong was slightly tempted, but he still shook his head and refused, "I'm not interested!! If you guys insist on my staying behind, I will immediately pull my troops back!!"

It was still the same logic, if Yue Zhong lost his strength, he would have no way of protecting himself against the army, much less demand for what was promised.

Regardless of their pleading and offers, Yue Zhong rejected them all.

None of the 5 heads were willing to stick his neck out for the rest as well, and pretty soon the talks came to a deadlock.

After a long while, Shen Hongyang had no choice but to dismiss the meeting, letting the various leaders to take a rest and have some food.

Su Dongming immediately found Luo Tianyi and asked, "Old Luo, what do you think about the battle?"

Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming were from the same regiment, and their relationship was decent. Furthermore, Su Dongming was the one who always held the lead position, only after clashing with Yue Zhong did he suffered heavy losses, and thus their relationship had undergone a little change. However, it was still closer compared to the rest of the 3 heads.

Luo Tianyi furrowed his brows, and came to a precise conclusion: "It's gonna be tough!! If those zombies launch a mass scale assault in the night, we would definitely not be able to hold!"

Battling in the night was one of the hardest part of war. Under the cover of darkness, even the most elite of snipers would find it

hard to discern friend from foe, not to mention the ordinary soldiers.

While the army brought plenty of flares, they could not compare to the illumination by daylight.

Su Dongming laughed coldly: "Tough?! There's only death awaiting us all if we stay! It's not like you have no idea how crazy it is to fight in the night. Based on the troops' morale and fighting capabilities now, the moment there is a slight mistake, the entire formation would fall!!"

Luo Tianyi maintained his silence, he knew Su Dongming was right. They had such a high number of inexperienced soldiers who had not gone through tough training or experiences like the veterans. The moment a mistake occurred, they were bound to lose their will to fight.

Luo Tianyi pondered a while, before saying: "What do you suggest?"

Su Dongming's eyes flash with viciousness: "We take our troops and leave. By that time, even if they don't want to cover us, it'll be too late! Stopping the horde will consume their resources! And then we'll be the rulers of SY County!"

# Chapter 287: Collapse

---

Luo Tianyi considered a while, before a resolute gleam flashed in his eyes and he nodded in agreement: "Fine!!"

If one does not fend for himself, the sky will come falling down\*. Luo Tianyi was not willing to lose his capital here. Without his troops, his post as Commander Luo would be a joke, After coming to a decision, Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming quickly boarded their vehicles and left the command centre, under the protection of their own experts, they went to the positions of their troops.

Soon, the entire battalions of Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming had left their posts, leaving behind some weapons, and were escaping directly towards SY County.

"Division Commander!! Luo Tianyi's troops and Su Dongming's troops had deserted!!!"

Shen Hongyang, the other 2 heads and Yue Zhong had just come back to the command centre when one of the officers ran up to Shen Hongyang and reported the news gravely.

"What!!!" Hearing the news, Shen Hongyang, Liu Huifeng, Qian Weimin and Yue Zhong all turned pale.

Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming had left without a word at this critical juncture, this caused their defence earlier agreed upon to have 2 large holes. The horde could easily breach the defence through the holes and surround the other troops from behind.

Even the strategic point of Tiger's Mouth Gorge that Yue Zhong was controlling would lose its effectiveness. The zombies could go through the gaps left by Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming to cut around the gorge and attack Yue Zhong's troops.

"I curse your entire families, Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming!!" The usually calm Liu Huifeng was currently so agitated that he cursed out loud. He was beyond infuriated as the deserting actions from

the other 2 heads would definitely cause the loss of the war.

Qian Weimin's eyes were currently bloodshot as well, and he scolded out loud: "Fuck!! Div. Commander Shen, I recommend that we announce that Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming as traitors, and to activate the assault helicopters to wipe the deserters out!!"

The remaining 7 assault helicopters were under the command of Shen Hongyang, if they were deployed, they could easily annihilate Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming.

Yue Zhong also walked forward furiously and said, "Commander Shen!! Please send out your helicopters to make an example of the deserters!! Also, make the announcement that Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming are traitors!!!"

This was absolute treason!! At the most critical point of the battle, Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming had backstabbed them ruthlessly. Yue Zhong could not help but feel infuriated as well.

Shen Hongyang lowered his head in thought before replying: "No!! Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming have deserted, that's true, but their subordinates are innocent! They are all good soldiers, and have done SY County a lot of merit. I can't give this order!!"

Hearing Shen Hongyang's words, Yue Zhong felt extremely disappointed! Shen Hongyang was caring for the soldiers under the 2 traitors, and weren't willing to label them as traitors and deserters, nor did he want to punish them. While his intentions were good, under these circumstances, it was basically cowardice and indecisiveness.

"Division Commander!!! The horde is attacking!!!" One of the officers called out.

Those zombies had retreated earlier to regroup, and await more of the their comrades to join in, once they were gathered, they launched their assault again.

Yue Zhong glanced coldly at Shen Hongyang: "Commander Shen,

since you're not willing to give the command, I can't force you. Goodbye."

After that, Yue Zhong immediately strided out. He did not want to stay here any longer to be buried with Shen Hongyang. The moment Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming deserted their posts, the battle was lost. He could only retreat at the fastest speed, bringing his troops along with me. Talking anymore words with Shen Hongyang was wasting time.

Shen Hongyang's face changed, as he called out agitatedly, "Yue Zhong!! Come back!! Yue Zhong, come back this instant!!!"

If Yue Zhong were to leave, the situation will become more dire.

Yue Zhong ignored Shen Hongyang, and in a few breaths he got on top of Greenie, flying towards his troops.

"Heed my command! All battalions are to retreat immediately and make your way back to SY County! Special Combat Forces maintain your resistance from where you guys are! Xu Zhengang, you organize the retreat!" Sitting aboard Greenie, Yue Zhong talked through the walkie-talkie, giving a slew of orders to his subordinates.

"Commander! What happened?" Xu Zhengang who was in the midst of commanding, immediately asked Yue Zhong. He could detect that there was something wrong from the urgent tone of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong gritted his teeth and said, "Those bastards Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming have deserted!! We can't hold the horde back anymore!"

"I understand! I will complete your orders!" Xu Zhengang replied and immediately started organizing the retreat!!

The 1st Battalion which had the least equipment to worry about were the first to retreat. They started making their way back towards SY County in huge steps, everyone of them holding a can

of Type 2 Mutant Meat. They ate while walking, and the precious Type 2 Mutant Meat helped recover their vitality.

The various equipments and setups on the hills were torn down and packed into the vehicles, and the 2nd, 3rd and 4th Battalions started making their way back. Only the Special Combat Forces remained behind to defend the Gorge, buying some time for the rest of the battalions.

Yue Zhong transmitted an order to Guo Quan: "Guo Quan! Take all the troops now and conquer the riverbank bridge!! Transfer all the survivors to the other side. That is the only path of retreat for our troops, you must definitely protect it!!"

Guo Quan replied loudly: "Yes! Commander Yue!!"

After Yue Zhong left, Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin both stared coldly at Shen Hongyang, not even bothering about him anymore, before they both left the command centre and gave the urgent commands to their subordinates to abandon their posts and prepare to evacuate. As long as there were people remaining, there would be a chance back at SY County.

The moment the troops of Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin left their posts, the entire defence line collapsed, and the zombies made their advance through the various posts.

Shen Hongyang had immediately deployed the tanks and IFVs to fire crazily at the zombies in an attempt to kill them.

However, the moment the soldiers on the ground received news of the retreat of the other 5 powers, Shen Hongyang's troops all felt despair. Some of the companies started to lose their will to fight, and ran for their lives.

Zombies had routed around from the gap left by Luo Tianyi and were attacking Shen Hongyang's soldiers, surrounding them on both sides.

With their retreat cut off, the troops started to lose composure,

and a huge number of the soldiers abandoned their positions, throwing their equipment and running into the night.

The S1s and S2s amongst the horde were the most terrifying killers, they chased down those soldiers who tried to run, killing them effortlessly.

There were many deaths happening every single second. The defence line collapsed and the soldiers lost all composure and will to fight, throwing down their equipment. All sorts of ammo belts, heavy machine guns, mortars, rocket launchers, were all left behind. They only had the thought of lightening their weights so as to escape faster.

One officer ran up to Shen Hongyang's side and pleaded bitterly, "Division Commander!! Please evacuate!! We can't hold on any longer!! If we don't, the zombies will reach here soon!!"

Shen Hongyang looked at the chaos and death on the screen, and looked crestfallen: "Was I wrong? Where was I wrong? How did it become like this??"

Shen Hongyang looked at his elite soldiers being bitten to death, and felt pain in his heart. These were the hope for mankind.

Due to Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin pulling their troops at the first moment, Shen Hongyang's troops were encircled by the zombies, and a huge number of them were dying out, in fact, only Shen Xue's elite First Battalion was left fending for themselves.

The officer could not care less about ranks and hierarchy anymore as he shouted at Shen Hongyang, "Division Commander!! If you still don't act, Miss Shen Xue's unit is gonna be annihilated!!"

"Let the First Battalion retreat!! Send the armored vehicles to cover them!!" Shen Hongyang seemed to have been jolted to his senses after that shout and quickly issued the orders.

Upon Shen Hongyang's activation, the tanks and IFVS formed an



assault line, and charged into the horde, crushing any zombies in their paths.

The 7 assault helicopters were also activated by Shen Hongyang, and followed the armored vehicles to rescue the First Battalion that was surrounded by zombies.

Facing the sea of zombies, other than Shen Xue's unit, the other troops had abandoned their equipment, and ran like crazy back towards SY County.

Defeat!! It was a complete and utter defeat!!

On the road, there were many soldiers running back, having thrown their armor and equipment. The moment they were caught by the S-Type zombies, they would die.

Those S2s had speed that vastly outstripped the ordinary zombies, very soon, they had caught up with the retreating troops of Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin, launching a ruthless assault upon them.

The troops of Qian Weimin and Liu Huifeng had their Enhancers step out to take care of the S2s that were chasing up, however, under the relentless assault, numerous soldiers from the different battalions were all defeated and killed.

Yue Zhong had rushed to Tiger's Mouth Gorge at the first moment. He wanted to join his Special Forces in fighting back the zombies, buying more time for his own subordinates to retreat farther.

Without the support from the other positions, Tiger's Mouth Gorge would definitely be overrun, they could at most withstand for a little longer, which in turn meant that the advance of the zombie horde would be slowed down as well.

By the time Yue Zhong arrived at Tiger's Mouth Gorge, the battle had reached an extreme intensity. The endless waves of zombies were constantly advancing towards the gorge.

At the Tiger's Mouth Gorge, there were a few heavy machine guns being fired rapidly, and with the hail of bullets, the zombies were being slayed by the numbers as well.

With the continuous advance and death of the countless number of zombies, a 4m high mountain of corpses soon piled up at the mouth of the valley.

# Chapter 288: Capturing the Bridge!

---

The riverbank bridge was an important channel of transportation towards the north in SY County. It was also the only channel that led to Ning Guang County. If it wasn't for this bridge, if one wanted to go to Ning Guang County from SY County, it would be over 80km, and one had to travel the outskirts of SY County to find the other channels. Accordingly, the riverbank bridge was like a lifeline for SY County.

Therefore, on the bridge, there were 20 policemen who were guarding both ends of the bridge.

Zhang Cheng was a policeman of SY County, he was also the vice director, who had been stationed at the bridge long-term. He was extremely satisfied with his current position, not only did he get to eat his fill everyday, his wages were 30 jin of rice in a month. 30 jin in the current post-apocalyptic world was a sizable sum, and allowed him to pay to toy with a few women.

"Boss!! Want to go for a round?" One of the younger policemen called out to Zhang Cheng. Inside the room, 6 of the policemen were currently playing "Fighting the Landlord" and "Win the Chicken", and had bet their wages as stakes.

[TN: Gambling games of sorts I guess]

"You guys go ahead!!" Zhang Cheng laughed.

Right at this moment, the door was kicked wide open, and a number of soldiers rushed in with their .03 rifles, aiming the guns at the policemen as they coldly shouted out: "Nobody move! Put your hands up!"

Zhang Cheng and his team were all shocked, and immediately raised their hands. The current world was not like in the past, the moment there was a bit of resistance, their lives might be gone in the next instant.

"I say, this brother! Is there some misunderstanding?? I don't think we have offended you guys in any way right?" Zhang Cheng looked towards the military-dressed soldiers and worked up his courage to ask.

The leader of the soldiers shouted out coldly, while waving his hands and a few other soldiers stepped up to tie up the 7 policemen, as he said, "Shut up, keep your mouth shut the whole lot of you!"

This police station was thus won easily by Guo Quan.

Although there were over 20 policemen standing guard near the bridge, they were not wary enough, and their fighting capabilities were weak. Before they even knew what had happened, the bridge was easily subdued and conquered by Guo Quan and his men.

Obtaining control of the bridge was easy, but defending it was going to be tough.

Guo Quan had ordered for a few streets near the bridge to be closed off within the first chance he got, and the survivors were all chased out.

At the same time, Guo Quan had assigned a platoon of soldiers to launch an attack on the policemen on the other side of the bridge.

As they were caught unprepared, the policemen on the other side were also easily subdued, and all the policemen were brought together and locked up.

The first group of soldiers also started constructing some defence under Guo Quan's orders. As long as they did not face the attacks of any artillery, the defence fortifications would be of extreme use.

"Guo Quan, what is the meaning of this?" Guo Quan's actions were picked up by the 2 heads of the government, and Wen Baoguo had personally come into Guo Quan's zone, asking with a steely expression.

Guo Quan replied curtly, "I'm doing this on Commander Yue's

orders!!"

Wen Baoguo continued, "Leave here immediately! I'm telling you to leave here, otherwise I'll be forced to announce that you guys are not welcome here anymore."

Guo Quan replied icily, "Before Commander Yue comes back, we're not going anywhere."

Wen Baoguo stared fixedly at Guo Quan, and thought deeply before asking suddenly, "Is there something wrong with the frontlines?"

Guo Quan hesitated a while, before revealing to Wen Baoguo: "Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming had abandoned their posts first and made a run for it. The entire defence line had collapsed!! This time, we're defeated!! The huge horde of zombies are currently making their way towards us!!"

It was as though Wen Baoguo was struck by a lightning bolt out of nowhere, as he stammered to confirm the news with Guo Quan: "Is this true?"

If it was as Guo Quan said, things had gotten to a seriously bad point. When the army had left to deal with the horde, everyone had seemed so full of themselves and confident. Who would have expected that the army which possessed modern weaponry and high-tech equipment to have lost to a horde of mindless creatures.

It must be clear that initially, the army had easily taken care of the 700,000 zombies within SY County itself, after expending huge amounts of ammunition and suffering little casualties. This time, most of the survivors thought that dealing with the horde was only a matter of ammunition, and never did they imagine that the army was actually defeated.

Guo Quan coldly replied, "This is what Commander Yue transmitted to us. If you don't believe it, you can ask Shen Hongyang personally."

Wen Baoguo did not seem to notice Guo Quan's indifference, he immediately rushed back to the government, assigning a subordinate to confirm the news with Shen Hongyang.

"What do we do?" Wen Baoguo's first course of action was to seek Peng Mingde to discuss.

Peng Mingde pondered a while, before speaking: "There are 2 paths we can take now! The first is to activate the survivors, to construct fortifications and defence mechanisms, giving them weapons, to join the army in defending SY County. The other, is to forgo SY County, and to evacuate the survivors!"

Wen Baoguo shook his head, "The zombie horde could overcome even the army, what hope will we have with our citizens? The first path you speak of is not possible."

SY County had over 100,000 survivors, their numbers exceeding the soldiers of the military, however, most of them had been starved to the point of emaciation, their bodies extremely weak. It was too much to ask of them, seeing that throwing a punch would drain them, not mentioning taking up arms against a huge horde of zombies as well as evolved ones.

Peng Mingde frowned as he softly replied: "Then we can only abandon SY County and shift. However, where can we go with 100,000 survivors?"

Yue Zhong's Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County were naturally the safest places to be, however, Peng Mingde was not willing to take the survivors to Yue Zhong's strongholds. The moment the survivors ended up in Yue Zhong's hands, his position as Secretary General Peng would not last long.

Wen Baoguo thought for a while, and said resolutely, "Let's move to Yue Zhong's Ning Guang County! The place is big enough, accommodating an additional 100,000 people shouldn't be an issue."

Wen Baoguo had his desires to remain as a government officer, and loved his authority. However, he knew what his bottom line was. He would definitely not risk the lives of a 100,000 people for the sake of his own power.

Peng Mingde hesitated a while, before shaking his head: "Let's slow down!! Maybe things aren't as bad as we thought!!"

Power was an amazing thing. To give up the power and authority a person has, required a huge deal of courage and determination. Peng Mingde could not see the end picture, and was thus unwilling to give up his own power.

Peng Mingde did not agree with Wen Baoguo's suggestion to evacuate the survivors, however he started to activate them to begin fortifications at the borders.

Guo Quan was currently organizing the survivors calmly, preparing for them to leave towards Ning Guang County.

At the frontlines, Yue Zhong had been engaged in battle against the horde with his Special Forces, and a huge group of zombies had just routed behind them from the other positions and were starting an attack on them.

The Special Combat Forces unit had already done their preparations beforehand, every one of them tied a rope to themselves which were tied to Greenie's legs.

With a flap of its wings, Greenie rose towards the skies, bringing the Special Combat Forces with it. The soldiers, carried by Greenie, enjoyed the aerial flight that was hard to come by.

Yue Zhong, Zhuo Yatong, Ji Qingwu and Tong Xiaoyun were seated on Greenie's back.

Tong Xiaoyun was hugging Yue Zhong tightly, her expression comfortable.

Yue Zhong was also hugging Zhuo Yatong tightly, taking in her fragrance, a look of satisfaction on his face.

[TN: And Ji Qingwu was hugging Greenie tightly, wondering why she was not included, like Zhuo Yatong could have been hugging HER, and smelling HER fragrance.]

When Greenie was in mid-air, as the winds were too harsh, no one spoke, they all huddled tightly together, enjoying the rare moment of peace.

After flying for a while, Yue Zhong patted Greenie's back and said, "Fly a little lower, Greenie!"

Upon hearing the command, Greenie started its descent, flying at a low altitude.

Yue Zhong laid on Greenie's back, and looked below.

Greenie's flight speed was extremely fast, not long after, it had chased up to Xu Zhengang's unit that had left an hour earlier.

At the same time, there were over a hundred S2s chasing Xu Zhengang and his men from behind.

However, Yue Zhong's troops were experienced when dealing with these S2s with high speed.

5 IFVs tied with wire charged towards the S2s.

As the speed of the S2s were extremely fast, when they made contact with the thin wires, their own speed coupled with the frontal charge of the IFVs caused their own head to be sliced through by the combined force.

Other than the 5 IFVs charging forwards, a few steel wire nets were already taken out, forming an entire piece. While these steel wire nets were of no use against the L2s which had incredible strength and defence, they were extremely efficient against the S-Type zombies. Many of the S2s charged into the nets, before being brought down by them. The soldiers then stepped forwards to execute them.

Some of the warriors decked in Mutant Water Snake hides and



wielding their Tang Replica Swords even dared to come up and hack off the heads of the S2s.

Bright flashes of gunfire illuminated the skies, causing this entire area to be lit up like a normal day. Yue Zhong's troops were engaged in an intense battle with these S2s. While Yue Zhong's troops had the upper hand, the S2s were simply too fast, from time to time, there would be some soldiers who had their Mutant Boar hides slashed through, and being injured as a result.

Right as the battle was going on, Greenie had flapped its wings and arrived.

Yue Zhong leapt down from Greenie's back, activating his Shadow Steps and rushed into the midst of the zombies. He attacked, waving his 2m-long Black-tooth Blade as he killed the zombies effortlessly.

The rest of the Special Combat Forces also undid their ropes, and joined in the fray.

The moment the Special Combat Forces joined in, the remaining more than a 100 S2s were decimated. The performance of the little loli Yao Yao was especially eye-catching. Her speed had long surpassed the S2s of course. As long as she was moving about, the S2s found their heads decapitated, and her speed of executing the S2s was even faster than Ji Qingwu and Yue Zhong as a result.

# Chapter 289: Breakout!

---

After killing the S2s that had chased up, under the command of Xu Zhengang, the 4 Battalions immediately gathered together and continued on with their retreat towards SY County in an orderly fashion.

Xu Zhengang was the defeated commander that Yue Zhong had brought over to his side from Qing Yuan County previously, and he was truly an exceptional commander. Under his command, even in the darkness, other than a measly few who had escaped during the retreat the rest of the 4 battalions maintained their order and spirit. This prevented any falling apart at all. Those who had escaped were also from the preliminary group that had to join in the fray at short notice.

The soldiers from the preliminary group had not gone through any tough battles. So when the S2s arrived and begin their assault, the soldiers from the preliminary group had escaped and parted from the army due to fear.

However, compared to the SY's military that had collapsed till they lacked all resemblance to an army, Yue Zhong's troops were considered to have been preserved well.

Yue Zhong's army being maintained was due to Yue Zhong's efforts in leading his Special Combat Forces to buy time for the rest of the soldiers led by Xu Zhengang.

After disposing of the group of S2s, Yue Zhong and his elite Special Combat Forces with the strongest fighting capabilities out of the entire army stayed behind. continuing to cover the retreat for the rest of the troops. At this time, the Special Combat Forces each took out their dried fish meat of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish. Upon feasting on this meat, it replenished their depleting energy, allowing them to regain the strength to fight.

After fighting for an entire day, the Special Combat Forces were

exhausted. If it wasn't for their condition that surpassed most normal humans, they would have lost the will to fight long ago.

This time, the horde that Yue Zhong and the army had to face? Firstly, the zombies numbered above 1.2 million. During the day, they had managed to kill over 400,000 of them. Unfortunately there were still 800,000 of them left. The number of S2s within this horde of 800,000 still exceeded over 3,000.

These S2s were urged by the Z-Types within the horde, and charged forwards like knives, chasing and killing the retreating soldiers of both the army and Yue Zhong's troops.

As long as they were marked by the S2s, the S1 army would quickly catch up, and the lethal combination could break down any resistance that the humans had left.

Therefore, Yue Zhong had to take his Special Combat Forces to kill those S2s in pursuit. Otherwise, if the fight dragged on too long, Xu Zhengang and the 4 Battalions would definitely be wiped out.

In the wilderness covered by darkness as well as the lack of any forms of construction? Obviously, the moment the S1s reached them, Yue Zhong's 4 battalions would not be able to last long.

Yue Zhong and his Special Combat Forces killed off a few other straggling zombies that had managed to catch up. Suddenly, 10 defeated soldiers appeared and ran towards them, with 4 S2s in pursuit.

"Help!!! Help!!!" The leader of the team saw Yue Zhong and eyes brightened as he shouted out madly.

Without any equipment, nor terrain advantage, even 30 soldiers would die against 4 S2s.

"Go save them!!" Yue Zhong glanced at the 10 soldiers and commanded.

Yao Yao, who was feeling excitement and lingering battle-lust

after killing so many zombies, charged into the ranks of the 4 S2s. As she arrived her Dark Magic Blade began flashing about, and the heads of the 4 S2s instantly fell on the ground.

After killing the 4 S2s, Yao Yao immediately rummaged through the items they dropped, seeing that there was nothing of use to her, she stuffed them in a bag and threw it to Yue Zhong.

The 10 soldiers looked on with an expression of shock. They did not expect that this little loli decked in the smallest military attire, with such cute looks, would be capable of such fearsome combat skills. The 4 S2s that they, as grown men, could not handle were disposed off easily by this little loli.

The 10 soldiers came forward to Yue Zhong and the leader kneeled as he begged pitifully: "Commander Yue!! I am the Commanding Officer of Division Commander Shen's 3rd Battalion 2nd Company, Liu Lijian! Please, I'm begging you to bring your men to save our Commander Shen!! Our brothers from 2 battalions have been surrounded by zombies, if no one goes to save them, they will die soon!!"

The rest of the soldiers who managed to escape death's door also kneeled and started begging bitterly: "Commander Yue!! Please save our Commander Shen!!"

Although Shen Hongyang was not perfect, he was a commander that valued his soldiers. He could even remember the names of any officer or commander he groomed. Furthermore, regardless of any issues that his subordinates might face, he would be the first to step out and help. It was because of his nature that he was admired and loved by his troops.

Of the 6 armies, Shen Hongyang's troops were the slowest to evacuate, thus even though he had tanks and assault helicopters, he was bogged down by those S-Types. And it was because Shen Hongyang had attracted the attention of the zombies that the pressure on Yue Zhong's troops was reduced a lot.

Song Wen quipped in harshly, "Commander Yue!! That bastard Shen Hongyang didn't give the orders to take down those traitors Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi. There's no need for us to care about him. Let them feed the zombies! At least they can be useful for slowing the horde down. It's the best outcome possible!"

Shen Hongyang's decision to not pursue Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi who had abandoned their posts created a dip in morale and fighting spirit amongst the rest of the army. Based on the situation, if Shen Hongyang had deployed the 7 assault helicopters to give chase, Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming did not possess any anti-air defence, and thus would be defeated, slowing their retreat down. The rest of the army could then work together to capture the 2 of them and their troops to act as cannon fodder to slow the zombie horde down. That would have been the best course of action to take.

Yue Zhong glanced at Liu Lijian and said indifferently, "From now on, you're under me! You are no longer Shen Hongyang's men. I will bring some people to take a look, if he's still worth saving, I will lend a hand!"

Any veteran soldier that had gone through the forge of war was a prized treasure. They possessed combat ability as well as a strong fighting will compared to newer soldiers.

This time, the military had underestimated the horde, as they had retained the thinking of the prior battle where they managed to conquer SY County and the 700,000 zombies without counting for the evolved zombies this time round. This was the main reason for their loss, however, they still managed to clear 400,000 of the zombies with Yue Zhong. If it wasn't for the fact that there were selfish and personal interests, the army might still have lost, but it would not have been this bad.

After speaking, Yue Zhong directly brought his Special Combat Forces and headed towards Shen Hongyang's direction.

Shen Xue currently felt despair at the situation. Shen Hongyang had given the orders to evacuate too late, and thus a large number of the zombies had already surrounded them, cutting off their retreat. At this time, the First Battalion being led by Shen Xue was engaging in an all-out fight against the zombies together with the armored vehicles and tanks, which formed a defensive post, coupled with the assault helicopters in the air. They had managed to kill off waves after waves of S2s, however, before the total number of S2s had been killed, the S1s had come arrived.

The total number of S1s far outnumbered the S2s, and they were simply endless. Even with the constant heavy fire by Shen Xue and her unit, which resulted in a lot of deaths of the S-types, there were a still few who managed to rush past the defence line, and started killing the soldiers.

Shen Hongyang had sent in his experts to the frontlines at the first moment he could.

A few experts who were extraordinary, their strength only slightly inferior to Yue Zhong's own Special Combat Force appeared on the battlefield

With their abilities, they managed to lock down those S1s and S2s, killing them all entirely.

Yue Zhong was not the only one who knew how to raise experts, the five heads of the military as well as the 2 governing heads of the government had a handful of experts that were similar to Yue Zhong's Special Combat Force. Amongst these experts, some were even naturally awakened Evolvers.

Amongst Shen Hongyang's experts, there was a burly, dark, middle-aged man with calloused hands, his name was Xu Xiao, and he was the leader of the group of experts. He also possessed the strongest fighting capabilities as an Evolver amongst the group of experts.

Xu Xiao was a Spirit-based Evolver, and had a Ferroknetic ability

called Steel Manipulation. Surrounding him, there were 4 Tang Replica Swords and 2 Dark Magic Blades, sealing the space within 10m of him. As long as he passed near the horde, the 6 God and Devil System equipments would fly out crazily, chopping and slashing those S2s.

As Shen Hongyang's strongest expert, Xu Xiao had experienced countless battles. As of now, he was a Level 38 Enhancer. With only 2 more levels to go, he would undergo another leap in strength.

However, these 2 levels were hard to achieve, even after hunting and killing so many S2s, Xu Xiao would need to kill over a few hundreds of them before he could reach Level 40. If he were to hunt and kill the normal zombies, then he would be required to kill over 10,000 of them before he can reach that level.

In this post-apocalyptic world, the fastest way to gain levels was to hunt and kill extremely strong Mutant Beasts. As long as one could hunt these tyrants, one could gain strength rapidly. However, Xu Xiao was but one member of the army. He could not travel around alone freely to hunt and seek for high-level Mutant Beasts to hunt.

This was because he had to obey commands. The fact that he could reach Level 38, was because he had already killed many Type 2 zombies, and had slowly climbed up the Enhancement ladder.

Under the lead of Xu Xiao, the 10 experts all exhibited their abilities to the maximum. Their ruthless attacks continuously ground and killed the S-Type zombies that got too close, maintaining the morale and fighting spirit of the soldiers.

However, those who managed to take down most of the zombies, were still the normal soldiers. With the help of the seemingly unceasing firepower, huge numbers of the zombies would be slain just like that.

In the sky, flares would be fired constantly, illuminating the

battlefield. Without the illumination, the 2 battalions would have long been swallowed by the sea of zombies.

Shen Hongyang initially had 4 battalions of soldiers, but all he had left now were 2 exhausted and almost broken battalions. The other 2 battalions were made up of too many new soldiers, and once they knew their comrades had abandoned their posts, they had lost their composure at the first moment. Only these 2 battalions fighting were left in Shen Hongyang's hands.

While the 2 battalions put up a brave fight, their numbers were dwindling as time passed, and their exhaustion was increasing. Facing the never ending waves of zombies, being swallowed by the sea of zombies was only a matter of time. It was just that while Shen Hongyang knew that fighting on would result in his entire army being killed, he had no choice but to fight. If he were to evacuate them right now, the 2 battalions would be slaughtered by the S-Type zombies anyway, and only death awaited.

"Division Commander!! Battalion Commander Shen Xue's side requires the aid of the tanks. They cannot hold on for much longer!!" One of the officers transmitted to Shen Hongyang.

"Ask her to hold on for 10 more minutes!! The tanks are supporting Yuan Lei and the other battalion right now!! Organize my guards right now, and deploy them over to her side!!" Shen Hongyang's eyes were bloodshot right now, and he looked as though he had aged a few years as he spoke out hoarsely.

At this time, both battalions were reaching a critical point, and needed support everywhere they could. Shen Hongyang simply could not pull out any more soldiers to assist Shen Xue, and thus could only assign his guards to go help her.

"Commander Shen! Do you require help?" At this time, Yue Zhong had brought his Special Combat Forces and entered the command centre.

Shen Hongyang saw the sudden appearance of Yue Zhong, and



his eyes lit up, as though he had seen a glimmer of hope: "Yue Zhong!! You're here!! I need your help urgently. If you can save the 2 battalions, I will definitely repay you."

Right now, the situation was dire, and Shen Hongyang did not have the energy nor mind to engage in any more mind games with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong immediately stated his conditions: "I can think of a way to get your men out. However, I want those 10 tanks, 7 assault helicopters as well as their drivers, artillery soldiers, as well as 10 drone operators. On top of that, I will require 2 companies of veteran soldiers. If you agree to these, I would immediately lend a hand, if not, I will leave. You can rely on your own capabilities to try and kill your way out then!!"

Yue Zhong had decided to save Shen Hongyang because he was eyeing the various equipment and experienced soldiers on Shen Hongyang's side. He had the machinery of his own at the Mechanized Infantry Brigade base, but he lacked the professionals and the know-how. As long as he obtained the talent, he could train a few more within a short time, and quickly assemble a powerful unit.

Shen Hongyang pondered for just a while, before accepting Yue Zhong's terms: "I promise you!"

If his men were dead, he was left with nothing! Shen Hongyang loved his troops like he loved his children, he would not sacrifice them if he could. If right now Yue Zhong wanted him to surrender, as long as the soldiers could live on, he would not hesitate to do so.

Yue Zhong said deeply: "Order your units to pack up and evacuate now! Get the experts, the armored troop and the assault helicopters to fall back orderly. I will send my guys to cover your retreat!"

Shen Hongyang nodded his head, and immediately gave a list of commands, ordering his men to start evacuating.

Yue Zhong also sent out his experts to cover the 2 battalions in their preparations to retreat.

# Chapter 290: Tough Breakthrough!

---

Very soon, the 2 battalions had finished their preparations, and were currently being surrounded by many S1s.

Shen Hongyang had ordered the 10 tanks and 6 IFVs to bring up the rear, while the sides were covered by his experts and Yue Zhong's Special Combat Force.

At the front of the troops, there was only Yue Zhong, White Bones and Greenie. There was only 3 of them, and they were the lead force in charge of opening a path!

"Greenie!! It's up to you now!!" Yue Zhong gave a nuclei from the Type 2 Mutant Crab to Greenie, as he patted its head and said seriously.

Greenie gobbled up the nuclei in one mouth, and flapped its wings as it activated its ability: Wind Power!

In mid-air, Greenie flapped its wings continuously, and a number of hurricanes appeared, blowing towards those S1s and S2s that were blocking the way. Under the fearsome strength of the winds, those tightly-packed S1s and S2s were blown a few metres away.

With the mini-hurricanes generated by Greenie, a hole appeared in that horde of 10,000 S1s.

"Charge!!!" Shen Xue saw the hole and immediately hollered without a care for her bearing!!

The 2 battalions saw the lifeline, and in that instant, they managed to summon their last bit of strength as all of them made a rush for the opening.

Yue Zhong hoisted 2 .05 submachine guns and immediately rushed to the front. With his superb aiming, he shot his guns, his both hands constantly firing wildly. With each spray of the machine gun, a line of zombies would immediately be slain as their heads exploded.

If we remember that Yue Zhong possessed incredible night vision, in the dark, he was like a fish in water. Any zombies that got too close would immediately be fired upon and killed with a bullet to the head.

White Bones just charged directly into the midst of the hordes, and with its body, it constantly shot out and in 10 incredibly sharp bone spikes in random orders. that pierced through the heads of countless zombies killing them instantly.

Now that it had Evolved to possess some intelligence, White Bones' combat ability became even more fearsome. It could now control any part of its body to shoot out its bone spears, and it literally became a moving, flexible spike ball. Furthermore, after possessing the 'Sharpening' ability, every single bone spear that it shot out could easily penetrate the heads of even the L2s that knives and most guns could do nothing about.

With the protective cover of Yue Zhong and White Bones, the S2s could not even come close enough before they were instantly decimated. Thus the path for the soldiers' movement was unhindered.

"So strong!!" Shen Xue looked at Yue Zhong and White Bones. With just the 2 of them, they battled while maintaining the gap that was created by Greenie's hurricanes. She gritted her teeth and could not help but admit that Yue Zhong was incredibly powerful.

Even the strongest expert within Shen Hongyang's camp ~ Xu Xiao, who led the other experts, could not match Yue Zhong's team's spectacular performance and ability.

Especially powerful here was Greenie, whose natural ability allowed it to conjure up hurricanes. With every attack, a few hundreds or even occasionally thousands of zombies would be blown away.

It was because of this Type 2 Mutant Beast's help, that Yue Zhong and White Bones could carve out a way for the soldiers to retreat.

The soldiers of the 2 battalions munched on the emergency Type 2 Mutant Beast dried meat as they were escaping frantically.

The Type 2 Mutant Beast meat gave them much needed nutrients as well as the replenishing of their energy and stabilizing of morale. After finishing the meat, they would be able to reform much more efficiently.

Shen Hongyang had known of the revitalizing properties of the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, therefore had sent Shen Xue to purchase 30 tonnes of the meat prior.

Even with Yue Zhong leading the Special Combat Forces, the retreat of the 2 battalions were still fraught with danger. They were surrounded by the numerous S1s after all, and the S1s would continually throw attacks as and when they could, be it in front or from the back.

"Kill!! Kill!! Kill!!" Xu Xiao's eyes had gone bloodshot with ferocious battle rage. His 6 God and Devil System swords were dancing, bobbing, and weaving continuously in the air, those zombies that were unfortunate enough to get too close were immediately chopped in pieces.

On the other side, Zhuo Yatong was wielding her huge mace. She slammed and swung it around non-stop, with every monstrous swing 3 or 4 S1s would be crushed, flinging various pieces all about.

The loli Yao Yao flitted around the battlefield with bursts of speed. As she attacked, her blade swung in fast flashes, and numerous S1s' heads would tumble around after being neatly shorn from their bodies.

The Special Combat Forces and the experts under Shen Hongyang had powers that far surpassed normal people, but they also received a lot of pressure. Under that kind of intense battle, everyone's stamina was being worn down at an insane speed.

Those experts would immediately add their points into Stamina

upon levelling. No one would allocate any points to anything else at this point. Stamina! This was the only thing that could allow them to continue on under such harsh conditions.

The 10 tanks were also firing their cannons continuously! Every shot fired would guarantee the death of at least a few tens of S1s. The remaining IFVs were firing their ZPT90s rapidly in a cleanup of the wounded zombies in the neverending tide. A single round could pierce through a few S1s, and those zombies that got fired at by the ZPT90s would have a large hole in their body, some even had their bodies shredded in two, losing any real further fighting capabilities.

The smaller caliber mounted machine guns were being utilized as deterrence, a hail of bullets rained on the S1s, killing and injuring many zombies, as they fell to the ground incapacitated.

The 7 assault helicopters in the skies were using their own rockets, firing at the places where the zombies were packed the most tightly, killing off entire patches each time they exploded.

Under the relentless attacks, the horde of S1s were being picked off quickly, as huge groups of them were incinerated or killed. This allowed Yue Zhong and everyone else present a chance to withstand the never ending assault from the zombies themselves.

With the efforts of Yue Zhong, his troops and the various other experts, the 13,000 S1s that had been troubling Shen Hongyang's troops were being decimated

Under the obliteration of the continuous attacks their numbers decreased quickly, very soon, there were only about 2,000 left.

However, at this time, the 10 tanks, the remaining IFVs as well as the assault helicopters in the skies, had gone through their available ammunition and firepower.

Greenie, which was continuously beating up hurricanes, had also expended a lot of its energy, and could not help but fly off into the

distance, leaving the battlefield to rest momentarily.

Losing the support of the heavy weaponry, even though there were only about 2,000 S1s left, the battle had just become incredibly tough.

Yue Zhong made White Bones lead from the front as it hacked and slashed his way through to keep the way open. He himself went to join the Special Combat Forces as they continued their battles at the sides.

All these Special Combat Forces were Yue Zhong's precious troops, even losing one would cause him a heartache. Especially Ji Qingwu, Zhuo Yatong and Tong Xiaoyun. They were incredibly powerful beauties who could do much more than warm his bed. They could fight well! He would definitely not allow them to die.

Although the Special Combat Forces were elite soldiers, under such intense conditions, their Stamina had been depleted. Killing the S1s became increasingly harder as the battle went on.

Yue Zhong came to the other side, and saw the avalanche of S1s. In response his hands waved about and he threw a handful of grenades. Through the air they flew before they directly exploded and caused a few S1s to be blasted to pieces.

"Shit! There were still the grenades!! I'd almost forgotten!" Seeing Yue Zhong lob the grenades over, Song Wen's brain seemed to be jolted awake and he exclaimed with a little regret.

The Special Combat Forces were so used to using their God and Devil System equipment and abilities to kill the zombies to gain enhancement, that in the heat of battle, they forgot about the modern weaponry they carried on themselves.

Every single one of the Special Combat Force were armed to the teeth, and they all had .05 light machine guns, 8 50-round magazines, and 8 grenades.

The .05 light machine guns were the best measure against these

zombies that could be pierced through by the bullets. Under the cover of Yue Zhong's firing, the soldiers all took out their .05 machine guns and started firing at the zombies wildly.

In that dense hail of bullets, a large number of the S1s that had not reached the soldiers were immediately shot and brutally killed. While some did not die, the upside was it broke their dense and concentrated attack formation.

The moment the formation was broken, the scattered S1s that were rushing forward became much easier to pick off.

On the other side, Shen Hongyang had deployed a company of old veterans to join Xu Xiao's unit of experts, and with the suppressing fire they provided, Xu Xiao's unit managed to catch a breather as well.

The entire group fought as they retreated, not daring to stop or stay stationary. Every single minute of delay meant additional danger. Facing this advance group of S1s was already extremely tiring. If the rest of the horde caught up from behind, they would bite the dust.

The intense hit-and-run battle continued for another 2 hours, and the remaining 2,000 or more S1s were finally annihilated by the experts of both Shen Hongyang and Yue Zhong's troops. With this small victory they finally managed to break free from the siege.

However, Shen Hongyang's troops also suffered a great loss. Out of the 2 battalions, he lost a total of 30% of his troops. The other 2 battalions had collapsed earlier during the defence, and were most likely dead within the mouths of the zombies.

All the advanced vehicles had run out of ammo, without weapons, even the assault helicopters could only be used for reconnaissance.

After breaking out of the siege, other than Yue Zhong who



possessed a Stamina 8 times that of normal humans, most of the fighters were exhausted to the point that they were breathing raggedly. However, they did not dare slow down, as they continued to flee with all their might towards SY County. Based on their current condition, if another 2,000 S1s were to appear, they would be unconditionally defeated. Even if Yue Zhong was around, it would surely still be useless.

With the motivation of staying alive, the entire group made their way towards SY County without stopping.

Just as they neared the entrance to SY County, they discovered that outside of the gate, there was a small team stationed there, and they were currently involved with some fortifications and constructions.

Seeing the small team, Shen Hongyang's troops became wary, as they hoisted their weapons. They were already exhausted, if this small team were to make a sudden assault, these 2 battalions of Shen Hongyang would most likely be wiped out.

"Commander Yue! Are you there? I am Xiong Zheng!!" Xiong Zheng brought along a company of soldiers as they called out to Shen Hongyang's troops.

"I'm here!!" Yue Zhong stepped out from the Special Combat Force and replied loudly. They were finally safe!

# Chapter 291: Ambush! Confusion!

---

The moment Shen Hongyang's troops entered Yue Zhong's territory, they immediately laid on beds and entered a deep, rejuvenating slumber. They had all fought beyond the limits of exhaustion. Especially the soldiers of the Special Combat Force as well as the experts under Shen Hongyang.

Xu Zhengang came to Yue Zhong and reported: "Commander! After setting up camp here, we have absorbed a total of 213 straggling soldiers. Luo Tianyi, Su Dongming, Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin have all dispersed back to the main headquarters in SY County."

Yue Zhong replied in a heavy voice: "Go carefully enquire about the abilities and skills of those stragglers. Assign them to the various battalions. Get the preparatory force to work faster on the fortifications. We don't have much time left!!"

Without fortifications and traps, especially after all the heavy weaponry had either been lost, damaged or emptied, the humans stood no chance against the horde.

Xu Zhengang replied seriously: "Yes! Commander!"

"Then I'll leave it to you! I'm taking a rest!"

After that, Yue Zhong immediately went to a huge bed and laid down before entering sleep straight away.

In that latest battle, Yue Zhong had rushed everywhere to save everybody, and had constantly pushed himself as the fighter on the foremost front line, and the head of the spear. The enhanced zombies that had died at his hands had numbered over 700, but likewise, the toll on him was the greatest. His Spirit and Stamina had been depleted constantly throughout the battle. If it wasn't for the fact that he was resilient enough, he would have fainted from exhaustion on the battlefield already.

"Damn Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi!!" Qian Weimin was currently cursing furiously.

During the hasty retreat, Qian Weimin had lost a huge number of his troops. After reaching SY County, he had only 3 companies left. The rest of the troops had either AWOL in their terror with their location unknown, or they had been chased and killed by the zombies.

A large number of the S-Type zombies had chased the troops of Shen Hongyang that had been the last to evacuate, but there were other S-Types that went on to chase the other troops.

Qian Weimin had experts himself, but they were nowhere as strong as Shen Hongyang's. Furthermore, without tanks or assault helicopters to cover them, the S2 zombies had basically wiped out his troops. As they were retreating with their lives, only after reaching SY County did he manage to grasp control of about 3 companies of his troops. He had gone to war with 2 battalions, a total of 800 people. His losses were too huge.

"Once I have rested well, I will go show those assholes!!" Qian Weimin's heart was full of fury as he thought, and walked out from the command centre in huge strides.

'Peng!' A gunshot rang out. Qian Weimin had a new hole in between his eyebrows, his face full of shock and disbelief as he slumped to the floor.

"Commander!!"

"Commander!!"

"....."

Seeing Qian Weimin murdered on the floor, the various officers rushed over and called out in anguish.

"No one moves!! Those who resist will be executed on the spot!!" All of a sudden, military soldiers rushed in from all entrances holding guns. They flooded in and occupied every part of the

centre, as they pointed their guns at their past comrades.

Su Dongming called out loudly: "Qian Weimin had wantonly accepted bribes, buying over officials, conducted unauthorized interference in various affairs and had betrayed the party's trust as well as the country's trust!! He had been dealt with! You can all choose to surrender now. As long as you surrender, I promise that you will be treated fairly!"

One of the officers shouted: "Fuck you!! Su Dongming, Luo Tianyi, you bastards who betrayed us and your comrades! Brothers, let's kill them!!"

The rallying cry of the officer rattled the hearts of many soldiers, and they all took up arms and started their counter attack against Su Dongming's troops.

Both parties broke out in an intense gunfight within SY County.

Su Dongming was truly heartless, as his troops had made it back to SY County the earliest, he did not suffer much. Therefore, he took advantage of the opportunity, and killed those exhausted soldiers under Qian Weimin.

However, without the support from heavy artillery, the troops of Su Dongming found it hard to just take down these enraged soldiers of Qian Weimin, who had been pushed past their breaking points.

Desperate soldiers were the hardest to deal with, and they could be extremely ruthless. Especially since Qian Weimin's troops had been betrayed, and now their commander had been assassinated by Su Dongming, they were beyond anger. Therefore, even though they were exhausted, they were extremely tenacious.

On the other side, Luo Tianyi had failed in his attempt to assassinate Liu Huifeng, both parties had also started a brawl within SY County, with people dying one by one as time passed.

Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming were extremely clear, that when

Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin were back, they would not let them off. Therefore, they had decided to attack first and at the proper moment, they made their move against Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin.

Under the sudden ambush by Luo Tianyi and Su Dongming, the troops of Liu Huifeng and Qian Weimin suffered greatly, and were caught unprepared.

"What do we do?" The in-fighting amongst the military heads had been noticed by the 2 heads of the government, and Wen Baoguo had immediately sought out Peng Mingde's opinion.

Due to the divide and clash between the military, the police and special forces that the government commanded could become the deciding factor. As long as Wen Baoguo and Peng Mingde were to command them to help out a single side, that side would definitely obtain victory.

Peng Mingde did not skip a beat as he said: "We will help neither!! This is a matter amongst themselves, let them handle it."

Lu?G?€?  
£Ç?ǰ,Л?·?hǔ?  
Ψ?h?

Su Dongming had already sent people to notify Peng Mingde, requesting that Peng Mingde should send people to help him, otherwise not to interfere. After this battle, both Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi will follow Peng Mingde's lead.

After this battle, regardless of victory or defeat, the army would definitely have suffered. A weaker army that would obey Peng Mingde appealed to him greatly.

"That won't do! If they continue like this, the victorious side will still have suffered. This will not be beneficial to the defence of our SY County! We should make a decision now!" Wen Baoguo frowned as he urged.

Peng Mingde seemed to reply enigmatically as he said: "If you insist on interfering in this battle, then I feel that we should immediately send people to aid Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi in suppressing the others. Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi possess the strongest force now, and have already gained the advantage in this battle. If we help them, we can easily subdue Liu Huifeng and the rest. If we were to help Liu Huifeng and the rest, facing Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi, we would definitely suffer more."

Wen Baoguo considered a while, before furrowing his brows even further and said: "But Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi abandoned their posts and friends to escape, and even ambushed their ex-comrades."

This type of behaviour is too despicable. How can we help these shameless bastards? Furthermore, since their characters are so untrustworthy, if during the defence of the County, they decide to evacuate, then what? We should send our men to help Liu Huifeng in exterminating Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi."

Peng Mingde frowned deeper, and his forehead formed 3 lines "|||": "If Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi's troops get annihilated, who will we use to defend SY County?"

Wen Baoguo's eyes flashed with determination: "If we can't defend any longer, we can leave SY County, and make for Ning Guang County. Yue Zhong's side definitely requires manpower, he would not turn down our request."

Peng Mingde could not help but spit because he absolutely 100% didn't want to lose power. "Baoguo! If we go to Ning Guang County, you won't be the mayor of SY County anymore!"

Wen Baoguo laughed lightly, as he continued to show a determined look: "Compared to the life and death of a hundred thousand people, what is the point of my position?"

Those who sat in the governing position usually saw other lives as less important than their own post. Wen Baoguo was someone

who valued his authority and position greatly. Prior to the apocalypse, he had approached his superiors countless times to try for a position. However, in the face of the lives of 100,000 people, he made the tough choice, to give up his own power in exchange for the hope of life for 100,000 people.

Peng Mingde thought quietly for a while, before saying pointedly: "I'm not for sending our men to subdue Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi!"

"Then I'll bring them myself!" Wen Baoguo stood up, and turned around to walk out, he had already made up his mind.

Peng Mingde looked at Wen Baoguo's back, and his eyes flashed with a strange gaze, before turning vicious, as he swiftly pulled out a gun he had kept for self-protection, and aimed it at Wen Baoguo before firing.

Peng! Peng!!

The sounds of gunfire rang out. At such a point blank range, Wen Baoguo received 6 gunshot wounds, and he slumped to the floor in a pool of blood without even uttering a word, his eyes full of shock and regret.

[TN: Nooooo!]

Peng Mingde's hands were trembling, as his eyes seemed to have clouded with madness: "SY County is mine!! No one should think of taking it away!!! Wen Baoguo, don't blame me. Since you were in the way, you had to die!!"

Peng Mingde had grown accustomed to being one of the top in SY County. He could sleep with whomever he wanted. He could order the death of whomever he disliked, and the person would not live to see another day. He could promote whomever he liked.

All sorts of matters were under his control. He was like an emperor who decided the life, death and even glory of the common people. Countless people idolized him, tried to curry favour with

him, even feared him! His power exceeded that of the Party's Secretary prior to the apocalypse. He had become drunk on that power, and was not willing to give it up. Thus he would resort to any means to protect his position.

Peng Mingde summoned his trusted aides and experts and gave an order: "Situ Guang! Go bring people immediately to take over command of the police force. If that Zhu Liufeng is not willing to give it up, execute him immediately..."

Upon receiving Peng Mingde's orders, his henchmen immediately went to work, making their way towards one of the key sectors.

Situ Guang was a good-looking, stout 31-32 year old man that was extremely charming, he handed a document to the Special Forces leader Zhu Liufeng and said: "Zhu Liufeng! I'm here to convey Secretary General Peng's orders, to take over command of the Special Forces' 1st Unit. These are the documents!"

Zhu Liufeng received the documents and scanned it carefully, discovering that it was genuine. He rearranged the papers, before replying without a change of tone: "Situ Guang! If you want to take over my position as the leader of the Special Forces' 1st Unit, you will require Mayor Wen's signature as well. Otherwise, you're not following the rules."



# Chapter 292: Onslaught!

---

## Conditions for Deployment

Yue Zhong asked somewhat curiously, "What are the military's plans?"

A horde of over a million zombies, this was on a different scale compared to 100,000. The sheer number made Yue Zhong's scalp go numb.

The zombies had an advantage over Mutant Beasts, and that was that they did not know death. Add in the disease and infection they carried with them, this could cause resisting humans to feel desolate.

Many of the survivors dared to take up arms against the Mutant Crabs and Mutant Crayfishes, yet they would not have the same courage to face the zombies.

Shen Xue spoke with extreme confidence: "We will initiate a frontal assault, annihilating them completely."

At the initial phase of the onset of the apocalypse, the army had defeated the 700,000 zombies in SY County easily. To them, the million-zombie horde was just an issue that required a matter of time.

Offence was the best defence, and since the army had a huge amount of modern weaponry. These included the Infantry Fighting Vehicles, Assault Helicopters and even tanks. They naturally would not fear the million-strong horde.

Yue Zhong pondered awhile, before asking the crucial question: "Do you have enough ammunition?"

A modern army that was adequately equipped with logistics and supply would naturally not be afraid of a million-strong horde. However, the logistics issue was currently pressing on SY County. After the SY army had regained control over SY County, and killed

off the 700,000 strong horde, its ammunition usage was pretty high.

Normally speaking, for an expert like Yue Zhong, it would take a bullet to kill a zombie. However, not everyone were sharpshooters like him.

For the inexperienced soldiers, even a few rounds might not be enough to kill a zombie. As for the veterans, they would require a few shots to take out zombies at a distance as well.

After wiping out the zombies in SY County, Yue Zhong estimated that the ammunition left should number around 2 million rounds.

In fact, when the SY Military were clearing SY County, they had expended over 2 million rounds, at the same time, they even used heavy rounds on the horde then, which allowed them to regain control over SY County.

However, this led to the huge expenditure of ammunition, and was precisely the reason why Shen Hongyang and the other military heads were not in favour of fighting against Yue Zhong.

If the 2 sides really fought it out, the ammunition would really be depleted quickly. Without ammunition, in a world where danger was everywhere, they would lose their stronghold.

Shen Xue gazed at Yue Zhong icily: "Our ammunition is sufficient, there's no need for your concern."

"That's good to hear then!" Yue Zhong smiled lightly, and did not press further.

After a few minutes of silence, Shen Xue stared at Yue Zhong and said, "Yue Zhong, this battle is extremely important to us. My father Shen Hongyang hopes that you can lead your troops and join us in battle, killing the horde as they come."

Yue Zhong coldly asked: "If I provide reinforcement, what good is in it for me?"

Bringing his own troops to assist SY County in facing the zombies? Not only will it consume a huge amount of ammunition, there would be casualties on Yue Zhong's side. If there were no benefits, he would definitely not lend a hand.

Yue Zhong's aim was the huge military plants in Long Hai County. Even if he brought people to wipe out the horde of million zombies, he wouldn't gain any territory, it would just be a waste of his military strength.

Shen Xue frowned, and coldly lectured: "Yue Zhong, how can you always only think about your self-interest? Can't you just see the bigger picture? This is an issue concerning the lives and deaths of over a few hundred thousand people here in SY County, you should forsake any personal interest, and send your troops as reinforcement, only then can you be considered a hero. If you are willing to send people to help save the county, over a few hundred thousand people would be thankful."

Yue Zhong eyed the slightly agitated Shen Xue and icily replied: "I'm sorry! I'm not some hero, nor am I looking to become one that your county is looking for. I am just a normal commander. I need to think for my people and subordinates. Without enough benefits, I would definitely not send my troops to their certain death."

Yue Zhong continued on with a hint of contempt towards Shen Xue: "Furthermore! Miss Shen Xue, if your father was such a big hero, why isn't he doing anything about Su Tianyang or Peng Ji those criminals of SY County?"

Su Tianyang and Peng Ji were not good things. However, due to the fact they had powerful fathers, even after all the mistakes and catastrophes they caused, they were only grounded. Yue Zhong was not willing to stick his neck out for this type of SY County.

Shen Xue grew red in the face upon hearing Yue Zhong's tone and retorted in a loud voice: "What do you understand?! My dad has to think of the bigger picture, that was why he chose not to fall out

with them. He himself does not condone the actions of Su Tianyang nor Peng Ji."

Yue Zhong looked at Shen Xue's flushed face as a result of his provocation and laughed: "Forget it! There's no point in arguing with you! I just want to know, if I send my troops out, what is in it for me! Otherwise, please head back! Otherwise, I am not interested in partaking in this war alongside you guys."

Shen Xue gritted her teeth, as she glared at this man in front of her who had managed to become the most hated person in her life. He made her feel that she just wanted to tear him apart. However, she calmed herself down and asked, "Don't you like beautiful women? We will gift to you 20 beautiful women. This should be enough no?"

Yue Zhong was speechless for a moment, because of that judgement from Da Gouzi, his own reputation had become like this. He quickly shook his head and said: "No! It's not enough!"

Shen Xue's tone became incredibly cold as she replied: "We'll add the 10,000 people you have hired under Tai Yiyan, they will be free to leave SY County. This should be enough."

The workers that Tai Yiyan had recruited were all working for Yue Zhong, and their hearts had long since favoured him, SY County thus decided to let them join him to get him to deploy his troops. This way, Yue Zhong had in fact gained over 20,000 people from SY County.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed, and he pushed his luck: "Add on another 5,000 men, I will deploy my soldiers!!"

Shen Xue immediately rejected flatly: "Impossible! Letting you take those 10,000 survivors from Tai Yiyan is our bottom line. If you still aren't willing to, then forget it."

Yue Zhong pondered for a while longer, before he replied: "Fine!! I promise you! When the time comes, I will send 3 battalions to

take part in the action. However, let me make this clear, my troops will only listen to my commands, our co-operation will not have any mutual interference."

Shen Xue did not press for the issue of command and immediately answered, "Good!"

After concluding her negotiations with Yue Zhong, Shen Xue immediately left the place, she wasn't willing to stay a moment longer by his side.

Shen Xue had just left, when Yue Zhong also set off towards his villa, and beckoned Greenie over. He then proceed to get on top of its back and they flew off towards SY County. He wanted to confirm the intel that Shen Xue had brought.

Flying through the skies was not that romantic as people thought, after Greenie had evolved into a Type 2 Beasts, its flight speed was as fast as the wind speed during a hurricane. Yue Zhong was sitting on its back, and could feel the piercing winds, as they brushed past him, causing all sorts of discomfort. If it was any other normal person, they would definitely not be able to take the journey.

In mid-air, there were a number of Mutant Birds that were circling the skies, but they could feel the oppressive aura from the Type 2 Mutant Bird Greenie, and they all avoided it, not daring to be within a 100m radius of Greenie.

Under Greenie's lead, Yue Zhong came to the skies above SY County. As his eyesight was better in the night than the day, he could clearly see the surrounding horde of zombies surrounding SY County, like a sea that had no end. Every direction he looked, there were zombies.

Yue Zhong continued his exploration atop Greenie, and discovered that the horde stretched for 10 miles, furthermore, there were large groups of zombies that came from elsewhere and we're joining the horde!

Yue Zhong observed the sea of zombies, and he furrowed his eyebrows while thinking nervously: "This time, SY County will be hard to defend!!"

Based on a rough estimation, Yue Zhong found that the situation was more serious than Shen Xue had estimated, the number was actually way above 1,200,000.

The entire population of SY county prior to the apocalypse numbered 7,000,000, and within the downtown area, the 700,000 that had turned into zombies were decimated by the military. Throughout the region, there were still a total of over 6million zombies roaming. The current 1.2 million encroaching the surroundings of the downtown was but only one-fifth of the entire number.

[TN: Yes it's a little confusing. Basically think of SY County like a continent, with over 7 million people. The army had cleared the downtown area and claimed it for their own after defeating 700,000 zombies, 10% of the entire population. They started calling themselves SY County, even though it's a small part. There are still over 6m zombies around the entire County not yet explored, and currently 1.2m of them has gathered near the downtown area.]

However, to deal with just these 1.2 million zombies would be tricky. It must be clear that within SY County, there was only a regiment of 6,000 soldiers, and that regiment's firepower had been greatly reduced, while the new recruits were aplenty. Under these conditions, wanting to face off an enemy with over a 100 times their numbers, it was going to be incredibly difficult.

After he finished his investigations and confirmed the seriousness of the situation, Yue Zhong swiftly made his way back to his villa and called for a meeting to delegate duties amongst his commanders.

The next day, Yue Zhong arranged for the 8,000 survivors under

him to be moved to Ning Guang County.

Post-apocalypse, fuel was extremely valuable. The journey for the 8,000 survivors was not aided by any vehicles, therefore every single one of them had to make the journey on their own feet to Ning Guang County over a 100 li (50km) away. Only the warriors of the 8th Battalion and the Special Forces were escorting them on armored vehicles, within the survivor group, they were mostly women and children. Originally, without the nourishment of the Mutant Beast meat, just relying on their weak constitution and health, the journey would definitely take toll on at least over a hundred people. However, with the supplementary properties of the Mutant Beast meat, their health and vitality were recovered, and no one showed signs of dropping out of the journey.

Almost all the survivors harbored high hopes, and looked forward to a new life in a new place. Yue Zhong had given them a life that had steady meals, a decent living and these led them to anticipate a better future.

As for the 10,000 survivors that had been transferred from Tai Yiyan to his hands, he arranged for them to all work in the canned meat processing factory, pushing for the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat to be packed. At the same time, those meats from the Mutant Black Fish, Crayfish and Crabs were all processed into dry meat.

To bolster the strength of these 10,000 survivors for the migration journey to come, Yue Zhong specially distributed Type 2 Mutant Beast meat through Tai Yiyan to these survivors. Only the Type 2 Mutant Beast meat could quickly replenish and nourish their health, while the ordinary Mutant Beast meat might be delicacies hard to come by, compared to the more precious Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, the effects were not as beneficial.

When those 10,000 survivors ate the distributed Type 2 Mutant Beast meat, every single one of them regained their vitality swiftly, and became extremely energized, and their work became even faster.

Out of the 10,000 survivors, Yue Zhong then selected another 2,000 robust males, and formed a new preliminary group.

Chen Shitou was transferred to act as the chief instructor over this preliminary group, and started to train and instruct them. They were preparations made by Yue Zhong to replenish the ranks of the various teams as new recruits.

The preliminary team got to eat meat and rice everyday, and the food consisted of the meat from Mutant Black Fish as well as the Type 2 variant, causing the rest who were not selected to be envious. They wished to be selected as well, but Yue Zhong had closed off the selection after 2,000.

Furthermore, the back end factories all required manpower, to manufacture all sorts of weapons against the zombies, turning the hide and skin from the Mutant Beasts into protective garments, as well as repacking ammo. All these support jobs required manpower. Without sufficient people, the fighting forces would not have the equipment and supplies.

On the other side, as per Yue Zhong's commands, Liu Erhei, Xiong Zheng, Zhang Niujiang and Guo Quan brought 4 battalions to SY County. Guo Quan had become the first in command in Ning Guang County's First Battalion after Yue Zhong, and was in charge of Ning Guang County's First Battalion when Yue Zhong was not around.

These 4 battalions consisted of numerous elite veterans from Qing Yuan County that served as the backbone, and after countless battles against zombies, they had all grown together. They were no longer some motley crew that would fall apart at the first sign of trouble.

Yue Zhong's elite soldiers from Qing Yuan County within the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Battalion remained at Qing Yuan County, maintaining their defence and constant assault towards Long Hai County, wiping out the zombies towards the direction of Long Hai County.



They searched for resources, and rescued any survivors, expanding their power slowly.

The moment all 4 battalions of Yue Zhong arrived, the entire SY County was shocked. This time when Yue Zhong entered the city with grandeur, everyone could see the amount of preparation and equipment on each and every soldier of the battalions. On top of that, there were various advanced weaponry and machinery escorting the troops, including the 14.5mm Double Mounted machine guns, Red Arrows, Type 95 Anti-Air Missile vehicles, 40 self-propelled rocket launchers. They were not lacking in any sense. SY County's own army could not even compare with it.

When SY County had re-established themselves after the onset of the apocalypse, they only had 2 regiments left. These were the 2nd line of attack, and weren't the elite soldiers, they didn't even have tanks prior. The tanks and assault helicopters they obtained were borrowed for the purpose of the exercise. As for Yue Zhong, he had opened up a real Mechanized Infantry Brigade, and thus his equipment and weaponry was much more advanced.

# Chapter 293: The Supremely Tyrannical Yue Zhong!

---

The Special Forces, as well as the 7 snipers under Luo Tianyi aimed at Yue Zhong and fired the first chance they got.

Right as they aimed at Yue Zhong, he had already sensed the danger, and dashed to the right swiftly.

The 7 bullets missed him and hit the ground, creating 7 small holes.

On the other side, Bai He led 8 other snipers and they fired at the same time.

Following the 2nd round of gunshots, the Special Forces and 4 snipers under Luo Tianyi had their brains blasted into pieces.

When Yue Zhong was forced to evade, 2 Agility-based Enhancers could not stand waiting behind cover and immediately charged out while hoisting their .05 submachine guns as they fired wildly at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong just stood there like some Demon Lord incarnate, as the bullets bounced right off his Bone Armor. He opened his right hand, and 5 incredibly sharp spikes shot outwards, and with a little force the 2 Agility-based Enhancers were immediately sliced in 5 pieces.

After disposing of the 2 Enhancers easily, he continued charging forwards like a tank, gunning for Luo Tianyi's position.

"He is Yue Zhong!! Join me and take him down! Once he's killed, the rest will collapse!!" The top expert hired by Luo Tianyi, Chen Xiong saw Yue Zhong rushing in, and he hollered to the remaining 17 experts of his group.

The Bone Armor on Yue Zhong had become like his symbol. The moment Chen Xiong saw it, he recognized Yue Zhong, and he was

immediately filled with killing intent.

If Yue Zhong had not appeared, they would have definitely lost the battle. The only question was how much damage could they deal to Yue Zhong's troops before they lost. Now that he was personally here, it gave them a chance to turn the tides.

[TN: What a joke HAHAAHA]

The 18 experts, with Chen Xiong leading the charge, all stepped out from behind their cover, as they wielded all sorts of weapons and charged towards Yue Zhong.

"You're looking for death!" Yue Zhong looked at the soldiers charging at him and his eyes possessed a cold gleam. Swiping his ring, he swiftly pulled out a PF98 Anti-Tank Rocket Launcher in his hands.

With a roar and flash, a rocket swiftly flew out and exploded on one of the experts who was not wielding any weapons, preparing to use his Telekinesis ability.

With a loud explosion, the Telekinesis user was immediately blasted into pieces.

At the next moment, a huge vine burrowed out from the ground, shooting towards Yue Zhong. It was the Vine Manipulation ability of one of the Enhancers present.

3 other Strength-based Enhancers directly lifted their heavy weapons and rushed towards Yue Zhong.

There were 2 experts who had high levels in their Firearms Control, one was holding grenade launcher, and he fired at Yue Zhong. Due to the Firearms Control ability, they had superb aim, within a range of 100m, they would definitely hit their target.

6 Agility-based Enhancers activated their Shadow Steps and High Speed Movement abilities to charge at Yue Zhong. They knew normal bullets would not be able to hurt Yue Zhong, and since they did not carry any other weapons with them, they had to become a

form of attack themselves.

A Spirit-based Enhancer tried to use his Spirit Blast ability, only to discover that it was useless. As a Spirit-based Evolver, Yue Zhong's Spirit was averaging 11 times higher spirit than normal people, and the Spirit Blast attack from the Enhancer was simply ridiculous.

2 other Enhancers that possess the Summon Beast skill summoned a huge bear that towered over 2m, as well as a huge tiger. Both beasts shot towards Yue Zhong.

Other than that, there was a Enhancer with the Curse ability and he was currently chanting, as a magical symbol appeared in the sky, signifying the forming of a magic spell.

Chen Xiong himself was a Strength-based Evolver, and his Strength was beyond comparison. He wore the hide of a Type 2 Mutant Black Fish (They had earlier hunted a Type 2 Mutant Black Fish as well) that was remade into an armor piece, his head donning a helmet, and he carried a QJZ89 easily as he fired wildly at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong eyes stared icily, as he activated his Devil Flames, and a huge fireball was conjured out of thin air, immediately incinerating the vine below him. With just a wave of his hand, 5 Bone Spears were shot towards the 5 Agility-based Enhancers.

In that instant, the 5 bone spears pierced the heads of those 5 Agility-based Enhancers, stringing them up, and nailing them to the ground.

Chen Xiong was firing wildly with his QJZ89 at Yue Zhong, yet those bullets that could pierce holes in armored tanks, could only leave faint white scars on Yue Zhong's Bone Armor, at the same time the resulting explosion blew Yue Zhong back by a few metres.

Chen Xiong discovered that the hail of firepower could not do a single thing to Yue Zhong, and his eyes were filled with shock:

"How is this possible?? This is actually heavy ammunition, why is it that his defence could not be broken??"

Yue Zhong flashed about, and dodged the countless bullets and grenades, shooting towards Chen Xiong and activating his Devil Flame Skill again. A huge Devil Flame Tornado conjured out of thin air, and it consumed Chen Xiong, the 2 summoned beasts, as well as the 3 Strength-based Enhancers.

After the fire storm stopped, Chen Xiong and the 3 Strength-based Enhancers had been incinerated, even the QJZ89 in Chen Xiong's hands had melted into a pool of metal. Only the armour made of the Type 2 Mutant Black Fish was intact, which showed the freakish defence of the beast.

"I surrender!! Don't kill me!! I surrender!!" The remaining Agility-based Enhancer saw how tyrannical Yue Zhong was, that even Chen Xiong could not last a second, and he was so frightened that he immediately kneeled on the floor and threw his weapon down, bawling loudly.

Yue Zhong glanced at the Enhancer who lost his fighting will, and pointed at the Enhancer with the Curse Ability, as a fireball shot out and directly exploded on his head, causing his head to disappear.

"Surrender, or death! You have 3 seconds to make your decision!" Yue Zhong turned his head and looked at the remaining experts of Luo Tianyi coldly as he called out.

"I surrender, don't kill me!!!"

"Commander Yue!! I surrender! I surrender!"

"....."

The experts that were gathered by Luo Tianyi had hurriedly kneeled on the floor in fright. Yue Zhong's vicious methods had caused them to lose their courage. They did not dare put up any further resistance.

Yue Zhong eyed those Enhancers that submitted to him and said: "Good! Charge into Luo Tianyi's position!! I want them thoroughly wiped out."

"Yes!! Commander Yue!!!"

"Yes!!"

"....."

The remaining 7 experts quickly acknowledged and followed behind Yue Zhong to charge into Luo Tianyi's base.

With Yue Zhong leading this group, they quickly arrived in front of Luo Tianyi.

The Enhancer with the Spirit Blast ability immediately used his ability on those soldiers of Luo Tianyi when he saw them, and most of them died on the spot with their eyes turning white and leaking blood tears before throwing up blood and dying.

Ulamog: I am SO not mopping that up.

The 2 summoning experts immediately called out 10 huge wolves. On orders they shot forward with incredible speed, charging into the ranks of the soldiers and gleefully ripping out their throats.

The Agility-based Enhancer zipped about, appearing from behind corners and used his guns to great effect, picking off the soldiers one by one.

The Enhancer that had the Vine Manipulation ability was extremely crafty as well. Using his power from time to time, he would cause his vines to burrow out of the ground, penetrating the ordinary soldiers feet or suddenly growing up into their bodies, killing them.

Yue Zhong was still decked in his Bone Armor, wielding his .05 submachine guns and charging in the front. With only his individual strength, he managed to suppress the troops of Luo Tianyi. Those soldiers who were unfortunate to poke their heads

out would immediately be shot in the head by him.

With only this small group of experts led by Yue Zhong, the entire army of Luo Tianyi was defeated.

Xu Zhengang saw the development, and immediately ordered the 2nd and 3rd Battalion to join the battle, making their way towards Luo Tianyi in a rush.

Luo Tianyi's troops as well as the Special Forces could not maintain their resistance, and started to retreat towards SY County.

As Yue Zhong's troops were hot in pursuit, a group consisting of the police, armed police and Special Forces had constructed a few defences, forcefully impeding the advance of Yue Zhong's 2nd and 3rd Battalion.

Peng Mingde personally came to the frontlines, and made use of a loudhailer to speak to Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong!! I am Peng Mingde!! I want you to call off your army now!! This is an internal matter between our factions in SY County, you shouldn't interfere too much."

Peng Mingde continued in his self-righteous voice: "Commander Liu, Commander Shen, things can be talked through. We should settle this amicably over a meeting, and stop the pointless slaughter amongst ourselves. If you continue, the soldiers are the ones who suffer. They are all important and excellent soldiers, if they had to die, it should be during a battle against the zombies, for the sake of our country. Not in these internal conflicts. Just because of your own fury, you guys have caused the needless deaths of so many soldiers, don't you feel ashamed?"

Peng Mingde was after all a politician, and whenever he spoke, he tried to use logic and reason to sway the masses. Hearing Peng Mingde's words, the troops of Qian Weimin and Liu Huifeng were moved.

Liu Huifeng eyes went red as he grabbed a loudhailer and shouted: "Peng Mingde! Fuck your bullshit! Today your daddy, I, want the heads of those bastards Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi! Because of them, so many of our brothers have died. If they're not dead, your words are meaningless!!"

Peng Mingde had a strange glint in his eyes: "As long as Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi are dead, you will not pursue the matter?"

Liu Huifeng replied loudly: "Of course!! As long as the 2 of them are dead! Your daddy, I, won't continue fighting!"



# Chapter 294: Conquering SY County

---

"Good! Make sure you keep your word!!" Peng Mingde's mouth raised in an arc, as he waved his hands, and 2 Special Forces brought out Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi in front of the 2 armies.

Su Dongming's expression was steely, as he cursed out: "Peng Mingde! You damn bastard, you will die a horrible death!!"

Luo Tianyi's eyes were bloodshot as he stared at Peng Mingde: "Peng Mingde!! Fuck you and your entire family! Fuck your mother with a pointy stick!!!"

The moment Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi had retreated, they were immediately captured by the experts sent by Peng Mingde. They did not expect that the allies that had helped them not long ago would turn on them so quickly.

Peng Mingde spoke in a clear voice: "Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi had abandoned their posts during the great battle, and had instigated a coup against their allies, there is evidence to prove it. For their crimes, they will be executed according to military law! Carry out the punishment!!"

2 armed police stepped out and aimed their guns at the heads of Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi, and pulled the trigger!

Bang! Bang!

Following the gunshots, Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi had a new hole in their heads leaking blood, as they slumped to the floor lifelessly.

Peng Mingde looked on as Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi died, his eyes flashed with delight. After their deaths, he could easily subdue the old troops of these 2 men. Counting the police, armed police and Special Forces that he now controlled, he could become the strongest power in SY County.

Liu Huifeng and Shen Hongyang had already been defeated, he

would possess the strongest force. He could then employ other means in the future to slowly take over their military as well and thoroughly control SY County.

Liu Huifeng looked at the lifeless bodies of Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi, and he finally released the bit of anger he had kept, but at the same time, he felt the loss.

Right at this time, Yue Zhong brought his Special Forces and charged into the ranks of Liu Huifeng, pointing a gun at Liu Huifeng and spoke coldly: "Commander Liu! You have 2 choices now! The first is to surrender to me, and integrate into my troops. The other is to die with your troops!"

At almost the same time Yue Zhong made his move, Ning Guang County's 2nd and 3rd Battalions also turned on the troops of Liu Huifeng.

Qian Weimin's troops had already been captured and locked after they were saved by Yue Zhong.

Liu Huifeng looked at the gun pointed at his head and he laughed bitterly: "If I surrender, what will become of my subordinates?"

Yue Zhong did not hide anything and said: "All the soldiers will receive education, and reintegrate into many different units under me. I will treat them fairly!"

Liu Huifeng's troops were veteran soldiers that Yue Zhong valued. Initially, Yue Zhong had sent troops to help Liu Huifeng because he was eyeing the veterans.

Liu Huifeng seemed to be agreeable, and he asked: "What about me, what treatment will I receive if I surrender?"

Yue Zhong sincerely extended his invitation: "You will get to enjoy the privileges of a Lieutenant Colonel. Furthermore, I would like to invite you to become a military instructor in my military school, and provide training to my officers in all forms of modern warfare."

Yue Zhong's military school lacked the guidance of an experienced military instructor, and he had no choice but to select outstanding commanders like Xu Zhengang to be on the frontlines often. The reasoning was of course to lead his military, save survivors and engage in resource hunting. The military academy did lack an instructor with the adequate experience and knowledge in modern warfare.

Yue Zhong had obtained many incredible equipments from the Mechanized Infantry Brigade after all, but he lacked the professional knowledge, and hence could not utilize them. If he had the necessary technicians, his units' combat prowess would definitely increase by a few times.

Yue Zhong had done his investigations, and although Liu Huifeng was kind of a pervert, and had married 3 wives after the apocalypse, his character was not bad. The 3 wives also followed him willingly. Although he did not have any outstanding achievements in his command, he followed the rules, and was extremely sturdy as a leader. He did possess the qualifications as a Commander.

Liu Huifeng laughed lightly, and replied light-heartedly: "Sure! I surrender!"

Liu Huifeng surrendered and his troops also put down their weapons and went with Yue Zhong willingly. Liu Huifeng's troops had fought for a very long time, and when they arrived at the rooms assigned to them, they fell into a deep slumber.

Shen Hongyang looked at the loaded gun in front of him and said: "What is the meaning of this?"

At this moment, Shen Hongyang, Shen Xue and a few of their military officers were being surrounded at their place of residence. A few heavy weapons were aimed at them, and 300 soldiers had enclosed the area, not allowing even water to trickle past.

Zhang Niujiang stepped up and spoke directly: "Commander

Shen! I apologize, but we have to keep you here. We have already arranged for all sorts of heavy artillery to aim here, if there's any strange movement, then we're terribly sorry, but we will blast you guys to death."

Shen Hongyang was a good commander who treated his subordinates fairly. If he was taken down, the troops would definitely not follow Yue Zhong willingly, and Yue Zhong would have no choice but to kill them all. Therefore, he had no choice but to temporarily trap Shen Hongyang. Of course, if Shen Hongyang really decided to try something, Yue Zhong would not hesitate to wipe him out.

Shen Hongyang looked at Zhang Niujiang, as he furrowed his brows and asked softly: "Battalion Commander Zhang! Is Yue Zhong finally going to make his move on SY County?"

This time SY County had suffered a huge loss against the zombies, all the military heads had lost the majority of their troops. Yue Zhong who had always kept his eye on SY County could find no better time to subdue them all.

The laws of the jungle, the strong preyed on the weak. Even after the apocalypse, it had not changed. As long as someone revealed his or her weakness, there would be countless hungry wolves that would pounce at the first opportunity. When Yue Zhong was weak, SY County had wanted to conquer and subdue him. Now he was stronger than them, he naturally would not hesitate to do the same. Only when both sides possessed the same strength, could there be equality and peaceful negotiations.

Zhang Niujiang had a worshipping look as he affirmed the news: "Yes! Our Boss Yue wants to control the whole SY County!"

Shen Hongyang sighed, and did not speak further. Now that Yue Zhong had set his mind on it, and was willing to pay any price, controlling the entire SY County was not an impossible task.

On the frontlines, Peng Mingde eyed Yue Zhong's army that still

had not retreated, and a bad feeling arose in his heart, as of now, the only person that could stop him from being the king of SY was Yue Zhong.

Peng Mingde raised the loudhailer and called out: "Commander Liu, Yue Zhong, are you guys there? Let's have a good discussion!!"

Yue Zhong walked out with huge strides and eyed Peng Mingde and said lightly: "Peng Mingde! Surrender now! If you get your men to surrender, I can still leave you with a way out."

Peng Mingde's face had a huge change, as he forcefully replied: "Yue Zhong, what are you talking about? Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi who had betrayed you guys have already been dealt with right? What reasons would you have to continue fighting!! Don't tell me you're thinking of betraying your comrades and the government?! If you're like this, you will become a sinner that went against his country and citizens!!"

"Attack! Annihilate those who dare resist!" Yue Zhong waved his hand, and shouted out the command.

With a 'bang'!

A bloody bullet hole appeared in Peng Mingde's head, as he fell to the floor.

Bai He had hidden himself 2km away and exhibited his fearsome sniping skills, directly taking out Peng Mingde who had carelessly revealed his position.

Following Yue Zhong's orders, 12 Howitzers displayed their incredible offense, as rounds of heavy artillery landed amongst the police force.

Bombarded by the attacks of the rockets, a huge number of the police, armed police and Special Forces were immediately incinerated. The death of Peng Mingde, who they had sworn loyalty to, caused them to lose their morale.

The members of the police force tried escaping under the

relentless attacks, abandoning all thoughts of resistance.

Xu Zhengang had ordered the soldiers of the 2nd and 3rd Battalions to charge at the desolate soldiers of Peng Mingde.

The battle lasted only for a while, and Yue Zhong was incredibly successful. Everywhere he went, the police surrendered without a fight. Those who tried to resist were instantly executed by the soldiers of Yue Zhong's forces.

This group of policemen, armed police and Special Forces had been so easy to subdue was precisely because Peng Mingde had been assassinated. The other reason was that due to Peng Mingde wanting to exert his full control over this unit, he had cleared out many of the officials, and all the members of the unit were feeling fearful and naturally did not have much fighting spirit.

"Boss Situ! What do we do now?" Peng Mingde's 20 experts had gathered by Situ Guang's side, as they all looked to him fearfully.

The experts gathered by Peng Mingde were fighters who could take on 10 individually, but compared to Yue Zhong's army, it was like a mantis trying to block a car. They could at most give Yue Zhong a little trouble.

Situ Guang's eyes had a strange glint: "We can't stay here any longer!! We have already done so much for Peng Mingde. Let us leave now. Under the broad sky, based on our abilities, can't we carve something out for ourselves?"

Situ Guang had always been wild at heart. With Peng Mingde's death, no one could hold him back any longer.

"Good! We will follow Boss Situ and make a name for ourselves!"

"Let's go obtain a stronghold for ourselves!!"

"....."

The 20 members of the elite group whooped in delight, and under the lead of Situ Guang, they made their escape towards the

distance.

As SY County was really big, Situ Guang just had to follow the longer road and could avoid the bridge that Guo Quan was guarding to leave the county. Although the huge lands were filled with zombies, to experts like them, as long as the number did not exceed tens of thousands, ordinary zombies were helpless against them.

With the escape of Situ Guang and his gang, the entire SY County had no other experts left to stand up to Yue Zhong. His troops quickly conquered and controlled the important channels of SY County. At the same time, any form of rebellion or mobs that arose were quickly quelled by him.

After gaining control of SY County, Yue Zhong swiftly gave the order for his troops to rejuvenate themselves. At the same time, he assigned for the preliminary warriors to quickly begin work on the entrance of SY City and SY County. The horde of zombies were making their way here, and he had to make his preparations fast.

[TN: Somehow I feel that Situ Guang and the Lie Tianyang might join forces. Also, here, it's expressly stated that the place they are in is SY City, whereas the entire SY County is the whole area. So they're guarding the City now.]

# Chapter 295: The Urgent 12 Hours

---

"How much longer until the horde reaches us?" Yue Zhong asked the recon soldier in front of him in a heavy tone.

The recon soldier immediately replied: "Based on their current speed, it would take them roughly 12 hours to reach our first line of defence!"

Yue Zhong looked at the bloodshot eyes of the soldier and said: "Go have a good rest!!"

"Yes Commander!" The soldier saluted and withdrew quickly.

"Just 12 hours? It's really too rushed!!" Yue Zhong frowned, his heart filled with anxiety.

The horde that was coming closer to SY numbered in the 800,000s. Based on the current fighting strength of SY County, they would not be able to withstand the assault of that number. Although Yue Zhong absorbed the remaining military unit and police unit, the total number of fighters reaching 1,300, they could not be deployed straightaway. The 4 battalions of Yue Zhong had engaged the zombies previously, and had to escape with their lives, followed by the internal conflicts, they were extremely tired as well. Furthermore, the heavy weapons belonging to the military had been left behind during the battle against the zombies, without heavy weaponry or fortification, trying to defend against the sea of zombies was simply impossible.

It was a situation where he had to give up SY County. However, the current 140,000 survivors inside, having to transfer them was also a huge issue.

Firstly, to gather all 140,000 was a problem in itself. As Yue Zhong had just disposed of the governing head Peng Mingde, the entire government had become paralyzed. Many officials had fled their posts, those who stayed behind were wary and unsure of



their future. Since the government was ineffective now, trying to mobilize all 140,000 survivors would definitely require more time.

Yue Zhong told a signal officer to convey his orders: "Go get Tai Yiyan, Cheng Peipei, Lu Chenguang, Liu Yujiao, Yun Qiang, Shen Hongyang and bring them here. I want to see them here within 20 minutes. Tell them, if they aren't here after 20 minutes, they can forget about finding me in the future."

The signal officer nodded and immediately left to carry out his duty.

Yue Zhong then pulled Chen Shitou over and questioned him: "Chen Shitou! Go get the 8th Battalion and gather the survivors. Take those from Xinyang Street, Zhongshan Street, Yanjing Street and Xijian Street, and gather them up. After that's done, transfer them according to order over the riverbank bridge and get them to Ning Guang County. How much time do you need?"

Chen Shitou thought for awhile, before looking at Yue Zhong resolutely and replied: "6 hours!! Please give me 6 hours! I promise to carry it out properly!"

Yue Zhong was a little short-tempered and he shouted out: "4 hours! I will only give you 4 hours!! After those 4 hours, you better be taking those people across the bridge!! After they cross the bridge, give every single one of them a can of Type 2 Meat. Eat as they move! If you can't complete this, you can forget about being a battalion commander anymore!!"

Yue Zhong only had 12 hours to work with, and he had to gather all 140,000 survivors within 12 hours, it was extremely difficult. What's more, he had to get them across the riverbank bridge that was not exactly wide.

Other than those 140,000, there were the few 100,000 tonnes of rations, various other foods, precious machinery, other kinds of production materials that required transportation as well. These were all important items to be sent out of SY County.

Every minute every second counted, and time was extremely precious. If there wasn't enough time to transport all 140,000 people over the bridge, Yue Zhong had to get his precious soldiers to fight and buy precious time for the transportation to be carried out. That kind of price where he had to put his life and his soldiers' lives on the line, was something he was not willing to pay so easily. The immense pressure was weighing down on Yue Zhong, and it caused him to be frustrated, and his temper was shorter.

After all, Yue Zhong was only human. Even though he had gained a lot of enhancements through his own efforts, these 2 days he had been fighting on the frontline as much as he could, and his rest time was extremely short. Under that huge pressure, he was naturally less amiable.

Chen Shitou frowned, and he asked directly: "What do I do if those survivors don't want to co-operate?"

In this world, there are many types of people, some who liked to wreak havoc under the pressure of imminent danger, and there would definitely be accidents.

Yue Zhong replied with an icy voice: "I'll permit you to use any means to complete this mission. I only want results, I don't care about the process!"

Chen Shitou shuddered in his heart as replied loudly: "Yes! I will perform this well!!"

After making the promise, Chen Shitou quickly ran out from the small room. 4 hours, was incredibly tough and urgent for him.

Within 20 minutes, Tai Yiyan, Cheng Peipei, Lu Chenguang, Liu Yujiao, Yun Qiang and Shen Hongyang had all gathered in front of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong was the controller of SY County now, a single order could cause their entire family to be razed to the ground, they could not afford to offend him.

Yue Zhong glanced at Tai Yiyan and the other 4 excluding Shen Hongyang and said: "Tai Yiyan, Cheng Peipei, Lu Chenguang, Liu Yujiao and Yun Qiang, when you go back, immediately gather all the survivors towards the riverbank bridge and await orders! The more survivors that are gathered that, the better I'll reward you after."

The Tai family, Cheng family, Lu family, Liu Yujiao and Yun Qiang had decent authority within SY County. Yue Zhong could only make use of these heads to quickly mobilize the numerous survivors within the city, as he was not yet the widely accepted leader unlike in Ning Guang County and Qing Yuan County.

Tai Yiyan was astute and could detect some hint of urgency within Yue Zhong's words and asked: "Brother Yue, did something happen?"

The other 5 picked up on Tai Yiyan's concern and also looked towards Yue Zhong. They had felt that something was wrong. Yue Zhong was never this anxious, and his words revealed that his current mood.

Yue Zhong had a dark look as he said softly: "After 11 hours, the zombie horde of SY County will reach the city. That is to say, SY City has only 11 hours left."

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, all of the 6 people present had a huge change in expression. They did not expect that things would be dire to this extent.

When the army was defeated, and the clash amongst the heads happened, under those conditions, the huge horde of zombies were basically unhindered and had no enemies. SY City was basically a sitting duck.

Cheng Peipei knew Yue Zhong would not lie about such a grave matter, but she still could not help and ask: "Is this real, Yue Zhong?"

"Yes!" Yue Zhong looked towards Shen Hongyang who was kept prisoner in his own home earlier, and immediately stated his terms: "Commander Shen! I apologize for the treatment earlier. I had no choice then, and I need your help now."

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at Shen Hongyang and said softly: "As long as you send your troops and help us tide this over, I just want 10 tanks, 7 assault helicopters and their support personnel. After we're done with this, I can let you and your troops take a fixed amount of ammo, 2 tonnes of fuel, a 100 tonnes of food and leave. Wherever you want to go, I would definitely not stop you."

Although Yue Zhong valued the veterans under Shen Hongyang, if he were to kill Shen Hongyang now, he would not dare to utilize the troops. Shen Hongyang's position within his troops was still very high. Killing Shen Hongyang would just force the remaining troops to take up arms against Yue Zhong.

Shen Hongyang smiled lightly, as he looked at Yue Zhong, his eyes twinkling with a little pride: "If I cannot even protect the citizens, how can my troops be called an army? This time even if I help you, it isn't for anything else, but the citizens of SY County. After this battle, I am willing to hand my troops to you, but I hope that you will treat them fairly."

When compared to Su Dongming and Luo Tianyi, Shen Hongyang was truly different, he valued his subordinates, and was truly a commander who fought for his country. Even in a world where values and principles were trampled upon, Shen Hongyang was still someone who stuck to his beliefs, even if it was a little naive.

Yue Zhong was surprised, and he nodded: "Fine! Don't worry. I will definitely treat them fairly!!"

After the meeting concluded, the 6 people quickly left the place and embarked on their duties.

Yue Zhong also released all the troops under Shen Hongyang that

were captured, and returned their light weapons to them. As for heavy weapons, each person was allocated a grenade only.

Without heavy weapons, Shen Hongyang's troops did not pose a threat to Yue Zhong, the only people they had to be wary of, were the experts.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the entire SY City had begun moving.

The 2000-over soldiers at the forefront of SY City were currently using whatever materials they had to construct their fortifications. All sorts of barbed wires, steel wires, barricades, cones, even some old-fashioned defences were brought out.

The barricades and traffic cones were simple and crude but were extremely efficient against the ordinary zombies. To Yue Zhong's troops, the ordinary zombies were the toughest to deal with, instead of the evolved ones, due to their numbers. The ordinary zombies gave an impression that they were endless. If it wasn't for the huge numbers of the ordinary zombies, the military would have annihilated the evolved zombies long ago.

On the riverbank bridge, there were numerous vehicles constantly transporting food and rations over to the other side, placing them down, and then using the bridge to re-enter SY City and continue their moving.

Once the rations were transported to the other end, they were safe for the time being.

Within SY City, Chen Shitou and Tai Yiyan were gathering people near the bridge, separating them into groups of male, women, elderly and children.

After the apocalypse, there were still the elderly around, although their numbers were not high, being about 5% of the total number of survivors.

Guo Quan assigned soldiers to guard the bridge. It was after all the lifeline for Yue Zhong's troops, if something were to happen to

it, Yue Zhong and his army would be trapped in SY City. If they wanted to go to Ning Guang County from there, they would have to go by a detour of around 100 km, going into dangerous areas which they had not yet explored.

After making a series of arrangement, Yue Zhong handed over the running of the tasks to Da Gouzi. He had always been assisting Yue Zhong in overseeing affairs and transfer of goods and people. In fact was extremely familiar with all the different types of jobs. With the help of Da Gouzi, Yue Zhong could also heave a sigh of relief.

Yue Zhong walked out of the office, and felt that the horizon looked a little dark. He lifted his head, only to see dark clouds gathering, the air humid, as though it was going to rain.

"The weather, don't tell me it's going to rain??" Yue Zhong's expression turned ugly as he thought.

Mobilizing troops in the rain was the toughest even for the well-trained soldiers. Not to mention those survivors who had undergone so much hardships and weren't in the best of health.

If preparations were not made for those survivors to move in the rain, the moment it poured there would be at least a fourth of them who would fall and never get up again.

"Fuck!!" Yue Zhong could not help but swear, as he hurriedly rushed into the command centre.

Yue Zhong had a green expression as he called out: "Da Gouzi! Immediately notify Guo Quan, get him to think of a way to prepare some umbrellas and raincoats. And quickly distribute the Type 2 meat to those survivors that have gathered, make sure they eat it!! Those items that have been moved over the bridge, find some place to shelter them now!"

Da Gouzi nodded his head, and immediately conveyed the command to Guo Quan: "Yes! Commander Yue!!"

Xu Yang, who had been promoted to a deputy Commander of a company grumbled to Guo Quan: "Battalion Commander!! The leader's orders are too rigorous! We only have a battalion's worth of people here, how can we manage so much?"

Guo Quan's 1st Battalion of Ning Guang County only had 400 people, not only did they have to maintain security over the bridge, they had to keep watch over those people who were being moved across the bridge, and they were in charge of distributing the Type 2 Meat as well, everyone was worked to the bone.

Guo Quan looked to Xu Yang ordered: "The orders from our Leader has to be followed, regardless of how harsh it gets! Xu Yang, take some men and get some helpers from the survivors. Tell them to help distribute the Type 2 Meat. The umbrellas and raincoats, you can assign them to other people as well, try your best to find them."

Umbrellas and raincoats were items that were hard to find in such a short time. Guo Quan understood Yue Zhong's desire to save these survivors, and made the best judgement, as he handed out the Type 2 meat to the survivors. As long as they ate the meat, they could recover their vitality quickly. That way, they stood a fighting chance. If they didn't have the meat, the moment they were caught in the rain, their weak bodies might collapse from hypothermia.

"Yes! Battalion Commander!" Xu Yang replied, and he went to the survivors, and used the price of 10 jin of rice to hire over 400 survivors to help him.

The moment Xu Yang expressed that there would be free food given out, a long line formed in front of the 400 helpers.

Every survivor was given a ammo cartridge, and it was the necessary item to exchange for a can of meat. As long as they handed over a shell casing , they were given a can of Type 2 meat.

# Chapter 296: Cruel, Cruel Rain

---

"You stole my canned meat!! You stole my canned meat!!"

Just as Xu Yang was leading the troops in their distribution, there was a kid tugging on a middle-aged man who had just exchanged for a canned meat and was shouting loudly.

The middle-aged man eyes flashed fiercely, and he kicked out with viciousness, knocking the kid to the floor. "You little bastard! Who the fuck are you calling a thief!! Your daddy, I, used the ammo cartridge to exchange for this canned meat! Call out one more time, and I'll cripple you!"

"Stop!!" Xu Yang frowned and walked over, asking: "What's going on?"

The middle-aged man bowed and nodded his head towards Xu Yang and said: "Bro!! This little bastard is framing me for stealing his canned meat. I had exchanged this canned meat for the ammo cartridge. The worker over there can vouch for me!!"

Xu Yang looked towards the worker.

The worker swiftly nodded his head and said: "It's true! He did exchange an ammo cartridge for a canned meat."

Xu Yang looked at the kid and said coldly: "Little brat! What do you have to say for yourself?"

The kid stood up, and had an enraged expression as he pointed at the man and said: "This man stole my ammo cartridge to exchange for the canned meat!! He still has one more cartridge within his clothes. Check him if you don't believe me!"

Xu Yang commanded: "Grab him!"

2 soldiers stepped towards the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man's face turned pale, as he took a few steps back, before calling out loudly: "The army is killing people!! The



army is killing people!! Help me!! Help me!!"

This middle-aged man was the leader of a small band of thieves, during the post-apocalypse, he had also gathered a small group of brothers. With his shout, his comrades hidden within the survivors also started shouting: "The army is killing people!! The army is killing us!! Let's escape!!"

After which, those thieves immediately made their escape towards different directions.

Humans are easily influenced in a crowd. When those words were shouted, a number of the survivors could not help but became fearful and followed the lead of the thieves.

Guo Quan who was standing further away saw the group of escaping people, and he gritted his teeth before shouting the order: "Open fire!!!"

In an instant, the soldiers that were on standby opened fire on those survivors, and a dense hail of bullets rained upon the survivors, turning them into sieves within a few moments.

In just 10 seconds, 200 people had fallen to the ground in huge pools of blood, many of them crying out in pain. Guo Quan was helpless and felt even more pained. They only had 300 people, to quell any sort of commotion, they had to resort to the harshest means, otherwise the entire group could overcome their small unit.

"Who dares to run! You will be executed immediately! Who dares shout nonsense, you will be shot as well!! Get down on the floor! No one moves! Whoever moves will die!" Xu Yang's expression was steely by now, and used his gun to aim at the man who instigated the riot, before pulling the trigger.

With a peng, the middle-aged man who had had a smug look was shot dead, and his body slumped to the floor like a limp noodle.

During the frenzied firing, those survivors had screamed out in

terror, and fell to the ground. Their bodies trembled non-stop, not daring to move.

Xu Yang had a steely expression, as he looked towards the direction of the other instigators: "Fucking bastards! Damn you, you bastards! We are giving you a lifeline out of goodwill, we gave you food and drinks! You spineless scum dare to give us trouble! Where are those assholes who shouted earlier?"

Silence, every single survivor was silent. Under the influence of the corrupted society, everyone minded their own business, no one daring to meddle too much. After all, those troublemakers were together, they did not want to invite trouble.

Xu Yang's eyes flashed with rage and killing intent. With a gesture over 10 soldiers raised their .03 rifles and pointed them at the survivors, as Xu Yang shouted: "You don't want to say right? Fine! You have backbone! Men! Prepare to execute the whole bunch of them!! Since there are people who dare to create trouble, and those who know but aren't stepping forward to point them out, kill the whole lot of them!!"

Seeing those gleaming black guns, the survivors could not bear it and they started pointing fingers at the band of thieves as they shouted: "Don't shoot!! It's this guy!! They are the ones who shouted earlier!! It's him!!!"

Those band of thieves saw that the situation was against their favour and they tried to frame others: "It was obviously you who said it, you dare to say it's me!!"

Xu Yang directly got his subordinates to drag those survivors who were pointed out. He then chose one, whom after confirming the authenticity by checking with the majority, he beheaded in front of everybody.

Seeing the fresh blood spraying up into the air in front of them like some demented apocalyptic rain, the survivors all felt terrified.

Xu Yang directed his gaze at those he dragged out and coldly said: "Those who lied, the moment you are caught, you will be beheaded! Those who own up and point out the rest I can give you leave to go with your life. Those who tried to take advantage to malign others, if I find out, I'll break your waist!"

Under Xu Yang's cruel methods, the instigators of the riot were quickly identified. 2 males were beheaded immediately, while another had his waist broken. The poor bloke did not die instantly, instead he struggled on the floor in excruciating agony, for a long while before dying with a final painful whimper.

Seeing the brutal and bloody scene, all the remaining survivors were thoroughly shocked and did not dare make any strange moves.

One of the soldiers pointed to the 7 remaining troublemakers who owned up and asked Xu Yang: "Commander! What do we do with these assholes?"

Xu Yang waved his hands: "Send them to the scum battalion!"

The Scum Battalion was basically cannon fodder for Yue Zhong, and was always in need of manpower.

After the dust settled on the mini riot, Xu Yang walked to the front of the survivors, and he held a loudhailer as he shouted: "All you bastards listen up! If anyone dares stir up anymore trouble, you better point him out at the first chance you get. Otherwise, you will all be sent to the Scum Battalion to fight with the zombies ON THE FRONTLINE!! And, everyone only gets one canned meat. If you dare steal anyone else's, I will send those thieves to the scum battalion as well!"

Facing the arduous journey to come, a can of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat was equivalent to a survivor's life. Stealing a can that could replenish someone's vitality was the same as stealing the chance for the person to live. Xu Yang had to reinforce this, and mete out heavy punishments for infractions. Only through this

method could he control the survivors and keep them from getting out of hand.

The survivors saw that Xu Yang was like an enraged, vicious god, and their expressions were frozen in fear. No one dared to move or say anything.

Xu Yang took a can of Type 2 Mutant Beast meat and threw it to the kid and said: "Here, it's yours! Dig in quickly!"

The boy immediately opened the can, and started devouring it. The moment the meat entered his body, he could feel the warmth spreading throughout his body, filling his little frame with a rush of energy.

Right at this time, raindrops started to fall from the sky.

"Damn you heavens!!!" Xu Yang looked to the skies, and under the sudden downpour, he could not help but curse.

With the heavy rain, the survivors gathered were instantly drenched. They looked at Xu Yang and the soldiers surrounding them, not daring to move.

"What do we do now? Commander!!" Xu Yang had been drenched to the toes as he ran to Guo Quan and asked.

"Immediately dispatch people to cross the bridge!!!" Guo Quan looked at the untimely downpour, and he gritted his teeth as he spat out.

Xu Yang's face fell, "What? Now? Those bastards don't have any raincoats, they will definitely be drenched!!!"

Guo Quan's eyes flashed with a pained expression, before he gave the order resolutely: "We only have 7 hours left. The horde will then catch up with us!! The people who have crossed the bridge are not even in the ten thousands!! We still have over 130,000 people waiting behind!! Everyone needs to cross now!! This is an order!! Go carry it out, I'll shoulder all responsibilities!!"

This command was extremely harsh!

With the current downpour, expecting the survivors to cross without any raincoats, coupled with the fact that their bodies are so weak, they were bound to fall sick. Even if they crossed the bridge and didn't die on the spot, many of them would definitely fall ill and be too sick to move.

Although Yue Zhong had the Life-Saving Grass, but it had no effect to the common ailments such as flu and fever, that had no poison. SY County was also short on medical supplies. One could imagine the potential casualties of those who got caught in the rain.

Xu Yang had a grim look as he replied: "Yes! Commander! I'll go carry out your orders! Whatever happens, I'll shoulder them with you!"

After that, Xu Yang hurried left to convey the command, and quickly rushed the different groups into crossing the bridge.

The younger children were the future of humanity, while the females could bear more children. Although it was extremely cruel, the elderly, especially those without any special skills were the last to cross the bridge. They were holed up in a nearby building, only after the majority had crossed was it their turn. Unless they were doctors or scientists that had some value to the future of mankind, they did not receive any special treatment.

In the heavy rain, countless survivors were herded across the bridge, walking towards the other side. After they had crossed, they had to continue for another 500m before they came to a building to rest. Only by crossing the bridge, could they be considered safe.

## Chapter 297: Tough Crossing

---

The autumn rain was extremely chilly, and the heavy downpour beating down on the survivors caused their bodies to tremble uncontrollably. The Type 2 Meat was not a wonder drug after all. In that cold harsh rain, the weaker survivors fell amidst the downpour, never to get up again.

Amongst those who fell, there were children, women, and men, but regardless of who it was, no one would help to support them. The people behind continued to push the human sea forward while trampling on the dead, and the people forward had no choice but to continue moving or join the ones on the ground.

Even when the soldiers under Yue Zhong saw this happening, they could only harden their hearts and ignored it. They had to get the survivors across the bridge as soon as possible. Every minute they delayed, the soldiers fighting at the frontlines would have to stay put a little longer.

Under the 1st Battalion's watchful gaze, the survivors lined up obediently, crossing the bridge according to the given order. Nonetheless, the speed was at its maximum and could not be quickened.

The bridge was 500 m long, and the number of people that could cross per hour was at most 12,000 people. This was under the condition that there was no blockade, and was the fastest speed they could muster.

After 7 hours, approximately 80,000 survivors had crossed the bridge, at the same time, 400 had collapsed on the way. The heavy downpour not only claimed the lives of the weaker survivors, it had impeded the actions of Tai Yiyan and the rest of the group. No one wanted to be drenched in the rain as well.

After 7 hours, the warriors on the frontline together with Yue Zhong saw the sea of zombies approaching from the distance.

The moment the horde appeared, all sorts of firepower was rained upon the horde.

Facing the assault of the heavy weaponry, the zombies in the front were like wheat that was reaped, falling down line by line. Very soon, the zombies behind shambled forward to fill the gaps. At the same time, there were other zombies laying around that got up slowly and started to push towards SY City as well.

Those steel barbed wires, barricades and various other blockades exhibited their effectiveness, as those ordinary zombies that only knew how to advance were caught and fell to the ground. Same as the humans the fallen zombies were being trampled by the zombies behind, turning them into piles of meat mush.

The cones and sharp fortifications caused countless other zombies to be impeded and killed even. However, the moment those L2s that towered above 2m appeared on the battlefield, they used their monstrous strength to forcefully crush those fortifications.

The zombies relied on their numbers and lack of fear for death, carving a path out for themselves in their steady advance.

The sea of zombies was an extremely simple yet terrifying tactic. Just relying on their endless numbers and their disregard for death, they could go on forever.

Yue Zhong and Shen Hongyang's troops had joined together and were killing the zombies constantly, but could feel the taxing nature of having to deal with such a tactic. Regardless of how many zombies they killed, there would be more from behind to replenish the ranks. They lost position after position, as they retreated at each juncture.

"Guo Quan, what's the status report on the bridge crossing? Hurry, check and reply back to me!" On the frontlines, Yue Zhong was wielding a .05 submachine gun and firing wildly at the horde, while he was shouting into the walkie talkie with the other hand.

Facing the hundreds of thousands of zombies, even if Yue Zhong was a dual-attribute Evolver, he was practically useless. He had stood at the forefront, because he wanted to use his own power to lessen the pressure on the other soldiers.

Guo Quan swiftly replied: "91,000 survivors have crossed!"

Flames of fury arose in Yue Zhong's heart, as he was gunning down tens of zombies, he shouted into the walkie-talkie, enraged: "What the fuck are you doing? How come there are only 91,000 of them across?"

The 800,000 zombies was moving towards them like tidal waves of the sea. Yue Zhong's warriors were forced to abandon their posts as they retreated bit by bit.

It was a critical situation, all the soldiers were feeling the fatigue. They had been engaged in long hours of warfare, and had not gotten the necessary rest. They were humans, not robots, and could not withstand such long intense battles. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong standing like a general in front of them, igniting their morale and fighting spirit like a fighting god, they would have collapsed long ago.

Regardless of how much Yue Zhong inspired the troops, the fact was that the soldiers were exhausted. If the intense battle was to go on for too long, they would not be able to hold up. The assault of the sea of zombies was simply too ferocious, even in the cold rain, many of the barrels were overheating and became useless. Numerous soldiers had swollen shoulders because of the recoil, and they were relying on their fighting breaths and will to hang on.

As long as the leader was not useless, the soldiers of China were soldiers that could fight on with a strong fighting spirit\*.

Although Yue Zhong had his shortcomings, he was the one who always fought in front. Perhaps he was tyrannical at times but he treated his soldiers fairly, and he always led his troops into victory



after victory, creating myriad miracles. This type of leader was a commander soldiers were willing to fight to the death with!

[TN: Actual raws says that China soldiers are the best, they can fight, they have the best fighting spirit. I will refrain from commenting, and although I understand patriotism is admirable, the tone in this particular sentence does suggest the author has some bias. I think more will come in future chapters. I know that many readers are from various parts of the world, so I wanted to leave the sentence as close to its original meaning without getting on anybody's nerves. In the future, if I see future sentences like this I will directly translate it to something similar without explaining, so I hope those readers who know what the raws say understand where I'm coming from.]

On the other side, Guo Quan laughed bitterly: "There are some who aren't willing to leave their homes!"

People are known to love their homeland, and aren't willing to desert if they could. Especially in this type of weather, the survivors were all the more unwilling to move.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with killing intent and lashed out: "Let them die! Damn it! Tell them about the zombies encroaching on SY City. If they don't want to leave, I won't force them, let them be buried with SY City for good! Bunch of assholes!! Guo Quan, I'm giving you 2 more hours! Whoever can be moved within these 2 hours will be my limit! After that, clear the road and leave a space for our troops to retreat! Whoever blocks our way, kill them regardless of who they are! No discussion!!"

To Yue Zhong, his soldiers were more important than the survivors of SY County. They trusted him wholeheartedly and were loyal, that's why they had chosen to fight till the end with him. Every single one of them were exhausted, and hanging on for another 2 hours was most likely their limit.

Within SY City, the remaining 50,000 survivors could not

compare to his loyal subordinates.

"I understand, Commander Yue!! I promise to fulfill the responsibilities!!" Guo Quan gritted his teeth, as a resolute look appear on his face.

The news of the zombie horde attacking SY City soon spread like wildfire, and upon hearing the news, all those who were hiding at home and not willing to be soaked in the rain felt shock and trepidation, and finally understood the severity of the situation.

Those survivors took their raincoats, and rations and various other items in bags and rushed to the bridge. The sudden influx of the survivors led to chaos, and were jostling amongst themselves to be first, trying to find ways to cross the bridge. No one dared to stay in SY City longer than necessary, as the zombies would attack them in the next moment.

In the resulting chaos, many people who knocked to the ground, and trampled by the others, becoming more of the runny meat paste as the rain continued to fall.

Xu Yang looked at the messy and chaotic crowd and shouted: "All of you better line up in rows, whoever dares to cut the queue, you will be executed on the spot!!"

As these people were all fighting to be in front to cross the bridge, it had caused a blockade in front of the bridge, and no one could move.

No one paid attention to Xu Yang's shouts. The law would not punish the masses, this truth was imbedded deeply in their hearts, since there were people squeezing everywhere, they all thought that they would not be punished.

"Open fire!!" Xu Yang looked at the survivors squeezing, his face turned grim as he finally shouted the command.

The soldiers that were guarding the bridge used their machine guns and started firing into the crowd.

Under that sweeping fire, over a hundred of the survivors were shredded and fell down in pools of blood and gore. That terrifying scene shocked the remaining survivors, and they became obedient, looking towards Xu Yang in fear.

Xu Yang called out loudly: "If you want to cross the bridge, you better separate yourselves into 3 groups now. Children on this side! Women this side, and finally the men this side. The elderly, please wait at this side. For those who don't want to cross the bridge, scam far away! Don't fucking block my way here!"

Under Xu Yang's orders, the survivors quickly segregated themselves into 3 groups of people.

Following which, under the 3rd Battalion's watchful gazes, the children left the place first, crossing the bridge towards the other side.

As the survivors were being organized and moved, more than a dozen well-dressed men and women came in front of Xu Yang. The leader was a chubby-faced, fat middle-aged man with a protruding tummy. He smiled at Xu Yang, handing a bag to Xu Yang and said: "Hello Officer! I am SY City's Secretary for Commerce and Industry, Qu Bufan. You have worked hard, this is a small token, please accept it if you don't mind."

Xu Yang opened the bag, only to discover various diamonds that were twinkling inside. If it was prior to the apocalypse, these diamonds were easily worth several millions of Renminbi.

Xu Yang coldly asked: "What's the meaning of this?"

Qu Bufan pointed to a slender and fair-skinned beauty beside him as he laughed at Xu Yang: "I hope that this Officer can allow us to go over first. As long as you do that, this woman is yours!!"

The lady also fluttered her eyelashes at Xu Yang. Becoming the woman of an officer was not a bad thing. In this post-apocalyptic world, she wasn't the first to sell her body, nor would she be the

last.

Xu Yang looked at Qu Bufan and laughed coldly: "Men! Lock these useless people up. Send the men to the scum battalion, the women into the women's battalion."

A few soldiers stepped out swiftly, and captured Qu Bufan and his group.

"Sir!! Sir!!" Qu Bufan had a look of shock and fear as he squealed out like a pig in distress.

"Don't be getting any funny ideas! Otherwise, you will face the same consequences as them!" Xu Yang scanned the survivors like a cheetah as he spoke out coldly, the survivors all looked down, not daring to meet his gaze.

# Chapter 298: Hot Blooded Heroes!

---

Under Xu Yang's fierce threat, all the survivors became obedient, following the orders and moving in an orderly fashion towards the other side. The speed soon picked up.

However, as the rain was cold and relentless, many of the survivors who had not eaten the Type 2 Meat, continued to fall amidst the downpour and never stood up again.

At this time, no one could afford to pay attention to those fallen survivors. Xu Yang could only continue distributing the Type 2 Meat with the aide of his subordinates, hoping for the meat to help the miserable survivors.

Guo Quan looked at the proceedings anxiously, the time was too short. 2 hours were simply not enough to move everybody across. He would check his watch from time to time, while racking his brain for a solution.

Guo Quan suddenly beckoned a Company Officer called Xu Mo and asked: "Xu Mo!! Did you guys find any boats around here?"

Xu Mo reported back: "Battalion Commander, I've brought men to search. There aren't any."

Prior to the apocalypse, the riverbank had plenty of tugboats and fishing boats. Post-apocalypse, they had all been used to catch fishes. In the end, as they came across the Type 2 Mutant Beasts in the waters, the boats were all destroyed or capsized. Hence there were no more boats around the area.

Guo Quan looked at the bridge with a steely expression, and continued to check his watch frequently. Nearby, there was still the bustling activity of moving, the group of children had crossed over fully, while the women were still making their journey on the bridge. They could hear the sounds of gunfire in the distance, and were aware of the intense battle happening.

Not long after, the preliminary group of soldiers had dispersed from the frontlines and came to the bridge. They had continued construction and fortification without a wink of sleep and were thoroughly exhausted. Even though they did not participate in the battle directly, because of their efforts, their constructed defences and traps helped delay and caused the deaths of over ten thousand zombies.

"Battalion Commander Guo! Yun Fei leading the preliminary troops and reporting!" The young master of Black Tiger Gang had shaved his head long ago, and was decked in a military uniform, and had saluted in proper bearing.

An environment can change a person, good companions exert good influence while bad ones causes bad influence. After joining Yue Zhong's troops, and undergoing Chen Shitou's strict training and regimentation, he had shrugged off his hooligan image, and was starting to become a lot more disciplined and upright, developing and growing as a young man should.

"Xu Mo, go arrange for the preliminary troops to cross the bridge immediately!!" Guo Quan responded to Yun Fei with a military salute as well, before conveying some orders to Xu Mo beside him.

Xu Mo nodded his head, and he brought Yun Fei and the rest of the preliminary troops towards the crowd, and started to cross the bridge.

"They're jumping the line!!"

"Why are they allowed to cut the queue? They're playing with privileges here!!"

"How can they be allowed to jump the queue, while we're supposed to wait for death? That's not fair!!"

"Since they came last, they should queue behind!! We should be first!!"

"....."

Seeing Yun Fei and the preliminary troops cutting the queue, the survivors got riled up, as they called out loudly.

The survivors had been obedient as they were not treated too shabbily, even though Xu Yang was fierce, he was indeed fair. No one had the special privilege to cut queue, nor could they try to bribe their way through, hence they were all accepting of the situation. Now there were people allowed to cut, they felt agitated.

"Fuck all of you bastards!!" Xu Yang raised his loudhailer and jumped on to the roof of a jeep: "Damn it! All you assholes! Earlier we asked you to gather, what the hell were you doing? Dragging your feet and not willing to leave. When all of you were holed up in your homes, these guys were on the frontlines! To delay the advance of the zombies, they didn't sleep a wink and have been working for 12 full hours!! Some have even clashed with the zombies and died already!"

Xu Yang's expression was extremely steely: "They are all heroes!! Because of their efforts and the other soldiers who are staying on the frontlines, you guys are still alive now!! Even if you don't want to thank them that's fine. You assholes who still want to scold them, are you guys even human? Where's your damned conscience?!"

Hearing those words from Xu Yang, warmth flowed in the hearts of Yun Fei and those preliminary troopers. They were heroes. They had used their own sweat and blood to protect so many people, Yue Zhong would not mistreat them. At this time, their hearts were filled with gratitude and acceptance towards Yue Zhong as a leader.

Many of the preliminary troops were so touched that they broke down in tears. During the post-apocalypse, many of them were the lowest rung of society, and were living as though they were ants. For a single bread, or 1 jin of rice, they had disregarded all sense of self-worth and pride, and done anything possible, no matter how shameless. The government officials had treated them like trash

when they were overlooking and governing. Under Yue Zhong, they had finally obtained the respect and pride, and were being labelled as heroes. At this moment, even though their bodies were drenched in that cold rain, their hearts were filled with an infinite warmth.

The survivors were reprimanded and did not dare make another sound. When Yue Zhong had deployed people to gather them, indeed they were not willing to leave. Now they had nothing to say against Xu Yang.

"You bunch of assholes, if any of you are a man, and still have your balls with you, then come over here, grab a weapon and go to the frontlines and fight!! As long as that person can kill 10 zombies, I will allow him to cross the bridge first and welcome that person into our ranks!!" Xu Yang swept his gaze over the 20,000 males and shouted.

At this time, a huge truck dumped a huge load of steel blades and shields onto the ground, forming a small mountain of weapons.

These items were initially used by Yue Zhong to equip the preliminary troops for both training and real combat, and there were enough to arm about 4,000 men. On top of that, he managed to obtain 6,000 blades that were recently completed from the army's storehouse.

The army had also known about the issue of ammunition, and to boost up the fighting capabilities while they had low ammo, they had decided to manufacture a huge number of steel blades. Compared to just random knives, these huge blades were more efficient against zombies.

The 20,000 men looked towards the 10,000 blades and shields, their eyes flashed with a complicated gaze, and they sunk into deep thought. They knew that the horde was definitely fearsome, seeing the retreating army as well as forceful defence of the place by Yue Zhong's troops. Fighting against these terrifying monsters, if one



wasn't careful, they would lose their lives. They were unwilling to die after all.

Xu Yang swept his gaze with scorn at the 20,000 men, and spat: "Pei! Bunch of cowards with no balls!! You aren't men! Since you aren't men, stay still and be obedient, await your turn! Don't act or speak out of line, otherwise my guns will fire blindly!"

"I'm a man! I will go kill the zombies!!" A 1.8m tall man stepped out from the crowd and took up a blade and shield as he hollered: "I am Tian Hu!! I am a man!! Whoever still has the guts, take up arms and follow me!!"

"I am Hai Mingfeng!! I am a man!! I'm not a coward!!"

"I am Shen Xiong!! I am also a man, not a coward!!"

Tian Hu's shout seemed to ignite a fire amidst the 20,000 men's hearts, and they started to step forward in droves, grabbing a weapon and shield, while shouting their names, announcing their existence.

Xu Yang looked at Tian Hu and the rest of them, his eyes gleamed, and he saluted them, as he shouted: "Good!! You are all men!! You will be my good brothers!! Pi Dafu! Go distribute a can of Type 2 Meat to each of these brothers, and bring them to assist Commander Yue at the frontlines!!"

Xu Yang's company officer Pi Dafu stepped out, and saluted the group of heroic males, and immediately brought them towards the sounds of gunfire.

There were many good men, at the same time, cowards were aplenty as well. Amongst those 20,000 men, only 6,000 had stepped forward. The rest had lowered their heads, not daring to look into Xu Yang's eyes, as though they were quails. Not everyone had the courage to face death.

"Trash!" Xu Yang coldly glared at the remaining 13,000 men and spat out the words, before moving on.

Under the lead of Pi Dafu, the 6,000 hot-blooded heroes quickly arrived at the battlefield and joined in the fray.

The soldiers who were struggling to maintain their defence managed to stabilize their position with the help of the unexpected 6,000 additional warriors.

The ordinary zombies were weak after all, they only had strength in numbers. Tian Hu wielded his steel blade and shield, and hacked about with force, those zombies were either chopped in two or beheaded. He was like a deranged tiger, and continuously slashed at the zombies.

With Tian Hu's example, the rest of the warriors following him seemed to gain a boost in fighting spirit, as they slashed fervently, chasing the zombies out of the street.

Under the support of Tian Hu and the newly joined warriors, Yue Zhong's 2nd Battalion that had been involved in the fighting since the first moment managed to catch a breath. At the same time, the Special Combat Forces as well as the experts under Shen Hongyang targeted the evolved zombies, as those evolved zombies posed the most threat to Tian Hu and the rest who were normal survivors.

Tian Hu hacked and slashed in his battle-lust, after killing 14 zombies, he was starting to be out of breath, and the steel blade in his hands felt heavy. He ate 2 cans of Type 2 meat, and regained a huge amount of his energy back, however, his fighting speed could not match his initial power. After awhile, he would feel his stamina depleting quickly. He was after all not an Enhancer, and did not have the stamina to fight 100 zombies at once.

Right in front of him, 20 ordinary zombies had surrounded him and were making their way towards him. He rushed forward and like a possessed tiger, managed to kill another 2 more zombies. However, 3 of them stretched their claws out at him.

"Am I going to die?" Tian Hu looked at the incoming claws, and his face changed, as he lost all strength to retaliate.

Right at this time, 5 bone spears shot out, decimating the zombies in the entire area, and the surrounding zombies were instantly chopped up into many pieces.

"So strong!!! Is this the might of an Enhancer?" Tian Hu looked at the ease of which the zombies were disposed of, and a huge number behind them were also chopped up easily, and his mind was rattled. It was the first time he had seen the prowess of an Enhancer.

At this moment, Yue Zhong and White Bones came in front of Tian Hu and looked at him: "You must be Tian Hu! Well done!! You're a needed hero, care to join my troops?"

"Yue Zhong!!" Tian Hu's heart was shaken, as he stared fixedly at Yue Zhong. Yue Zhong had gained quite the notoriety in SY City, and in many versions, he was depicted as a 2m-tall, fierce looking hero that seemed to reek of blood. However, the person in front of him now was just an ordinary youth.

[TN: At the rate Yue Zhong is going, he seems to be a wizened old general trapped in a youth's body.]

However, when he observed carefully, he could detect the faint pressure and bearing of a leader. He immediately responded: "I'm willing!! Extremely willing!!"

During the post-apocalypse, if one was lucky enough to join a power, especially that had an army of such size, it was a blessing to most survivors. Becoming a soldier ensured that they would not go hungry, at the same time, they were backed by the army, and could live uprightly in this new world.

Tian Hu had wanted to join the SY Military previously, however, he lacked the connections, and had even offended some people, hence he did not have the chance.

"Bring the rest of them and retreat!!" Yue Zhong looked at White Bones that was slaughtering the zombies, before he told Tian Hu.

"Yes!" Tian Hu responded without thinking, as he looked at the whirlwind of destruction that was White Bones, and brought the rest of the 6,000 men and withdrew.

The scene of White Bones slaughtering the zombies like chickens had embedded deeply in Tian Hu's mind, and he was filled with fervent admiration and blazing motivation: "One day, I will become an Enhancer like that!"

Tian Hu and the 6,000 other men had attacked the zombies, and managed to decimate over 13,000 of them. It helped impede the advance greatly, and at the same time, they bought Yue Zhong's troops another precious hour.

However, as they had poor defences, without the necessary armor, in this battle, over 900 had been injured and infected, they had no choice but to execute them on the spot.

During this precious and hard won hour, Yue Zhong led the 8th Battalion and Ning Guang's 3rd Battalion towards the bridge.

# Chapter 299: Retreat, Riot, Despair

---

The appearance of the 6,000 warriors had bought a precious hour of time for the Special Combat Forces as well as the elites under Shen Hongyang. To these Enhancers, an hour was enough for them to recover a huge amount of stamina.

Yue Zhong led the Special Combat Forces as they hunted the zombies everywhere, blocking them from advancing. The main force was slowly making their way towards the back.

Yue Zhong's Special Combat Forces had absorbed the experts of Liu Huifeng and Luo Tianyi before this battle. By adding on the various Enhancers who have been gaining levels nonstop throughout the battles, the total number of experts had reached 72. Every single one of them was above Level 20, and a number had broke past the Level 30 barrier. Each of them possessed incredible battle ability, however the horde was simply endless, Yue Zhong could only retreat bit by bit with them, and soon they came to the bridge.

At this time, the moving process was still ongoing, and a huge number of women was packed on the bridge. In front of the women, it was Tian Hu and the rest of the 5,000+ warriors.

The 13,000+ cowardly men had started to become fidgety with the approaching sounds of gunfire, and were visibly anxious. They could feel the tension rising as the horde got closer.

"Let us cross!!! Move!!! We want to cross!! Everyone, let's fight it out with them!" Amongst the survivors, one of them suddenly hollered out these words loudly.

"We want to cross!!"

"We want to cross!!"

"We want to live!!!"

"Get lost!! Damn army dogs! Thugs!!"

"....."

The survivors were riled up in an instant, and erupted in rage and chaos as they charged towards Guo Quan.

Seeing the 13,000+ survivors rushing towards them, Guo Quan seemed to hesitate for a moment. This was after all 13,000+ survivors! He might be fierce and threatening, but he did not want to become a murderer of his own kind!!

"Open fire!!" At this time, Yue Zhong's cold harsh voice resounded from beside Guo Quan.

Guo Quan heard the familiar voice, and did not hesitate further as he also shouted: "Open fire!!"

In an instant, all sorts of heavy weaponry opened fire on the survivors, and those miserable sods who had rushed forward without even a shred of metal on them immediately fell to the ground amidst screams of agony and pain.

Under that sudden oppression, a number of them became confused and scared, and decided to escape elsewhere, or kneeled on the ground begging for forgiveness, some even started crying not knowing what to do!

Yue Zhong looked at the survivors, and hesitation flashed in his eyes. Now was not the time to be benevolent, the moment they erupted in chaos, not only will this group of survivors die here, even his Special Combat Forces and the elites under Shen Hongyang would be buried here as well.

Yue Zhong did not bother about those who were escaping in all directions, he immediately picked up the loudhailer and spoke into it: "You are the last batch of survivors here, if you want to force your way across, I will not hesitate to kill you! There are weapons here, if you want to live on, take up and fight for your own life. If you don't have the guts, just wait for death!"

After which, Yue Zhong threw the loudhailer aside, and charged

into the battlefield. It was the last critical moments of the battle, covering the retreat was the only priority on his mind now. Here, having a few extra hands would not mean shit.

"All of you evacuate! I will cover you!!" The moment he reentered the battlefield, he shouted towards Xu Xiao and Ji Qingwu.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Xu Xiao's eyes flashed with intense respect. Covering the retreat was the most dangerous part, and a leader who would do that for his subordinates were rare and few. Fighting for this kind of leader, Xu Xiao truly felt fortunate. He saluted Yue Zhong, and quickly brought his men to leave the frontlines.

Ji Qingwu glanced at Yue Zhong and gritted her teeth saying: "You're going to be alone? No way! I will stay behind with you!!"

Yue Zhong frowned and replied: "No! I can definitely leave by myself. With you, it would be impossible! Be good and listen to me!!"

Ji Qingwu stared at Yue Zhong stubbornly: "I don't WANT TOO! I have the means to protect myself!"

Yue Zhong directly exerted pressure on her: "No way!! It's too dangerous!! Go back, this is an order!! You are the commander of the Special Combat Forces!! You are responsible for the lives of our Special Combat Forces!"

Ji Qingwu was like Yue Zhong, and was exhausted from the countless battles. It could be said that there was no Special Combat Forces soldiers that was not tired, but no one could compare with Ji Qingwu and Yue Zhong who had not even taken a breather. The moment they slipped, it would be disastrous.

"Fine! I'll listen to you, but you must promise me you will come back!!" Ji Qingwu was after all a girl who could see the bigger picture, so she quelled the anxious feelings she had for Yue Zhong and swiftly retreated.





Under that kind of exertion, White Bones' stamina was also depleting like mad. When it reached zero, it could not use any types of skill. The more powerful the skill, the higher the energy or stamina consumption.

When White Bones' stamina reached 10 points, Yue Zhong immediately called it back, then whistled extremely loudly.

Following that shrill whistle, Greenie flapped its wings as it descended from the skies.

Greenie hovered above the city, and unleashed its Wind Control ability in response to the whistle. Following its incessant beating of its wings, countless tornados formed and shot towards the zombies.

Under the assault of those sharp tornadoes, lines of zombies were sliced in twain. At the same time, the power of the gale wind caused long cracks along the floor.

After Greenie released the gusts of winds, it immediately flew off, without needing Yue Zhong's orders. It was not willing to expend all its energy to attack an enemy that was endless.

Many high level Mutant Beasts had manifestations of their natural abilities. However, each usage could expend a huge part of their energy. Therefore, unless it was extremely dire, mutant beasts were unwilling to use their abilities freely.

After Greenie flew off, Yue Zhong also retreated at full speed backwards, moving so fast that he appeared to almost teleport 3-4 steps with each movement. As he retreated he wielded his .05 submachine gun and fired wildly while making a mad dash for the bridge.

At this time, near the bridge, there were only Guo Quan, the 1st Battalion from Ning Guang County, as well as the 12,000 male survivors who were pushing and shoving each other.

"Please!! Please Master Yue, let me go!! I'm willing to do

anything!!"

"I'm begging you, let me go across!! I'm willing to slog and toil for you!!"

"Isn't the army about protecting the citizens!! Please!! Let us go over!!"

"....."

A number of the survivors had kneeled on the floor, and were begging Guo Quan profusely. The bridge was their only way out. With the passing of time, death was approaching faster.

Other than a few hundred survivors who took up the balance steel blades, the rest of them basically ignored them. These cowards only wanted to cross the bridge, and didn't have the guts to face the zombies.

Yue Zhong glanced at those weak survivors, and ordered Guo Quan: "Guo Quan! Take your men and evacuate now!! Let these people decide their own fate!"

"Yes! Commander!" Guo Quan saluted Yue Zhong, before taking the soldiers from the 1st Battalion across the bridge.

Losing the pressure of Guo Quan and the 1st Battalion, the survivors started to fight to get to the bridge.

With no one to maintain the order, all the survivors went crazy, those weaker ones were pushed to the ground. For the chance to escape, some of the people even went as far as to kill their fellow humans. In just a moment, the 13,000-over survivors were thrown into chaos, they did not dare fight against the zombies, but they were not above slaughtering amongst themselves.

Seeing the cruel and chaotic scene, Yue Zhong furrowed his brows, and let out a deep sigh. He had done his best, but he could not save these 13,000 survivors even if he wanted to.

Right at this time, the horde broke through all the barricades and

defences, and was swarming towards the survivors!

"Ah!!!!" Seeing the terrifying zombies, one of the survivors screamed out, before jumping into the river, trying to swim his way across.

Ulamog: There you have it. The author has cleared the confusion: Whitebones can do movement and basic attacks infinitely, but any skills draw from a separate and not unlimited stamina total.

# Chapter 300: Turtle to the Rescue! Tong Xiaoyun's Passion!

---

The number of survivors that chose to dive into the river increased as the zombies neared them, each one frantically trying to make their way across.

At the same time, the slaughter amongst those at the bridge had become even more intense, and devastation and desolation was in every survivors' eyes.

Yue Zhong shook his head and he proceeded to call for Greenie, to pick him up. All of a sudden, his heart shook, and he looked towards the river.

He was shocked as he observed that the waters were churning, as whole groups of Mutant Crayfish were climbing ashore! As they charged out of the water they immediately started attacking the zombies, using their sharp claws to chop them in two, before gobbling them up.

The waters churned constantly, and the Mutant Crayfish continued to come up in droves. Furthermore, there were 20 Elite Mutant Crayfish as well, followed by a Type 2 Mutant Crayfish, and finally Turtle!

Turtle looked at Yue Zhong, and let out a strange call. The Type 2 Mutant Crayfish also let out a sharp shrill call.

[TN: COWABUNGA!]

The 20 Elite Mutant Crayfishes rushed into the horde, and started slaughtering the zombies.

Those Mutant Crayfish had hard shells, and the ordinary zombies could do nothing to break them. They also had terribly sharp claws, and were impervious to the zombie virus, thus they were the perfect counter to the zombies.

The moment those Mutant Crayfish joined in the battle, they attacked the zombies in a frenzy, and huge numbers of the zombies were chopped up and dismembered by them, before being eaten.

These Mutant Beasts it seems, like to feast on zombies. If they could swallow the blood essence of the higher level zombies, they could use it to power up as well.

Seeing the Mutant Beasts coming out from the river, all the survivors felt worse, and the fights began to become more vicious. People were killing each other faster and faster as time went on.

Yue Zhong jumped on top of Turtle's head, and urged it to go to the bridge: "I am Yue Zhong! All of you stop right this instance! The Mutant Beasts are here upon my orders!! Get in line!! Cross the bridge orderly! Otherwise I'll execute you!"

The frenzied survivors were frightened by Turtle and had stopped in their tracks. They regained their composure, and observed the surrounded Mutant Beasts, before becoming like sheep and getting in line, crossing the bridge according to their lines.

"Turtle! This time, it's really thanks to you!!" Yue Zhong looked at the subdued survivors crossing as he sighed in relief, patting Turtle's head.

If Turtle had not appeared with its countless little brothers, the over 10,000 remaining survivors here would have died at the hands of those zombies.

When Turtle was praised by Yue Zhong, it wagged its tail, and thumped it against the ground. It was obviously pleased. After being tamed by Yue Zhong, it had already established a soul link with him, and could understand what he said.

With Turtle's command, the countless Mutant Crayfishes guarded the 10,000+ survivors across the bridge. However, these weak cowards had to face the cold winds, the terrible chaos that

ensued earlier, where there was slaughter amongst themselves, and over a thousand of them had died. Although the loss was huge, the only consolation was that the majority of them had managed to cross the bridge safely.

"Burn the bridge!!" Yue Zhong came to the other side of the bridge, and immediately issued the order!

'Hong'! With a loud blast, the bridge that was painstakingly built by countless people before the apocalypse was destroyed. The only way for the 800,000-strong horde to reach Ning Guang County was destroyed just like that.

If they wanted to make their way to Ning Guang County, they had to go on a detour for over a 100 km just to find the road.

After gaining these 100,000 survivors of SY County, Yue Zhong's next aim was Long Hai County!

As long as he conquered Long Hai County, Yue Zhong would obtain factories, and could start manufacturing ammunition. He wouldn't have to worry about ammunition shortage to deal with a huge horde like that ever again.

The close quarter combat placed too much pressure on the soldiers. Unless they wore Mutant Beasts hides that could prevent even the penetration of guns and knives, the loss of soldiers from fighting zombies was too much to handle.

The huge horde of zombies followed the scent of human to the river where the bridge once stood.

Under the influence of a mysterious command, the zombies plunged into the waters, seemingly trying to use their own bodies to create a path towards the other side. They had been advancing for such a long way with just their masses, crossing whem they saw mountains and crossing water bodies as they saw them.

However, the river was filled with the little brothers of Turtle, and the moment these zombies plunged into the water, they were

immediately gobbled up by the Mutant Crayfishes.

After no results from sending countless zombies to their needless deaths, the Z-Types hiding behind the horde also woke up and stopped the useless notion. The entire horde stood at the river looking blank.

After confirming that the horde could not possibly make their way across, he heaved a sigh of relief, and went back to take a bath, before lying on the bed and falling into a deep sleep. He had over-extended himself these past few days, and the moment he could relax, he did not fight it.

Yue Zhong was after all just a human, after experiencing such intense battles, he was on high alert and high strung at all times. The lives and deaths of over a few 100,000 weighed on his shoulders and he had not dared to relax for even a single moment. That sort of intense pressure almost suffocated him. He could finally take a break.

As Yue Zhong was still drowsy and unconscious, he felt his member being grabbed by someone, before entering somewhere moist and warm, and he was woken up from the shock, before looking down.

[Dedication: Fun fact: After long periods of exercise, your body releases dopamine, loads of endorphins along with serotonin. Yue Zhong wouldn't be interested in sex as his body would already be feeling 'spent' as if he had been in an orgy for the whole day.]

Only to see Tong Xiaoyun in a simple white shirt, which was unbuttoned, revealing her beautiful pink mounds and the flawless skin she got after Evolving. She was kneeling in between his legs, grabbing his member, and was revealing an enchanting smile: "Good morning, Yue-gege!"

[TN: Ge-ge is just like brother, but I used it in this sense to highlight the more romantic/desire-mood]

"Xiaoyun, what are you doing?" Yue Zhong looked at that enticing and charming Tong Xiaoyun that was looking extremely feminine and alluring right now, and his heart skipped a beat.

Tong Xiaoyun teasingly licked his member and charmingly said: "Yue-gege, this is called waking you up! Do you like it?"

"Yes!" Yue Zhong reached out to caress her face, and did not hide the rising passion in his eyes, as his body grew warmer. Since the issue with the horde and danger was temporarily over, he wanted to give in to his desires and enjoy himself properly.

"Then, treat me lovingly!" Tong Xiaoyun giggled, and took the initiative to climb on top of Yue Zhong, before sitting down and allowing his member to enter her.

Tong Xiaoyun furrowed her brow slightly in pain and pleasure, as the snow-white bed was stained with a blood-coloured flower, "Love me tenderly ok? Yue-gege! I really like you! Oh!!!" Tong Xiaoyun hugged Yue Zhong tightly, as her huge eyes looked at Yue Zhong pleadingly.

[TN: Not this again hahahaha so many blood flowers. I'm tempted to put play Carly Rae Jepsen's 'I Really X6 Like You' here.]

"Of course!! I like you too!!" Tong Xiaoyun's pleading look was the strongest aphrodisiac and ignited Yue Zhong's passion. He pushed her on to the bed, and started to thrust in and out with pleasure.

As the room Yue Zhong was in was the temporary dwelling of the citizens, Tong Xiaoyun's moans of pleasure could be heard through the walls, as it resounded out.

The little loli Zhang Yulan was currently holding a towel, standing in embarrassment outside Yue Zhong's room, putting her head to the wall and listening to the ongoing within the room. Her heartbeat was quickening. She had originally wanted to take a towel to help wipe the face of the hero that she idolized so much.

[TN: Zhang Yulan is Zhang He's sister, the one Yue Zhong saved



when he barged into some pervert's place a few chapters back]

In truth, Yue Zhong's image amongst the majority of the survivors was not that good. Especially Shen Xue, who hated Yue Zhong to the core. However, Zhang Yulan absolutely adored Yue Zhong as he had saved her. Her heart was filled with only gratitude and reverence towards him.

"What are you doing here?" Just as Zhang Yulan was eavesdropping, Zhuo Yatong's voice travelled to her ear.

Zhang Yulan was scared and jumped up like a frightened rabbit as she trembled, before looking at Zhuo Yatong, saying on the brink of tears: "Ma'am, I'm sorry!! I didn't meant to eavesdrop!! I just wanted to take towel to Commander Yue!! I'm sorry!!"

"This husband is also too neglectful!! Xiaoyun also, how could she moan so loudly, giving kids a bad impression." Zhuo Yatong heard the moans of pleasure from within the room, and couldn't help but blush and thought to herself with a little jealousy.

Zhuo Yatong smiled tenderly at Zhang Yulan, before receiving the towel and said: "You can scoot along! I'll help you give it to him!"

"How beautiful!! How tender!! His wives are really all so pretty!! If I can become like them, will he look at me more?" Zhang Yulan looked at the absolute beauty of Zhuo Yatong and her eyes flashed with a hint of yearning, before she replied docilely: "Yes! Ma'am!"

With that, Zhang Yulan left the place obediently.

Zhuo Yatong strided into the room, only to discover Tong Xiaoyun's arched back, and her body flushed with an enticing pink, breathing erratically while lying in exhaustion in Yue Zhong's embrace, and her expression one of satisfaction and extreme charm

Yue Zhong took a look at Zhuo Yatong, herself dressed in stunning clothings that accentuated her mature charms, as his eyes

brightened up and he smiled: "Yatong! Come over! I want to kiss you!"

Zhuo Yatong first closed the door, then giving Yue Zhong a tender smile, as she went over to him and started making out: "Really! Husband, if you and Xiaoyun-meimei want to do this kind of thing, please notice your surroundings also! What if the kids pick up the bad habits from you!"

# Table of Contents

## [God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 201: Ferocious Beast King!](#)

[Chapter 202: Fiercely Battling the Beast!](#)

[Chapter 203: A Huge Harvest!](#)

[Chapter 204: Tracking a Trail](#)

[Chapter 205: Crazy Kitchen Knife!!](#)

[Chapter 206: Mother and Daughter](#)

[Chapter 207: The Alluring Zhuo Yatong](#)

[Chapter 208: Pushing Down Zhuo Yatong](#)

[Chapter 209: The Evolved Zhuo Yatong](#)

[Chapter 210: Sea of Zombies! -Dead End](#)

[Chapter 211: Another Survivor Fleet!](#)

[Chapter 212: The Attraction of Roasted Meat!](#)

[Chapter 213: Dastardly Huang Weian's Plot!](#)

[Chapter 214: A Violent Disturbance](#)

[Chapter 215: Night Raid](#)

[Chapter 216: Tong Xiaoyun](#)

[Chapter 217: Reversing the Tides of Battle](#)

[Chapter 218: Utter Surrender](#)

[Chapter 219: Choosing Sides](#)

[Chapter 220: Surprise Attack on Clear Wind Camp!](#)

[Chapter 221: Insta-Kill on Scarface!](#)

[Chapter 222: Assault on the Villa!](#)

[Chapter 223: Defeating Lie Tianyang!](#)

[Chapter 224: Alluring Services](#)

[Chapter 225: Giving "The Speech"](#)

[Chapter 226: Fury Up!](#)

[Chapter 227: Attacking Herd of Mutant Pigs!](#)

[Chapter 228: Success of the Pits!](#)

[Chapter 229: Breached Gates, Town Ablaze!](#)

[Chapter 230: Great Victory](#)

[Chapter 231: Jealousy and Courage](#)

[Chapter 232: Devil Vines](#)

[Chapter 233: Advancement to level 40!](#)  
[Chapter 234: The EXPLOSIVE Overkill of the Type-2 Mutant Water Snake!](#)  
[Chapter 235: Yue Zhong Evolves! Dual Attribute Evolver!](#)  
[Chapter 236: Venomous Blood Essence, Saved By Gu Manzi!](#)  
[Chapter 237: Ning Guang County Invades!](#)  
[Chapter 238: Guo Quan!](#)  
[Chapter 239: Hella Reinforcements!](#)  
[Chapter 240: Seizing Ning Guang County](#)  
[Chapter 241: Tong Xiaoyun evolves, the Military attacks!](#)  
[Chapter 242: Overbearing Military Soldiers!](#)  
[Chapter 243: Yue Zhong Vs The Army](#)  
[Chapter 244: Revolt and Chaos](#)  
[Chapter 245: Suppress the Insurgency!](#)  
[Chapter 246: Tao Zhengyi's Fate!](#)  
[Chapter 247: Joint Forces](#)  
[Chapter 248: The Ravenous Devil Flame Sword!](#)  
[Chapter 249: Successive Attacks!](#)  
[Chapter 250: SY County Survivor Base!](#)  
[Chapter 251: Fight](#)  
[Chapter 252: \[The Elite Battalion's Prowess!\]](#)  
[Chapter 253: Discussion](#)  
[Chapter 254: I am Yue Zhong!](#)  
[Chapter 255: Ambush by the Dark Crows!](#)  
[Chapter 256: Zhou Yanxue's Confession!](#)  
[Chapter 257: Intel](#)  
[Chapter 258: Peng Mengde](#)  
[Chapter 259: Zhang He](#)  
[Chapter 260: The Truest Scum!](#)  
[Chapter 261: Go Die! Scum!](#)  
[Chapter 262: Exceptional Trades](#)  
[Chapter 263: Kneel or Die!](#)  
[Chapter 264: Basement!](#)  
[Chapter 265: Cleaning Up The Gangs](#)  
[Chapter 266: Queen Bee!](#)  
[Chapter 267: Assassination Attempt!](#)  
[Chapter 268: Tragic Victory](#)  
[Chapter 269: Restraint](#)  
[Chapter 270: Revenge!](#)  
[Chapter 271: Assault Helicopters Incoming!](#)

[Chapter 272: Devil Flame Destruction](#)  
[Chapter 273: Master of Negotiations!](#)  
[Chapter 274: Transaction](#)  
[Chapter 275: Mutant Black Fishes](#)  
[Chapter 276: Fishes on Land](#)  
[Chapter 277: Type Two Green Eagle! Greenie Evolved!](#)  
[Chapter 278: Mutant Crab Horde](#)  
[Chapter 279: Crabbing Team](#)  
[Chapter 280: Taming The Type 2 Mutant Snapping Turtle!](#)  
[Chapter 281: Huge Victory](#)  
[Chapter 282: Intel on the Horde of 1,000,000 Zombies!](#)  
[Chapter 283: Conditions for Deployment](#)  
[Chapter 284: Deployment](#)  
[Chapter 285: Beginning of The Battle!](#)  
[Chapter 286: Uphill Struggle!](#)  
[Chapter 287: Collapse](#)  
[Chapter 288: Capturing the Bridge!](#)  
[Chapter 289: Breakout!](#)  
[Chapter 290: Tough Breakthrough!](#)  
[Chapter 291: Ambush! Confusion!](#)  
[Chapter 292: Onslaught!](#)  
[Chapter 293: The Supremely Tyrannical Yue Zhong!](#)  
[Chapter 294: Conquering SY County](#)  
[Chapter 295: The Urgent 12 Hours](#)  
[Chapter 296: Cruel,Cruel Rain](#)  
[Chapter 297: Tough Crossing](#)  
[Chapter 298: Hot Blooded Heroes!](#)  
[Chapter 299: Retreat, Riot, Despair](#)  
[Chapter 300: Turtle to the Rescue! Tong Xiaoyun's Passion!](#)